LEABHARLANN CHOLÁISTE NA TRÍONÓIDE, BAILE ÁTHA CLIATH | TRINITY COLLEGE LIBRARY DUBLIN
Ollscoil Átha Cliath | The University of Dublin

Terms and Conditions of Use of Digitised Theses from Trinity College Library Dublin

Copyright statement

All material supplied by Trinity College Library is protected by copyright (under the Copyright and Related Rights Act, 2000 as amended) and other relevant Intellectual Property Rights. By accessing and using a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library you acknowledge that all Intellectual Property Rights in any Works supplied are the sole and exclusive property of the copyright and/or other IPR holder. Specific copyright holders may not be explicitly identified. Use of materials from other sources within a thesis should not be construed as a claim over them.

A non-exclusive, non-transferable licence is hereby granted to those using or reproducing, in whole or in part, the material for valid purposes, providing the copyright owners are acknowledged using the normal conventions. Where specific permission to use material is required, this is identified and such permission must be sought from the copyright holder or agency cited.

Liability statement

By using a Digitised Thesis, I accept that Trinity College Dublin bears no legal responsibility for the accuracy, legality or comprehensiveness of materials contained within the thesis, and that Trinity College Dublin accepts no liability for indirect, consequential, or incidental, damages or losses arising from use of the thesis for whatever reason. Information located in a thesis may be subject to specific use constraints, details of which may not be explicitly described. It is the responsibility of potential and actual users to be aware of such constraints and to abide by them. By making use of material from a digitised thesis, you accept these copyright and disclaimer provisions. Where it is brought to the attention of Trinity College Library that there may be a breach of copyright or other restraint, it is the policy to withdraw or take down access to a thesis while the issue is being resolved.

Access Agreement

By using a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library you are bound by the following Terms & Conditions. Please read them carefully.

I have read and I understand the following statement: All material supplied via a Digitised Thesis from Trinity College Library is protected by copyright and other intellectual property rights, and duplication or sale of all or part of any of a thesis is not permitted, except that material may be duplicated by you for your research use or for educational purposes in electronic or print form providing the copyright owners are acknowledged using the normal conventions. You must obtain permission for any other use. Electronic or print copies may not be offered, whether for sale or otherwise to anyone. This copy has been supplied on the understanding that it is copyright material and that no quotation from the thesis may be published without proper acknowledgement.

Of Persepolis and Jerusalem

Of Persepolis and Jerusalem

Towards an Evaluation of Iranian Influence on the Jewish Apocalyptic Traditions

Jason M. Silverman

Ph.D

School of Religions and Theology

Trinity College Dublin

Dr. Anne Fitzpatrick-McKinley

26 February 2010

I affirm that this dissertation:

a) has not been submitted as an exercise for a degree at this or any other University

b) is entirely my own work

c) may be lent or copied by the TCD Library.

8 JUNE 2010

Date

TRINITY COLLEGE
2 7 AUG 2010
LIBRARY DUBLIN
THESIS
8946

- Summary -

This dissertation presents the need for a reconsideration of Iranian influence upon Jewish apocalyptic, and offers grounds upon which such study may proceed. The **Prolegomena** describes the history of scholarship on the question of Iranian influence and on Jewish apocalyptic and offers grounds upon which comparative research ought to be conducted. **Chapter I** describes the sources for Iranian religion, the issues involved in attempting a historical reconstruction, and the methodology by which one can date the various texts and ideas. **Chapter II** argues for the historical and sociological likelihood of Iranian-Judaean interaction by discussing the various places in which the two communities could have interacted. In addition, several broad affinities are mentioned by way of suggesting potential concepts for rapprochement. **Chapter III** discusses Oral Theory, describing the kinds of processes and worldview in which Persian-Judaean interaction occurred, critiquing the standard text-centric method of current Biblical Scholarship. It also analyzes various apocalyptic texts for views on orality and textuality. **Chapter IV** analyzes some of the major texts which have been considered either 'proto-apocalyptic' or apocalyptic, both within the Hebrew Bible and in *1 Enoch*, for details which can best be understood in an Iranian milieu. This is divided into Parts A (Biblical Literature) and B (Enochic Literature). **Chapter V** brings together the various themes and theologies which were analyzed in Chapter IV to argue for an 'Apocalyptic Hermeneutic' which is responsible for both the differences and similarities which scholars have seen in the prophetic and apocalyptic literatures. It relates the phenomena of apocalypticism (ideas), apocalypse (literary genre), and millenarianism (social movements), seeing the hermeneutic as a dialectical thread holding them all together as well as apart. This is intimately intertwined with the growth of a highly literate scribal elite (as discussed in Chapter III), and is argued as the best way to conceptualize Iranian influence. The **Metalegomena** brings together all of the analyses of the previous chapters, pointing towards the importance of the subject as well as to possible implications for further areas, such as the relationship between various Jewish 'sects,' the historical Jesus, early Christianity, and the sociology of millenarianism. **Appendix I** gives a brief explanation of the sources utilized and available in the reconstruction of Achaemenid Iranian religion, including critical editions of texts. **Appendix II** explains the orthography adopted here. **Appendix III: Glossary of Terms** provides explanation of the many Iranian terms which are used in the dissertation. **Appendix IV: Annotated Definitions** glosses the definitions adopted for controversial English terms.

Some say the world will end in fire,
Some say in ice.
From what I've tasted of desire
I hold with those who favor fire.
But if it had to perish twice,
I think I know enough of hate
To know that for destruction ice
Is also great
And would suffice.

–Robert Frost

VIII

Whether at Nishapur or Babylon,
Whether the Cup with sweet or bitter run,
The Wine of Life keeps oozing drop by drop,
The Leaves of Life keep falling one by one.

XVIII

They say the Lion and the Lizard keep
The courts where Jamshyd gloried and drank deep:
And Bahram, that great Hunter—the Wild Ass
Stamps o'er his Head, but cannot break his Sleep.

XXXI

Up from Earth's Center through the Seventh Gate
I rose, and on the Throne of Saturn sate,
And many a Knot unravel'd by the Road;
But not the Master-knot of Human Fate.

–Omar Kayyam
(From *Rubaiyat*, trans. and adapted Fitzgerald)

- Table of Contents -

Title Page iii
Declaration iv
Summary v
Epigraph vi
Table of Contents vii
Table of Figures and Illustrations x
Preface xii
Acknowledgements xiii
List of Abbreviations xv

Prolegomena: Iran, the Apocalypses, and Influence 1
Introit 2
History of Iranian Influence 2
Ideological
Presentation of Parallels
Studies Pointing in a Better Direction
Call to Re-Evaluation
Iranian Influence
Apocalyptic Studies 12
Definition of Apocalyptic
Socio-Historical Understandings
Relations with Previous Traditions
Prophecy
Wisdom
From Prophecy-Wisdom Dichotomy to Interpretation
Foreign Sources
Apocalyptic and the Nature of Religious Discourse
Types of Language
Nature of 'Traditions'
Types of Influence and Transmission 41
Thesis 50
Overview
Explanation of Sources/Translations
Jewish
Iranian

I: The Iranian Sources: Religion and Royal Ideology 53
Introduction 54
Evidence from Classical Authors 65
Plato
Aristotle
Herodotus
Xenophon
Plutarch
Strabo
Excursus: Persian Influence on Greek Thought
Religious Situation in Iran 80
The Magi
Persian Archaeology and Royal Ideology 91
Winged Disk

Summary 95

II: The Achaemenid Context 97
Babylonia 99
Media and Iranian Lands 103
Asia Minor/ Anatolia 106
Egypt 110
Palestine 112
Royal Road and Royal Mail 116
Summary 117
Excursus: Elam and Eastern Iran in Anšan 118
Several Theological and Sociological Affinities 120

III: The Media of Influence: Orality, Literacy, and Interaction 126
Importance of Orality and its Role in Influence 129
Oral Theory
Implications for Methodology
Jeremiah 36
Second Isaiah
Cultural Interaction in Light of Oral Theory
Importance of Interiorization for Apocalyptic 149
Enochic Literature
1 Enoch 69:8–10
2 Enoch
Daniel
Problematics and Desiderata 157
Implications for Investigation of Influence 159
Conclusions

IV: Textual Analyses, Part A 161
Ezekiel 37:1–14 162
Ezekiel 38–39 168
Daniel 180
Vision of the Statue
Vision of the *Mischwesen*
Four Period Scheme in the Ancient Near East
Hesiod
Ovid
Herodotus
Oracle of Hystaspes and *Zand-ī Vahman Yašt*
Sibylline Oracles
Qumran
Origin of the Four Empire Scheme
Four Kingdoms or Kings
Four Metallic Eras
Reconstructing an *Ur*-form of the Iranian *Vohu Manah Yašt*
Eschatology
Four Metallic Kingdoms with an Eschatology
Conclusion
Excursus: On the Watchers 204

IV: Textual Analyses, Part B 208

Enochic Literature
Book of Watchers (1–36) 210
Forbidden Knowledge as *Kulturentstehungsmythos*
Excursus: the Šemihazah myth
Binding of Asael/Azazel
Conclusions
Book of Parables/Similitudes (37–71) 230
Weighing of Souls
Astronomical Book (72–82) 235
Solar Gates
Mythic Geography
Conclusions
Birth of Noah Fragment (106–107) 256
Conclusions 260
Conclusion 260

V: An Apocalyptic Hermeneutic 262
Introit: The Proposal 263
Hermeneutics: Re-Interpretation and Application of Traditions 266
Relation of Hermeneutics to Apocalyptic
The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic's Blueprint 268
Afterlife and Resurrection: Ezek 37:1–14
Day of Judgment: Ezek 38–39
Eschatology: Dan 2 and *Book of Watchers*
Reconstructing the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic (with an Eye towards Iran) 276
Shared Principles of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic
Jerusalem Temple
Immanence and Transcendence
Theodicy and Pessimism
Teleology
Determinism and Freedom
Eschatology: Imminent and Deferred
Typology, Mythology, and Prediction
Epistemology
Textual and Oral Hermeneutics
Examples of Potential Iranian Impact
Conclusions 285

Metalegomena 287

Appendix I: Primary Sources 293
Appendix II: Orthography of Languages 303
Appendix III: Glossary of Iranian Terms 306
Appendix IV: Annotated Definitions 313
Works Cited 319

- Table of Figures and Illustrations -

Figure 1. Apocalyptic Terminology
Author's own.

Figure 2. Religio-Cultural Interaction Terminology
Author's own.

Figure 3. Man with the Barəsman
Gold Plaque, British Museum ANE 123949. Used by Permission of British Museum © The Trustees of the British Museum

Figure 4. Mortar and Pestle from Persepolis
Chicago Oriental Institute P-57934. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

Figure 5. Bisitun (Behistun) Relief
From Rüdiger Schmitt. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991, plate 29. Photo by Heinz Luschey. Courtesy of Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum.

Figure 6. Mazdean Monotheism or Dualism in *Yasna* 30
Author's own.

Figures 7 and 8: Apadana
Chicago Oriental Institute PS-73, P-866. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

Figure 9. Lion and Bull relief
Chicago Oriental Institute P-468. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

Figure 10. The Winged Disk
From Roman Ghirshman. *Persia: From the Origins to Alexander the Great.* Trans. Stuart Gilbert and James Emmons. The Arts of Mankind. London: Thames & Hudson, 1964, page 199. Photo by Vahé. Permission Pending.

Figure 11. Map of Achaemenid Empire
Author's own

Figure 12. Media and their Overlaps
Author's own.

Figure 13. Orality and Literacy
Author's own.

Figure 14. Human burial at Persepolis
Chicago Oriental Institute P-61007. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

Figure 15. *Kulturentstehungsmythos* table
Author's own.

Figure 16. Mount Demavand.
Public Domain.

Figure 17. Milik's drawing of the 'Babylonian World Map'
From Józef T. Milik. *The Books of Enoch: Aramaic Fragments of Qumran Cave 4* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1976), p. 17. Used by permission of Oxford University Press.

Figure 18. Milik's map of *1 Enoch* 77
From Józef T. Milik. *The Books of Enoch: Aramaic Fragments of Qumran Cave 4* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1976), p. 18. Used by permission of Oxford University Press.

Figure 19. Image of 'Babylonian World Map'
British Museum BM 92687. Used by permission of the British Museum. © The Trustees of the British Museum

Figure 20. Boyce's illustration of *Karšuuars*
Redrawn after Mary Boyce. *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism* (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984), p. 17.

Figure 21. Shahbazi's illustration of Karšvars
From A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Darius' *'Haft Kišvar'*." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* Supp 10 (1985): p. 241. Used by permission of the Deutsches Archäologisches Institut, Eurasien-Abteilung.

Figure 22. Darius and His Supporters paralleled to Ahura Mazda and the *Amǝša Spǝntas*
Author's Own.

Figure 23. Achaemenid Earring
BMFA.1971.256. Used by Permission of the BMFA © Boston Museum of Fine Arts

Figure 24. Shahbazi's rendering of Darius' *Haftkaršuuar*
From A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Darius' *'Haft Kišvar'*." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* Supp 10 (1985): p. 244. Used by permission of the Deutsches Archäologisches Institut, Eurasien-Abteilung.

The writings known as apocalypses sit at the vortex of east and west, constituting a significant source of scholarly controversies in the study of emerging Judaism and Christianity. These works—which largely fall in the period between the books which would eventually make up the collections of the Hebrew Bible and the New Testament—are powerful and often obscure, dealing with many of the perennial issues which occupy the religious mind: the problems of suffering and of evil, the afterlife, and the appropriate source of religious authority. As such, they are extremely important not only in the history of Second Temple Judaism (ca. 597 B.C.E.–70 C.E.) but for the history of religions as well. The issues which come into play in the study of the apocalypses are questions which underlie many areas in the humanities: how do humans receive, understand, reformulate, and transmit traditions?

A major desideratum in the study of the Jewish apocalypses is whether or not they evidence Iranian influence, from either of the two relevant Iranian Empires with which the Judaeans came into contact, the Achaemenid Empire (ca. 550 B.C.E.–330 B.C.E.) or the Parthian Empire (ca. 250 B.C.E.–224 C.E.). Although some scholars considered the potential of Iranian influence as early at the eighteenth century, an adequate, comprehensive study of the question remains unwritten. A plethora of studies on the problem were conducted around the turn of the twentieth century, yet their excesses and racial biases discredited the topic among Biblical Scholars. Recent advances in the fields of Biblical Studies and Iranian Studies, however, mean the time is ripe for in-depth research of the question.

The exploration of the question 'what has Persepolis to do with Jerusalem' is one which should interest all students of the Bible, formative Judaism, the Ancient Near East, and ancient Iran. This dissertation seeks to renew that study on a firmer foundation.

- Acknowledgments -

No dissertation is written alone, and this dissertation has benefited from the insight and encouragement of many scholars.

The early efforts at grappling with the new field of Iranian studies were aided by the generous assistance, bibliographic information, and comments of Dr. Almut Hintze (SOAS) and Dr. Bryan Rennie (Westminster College). Of course, this study could not have even begun or continued very long without the tireless efforts to procure obscure materials by the Interlibrary Loan Officer at Trinity, Ms. Jane Moriarty.

I am grateful to several scholars who critiqued drafts of various sections of the dissertation. Professor Brian Espey (TCD) helped me understand the science behind the astronomy in *1 Enoch*. The textual analyses benefited from the insightful observations of Professor A. D. H. Mayes, Professor John J. Collins, and Dr. Benjamin Wold. Professor Susan Niditch cast her careful eye over the Orality chapter. Ms. Helen Jacobus (Manchester) helped me wade through unfamiliar Babylonian astronomical materials. I am also grateful for the improvements to my reading of *1 Enoch* 77 from Dr. Mark Geller; two anonymous reviewers also very helpfully critiqued this section. Several sections of the dissertation have also been improved through the suggestions and critiques of conference audiences.

Special thanks belong to my long-suffering advisor, Dr. Anne Fitzpatrick-McKinley, who persevered as my research took an unexpected Iranian turn. She constantly reminded me to rein my wanderings back towards Biblical Studies and to clarify my writing.

Far more than can be quantified, this research owes a debt to the constant discussions, companionship, and encouragement offered by my biblical compatriots in Dublin, Father Murray Watson, Lidia D. Matassa, Amy Daughton, Audrey Barnett, Jason Michael Reid McCann, Claire Carroll, Máire Byrne, and Killian McAleese. They endured patiently more rantings on Persia and things apocalyptic than they probably ever cared to hear during our periodic coffees in 'Paris' and helped organize the conferences where material from this dissertation was first publicly aired. I am particularly in the debt of Murray, Máire, and Killian, who acquired sources unavailable at Trinity and proof-read various drafts for me.

Beyond academic debts, I am grateful for the continual encouragement received by my friends and family over the course of my studies.

Finally, two years of my research were made possible by a scholarship from the Mediterranean and Near Eastern Studies Seminar, TCD. Most helpfully, I was able to attend several Annual and International Society of Biblical Literature conferences due to the support offered through the conference travel grants of the Trinity Trust.

Earlier versions of two sections included in this dissertation have previously appeared in print. A modified form of the section entitled 'Types of Influence and Transmission' in the Prolegomena is published as 'On Cultural and Religious Influence.'[1] The first section of Chapter II: The Achaemenid Context appears as 'Iranian-Judaean Interaction in the Achaemenid Period.'[2]

The style, grammar, and orthography of this text follows the Chicago Manual Style and the SBL style guides;[3] choices for where they differ are eclectic. The exception to this rule is the inclusion, for ease of reference, of the publications consulted for primary texts.

---

[1] In Jason M. Silverman, ed., *A Land Like Your Own: Traditions of Israel and Their Reception* (Eugene, OR: Pickwick, 2010).

[2] In Lidia D. Matassa and Jason M. Silverman, eds., *Text, Theology, and Trowel: Recent Research into the Hebrew Bible* (Scranton, PA: Scranton Univ Press, 2010).

[3] *The Chicago Manual of Style* (15th ed.; Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 2003); Patrick H. Alexander, et al., eds. *The SBL Handbook of Style for Ancient Near Eastern, Biblical, and Early Christian Studies* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1999).

Boyce, *HZ I*	Boyce, Mary. *A History of Zoroastrianism: The Early Period.* Vol. I. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.1. Leiden: Brill, 1975.
Boyce, *HZ II*	Boyce, Mary. *A History of Zoroastrianism: Under the Achaemenians.* Vol. II. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.2. Leiden: Brill, 1982.
Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*	Boyce, Mary, and Frantz Grenet. *A History of Zoroastrianism: Zoroastrianism under Macedonian and Roman Rule.* Vol. III. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2.3. Leiden: Brill, 1991.
Zend-Avesta I	*The Vendidad.* Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta, Part I.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 4. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1992. First Published 1895 by Clarendon.
Zend-Avesta II	*The Sīrōzahs, Yasts, and Nyāyis.* Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta, Part II.* Ed. F. Max Müller. The Sacred Books of the East 23. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1882 by Oxford Univ Press.
Zend-Avesta III	*The Yasna, Visparad, Āfrīnagān, Gāhs, and Miscellaneous Fragments.* Trans. Lawrence H. Mills. *The Zend-Avesta, Part III.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 31. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1887 by Oxford Univ Press.
Pahlavi Texts I	*The Bundahis, Bahman Yast, and Shāyast Lā-Shāyast.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts, Part I: Sacred Books of the East.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 5. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1880 by Oxford Univ Press.
Pahlavi Texts II	*The Dādistān-ī Dīnik and the Epistles of Mānūskīhar.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts, Part II.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 18. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1882 by Oxford Univ Press.
Pahlavi Texts III	*Dīnā-ī Maīnōg-ī Khirad Sikand-Gūmānīk Vigār Sad Dar.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts, Part III.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 24. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1885 by Oxford Univ Press.
Pahlavi Texts IV	*Contents of the Nasks.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts, Part IV:* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 37. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1892 by Oxford Univ Press.
Pahlavi Texts V	*Marvels of Zoroastrianism.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts, Part V.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 47. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1897 by Oxford Univ Press.

For all other citations, short titles are used for non-debut appearances.

Prolegomena

Introit

Since the first appearance of the Avesta in the West, the influence of Iranian ideas on Judaism has been periodically mooted by scholars. Yet, despite this seemingly rich heritage, a thorough and adequate study has yet to appear. This study redresses this by beginning a re-evaluation of the potential import of Iranian ideas on the formation of the apocalypses and related phenomena in Second Temple Judaism.[1] Towards this end it is necessary to situate the discussion within the scholarly contexts of two broad fields: the history of the question of Persian influence on Judaism and Christianity and of the study of apocalyptic[2] in Biblical Studies. After this is done, it will be possible to describe the contexts and methodologies upon which a re-evaluation of the question may proceed. As this discussion makes apparent, there is ample scope and need for further research into this question.

Before proceeding, however, a brief explanation for the focus of this study largely upon apocalyptic rather than on Second Temple Judaism more broadly is merited. The first reason is disciplinary: the focus of research on Iranian influence has fallen on the apocalypses, therefore they represent a convenient place to begin engagement with the questions current in scholarship. The working hypothesis of this study provides the second: that the predominence of Iranian influence is to be found within apocalyptic. That a focus on apocalyptic does not exclude or minimize potential influence on other forms of Judaism is due to how this study understands the apocalypses to be related to Second Temple Judaism as a whole: they are related via a dialectical, hermeneutical relationship. This relationship is sketched out further below and argued at length in Chapter V.

Towards these ends proceeds the following. First, a brief discussion of the history of scholarship on Iranian influences demonstrates the need for a re-evaluation. Second, the background of apocalyptic studies prepares the view of apocalyptic here advocated as a locus for potential Iranian influences. This is followed by a statement of the methods needed to investigate influence. Finally, the plan of the study proper is presented.

History of Iranian Influence on Judaism

---

[1] While the plurality of traditions and forms which may be subsumed under the rubric 'Judaism' is acknowledged, it is here maintained that there remains enough identifiable continuity to meaningfully speak of a tradition without recourse to the word 'Judaisms.' This usage is not meant to deny the diachronic and synchronic differences which by necessity must be subsumed under a comprehensive term such as 'Second Temple Judaism.' In this study 'Judaeans,' 'Jews,' and 'Yahwists' are used as convenient synonyms, without making any claims towards the vexed issue of the validity of speaking of 'Judaism' versus 'Yahwism' at this early period. The possibility of 'Yahwists' descended from Israelites or converts is not excluded from this usage. For related issues, see Steve Mason, "Jews, Judaeans, Judaizing, Judaism: Problems of Categorization in Ancient History," *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 38.4–5 (2007): pp. 247–512.

[2] For the definition of 'apocalyptic' and related nouns, see below.

Scholars have long contemplated the question of Zoroastrian influence on Judaism and Christianity.[3] Although there was a period of intense interest in the subject during the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, comparatively little research into the details of the issue has taken place in the past century. While many scholars were quite enamoured of the idea of Persian influences on Judaism, 'parallelomania'[4] took the idea to extremes and helped to discredit the idea with biblical scholars.[5] Additionally, the rejection of oral theories associated with biblical literature as advocated by Gunkel and others[6] prejudiced biblical scholars against the Iranian material, some of which comes from certain late Zoroastrian texts.[7] Beyond the textual question, however, a focus on Hellenistic history has disguised the relevance of the Achaemenid and Parthian eras to the question.

The heyday of studies into Persian influence was the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries.[8] Two scholars, Moulton and Mills, illustrate the unfruitful methods which dominated the studies in this period. The biblical scholar Moulton devoted a series of articles and later a book to the issue of Zoroastrian influence on Judaism.[9] He already suggested that where influence on Judaism can be found, it can be found in the apocalypses,[10] but he primarily based this claim on ideas of the inferiority of apocalyptic religion and the superiority of the biblical tradition. Far from an acceptable reason for positing or rejecting influence, this type of reasoning has played a significant role in discussions of the issue in the past. Another contemporary scholar to apply himself to the question of influence was Mills, the translator of part of the Iranian texts in the *Sacred Books*

---

[3] Mark J. Dresden, "Survey of the History of Iranian Studies," *Iranistik: Literatur*, Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1 (Leiden: Brill, 1968), pp. 171–173; Mary Boyce, *A History of Zoroastrianism: The Early Period*, vol. I, Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.1 (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1975), pp. ix–xii; an overview of very early studies can be found in Jes P. Asmussen, "Die Verkündigung Zarathustras im Lichte der Religionsgeschichte," *Temenos* 6 (1970): pp. 22–24; Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, *The Western Response to Zoroaster*, Ratanbai Katrak Lectures (Oxford: Clarendon, 1958), pp. 86–87

[4] Term from Samuel Sandmel, "Parallelomania," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 81.1 (1962): pp. 1–13.

[5] E.g., James Barr, "The Question of Religious Influence: the case of Zoroastrianism, Judaism, and Christianity," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 53 (1985): pp. 204–208; Jacob Neusner, "Jews and Judaism under Iranian Rule: Bibliographical Reflections," *History of Religions* 8.2 (1968): part I.

[6] For more discussion of this topic, see Chapter III.

[7] E.g., *The Ardā Virāz Nāmag*, *the Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*.

[8] For other examples, see Alexander Kohut, *Über die Jüdische Angelologie und Dämonologie in ihrer Abhängigkeit vom Parsismus*, Abhandlungen der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft 4.3 (Leipzig: Brockhaus, 1866); Martin Haug, "Über das Ardâî Vîrâf Nâmeh (die Visionen das alten Parsenpriester Ardâî Vîrâf) und seinen angeblichen Zusammenhang mit dem Christlichen Apocryphon, 'die Himmelfahrt des Jesaja' betitelt," *Sitzungsberichte der kgl.bayerischen Akademie der Wissenschaften* I.3 (1870): 327–346; C. F. Aiken, "The Avesta and the Bible," *Catholic University Bulletin* 3 (1897): 243–291; A. V. Williams Jackson, "Zoroastrianism and the Resemblences between It and Christianity," *Biblical World* 27.5 (1906): pp. 335–343.

[9] James H. Moulton, "Zoroaster and Israel I," *The Thinker* 1.5 (1892): pp. 401–408; James H. Moulton, "Zoroaster and Israel—A Reply," *The Thinker* 2.1 (1893): pp. 16–18; James H. Moulton, "Zoroaster and Israel II," *The Thinker* 2.4 (1893):pp. 308–315; James H. Moulton, "Zoroaster and Israel III," *The Thinker* 2.6 (1893): pp. 490–501; James H. Moulton, "Zoroastrian Influences on Judaism," *Expository Times* 9 (1898): pp. 352–358; James H. Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism: The Origins, The Prophet, The Magi* (Amsterdam: Philo, 1972).

[10] E.g. Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 326.

of the East series. The opponent of Moulton,[11] Mills saw sweeping parallels between Zoroastrianism and both Judaism and Christianity, to the point of identifying the Platonic and Philonic *Logos* with the *Amәša Spәntas* of the Avesta.[12] His studies are tendentious and totalizing, and therefore of little contemporary use other than as examples of how not to proceed.[13] While individual details on occasion are useful as starting points, a thorough re-investigation of all of his ideas is needed to accept them. Together Moulton and Mills illustrate two common faults in this early discussion: the ideologically charged nature of influence and a sweeping 'parallelomania.'

Most investigations into Persian influence can be labelled along three lines: ideological, enumeration of parallels, or discrete, brief studies. A concise discussion of these types will demonstrate the need for a new study.

Ideological

One of the more extensive investigations into the potential of Iranian influence is Sheftelowitz's 1920 study.[14] Scheftelowitz concludes that the similiarities between the two traditions are mostly parallel developments, with only relatively 'cosmetic' borrowings such as eschatology.[15] The strength of the Judaic religion was so strong that it inoculated Judaism from the Achaemenid's influence until the Greco-Roman period.[16] Despite Judaism's apparent resilience towards influence, however, Sheftelowitz is willing to see Babylon wield its power upon both traditions.[17] This is a peculiarly selective 'resilience' on the part of Judaism. His conclusions, however, deserve to be reappraised; much of his study is based on the Rabbinic literature rather than the Hebrew Bible or Pseudepigrapha, and both the Iranian and Biblical Studies disciplines have developed for nearly a century since. Even if it would conclude along similar lines, a study of similar extent is certainly due.

Shortly after Scheftelowitz's study, Maynard proceeded along contrary lines, arguing that religions can only be influenced through 'externals' and not ideas.[18] On this basis he proceeds to list practices which Judaism and Zoroastrianism do not hold in common. He then further claims that since only (superficial) similarities are to be found in apocalyptic

---

[11] Lawrence H. Mills, "Mr. Moulton's Zoroaster and Israel," *The Thinker* 1.6 (1892): pp. 508–514.
[12] Lawrence H. Mills, *Zarathuštra, Philo, the Achaemenids, and Israel* (Leipzig: Brockhaus, 1905-6), pp. 12–17.
[13] Mills, *Zarathuštra, Philo, the Achaemenids, and Israel*; Lawrence H. Mills, *Avesta Eschatology Compared with the Books of Daniel and Revelation* (Chicago: Open Court, 1908); Lawrence H. Mills, *Our Own Religion in Ancient Persia* (Chicago: 1913).
[14] J. Scheftelowitz, *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum: Unterschiede, Übereinstimmungen, und gegenseitige Beeinflussungen* (Giessen: Töpelmann, 1920).
[15] Scheftelowitz, *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum*, pp. 228–229.
[16] Scheftelowitz, *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum*, p. 4, 6.
[17] Scheftelowitz, *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum*, p. 153, 224–225.
[18] John Albert Maynard, "Judaism and Mazdayasna: A Study in dissimilarities," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 44.1–2 (1925): pp. 163–164.

literature, which "remained very much on the margin of the main current of Jewish thought," the parallels are thus unimportant.[19] Despite the logical and methodological problems inherent in Maynard's approach, it appears that his main reservation is due to the assumption that the Israelites held religious genius, and therefore had no need to borrow ideas.[20] This kind of argument fails to advance research in any meaningful direction.

It is apparent that a non-value-laden understanding of influence is necessary to better undergird the investigation of intercultural, interreligious influence.

Enumeration of Parallels

The work of a number of scholars consists in essence of listing parallels and pontificating on their (non)-importance. In the last chapter of his *Western Response to Zoroaster*, Duchesne-Guillemin appraises the thesis of Persian influence in light of the Dead Sea Scrolls and Zurvanism.[21] His treatment here is contented with dismissing a few general parallels (Philo's *Logos*, the messiah) and listing a few he favors (two spirits in the *Manual of Discipline*). Similarly, in his respective study,[22] Carter attributes the appearance in Judaism of strict monotheism, a developed angelology, personal eschatology, and resurrection to a catalyszing effect of Zoroastrianism, even positing an absorption of Persian proselytes.[23] While Carter's investigation laudably distinguishes between the wholesale importation of new ideas and the catalyzing potential of ideas, his short book is unfortunately terse and uncritical in its use and appraisal of both the Jewish and Zoroastrian literatures. With the exception of the appearance of the demon Asmodeus in Tobit,[24] he prefers to discuss general similarities or parallels than investigating problematic details in the Jewish texts which find better explanation in Iranian sources. In 1966 Winston attempted to establish the importance of Iranian ideas for Qumran.[25] In the course of his argumentation, he discusses Second Isaiah, *1* and *2 Enoch*, *The Assumption of Moses*, and *The Testament of Abraham*. Winston merely offers a variety of interesting and useful parallels, since, due to the limited length of the article, he is unable to tease out further evidence or structural considerations beyond the parallels. This leaves the reader unsatisfied and unconvinced. While offering a useful starting point for investigation, a more thorough study investigating influence is still needed to evaluate the significance of the particular parallels which he notes.

---

[19] Maynard, "Judaism and Mazdayasna," p. 168.
[20] Maynard, "Judaism and Mazdayasna," p. 170.
[21] Duchesne-Guillemin, *The Western Response to Zoroaster*, p. 88.
[22] George William Carter, *Zoroastrianism and Judaism* (New York: AMS, 1970).
[23] Carter, *Zoroastrianism and Judaism*, p. 106.
[24] Carter, *Zoroastrianism and Judaism*, p. 65.
[25] David Winston, "The Iranian Component in the Bible, Apocrypha, and Qumran: a Review of the Evidence," *History of Religions* 5 (1966): p. 187.

The more modern study of Cohn fares little better in detail. Cohn, the author of a remarkable study of Medieval Christian millenarianism,[26] forcibly argues for the influence of Zoroastrianism on Jewish and Christian apocalypticism.[27] After investigating the cosmological and historical beliefs of the Ancient Near Eastern peoples and the Vedic Indians, Cohn finds no eschatological beliefs which parallel those in the Jewish apocalypses.[28] However, he notes analogous eschatological beliefs developing in Iran under the name of Zoroaster. He gives an admirable summary of Zoroastrian beliefs (chapter 4), and identifies it with the royal religion.[29] Without denying the role of Canaanite myths or Mesopotamian influences, Cohn sees the development of eschatology as due to influence during the Hellenistic period, perhaps partly due to the descendants of Iranian colonists in Mesopotamia and Anatolia.[30] However, only the last chapter of his book is devoted to exploring the parallels and details which the Jewish and Zoroastrians texts share. While his overall thesis is important for this study—that much of the ideas which are new in the apocalypses are borrowed from Iran, as the relevant ideas can only be found there—he leaves much room for a more detailed study, to shore up his argument with specifics.[31]

Boyce is also a strong advocate of the relevance of Iranian studies to the history of Judaism. Primarily in her monumental history of Zoroastrianism, Boyce suggests areas in which Judaism was influenced by Iranian ideas.[32] She traces influence well before the advent of the apocalypse in Second and Third Isaiah and the careers of Ezra and Nehemiah, as well as in the Priestly Code. Her individual suggestions are provoking and deserve deeper investigation; her presentation of the material, however, is more of a general rather than analytical kind and unlikely to carry much persuasive force in the eyes of scholars. Additionally, since she frequently presents general parallel situations, her account could easily be accused of 'parallelomania.' She does, however, attend to the possible historical contexts

---

[26] Norman Cohn, *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages* (London: Pimlico, 2004).

[27] Norman Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith*, 2nd ed. (New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1995), the thesis of which is available in summary in Norman Cohn, "How Time Acquired a Consummation," *Apocalypse Theory and the Ends of the World*, ed. Malcolm Bull (Oxford: Blackwell, 1995), pp. 21–37.

[28] Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos*, Part I.

[29] Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos*, p. 145.

[30] Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos*, pp. 220–221.

[31] E.g., note the hesitant review of Cohn's thesis in Devorah Dimant, "Review: Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith by Norman Cohn," *History of Religions* 36.1 (1996): pp. 79–81; Jamsheed K. Choksy, "Review: Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith by Norman Cohn," *Iranian Studies* 29.1/2 (1996): p. 183; and the specific call for an in-depth study by John J. Collins, "Review: Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith. By Norman Cohn," *Theological Studies* 55.2 (1994): pp. 347–348.

[32] Mary Boyce, *A History of Zoroastrianism: Under the Achaemenians*, vol. II, Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.2 (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1982), pp. 188–195; Mary Boyce and Frantz Grenet, *A History of Zoroastrianism: Zoroastrianism under Macedonian and Roman Rule*, vol. III, Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2.3 (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1991), pp. 361–465 (in the context of overall influences).

for interaction, primarily in the Parthian-Hellenistic struggles in Anatolia.[33] With attention to the difficulties of dating, her comments highlight very valuable points for investigation. Her work is an exceedingly important work of synthesis in the Iranian field, and this study has much recourse to her works and individual suggestions of parallels.

A well known study which accepts Persian influence is that of D. S. Russell. While open to and positive about Zoroastrian influences on the apocalyptic literature, Russell never investigates them in any depth. For him, Persian angelology 'facilitated' the monotheistic tendency to demote old gods to angels and influenced the development of demonology,[34] and he parallels chronological schemata to ones in both Babylon and the *Bundahišn*.[35] He briefly investigates Moulton's discussion of *frauuašīs*, but comes to no real conclusions.[36] Russell's work clearly points to the role of native Jewish traditions in apocalypticism, while allowing for foreign elements. However, since his discussion never deals with the problems inherent in the Iranian sources nor with the possible loci of transmission it is thus susceptible to a charge of overly abstract parallelism. His views still leave room for a more thorough investigation into how and where, if any, Iranian influence may be found.

Yamauchi's massive volume, *Persia and the Bible*, purports to offer an overview of the relevant materials for study.[37] As a source book, the volume is extremely helpful: the bibliography—both primary and secondary—is immense. A scholar seeking to broach the subject would do well to start with his tome for access to many of the issues of relevance to the subject. However, the book suffers from errors in relating to the relevant Iranian scholarship and can therefore be misleading.[38] Further, despite the promising title for the present purposes, he undertakes very little detailed discussion on questions of influence. His inclusion of wide-ranging Iranian topics in the volume, however, represents a better historical grounding to inquiry.

Studies Pointing in a Better Direction[39]

---

[33] Mary Boyce, *Zoroastrianism: a Shadowy but Powerful Presence in the Judaeo-Christian World*, Friends of Dr. William's Library Lecture (London: Dr. William's Trust, 1987), pp. 11–15.

[34] D. S. Russell, *The Method and Message of Jewish Apocalyptic: 200 B.C.–A.D. 100* (London: SCM, 1964), p. 235, 260–262.

[35] Russell, *Method and Message*, pp. 228–229.

[36] Russell, *Method and Message*, pp. 259–260.

[37] Edwin M. Yamauchi, *Persia and the Bible* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1996).

[38] Cf. the errors noted by Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Review: *Persia and the Bible* by Edwin M. Yamauchi," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 114.3 (1994): pp. 501–504; James R. Russell, "Review of *Persia and the Bible* by Edwin M. Yamauchi," *The Jewish Quarterly Review* 83.1/2 (1992): pp. 260–261.

[39] Only a few studies are here mentioned; for others, see Rudolf Mayer, "Monotheismus in Israel und in der Religion Zarathustras," *Biblische Zeitschrift* 1 (1957): pp. 23–58; K. M. Jamasp Asa, "Relationship between Zoroastrianism and Judaism," *Second International Congress Proceedings of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute (5th–8th Jan. 1995)* (Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Insitute, 1996); Elaine Marie Jones, "An Examination of the Influence of Zoroastrianism on the Development of Belief in Resurrection of the Dead in Judaism.," (MA Diss., University of Wales, 1989); James R. Russell, "Zoroastrian Elements in the Book of Esther," *Irano-Judaica II*, eds. Shaul

A number of useful and careful studies of discrete issues and passages, or short forays into the topic, also exist. Most of these will be discussed in more depth in the appropriate places; comments here merely point towards a more fruitful approach to the topic.

The Scandinavian scholar Widengren is generally affirmative of Iranian influence on Jewish thought, and has tried to show a variety of parallels. His most drawn-out analysis of a Jewish text is on *1 Enoch*, in which he sees quite a variety of parallels with four major points: dualism, 'apocalyptic pattern,' eschatology and judgment, and visions.[40] In addition to *1 Enoch*, he has suggested Parthian influence on Early Christianity as well.[41] Widengren presents a number of interesting and useful parallels on this text, out of an understanding of a 'Zurvanite' and Parthian milieu. His discussion falls largely within the context of his earlier work on the Parthians, and so his comments largely consist of contextualizing the role of the Parthians in the West by pointing out various instances of parallels. Yet, since the parallels noted are rarely discussed in depth or with regards to their significance in the Jewish context, they have not received much acceptance among biblical scholars. Widengren's attention to a specific historical context for influence represents a solid beginning for a renewed appraisal.

Shaked directly addresses the issue of Iranian influence, as well as editing several volumes on the question in Judaism at large.[42] Shaked believes that the dilemma at hand is not whether there was Iranian influence on Judaism but its extent and importance.[43] In his *Cambridge History of Judaism* article he approaches the issue from the perspective of a few

---

Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1990); James R. Russell, "God is Good: On Tobit and Iran," *Iran and the Cacasus* 5 (2001): pp. 1–6; E. Stave, *Über den Einfluss des Parsismus auf das Judentum* (Haarlem: 1989); Almut Hintze, "The Saviour and the Dragon in Iranian and Jewish/Christian Eschatology," *Irano-Judaica IV*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999), pp. 72–90; P. Wernberg-Møller, "A Reconsideration of the Two Spirits in the Rule of the Community (IQSerek III,13–IV,26)," *Revue de Qumran* 3 (1961): pp. 413–441; Shlomo Pines, "Wrath and Creature of Wrath in Pahlavi, Jewish and New Testament Sources," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 76–82; Paul J. Kobelski, *Melchizedek and Mechireša'*, CBQMS 10 (Washington, DC: Catholic Biblical Association of America, 1981), chapter 6. For a study akin to the approach advocated here for the much later Rabbinic period, see Geoffrey Herman, "Ahasuerus, the Former Stable-Master of Belshazzar, and the wicked Alexander of Macedon: two Parallels Between the Babylonian Talmud and Persian Sources," *AJS Review* 29.2 (2005): pp. 283–297.

[40] Geo Widengren, "Iran and Israel in Parthian Times with Special Regard to the Ethiopic Book of Enoch," *Temenos* 2 (1966): p. 152.

[41] Eg. Geo Widengren, *Iranisch-semitische Kulturbegegnung in parthischer Zeit*, Arbeitsgemeinschaft für Forschung des Landes Nordrhein-Westfalen 70 (Cologne: Westdeutscher Verlag, 1960), pp. 36–37, 67–70, where he sees Mithradatic influence in Matthew's story of the Magi; he generally prefers a Parthian setting, e.g., Geo Widengren, "Stand und Aufgaben der iranischen Religionsgeschichte II: Geschichte der iranischen Religionen und ihre Nachwirkung," *Numen* 2.1–2 (1955): p. 108.

[42] Shaul Shaked, "Iranian Influence on Judaism: first century B.C.E to second century C.E.," *The Cambridge History of Judaism*, eds. W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein, vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2000), pp. 308–325; Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer, eds., *Irano-Judaica: Studies relating to Jewish contacts with Persian culture throughout the ages*, 3 vols. (Jerusalem: Ben-Zvi Institute, 1982, 1990, 1994); Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer, eds., *Irano-Judaica IV* (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999); Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer, eds., *Irano-Judaica V* (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003).

[43] Shaked, "Iranian Influence on Judaism," p. 309.

'cognate parallels': dualistic tendencies; elaborate and counter angel- and demonologies; cosmic and individual predestination; periodicism; eschatology with judgment, ordeals, resurrection, and salvation. According to Shaked, these concepts are more 'organically' woven into the warp and woof of the Iranian system than in Israel, indicating a likelihood that they were adopted piecemeal from Iran as they aided the Judaic system, rather than originating in the Jewish context.[44] He is not content with just a general approach and offers closer examinations of Esther[45] and the relationship of Aramaic to Old Persian.[46] Shaked's in-depth knowledge of the Iranian material and sensitivity to the contexts of both traditions points forward to a better, more critical appraisal of the role and importance of Iranian ideas upon Jewish traditions. A scholar would do well to apply similar approaches and concerns to a larger body of Judaean texts in greater detail, enabling a more nuanced answer to the common observation of 'cognate parallels.'

Call to Re-evaluation: Towards a Methodology

In a well-known article, Barr is highly skeptical of attempts to appeal to Zoroastrian influence on Judaism.[47] He rejects many of the typical parallels between the two traditions (such as in angelology), but allows for either an influence on conceptions of ritual purity, or late, Hellenistic-mediated influence.[48] Barr critiques what he sees as an overly tendentious approach to the problem which sees influence as *necessary* to explain the development of Judaism, and therefore seeks evidence of it.[49] However, as Hinnells notes, the real question is not whether it is *necessary* but whether it did in fact occur.[50] Barr proceeds to investigate a few details, most notably the writings' opinions of the Persian rulers and the occurrence of Persian loanwords. He concludes that the Jews were uninterested in Persian religion since the majority of loanwords pertain to administration rather than religion.[51] However, the force of this argument is undercut by two points: 1) his own observation that Nehemiah, who was most likely extremely familiar with Achaemenid religion, only uses the likely loanword פרדס, negating the evidential import of loanwords for potential contact;[52] 2) the limitation of the concept of influence to 'religious' concerns *per se*. Be that as it may, Barr

---

[44] Shaked, "Iranian Influence on Judaism," especially pp. 321–323.
[45] Shaul Shaked, "Two Judaeo-Iranian Contributions," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 292–303.
[46] Shaul Shaked, "Between Iranian and Aramaic: Iranian Words Concerning Food in Jewish Babylonian Aramaic, with Some Notes on the Aramaic Hetereograms in Iranian," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), pp. 120–137.
[47] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," pp. 201–235.
[48] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 219, 228–229.
[49] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 204.
[50] John R. Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 45 (1976): p. 9.
[51] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 212.
[52] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 213.

admirably demonstrates the methodological care which needs to be used when evaluating the probability of Judaean interaction with Iranian traditions, and avoids the temptation to equate general parallels with influence *per se*. Barr's concerns highlight the need for an examination of the bases posited for proposed parallels.

Hinnells argues forcibly for the relevance of Zoroastrian texts to Second Temple Judaism and Early Christianity. In a series of articles,[53] he calls for a more nuanced understanding of the concept of influence than sometimes assumed in the scholarly literature, posits a historical setting in the Parthian era, and points to various details which he finds illustrative of the influence of Iranian ideas. Among the details, he notes that the development of demonology in Judaism and Christianity—often conceded to be a result of influence—has further implications in other theological areas, notably in the role of a saviour figure.[54] Structural similarities and various parallels between Zoroastrian ideas of eschatology, demonology, and a saviour make influence appear likely. He briefly notes details in various apocryphal and New Testament texts which he feels demonstrates knowledge of Iranian ideas, in particular positing influence in the Books of Matthew and Revelation.[55] These articles have received little attention from biblical scholars, but the methodological arguments and the parallels he briefly mentions deserve a more thorough investigation. Hinnell's discussions on the nature of inter-religious influence is taken up in a following section as an essential part of any methodology dealing with issues of religious influence.

Grabbe gives an excellent, albeit short, overview of the issues which beset the scholar interested in the question of Persian influence.[56] He identifies five main methodological issues which must be addressed in such discussion: 1) The dating of Zoroaster and thus of the tradition bearing his name; 2) philological and textual problems; 3) dating of the ideas and literature itself; 4) the sociological manner of the transmission of influence; 5) the problem of determining 'influence' in the first issue. All of these points are very apt and are critically addressed in this study.

The question of Iranian influence on Judaism and Early Christianity in general and apocalyptic literature in particular deserves a thorough analysis which takes into account the

---

[53] Cf: Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," pp. 1–23 and the two articles which are reprinted in section B of his book, John R. Hinnells, *Zoroastrian and Parsi Studies: Selected Works of John R. Hinnells* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000), pp. 27–92 ("Zoroastrian Saviour Imagery and its Influence on the New Testment," pp. 45–72; first published in *Numen* 16.3 (1969): pp. 161–185; "Zoroastrian Influence on Judaism and Christianity: Some Further Reflections," pp. 73–92; first published pages 305–322 in *Studi Storico-Religiosi In Onore Do Ugo Bianchi* (ed. G. Stameni-Gasparo; Rome: L'Erma di Bretschneider, 1994).

[54] In particular, Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Saviour Imagery" (in Hinnells, *Zoroastrian and Parsi Studies*, p. 46, 61).

[55] Hinnells, *Zoroastrian and Parsi Studies*, pp. 81–84.

[56] Lester L. Grabbe, *A History of the Jews and Judaism in the Second Temple Period, Vol I: Yehud: A History of the Persian Province of Judah*, Library of Second Temple Studies 47 (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 361–365.

historical context as well as all the evidence available from the various sources. Indeed, several scholars call for this.[57] Re-opening the question of Iranian influences neither implies an uncritical acceptance of late texts nor a rejection of the advances in sociological and literary understandings of the apocalypses and millenarian movements; rather, it adds a new piece into the overall puzzle of the emergence of the new phenomenon in the Ancient Near East.

Iranian Influence

This dissertation deliberately discusses 'Iranian' influence rather than the more typical discussion of 'Zoroastrianism.' There is an undue fixation on 'Zoroastrianism' *per se* in Biblical Scholarship, which is misleading and less than useful. 'Zoroastrianism' in its classic and most well-known form was formulated in the Sassanian Empire and consists of a more or less homogeneous tradition which was the basis of the official Empire-sponsored religion. This is primarily the religion that is found in the ninth century texts. This tradition is the culmination of nearly 2000 years of religious tradition and does not exhaust the forms and ideas in Iran up to and including the Sassanian period. Just as it is misleading to speak of Rabbinic Judaism as the sole form of Judaism or to use it as a definitive model for Second Temple Judaism, it is misleading to attempt to focus only on Sassanian Zoroastrianism. For this reason, this dissertation expands the discourse to 'Iranian religion.' 'Iranian religion' includes a matrix of more or less organically related religious ideas traditionally transmitted by Iranian peoples. The words 'Iran' and 'Iranian' derive from the Old Persian word 'Arya' or 'Aryan,' which appears in the inscriptions of Darius I, and are used to refer, in the first instance, to a group of linguistically related languages and, by extension, to the peoples who have spoken those languages. Old Persian is the Iranian language of the Achaemenids. The Iranian linguistic family includes the modern languages of Farsi, Pashto, and Ossetic, and the linguistic area covers much more space than the modern Islamic Republic of Iran. The use of 'Iranian religion' rather than 'Persian religion' broadens the discussion to all the varieties of Iranian religion, rather than to focus merely on the forms which were (or were not) consonant with the Sassanian forms. This is not to discount the importance or relevance of Zoroastrianism, but to shift the focus away from discussion of the (non-)relationship of 'Orthodox Zoroastrianism' to the Achaemenids' 'Mazdaism' and towards an evaluation of the traditions in the sources as a whole.

---

[57] Collins, "Review: Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come," p. 348; Philip R. Davies, "God of Cyrus, God of Israel: Some Religio-Historical Reflections on Isaiah 40-55," *Words Remembered, Texts Renewed: Essays in Honour of John F.A. Sawyer*, eds. Jon Davies, et al., JSOTSS 195 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995), pp. 224–225; Lester L. Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2003), pp. 33–34.

A proposed method for understanding 'influence' and for pursuing the question appears below. First, it is necessary to clarify what is meant by 'apocalyptic.'

Apocalyptic Studies[58]

The origins and development of Jewish apocalyptic literature and its relationships with other Judaean literature have long been dilemmas for which many solutions have been offered. Beyond the complexity of the primary sources, the question is complicated by several problems. First, scholars differ on the use and referents of several key terms, causing confusion and circular arguments between scholars on the various subjects. Secondly, the focus and methodological assumptions of scholars vary nearly to the point of positing competing, mutually exclusive models for the history of religions. Despite the plethora of studies on the prophetic and apocalyptic literatures in the past decades, many major issues still appear to elude scholarly consensus. A brief overview of the issues in the literature on the subject will highlight some of the problematics and point to the perspectives adopted for the following study.

Definition of Apocalyptic

The term 'apocalyptic' has generated fierce debate as to its appropriate referent and suitability. The major problem with the term is its tendency to simultaneously denote a genre, a worldview, and a sociological phenomenon. Hanson proposes to replace the term 'apocalyptic' with the terms 'apocalypse,' 'apocalyptic eschatology,' and 'apocalypticism' for the three respective referents[59]—and many scholars utilize his or a similar division[60]—but the term apocalyptic as a noun still periodically makes a re-emergence in discussions.[61] The reason for this is the apparent—but difficult to define—relation between the three. Few scholars would argue for a one-to-one correspondence between apocalypses and apocalyptic movements, yet a relationship of some sort does exist. However, a difficulty with Hanson's

---

[58] For other overviews with slightly different emphases and more comprehensive pretensions see Frederick J. Murphy, "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism: The State of the Question," *Currents in Research: Biblical Studies* 2 (1994): pp. 147–179; D. Brent Sandy and Daniel M. O'Hare, *Prophecy and Apocalyptic: an Anotated Bibliography* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 2007); Lorenzo DiTommaso, "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism in Antiquity Part I," *Currents in Biblical Research* 5.2 (2007): pp. 235–286; Lorenzo DiTommaso, "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism in Antiquity, Part II," *Currents in Biblical Research* 5.3 (2007): pp. 367–432.

[59] Paul D. Hanson, "Apocalypticism," *Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, Supplementary Volume*, ed. Keith Crim (Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1976), pp. 29–31; James C. VanderKam, "Recent Studies in 'apocalyptic'," *Word and World: Theology for Christian Ministry* 4 (1984): pp. 70–77.

[60] E.g., Robert L. Webb, "'Apocalyptic': Observations on a Slippery Term," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 49.2 (1990): pp. 115–117; David E. Aune, *Apocalypticism, Prophecy and Magic in Early Christianity*, WUNT 199 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2006), p. 6, 80–81.

[61] Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," and Lester L. Grabbe, "Prophetic and Apocalyptic: Time for New Definitions—and New Thinking," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak, JSPSS 46 (London: T & T Clark, 2003), pp. 2–43, 107–133, respectively.

definitions is his heavy reliance on eschatology, a term which itself has serious problems (see below). While there is at least a basic consensus on what constitutes the genre of apocalypse,[62] there is little agreement on either the nature of related movements or worldviews or their relations to apocalypses.

This study uses the terms 'apocalypse' for the genre, 'apocalyptic movements' or 'millenarianism' for related movements, and 'apocalypticism' for the worldview. The term 'apocalyptic literature' is used for texts which may contain apocalypses within them or otherwise closely associated with apocalypses, but may not strictly be apocalypses themselves. The study understands, and will attempt to partially demonstrate, that a prior stream which is here termed an 'apocalyptic hermeneutic' is what links the 'apocalyptic' phenomena and accounts for their resemblances, rather than the link being the texts themselves. Such an understanding explains why some of the ideas which are evidenced in apocalypses can reappear in non-apocalypse genres. When the term 'apocalyptic' appears in this study as a noun, it refers to all of the above concepts as a concise collective noun.

The modern period of scholarship in apocalyptic is often traced to the work of Koch. In the context of disputes over the historical Jesus, Koch anticipates much modern discussion of apocalyptic by calling for an increased investigation into form-critical considerations of the apocalypses.[63] He also anticipates further discussion on the worldview of the apocalypses by discussing what he considers to be the importance of 'moods and ideas' in addition to formal characteristics.[64] The work of Koch spurred scholarship to devote attention to individual apocalypses, ultimately resulting in the formation of a group to define the genre apocalypse, the results of which are published in *Semeia* 14 and revisited in *Semeia* 36.

For the purposes of this discussion, the definition of 'apocalypse' as proposed in *Semeia* 14 and amended in *Semeia* 36 is considered to be sufficient:

> "Apocalypse" is a literary genre of revelatory literature with a narrative framework, in which a revelation is mediated by an otherworldly being to a human recipient, disclosing a transcendent reality which is both temporal, insofar as it envisages eschatological salvation, and spacial insofar as it involves another, supernatural world, intended to interpret present, earthly circumstances in light of the supernatural world and of the future, and to influence both the understanding and the behaviour of the audience by means of divine authority. [65]

---

[62] Most subsequent discussion of the genre has focused on the results of the SBL focus group which was edited by Collins. See John J. Collins, "Introduction: Towards the Morphology of a Genre," *Semeia* 14 (1979): pp. 1–20 and John J. Collins, "The Jewish Apocalypses," *Semeia* 14 (1979): pp. 21–60.

[63] Klaus Koch, *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*, trans. Margaret Kohl, SBT (Second Series) 22 (London: SCM, 1972), pp. 23–27, 123.

[64] Koch, *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*, pp. 28–33.

[65] As defined in John J. Collins, ed., *Apocalypse: The Morphology of a Genre. Semeia* 14 (1979), p. 9 and amended by Adela Yarbro Collins, ed., *Early Christian Apocalypticism: Genre and Social Setting. Semeia* 36 (1986), p. 7.

While several scholars have critiqued this definition on a number of grounds,[66] no superior definition has yet emerged to replace it. As long as the genre definition is recognized to be a modern scholarly construct, the term is useful for clarifying discussion. Collins and Yarbro Collins are right to retain eschatology as one of the distinctive features of the genre,[67] even though this term itself creates much controversy.

Rowland argues that undue emphasis is placed on eschatology, something which he sees as too variable and sporadic to be useful as a criterion; as such, he prefers a definition in terms of direct heavenly revelation.[68] He emphasizes the diversity of material which can be found in apocalypses and sees the unifying factor to be a worldview whereby direct access to the divine was available, at least to the worthy; behind the mask of some passages may lie actual visionary experiences.[69] Rowland's observations on the diversity of interests extant in the corpora and the importance of the concept of revelation are certainly correct as far as they go. However, in his discussion of these topics one is left to one wonder, if 'apocalyptic' is merely a belief in revelation, what separates the apocalyptic literature from prophetic literature or indeed any other revelatory genre? Unless one wishes to discard all distinction between the two,[70] Rowland's observations are insufficient criteria to define 'apocalypse.' While he claims not to discount the importance of eschatology for the apocalyptic literature, he seems to ignore how deeply the eschatology shapes various characteristics of the genre; his emphasis on revelation occasionally leads him to miss how central eschatological concepts are to the very revelations he discusses. Additionally, while it is certainly possible that real experiences lay behind some of the visions in the literature, this fails to explain how this differs from prophecy: the source of prophetic inspiration is no more resolved.[71] While

---

[66] Most notably Paolo Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic and its History*, JSPSS 20 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1990), p. 21 n. 19, p. 26, although more by implication through his abandonment of a distinction between apocalypse and others; David Hellholm, "The Problem of Apocalyptic Genre and the Apocalypse of John," *Semeia* 36 (1986): pp. 13–64; Martha Himmelfarb, "The Experience of the Visionary and Genre in the Ascension of Isaiah 6–11 and the Apocalypse of Paul," *Semeia* 36 (1986): pp. 97–112; E. P. Sanders, "The Genre of Palestinian Jewish Apocalypses," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1983), pp. 447–459; Aune, *Apocalypticism*, pp. 39–65.

[67] Cf. John J. Collins, "Genre, Ideology, and Social Movements in Jewish Apocalypticism," *Mysteries and Revelations: apocalyptic studies since the Uppsala Colloquium.*, eds. John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991), p. 16; Adela Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," *Semeia* 36 (1986): p. 5.

[68] Christopher Rowland, *The Open Heaven: A Study of Apocalyptic in Judaism and Early Christianity* (London: SPCK, 1982), pp. 13–14.

[69] Rowland, *Open Heaven*, pp. 217–234.

[70] As, indeed, Grabbe has done on such grounds: Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," pp. 22–24.

[71] James .L. Crenshaw, *Prophetic Conflict: Its Effect upon Israelite Religion*, BZAW 124 (Berlin: de Gruyter, 1971), p. 60; Thomas W. Overholt, *Channels of Prophecy: The Social Dynamics of Prophetic Activity* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989), pp. 164–165; David L. Petersen, "Defining Prophecy and Prophetic Literature," *Prophecy in its Ancient Near Eastern Context*, ed. Martti Nissinen, Symposium (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2000), p. 44. This debate is often entangled with debates on 'ecstacy' and 'charisma.' The *locus classicus* is Max Weber, *Ancient Judaism*, trans. Hans H. Gerth and Don Martindale (New York: Free Press, 1967), e.g., pp. 102–105.

an investigation into ecstatic techniques should prove fruitful, the appearance of the apocalypse as a *literary* genre and its scribal, exegetical locus helps to explain more features than just the revelatory claims of the authors.[72] Collins and Yarbro Collins are right to insist on the generic import of eschatology.[73]

Aune argues that, while important, Collins's definition of the genre apocalypse is too 'inductive and descriptive' as well as lacking in a description of function.[74] He therefore offers a new definition in terms of form, content, and function, largely with Revelation in mind.[75] In form, he proposes to consider an autobiographical form as essential, as well as a structure which places the central message a literary climax; in content, "the communication of a transcendent, often eschatological, perspective on human existence"; in function, a threefold function which purposes to recreate a revelatory experience which will be both considered legitimate as well as behaviorally modifying.[76] However, as Yarbro Collins notes, this proposed definition is problematic for a number of reasons: 1) the autobiographical form is not universal; 2) the participatory aspect of the genre which Aune himself notes seems to preclude a central message;[77] 3) eschatology seems to be the "primary distinguishing mark" of apocalypses against other revelatory genres; 4) Aune's idea of 'reactualization' depends too much on the assumption of an original revelatory experience.[78] However, his insistence on the need for a supplement of function to the definition is well-taken and reflected in the definition above.[79]

On the basis of her studies in the Christian apocalypses, particularly the phenomenon of 'tours of hell,'[80] Himmelfarb objects to Collin's categories of the apocalypses[81] as they place two Christian apocalypses with different visionary experiences (*Ascension of Isaiah* and *Apocalypse of Paul*) in the same category. More importantly, she also sees an over-emphasis on the importance of eschatology in his definition to flaw its usefulness.[82] From her perspective, the similarities between visionary experience (i.e., tours) is more important than

---

[72] Rowland, *Open Heaven*, p. 212, 445–6, seems to discount the role of literacy or scribal origins.
[73] Collins, "Genre, Ideology, and Social Movements," p. 16; Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," p. 5.
[74] Aune, *Apocalypticism*, p. 43.
[75] Aune, *Apocalypticism*, p. 60. Hanson's earlier definition had also included function. Paul D. Hanson, "Apocalypse, Genre," *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, Supplemtentary Volume*, ed. Keith Crim (Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1976), p. 27.
[76] Aune, *Apocalypticism*, p. 60.
[77] Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," pp. 3–4.
[78] Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," p. 5; Cf: John J. Collins, "The Apocalyptic Technique: Setting and Function in the Book of Watchers," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 44.1 (1982): p. 108.
[79] An addendum to the *Semeia* 14 definition is offered in Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," p. 7.
[80] Martha Himmelfarb, *Tours of Hell: An Apocalyptic Form in Jewish and Christian Literature* (Philadelphia: Univ of Pennsylvania Press, 1983).
[81] Collins, "Introduction: Towards the Morphology of a Genre," pp. 14–15.
[82] Himmelfarb, "The Experience of the Visionary and Genre in the Ascension of Isaiah 6–11 and the Apocalypse of Paul," pp. 97–112.

the presence or lack of universal eschatology. However, she refrains from offering an alternative paradigm. She highlights some important variants in message and supposed experience among the apocalypses, but, as Yarbro Collins notes, this does not in itself question Collin's basic definition or framework.[83]

As the objections above show, perhaps no term in Biblical Studies has generated more confusion than the term 'eschatology.' As Collins points out, there is a 'minimum' consensus that eschatology refers to 'future expectation,'[84] but such a definition is too nebulous to be useful, requiring additional epithets to become so (as, indeed, Hanson is compelled to distinguish between 'prophetic eschatology' and 'apocalyptic eschatology.')[85] Despite attempts to the contrary,[86] the variety of futures envisioned by texts such as Amos or Daniel questions the validity of calling both merely 'future expectation.' Since the term eschatology itself is based on ἔσχατος, 'farthest,' 'uttermost,' or 'end,'[87] it seems best to reserve the term to meaning the 'terminus,' both of human history and of human life, often called 'universal' and 'personal' eschatology respectively.[88] To use the term 'eschatology' to merely refer to a mundane future expectation which does not involve an absolute end of something simply creates unnecessary confusion.[89] This study understands the term 'eschatology' to only apply to a variety of beliefs concerning a decisive ending or transformation of either the cosmos or the individual, agreeing with Mowinkel who also strictly defines the term 'eschatology.'[90] In this view, it is redundant to speak of an 'apocalyptic eschatology' and 'prophetic eschatology' is non-existent. Similarly, the attempt to bundle other issues into the definition of eschatology[91] also further obscures the issue. Eschatology here merely refers to the belief in some form of ultimate termination. This end can (and does) come in a large variety of types and schemata and may be conceived of as imminent or remote. Indeed, much of the differences between various eschatological programs and the texts in which they appear can be understood as relative to the question of

---

[83] Yarbro Collins, "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism," p. 6.
[84] John J. Collins, "Apocalyptic Eschatology as the Transcendence of Death," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 36 (1974): pp. 21–22.
[85] Paul D. Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic* (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1975), pp. 11–12.
[86] E.g. Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," pp. 22–25.
[87] Henry George Liddell and Robert Scott, *A Greek-English Lexicon*, eds. Sir Henry Stuart Jones and Roderick McKenzie, 9th ed. (Oxford: Clarendon, 1996), pp. 699–700.
[88] E.g. Collins, "Transcendence of Death," pp. 21–43; Collins would object to this restriction, however.
[89] Contra the definition given by George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Early Jewish Eschatology," *Anchor Bible Dictionary*, ed. David Noel Freedman, vol. II (New York: Doubleday, 1992), pp. 579–594.
[90] Sigmund Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, trans. G.W. Anderson (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2005), p. 125, 261–266.
[91] As does Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, pp. 11–12.

imminency.[92] One would expect significant differences between an end expected tomorrow and one expected thousands of years hence.

Typically wrapped up with eschatology is some sort of teleology.[93] This is strictly speaking a separate idea from the logical positing of terminations, but in the Jewish apocalypses it is firmly wrapped up into their understandings of the *eschaton.* In the prophetic literature, however, teleology appears without being joined to an eschatology: YHWH has a purpose (*telos*) behind his dealings in history, but these dealings are not related to an ultimate *eschaton.* The prophets often speak of YHWH's goals and plans, however these do not coincide with cessation.[94] Indeed, they are open to reversal based on the people's response.[95] In the apocalypses, on the other hand, *telos* and *eschaton* are bound together, as they are in Iranian traditions (see Chapter I).[96] One crux of theodical debate (an important, albeit not only component, of apocalypses) is the resolution of *telos*: one answer is eschatological, and this is an answer which is not found in the extant prophetic literature as it is in apocalyptic.

In contrast to the majority of scholarship, Sacchi finds the quest for an apocalyptic paradigm either fruitless or at best misleading, even wishing to eschew the term altogether.[97] To him, even the distinction between 'apocalypse,' 'apocalyptic eschatology,' and 'apocalyptic current' is misleading, as they do not appear in the historical literature.[98] Instead, he wishes to approach the subject from an evolutionary standpoint, departing from *The Book of Watchers* and tracing 'currents of thought' therein. The importance of *The Book of Watchers* for Sacchi is due to subsequent authors taking up issues related to its theodicy. Sacchi's emphasis on the modern heuristic nature of the term 'apocalyptic' and the need to understand the texts as historically situated is well-taken, but that observation on its own does not add any clarity to scholarly discussions on the meaning of the term, nor help to highlight the 'currents of thought' on which he wishes to focus. The recognition of the heuristic nature of terminology should lead to a refinement of their use rather than an abandonment of them. The assertion that the texts and traditions evolved over time is apt; however, this does not

---

[92] Although he reverses the order of the understanding in this study, Richard Landes, "Roosters Crow, Owls Hoot: On the Dynamics of Apocalyptic Millennialism," *War in Heaven/Heaven on Earth: Theories of the Apocalyptic.*, eds. Stephen D. O'Leary and Glen S. McGhee (London: Equinox, 2005), pp. 19–46, helpfully points to the importance to the question of imminency to a group.

[93] Malcolm Bull, "On Making Ends Meet," *Apocalypse Theory and the Ends of the World*, ed. Malcolm Bull (Oxford: Blackwell, 1995), pp. 1–30; Although focused on contemporary religion, Bull's fourfold typology helps to clarify the difference between the two 'ends' of *telos* and *eschatos*, see particularly pp. 2–3.

[94] E.g., Lyle Eslinger, "Ezekiel 20 and the Metaphor of Historical Teleology: Concepts of Biblical History," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 23.81 (1998): pp. 93–120.

[95] E.g., Amos 5:15; Jer 4:1–4.

[96] It may be pertinent to note that most of the parallel millenarian movements mentioned by Worsley had previously encountered either Christianity or Islam, both traditions with an eschatology. See Peter Worsley, *The Trumpet Shall Sound: A Study of "Cargo" Cults in Melanesia*, Second ed. (London: Paladin, 1970), pp. 230–233.

[97] See Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic*, in particular the introduction (pp. 13–26).

[98] Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic*, pp. 21–22.

justify the restriction of the phenomena to a development of theodicy out of *The Book of Watchers* tradition alone. *The Book of Watchers* is indeed important, as is the issue of theodicy, but neither exhausts the issues.

For the purposes of clarity, this study attempts to be precise in the use of terminology related to the issue of apocalyptic. Towards this end, it is necessary to describe the terms and their relationships as understood and used in this study, as they may differ from some scholarly use of similar terms (also illustrated in Figure 1). The use of the term 'apocalyptic' will here be used either as an adjectival part of a larger term, or as a convenient collective noun to denote all related concepts. The term 'apocalypse' refers strictly to a genre of revelatory literature as defined above. Apocalypses are the products of 'apocalyptic traditions,' or schools of thought (e.g., Enochic, Qumranic), which are more specific than the 'apocalyptic worldview'/ 'apocalypticism,'[99] but less coherent or organized than an 'apocalyptic movement.' Such traditions emphasize different parts of the common apocalypticism and can naturally interact with other traditions, apocalyptic or not. An apocalyptic tradition may or may not result in the writing of apocalypses or the formation of a distinct movement; it may also be absorbed into the overall framework of a larger religious tradition. If a 'school of thought' coalesces with 'members,' it may be called a movement. If an apocalyptic movement expects the imminent end of the world and assumes a more radical disposition towards society, it may be called 'millenarianism'/'millenarism.'[100] 'Apocalypticism/Apocalyptic worldview' is a worldview which manifests itself in the apocalypses and apocalyptic traditions, but also influences the general religious tradition. This worldview and its antecedents and sources is still fraught with uncertainty. One of its sources, however, is an attitude which may be termed an 'apocalyptic hermeneutic.' This apocalyptic hermeneutic is the approach and method whereby a tradent approaches his or her experiences and religious traditions, influencing how he or she reads, evaluates, and applies them to his or her overall worldview. This, as a hermeneutic, both comes out of and creates its worldview by interpreting and placing data. In the context of apocalyptic, the sources will largely be Jewish traditions and the Hebrew Bible. It is largely this last category ('apocalyptic hermeneutic') with which this dissertation is concerned (see Chapter V).

Apocalyptic can be approached via a variety of perspectives and methodologies, leading to an equal variety of conclusions. A brief discussion of these will serve to

---

[99] John J. Collins, "Prophecy, Apocalypse and Eschatology: Reflections on the Proposals of Lester Grabbe," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak, JSPSS 46 (London: T & T Clark, 2003), p. 46;

[100] Yonina Talmon, "Millenarism," *International Encyclopaedia of the Social Sciences*, vol. 10 (New York: Macmillan, 1968), pp. 349–362. This understanding of the relationship between apocalyptic and millennialism is the exact inverse of the one put forward in Landes, "Roosters Crow, Owls Hoot," pp. 19–46. It is misleading to identify 'apocalyptic' with 'imminence' as he does.

contextualize the approach adopted here. Some of the approaches chosen can be classed broadly as sociological-historical or in relation to their perceived sources.

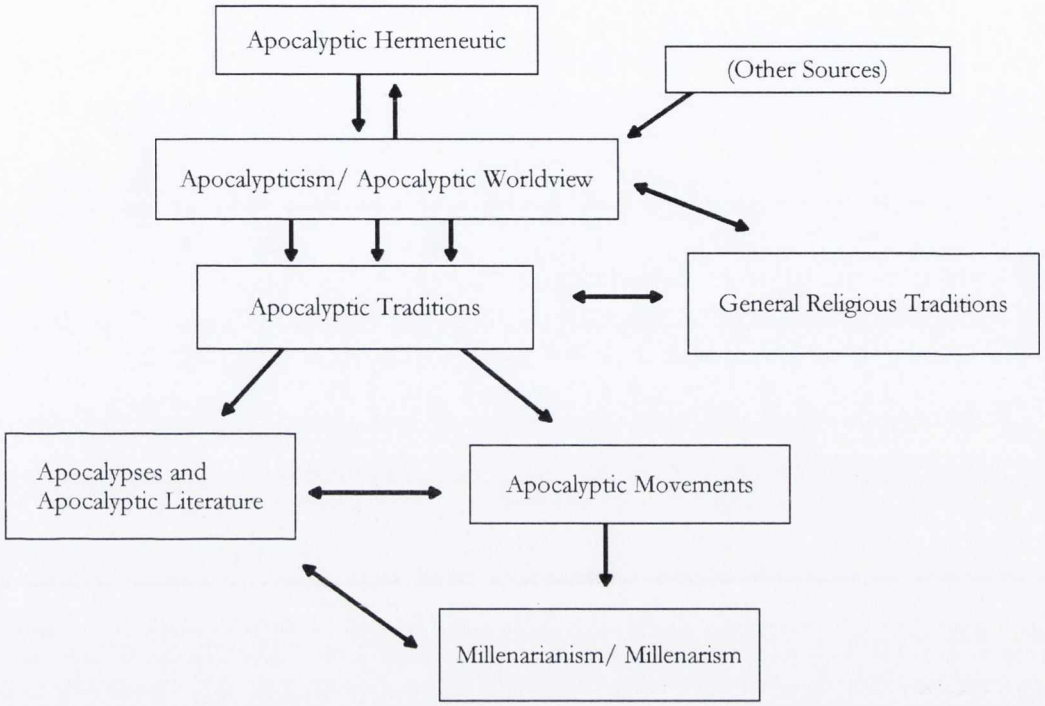


Figure 1: Reciprocal Relationships between Apocalyptic Terms
Author's Own.

Sociological-Historical

Some modern discussion of apocalyptic concerns its relationship to modern systematic theology and the theology of Jesus and the Jesus movement.[101] Since apocalypses are religious literature which deal with religious issues, a concern for theological issues is certainly relevant to their understanding. However, a certain lack of historical contextualization and over-reliance on systematic schemes has led scholars to seek a paradigm based on social-scientific or text-critical categories rather than theological-philosophical ones.[102] Understanding the social and historical context is vital; towards these ends, various avenues are available.

Seeking to understand the apocalyptic worldview as an outgrowth of pre-Maccabaean developments, Plöger discusses apocalyptic against the background of Israel's transition from

[101] Koch, *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*, pp. 13–15; Collins, "Transcendence of Death," pp. 21–22.
[102] E.g., Koch, *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*, p.123; Stephen L. Cook, *The Apocalyptic Literature* (Nashville, TN: Abington Press, 2003).

a nation-state to a religion.[103] For Plöger, two concepts are key: the usage of prophetic eschatology and the development of a 'theocracy' or ruling priesthood. The seeds for later sectarianism were sown in the early Persian period; the restoration program assimilated prophetic eschatology as self-legitimation, while various dissenting 'conventicles' maintained a more 'dualistic' eschatology.[104] The essential difference between the two camps was the interpretation and use of the prophets: for the theocrats, the prophets were interpreters of the law, while for the conventicles, the eschatology still held living potential. The crises occasioned by the Seleucids catalyzed the latent schisms, more bringing to the forefront the pre-existing tensions in Jewish society than creating them.

Plöger's thesis has the benefit of emphasizing the importance of the interpretation of traditions to post-exilic Judaeans; indeed, he understands the difference between his two camps as largely one of the interpretation (and collation) of the prophets. However, his treatment too easily and without evidence creates defined parties and movements which may or may not have existed within Judaea and the diaspora. Additionally, a dichotomy between priests and prophets oversimplifies the overlap in interests which either role could have;[105] indeed, many of the apocalypses evince sincere interest in the workings of the cult, and the Pharisees were known for many 'apocalyptic' beliefs. Further, the considerably pre-Maccabean dating of the earliest Enochic works questions the role of that crisis, even in terms of mere catalyst. Internecine struggles certainly played a role in the development of the period and its texts, but a dichotomy as Plöger describes it is too simplistic and has little evidence in the texts.

Hanson, in his *Dawn of Apocalyptic*,[106] follows the lead of Plöger and argues for the emergence of apocalyptic in the context of a battle between 'hierocratic' and 'prophetic' camps in Second Temple Judaism. He traces the development of 'apocalyptic eschatology' from 'prophetic eschatology' in the later portions of Isaiah, Ezekiel, and Zechariah, seeing the 'apocalyptic visionary' as merely an embattled prophet deprived of a king. From his analysis of late prophetic and 'proto-apocalyptic' texts, Hanson claims that: 1) the sources of apocalyptic literature are prophecy; 2) the origins are set in sixth-fifth centuries rather than the Hellenistic period; 3) the texts evidence an increased 'abandonment of history' for myth;

---

[103] Otto Plöger, *Theocracy and Eschatology*, trans. S. Rudman (Oxford: Blackwell Press, 1968), p. 29.
[104] Plöger, *Theocracy and Eschatology*, pp. 47–48.
[105] E.g., the observations in Lester L. Grabbe, "A Priest is Without Honor in His Own Prophet: Priests and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets," *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Alice Ogden Bellis (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 90–91.
[106] Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*; a concise summary of much of his analysis also appeared in Paul D. Hanson, "Prolegomena to the Study of Jewish Apocalyptic," *Magnalia Dei, The Mighty Acts of God: Essays on the Bible and Archaeology in Memory of G. Ernest Wright*, eds. Frank Moore Cross, et al. (Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1976), pp. 28–34.

4) this process takes place in the context of inner community struggle (i.e., deprivation).[107] While Hanson has deservedly come under criticism for his dichotomization of myth and history,[108] his emphasis on party politics and deprivation theory as well as his emphasis on the prophetic origins of apocalyptic continues to be influential. However, the majority of Hanson's analyses in his book are dependent on the myth-history dichotomy—including his assignment of texts to various religio-political parties or their polemic—throwing doubt on his other results as well. While deprivation theory certainly has a role to play, particularly in relation to millenarianism, it cannot be used to posit such definite parties without other evidence for them. People can have fundamental disagreements without being aligned with an organized party. Still, in light of the subsequent re-dating of the *Book of Watchers*, Hanson's appeal for a pre-Hellenistic dating for some of the origins of apocalyptic seems a wise choice.

A better method is Cook's, who seeks to understand the Jewish and Christian texts through comparison with the apocalypticism or millenarianism of other cultures[109] and within the context of the biblical traditions. For Cook, the selection and emphasis upon certain traditional motifs in a new eschatological setting adequately describes the situation in Second Temple Judaism, as it does among the Native American Ghost Dancers.[110] Cook's method of anthropological comparison is useful and offers many insights and valuable correctives to overly theoretical approaches to the texts. His work offers glimpses into the actual functions of apocalyptic texts in real communities, beyond a simplistic reading of deprivation. However, as Grabbe rightly critiques,[111] it is dangerous to automatically read a group or movement behind any given apocalypse *a priori*. While there certainly are millenarian groups which created and nurtured texts, it is also possible some texts preceded the formation of 'apocalyptic' communities (as appears to be the case at Qumran). Beyond the possibility of an individualistic origin to a given text, millenarian groups are not guaranteed to write in the genre of apocalypse: the correlation between the two phenomena is not one-to-one. Assuming coherent, sect-like groups behind every Second Temple text is surely dangerous and misleading. One must be careful, then, to distinguish between texts and groups which may carry the 'apocalyptic' adjective.

---

[107] Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, p. 29.

[108] Hanson was even more explicit in this dichotomization in Paul D. Hanson, "Jewish Apocalyptic against its Near Eastern Environment," *Revue Biblique* 78 (1971): p. 58; for critiques, e.g., J. J. M. Roberts, "Myth versus History: Relaying the Comparative Foundations," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 38.1 (1976): pp. 1–13; Collins, "Prophecy, Apocalypse and Eschatology: Reflections on the Proposals of Lester Grabbe," p. 75.

[109] As, for example, in Stephen L Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism: The Postexilic Social Setting* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995); Cook, *The Apocalyptic Literature* ; and Stephen L Cook, "Mythological Discourse in Ezekiel and Daniel and the Rise of Apocalypticism in Israel," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak, JSPSS 46 (London: T & T Clark, 2003), pp. 85–106.

[110] Cf. Cook, *The Apocalyptic Literature*, p. 36; Cook, "Mythological Discourse," p. 94.

[111] Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," p. 25.

As in Plöger and Hanson, the sociology of deprivation is often applied to apocalyptic groups.[112] One of Nickelsburg's more well known hypotheses connects the genesis of the *Book of Watchers* with the Wars of the Diadochi.[113] The critique of violence in the Šemihazah layer is, in his mind, reflective of the violence of these times.[114] While there certainly is some merit to the observation that many millenarian groups are marginal and appear in times of crises, the appeal to deprivation is susceptible to four serious objections: many people experience hardship and deprivation without becoming apocalyptic;[115] the prophets can be analyzed as responding to deprivation;[116] groups in power may hold apocalyptic ideologies;[117] and the notion of relative deprivation is so nebulous as to be almost meaningless.[118] It is worth noting that apocalyptic-millenarian hopes are often fostered by those seeking a coherent worldview rather than merely in a socio-economic crisis.[119] One wonders, then, if instead of serving as cause, crises serve as intensifiers of pre-existing tensions.[120]

Relations to Previous Traditions

Beyond the historical setting and the sociological perspectives, the question of the sources of apocalyptic is a contentious issue. Three of the most oft mooted are prophecy, wisdom, and foreign sources.

Prophecy

Both the apocalypses and their modern day commentators commonly reference biblical prophecy, and the understanding one has of the prophets undeniably influences one's understanding of apocalyptic. In the context of Biblical Studies the term 'prophecy' can refer to either the books which are labelled prophetic in Hebrew Bible, most notably the 'writing prophets,' or it can refer to the socio-religious phenomenon of prophecy in the context of

---

[112] David F. Aberle, "A Note on Relative Deprivation Theory as Applied to Millenarian and Other Cult Movements," *The Sociology of Religion. Vol. V: Religious Movements*, ed. Malcolm Hamilton (London: Routledge, 2007), pp. 7–12; Talmon, "Millenarism," p. 354; e.g., Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, pp. 408–9; Jon L. Berquist, *Judaism in Persia's Shadow* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1995), pp. 184–188; to a lesser extent, George W. E. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001), p. 5.

[113] George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Apocalyptic and Myth in 1 Enoch 6–11," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 96.3 (1977): p. 391.

[114] Nickelsburg, "Apocalyptic and Myth in 1 Enoch 6–11," pp. 399–404.

[115] Grabbe, "Prophetic and Apocalyptic: Time for New Definitions—and New Thinking," p. 111.

[116] Joseph Blenkinsopp, *A History of Prophecy in Israel*, Revised and Enlarged ed. (London: Westminster John Knox, 1996), p. 37; Robert P. Carroll, *When Prophecy Failed: Cognitive Dissonance in the Prophetic Traditions of the Old Testament* (New York: Seabury, 1979), p. 8.

[117] Cf. Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, p. 2, 87.

[118] Cf. Hillel Newman, *Proximity to Power and Jewish Sectarian Groups of the Ancient Period*, Brill Reference Library of Judaism 25 (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 7–11.

[119] Yonina Talmon, "Millenarian Movements," *The Sociology of Religion. Vol. V: Religious Movements*, ed. Malcolm Hamilton (London: Routledge, 2007), p. 29.

[120] Note also the critiques of Kathleen J. Tierney and Joan Neff Gurney, "Relative Deprivation and Social Movements: a Critical Look at Twenty Years of Theory and Research," *Sociological Quarterly* 23.1 (1982): pp. 33–47, from a completely different viewpoint.

ancient Israel as whole, whether or not linked to the books which later bore their label. The meanings of 'prophet' and 'prophecy' and the relationship between these two has been assessed variously, impacting heavily on the understanding of the prophetic corpus of the Hebrew Bible, and the literature is vast.[121] Only the aspects deemed most relevant to the current issue can be discussed here.

Wellhausen understood the prophets as religious reformers who challenged the monarchy and the books which bore their names as belonging either to the prophets themselves or their followers.[122] While the uniqueness of some prophets' messages may indeed account for their remembrance, Wellhausen's view has long been noted to recreate the prophets in the mold of the Protestant Reformers. Instead, for the purposes of this study, a 'prophet' is understood as a person who fulfills the role of speaking a message from YHWH to his or her contemporaries.[123] Whatever the origin and semantic development of נביא, it was the primary descriptive term by the emergence of apocalyptic. This is a fundamentally oral phenomenon, although reports could be written. Since a prophet could function as part of a prophetic group, alone, or part of the cultic structure,[124] 'prophet' should be understood as a *role* which one could perform anywhere from once to a lifetime vocation.[125] By the time of the appearance of apocalyptic, however, the importance of this live intermediary was eclipsed; it seems likely that the rising importance of collections of prophetic literature played a part in this. 'Prophetic literature' refers to the texts traditionally so-called in the Hebrew Bible, which were believed to be the records of the previously oral prophets, through whom YHWH spoke new message(s) to his people. The difference between the two is largely of medium and skill: the prophets required the skills of

---

[121] A convenient survey of various approaches to the problem is available in Petersen, "Defining Prophecy," pp. 33–39; Cf. Blenkinsopp, *History of Prophecy*, pp. 16–39.

[122] Cf. the excerpts of his work in Julius Wellhausen, *Grundrisse zum alten Testament*, Neudrucke und Berichte aus dem 20. Jahrhundert 27, Rudolf Smend, ed. (München: Chr Kaiser Verlag, 1965), pp. 57–64, 87–96.

[123] As defined by Petersen, "Defining Prophecy," pp. 37–38; cf. Robert P. Carroll, "Ancient Israelite Prophecy and Dissonance Theory," *The Place is Too Small for Us*, ed. Robert P. Gordon (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1995), p. 382; note, however, that John T. Greene, *The Role of the Messenger and Message in the Ancient Near East: Oral and Written Communication in the Ancient Near East and in the Hebrew Scriptures: Communicators and Communiques in Context*, Brown Judaic Studies 169 (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1989), pp. 137–266, disagrees.

[124] E.g., J. Lindblom, *Prophecy in Ancient Israel* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1962), pp. 206–207; Bernhard Lang, *Monotheism and the Prophetic Minority: An Essay in Biblical History and Sociology* (Sheffield: Almond, 1983), p. 94; Blenkinsopp, *History of Prophecy*, pp. 32–33.

[125] 'Role' here is intended as social role as in David L. Petersen, *The Roles of Israel's Prophets*, JSOTSS 17 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1981), *in toto*, but particularly Chapter 2; Brad E. Kelle, "Ancient Israelite Prophets and Greek Political Orators: Analogies for the Prophets and Their Implications for Historical Reconstruction," *Israel's Prophets and Israel's Past: Essays on the Relationship of Prophetic Texts and Israelite History in Honor of John H. Hayes*, eds. Brad E. Kelle and Megan Bishop Moore, Library of Hebrew Bible 446 (New York: T & T Clark, 2006), p. 69; Karel van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture and the Making of the Hebrew Bible* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2007), p. 69; rather than literary, as in Walter Gross, "Lying Prophet and Disobedient Man of God in 1 Kings 13: role Analysis as an Instrument of Theological Interpretation of an O.T. Narrative Text," *Semeia* 15 (1979): particularly pp. 110–113.

communication with G-d and with their audience; the prophetic literature required the skills of a scholar skilled in interpretation and teaching.

In a recent study Doan and Giles apply performance criticism to the understanding of the Hebrew prophets.[126] Starting from the recognition that prophets were originally oral communicators, Doan and Giles attempt to understand the implications of the characteristics of presentation for the original prophetic event, the scribal record of it, and the presumed scribal re-enaction of it.[127] In this respect, they make two important claims: 1) that the prophet himself had authority through his performance while the scribe had to 'impersonate' the prophet to actualize the same authority;[128] and 2) that a performance (e.g., a prophetic oracle) is judged by its impact.[129] These two claims have several implications on the rise of apocalyptic. First, that while texts receive their power from the power of the performer, subsequent performers' power is sub-ordinated to the text. In other words, the writing of prophecy simultaneously glorifies the recorded prophet while denying the possibility of encore performances. The scribe, therefore, cannot reclaim the same level of authority in his person, dependent as it is on a text. This not only confirms the implications of Oral Theory, it perhaps helps explain the high incidence of pseudepigraphy in the apocalypses: a prophetically-authored text carries more authority than a scribal re-performer. Second, it reduces the importance of 'prediction' for prophecy through a focus on the impact on the audience. A prophet's performance would be preserved and remembered if deemed 'effective'—as the audience subjectively perceived it—whereas the scribal performance implies a 'communal audience' which already accepted the prophet's performance as true, and thus more inclined to a predictive element.[130]

Perhaps the prophetic issue most relevant to the investigation of apocalyptic is the 'end of prophecy.' Although the concept of the end of prophecy is probably a misnomer, it is an impression which is given by the extant literature. This is partly a reflex of the disappearance of the prophetic literature genre, despite evidence of sporadically appearing self-proclaimed prophets.[131] The apparent occultation of prophecy is here understood as the upshot of three interrelated developments: the change in authority structure, the rise of

---

[126] William Doan and Terry Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power: Performance Criticism of the Hebrew Bible* (New York: T&T Clark, 2005).
[127] Doan and Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power*, pp. 19–48.
[128] Doan and Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power*, p. 27.
[129] Doan and Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power*, p. 90.
[130] Doan and Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power*, pp. 101–102.
[131] E.g., John the Baptist, Jesus, the Teacher of Righteousness. Cf. Josephus, *The Jewish War* 6.5.2 (Josephus, *The Jewish War*, trans. H. St. J. Thackeray, *Josephus III: The Jewish War Books IV–VII*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1928], p. 459).

textual authority, and the sociological dynamics sometimes called the 'church-cult' dichotomy.[132]

Pre-exilic Judaean (and Israelite) society had a triad of authority sources: the king, the priests, and the prophets.[133] The prophets largely functioned as a 'barometer of the *status quo*,' both upholding and critiquing the institutions of cult and monarchy.[134] Scribes would have had a mostly administrative and relatively minor role.[135] Following the restoration, Yehud's authority structure was altered from this paradigm. While executive power first devolved upon a local Persian governor, probably even the Davidic scion,[136] the ultimate authority was 850 miles away. This had the effect of increasing the authority of the Persian-supported priests (to the extent that the role of governor appears to have disappeared completely in a process still poorly understood)[137] as well as those with expertise in handling the imperial administration, e.g., scribes.[138] The loss of the Davidide both robbed prophets of their former patrons as well as problematizing the critique of executive authority. A threat to Persian authority would have been a threat to the positions of both the priests and the scribes in a way which a critique of the Davidic monarchy does not appear to have been.[139]

---

[132] E.g., Max Weber, *The Sociology of Religion*, trans. Ephraim Fischoff (Boston: Beacon Press, 1993), pp. 60–79, 104; Joseph Blenkinsopp, "The Social Roles of Prophets in Early Archaemenid Judah," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 93 (2001): pp. 39–58; Joachim Schaper, "The Death of the Prophet: The Transition from the Spoken to the Written Word of God in the Book of Ezekiel," *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*, eds. Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 63–79.

[133] E.g., the overview in Rainer Albertz, *A History of Israelite Religion in the Old Testament Period*, 2 vols. (London: SCM, 1994), Vol. 1., pp. 105–242, albeit without endorsing all the particulars.

[134] Cf. Carroll, *When Prophecy Failed*, p. 17. It is interesting to see how this contrasts with other preserved oracles from the Ancient Near East, where only oracles favorable to the king are preserved, even if this is only a function of the limited number surviving. See the collected oracles in Martti Nissinen, *Prophets and Prophecy in the Ancient Near East*, Writings from the Ancient World (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2003).

[135] This is a controversial subject; it is discussed in more depth in Chapter III; see also William M. Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book: the Textualization of Ancient Israel* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004), chapters 3 and 4.

[136] Lester L. Grabbe, *Ezra-Nehemiah* (London: Routledge, 1998), pp. 135–136; Nadav Na'aman, "Royal Vassals of Governors? On the Status of Sheshbazzar and Zerubbabel in the Persian Empire," *Henoch* 22.1 (2000): pp. 35–44; Gabriele Boccaccini, *Roots of Rabbinic Judaism: An Intellectual History from Ezekiel to Daniel* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2001), pp. 47–50. For a discussion of the complexity of this question, largely in light of the Elephantine papyri and Ezra-Nehemiah, see Reinhard G. Kratz, "Statthalter, Hohepriester und Schreiber im perserzeitlichen Juda," *Das Judentum im Zeitalter des Zweiten Temples*, ed. Reinhard G. Kratz (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004), pp. 93–119; a synthesis can be found in Rainer Albertz, *Israel in Exile: the History and Literature of the Sixth Century BCE*, trans. David Green, SBL Studies in Biblical Literature 3 (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2003), pp. 119–132.

[137] Cf. Na'aman, "Royal Vassals of Governors?," p. 44; Michael Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation in Ancient Israel* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1985), p. 138. For discussions of the relevant archaeological data, cf. Dan P. Barag, "Some Notes on a Silver Coin of Johanan the High Priest," *Biblical Archaeologist* 48.3 (1985): pp. 166–168; Nahman Avigad, *Bullae and Seals from a Post-Exilic Judean Archive*, Qedem 4 (Jerusalem: Institute of Archaeology, Hebrew University, 1976); Ephraim Stern, *Material Culture of the Land of the Bible in the Persian Period 538–332 B.C.*, trans. Essa Cindorf (Warminster: Aris & Philips, 1982), pp. 200–209.

[138] Cf. Joseph Blenkinsopp, "The Sage, the Scribe, and Scribalism in the Chronicler's Work," *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, eds. John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990), p. 312; See Chapter III.

[139] Persian administration is also highly contended; for the moment, see the description of the Achaemenid system of personal loyalty to the crown in Pierre Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander: A History of the Persian Empire*, trans. Peter T. Daniels (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2002), pp. 324–326.

Simultaneously, the importance of writing—both generally and as a repository of authoritative traditions—was gradually increasing in Judaean circles. The codification and canonization of prophetic oracles—whatever the details of that process—would have reduced the authority of contemporary prophets: since the texts were already considered 'validated' prophecies from true prophets, the insolvable question of validation was not an issue for them as it would have remained for the living prophets.[140] The dynamics of textuality are discussed further elsewhere,[141] but this phenomenon parallels a sociological pattern. The pattern of revelation–codification–closing of canon/turn to exegesis can be seen repeatedly in the history of religions. Since the epistemology of new revelations is an intractable problem, communities will tend to curtail their recurrence after an initial period.[142] A similar situation in Second Temple Judaism is therefore not unusual.

Thus, it is apparent that prophecy in Judaean traditions was likely squeezed between the forces of a new political, sociological, and communicative setting. The continuing relevance of living prophets was probably confined to a more popular level.[143] In textual terms, the scribes appropriated the role of 'barometer of the *status quo*.' Indeed, it appears that they assimilated not only a prophetic self-understanding but a royal one as well.[144]

This understanding of prophecy is at odds with much previous scholarship. Charles—who provides a vast amount of scholarship on apocalyptic traditions which continues to be a starting point for scholarship, even though the Qumran discoveries have necessitated updating—understands apocalyptists as 'essentially' the same as prophets with only 'accidental' differences.[145] The major difference between the two in his view has more to do with spatial and temporal scope and the assimilation of monotheism than any fundamental difference in thought.[146] He acknowledges that eschatology strictly means 'end

---

[140] Armin Lange, "Literary Prophecy and Oracle Collection: a Comparison between Judah and Greece in Persian Times," *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*, eds. Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 259–260 notes the link but fails to connect it to the dynamics of literacy.

[141] See Chapter III.

[142] E.g., van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture* , pp. 225–229; Blenkinsopp, "Social Roles," p. 21; Joseph Blenkinsopp, *Prophecy and Canon* (Notre Dame, IN: Univ of Notre Dame Press, 1977), p. 124; Michael Fishbane, "From Scribalism to Rabbinism: Perspectives on the Emergence of Classical Judaism," *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, eds. John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990), p. 440.

[143] Cf. Josephus *Jewish War* 6.5.2 (Josephus, *Jewish War III*, p. 459). This continues today; cf. Neil O'Connor, "'Take One, It's FREE!' The Story Behind the Worldwide Church of God and *The Plain Truth* Magazine," *The Coming Deliverer: Millennial Themes in World Religions*, eds. Fiona Bowie and Christopher Deacy (Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1997), pp. 163–201; Yaakov Ariel and Ruth Kark, "Messianism, Holiness, Charisma, and Community: the American-Swedish Colony in Jerusalem, 1881-1933," *Church History* 65.4 (1996): pp. 641–657; cf. Cohn, *The Pursuit of the Millennium*.

[144] Klaas Spronk, *Beatific Afterlife in Ancient Israel and in the Ancient Near East*, Alter Orient und Altes Testament 219 (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1986), p. 340; Blenkinsopp, "Social Roles," pp. 50–51.

[145] R. H. Charles, *Religious Development between the Old and New Testaments* (London: Williams & Northgate, 1914), p. 14.

[146] Charles, *Religious Development*, p. 32; R. H. Charles, *A Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life in Israel, in Judaism, and in Christianity*, 2nd ed. (London: Adam & Charles Black, 1913), pp. 174–206.

things' but affirms that it is essentially the same in both the prophetic literature and apocalyptic literature, despite differences in content. In his view, the reason that prophecy disappears and apocalyptic appears is due to the growth of legalism and the attendant closing of the canon; legal exegesis replaces the need for prophetic pronouncement.[147] While justifiably noting the literary and exegetical character of much of the apocalyptic literature, Charles bases too much of his theory on views of Jewish legalism and assumptions on the development of canonical thought to justify his assertions that these explain the emergence of apocalyptic.[148] His discussion limits the scope of apocalyptic to a tiny school of religious elites, and fails to explain its widespread appearance in Judaism and Early Christianity.

Grabbe problematizes the entire program of differentiating between prophecy and apocalyptic tradition, wishing to understand apocalypses as a subset of prophecy, and prophecy as a subset of divination.[149] The questions which Grabbe raises are important questions to keep in mind, and they help the scholar to avoid oversimplification of the issues involved. The role of myth and history, of scribality, of eschatology, and their relationship to the understanding of the literature and social situation are serious questions which have not yet found a satisfactory formulation. However, as Collins rightly critiques,[150] the denial of distinctions between prophetic literature and apocalypses hardly brings any clarity to the relevant issues, nor does it clarify the problems Grabbe identifies. A preferable method would be to understand how each category appears/is used in the respective genres, rather than assimilating the two into a greater, vaguer genre (such as divinatory or revelatory literature). While Grabbe's comments ought to give pause for thought, he does not offer a useful replacement paradigm for understanding the relationship between apocalypses and their prophetic antecedents.

Russell's understanding offers a better way forward: he understands apocalyptic to be a growth from the prophetic tradition,[151] differentiated by a 'new eschatology' through scribal exegesis of the prophetic literature, and he recognizes the role of foreign influences from Babylon, Greece, and Persia. Russell laudably emphasizes the role of literacy in the formation of both the form and thought of the texts. While he has been criticized for his

---

147 Charles, *Religious Development*, pp. 38–46.

148 Cf: Charles, *Religious Development*, p. 46.

149 Particularly, his "Introduction" and "Prophetic and Apocalyptic: Time for New Definitions—and New Thinking" in Grabbe and Haak, eds., *Knowing the End from the Beginning*, pp. 2–43, 107–133. Cf. Lester L. Grabbe, *Judaic Religion in the Second Temple Period: Belief and Practice from the Exile to Yavneh* (London: Routledge, 2000), pp. 232–236.

150 Collins, "Prophecy, Apocalypse and Eschatology: Reflections on the Proposals of Lester Grabbe," pp. 44–52.

151 Russell, *Method and Message*, p. 104.

recurrence to foreign influences,[152] his study attempts to carefully weigh biblical precedents against foreign elements.

Wisdom

In contrast to the prevailing scholarly consensus, von Rad argues that much of apocalyptic can better be seen as an outgrowth from sapiential rather than prophetic traditions.[153] For him, the concept of history in the apocalyptic literature is too radically different from that in prophetic—in its scope, lack of reference to Israel's salvation history, and its determinism—to be connected with the prophets. Instead, the emphasis on the cultivation of knowledge fits better within a sapiential paradigm. In addition, he connects the two through prognostication and the development of deterministic ideas.[154] While his discussion of the idea is fairly short, it has provoked widespread discussion, if not acceptance.[155] Though von Rad's analysis is overly dismissive of the role which the prophetic tradition plays in apocalyptic, he draws needed attention to the variety of materials found therein, and the important relation the sapiential writings have to them. Ultimately, however, it seems likely that the parallels to be found between the apocalypses and the sapiential literature are in a common originating milieu—i.e., scribes and their scribal training in schools which would have utilized and contributed to sapiential writings—rather than in a textual dependence. A strict delineation between prophetic and sapiential traditions is both misleading and unnecessary—it was most likely the same scribal circles ultimately responsible for preserving both corpora and thus heirs to both traditions. Von Rad's comments, however, have led to an admirable broadening of the search for relevant sources and inspirations for the apocalypses.

After von Rad's attempt to locate the origin of apocalypticism in sapiential literature, Müller qualifies that position by linking it to 'mantic wisdom,'[156] and in this he has been followed by most scholars, most notably VanderKam and Collins.[157] Müller argues that the

---

[152] E.g. Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, pp. 31–34.

[153] In Gerhard von Rad, *Old Testament Theology*, trans. D. M. G. Stalker, Study ed., 2 vols. (London: SCM, 1975), Vol. 2, pp. 301–315; Gerhard von Rad, *Wisdom in Israel*, trans. J.D. Martin, Study ed. (London: SCM, 1975), pp. 277–282.

[154] On prognostication as not limited to the sphere of prophets, see von Rad, *Wisdom in Israel*, p. 280; von Rad, *Old Testament Theology*, Vol. 2, p. 307. For a discussion of the development of deterministic ideas, von Rad, *Wisdom in Israel*, pp. 262–270, 279.

[155] E.g., Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills, eds., *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, Symposium (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005).

[156] Hans-Peter Müller, "Magisch-Mantische Weisheit und die Gestalt Daniels," *Ugarit-Forschungen* 1 (1969): pp. 79–94; Hans-Peter Müller, "Mantische Weisheit und Apokalyptik," *Congress Volume: Uppsala 1971*, ed. P. A. H. De Boer, Supplements to Vetus Testamentum 22 (Leiden: Brill, 1972), pp. 268–293.

[157] In particular note VanderKam's discussion of the *baru* in *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, CBQ Monograph Series 16 (Washington, DC: Catholic Biblical Association, 1984) and the comments reprinted in John J. Collins, *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages in Hellenistic-Roman Judaism* (Leiden: Brill, 1997), p. 45, 340, 347. It may

general context of חכם in the Hebrew Bible, *4QPrayer of Nabonidus*, and Dan'el at Ugarit demonstrates the 'magisch-mantische' associations of the word.[158] He understands the resurgence of manticism in post-exilic texts as related to the resurgence of ancient myth in said texts.[159] Thus, for VanderKam, Enoch can best be understood as the Jewish version of Enmenduranki, seventh in the antediluvian sage lists.[160] Similarly, Mesopotamian traditions represented by the Akkadian predictive texts are very similar to some types of apocalypses (the historical-review type).[161] While in Müller's view this thesis offers answers to some of the long standing questions in apocalyptic (pseudonymity, determinism, future-orientation),[162] the comparison between the apocalyptic sages and Mesopotamian mantic sages is too superficial for the weight placed upon it. The relations between sapiential traditions and the apocalypses must find a better explanation.

Recently, Bedenbender has rejected the consensus on mantic wisdom, based on a re-evaluation of the Mesopotamian evidence for manticism.[163] Preferring the term 'revealed wisdom' to 'mantic wisdom,' he notes that the very concept of the mantic sage—expert in knowledge of rituals and special 'scientific' training—obviates the need for revelation.[164] Thus, Joseph and Daniel—the bases for Müller's thesis—do not act at all like mantic sages: they receive revelations rather than use mantic skills.[165] The authors of the Daniel and Joseph cycles are quite aware of this difference between their protagonists and the religious specialists of Egypt and Babylon, taking pains to draw attention to the *revealing* G-d in place of the messengers' skill (Cf. Gen 41:16; Dan 2:22, 27).

Bedenbender specifically notes a difficulty with the parallel of the *baru*: the *baru*'s skill was based on the technical inspection of sacrificial offal (extispicy) and lecanomancy (the interpretation of oil-patterns on water), not on oneiromancy (dream interpretation), let alone the writing of revelatory literature.[166] This is an important qualification which VanderKam

---

be worth noting, however, that Collins discounts the importance of Müller's Ugartic Dan'el in relation to the Book of Daniel; John J. Collins, *Daniel*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1993), pp. 1–2.

[158] Müller, "Magisch-Mantische Weisheit," pp. 79–85 (in the Hebrew Bible); p. 87 (on the Qumran text); pp. 90–94 (on Ugaritic Danel).

[159] Müller, "Magisch-Mantische Weisheit," p. 85; Müller, "Mantische Weisheit und Apokalyptik," p. 279.

[160] VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, p. 8.

[161] James C. VanderKam, *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature* (Leiden: Brill, 2000), p. 274.

[162] Müller, "Mantische Weisheit und Apokalyptik," pp. 281–292.

[163] See Andreas Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism: A Child of Mantic Wisdom?," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), pp. 189–196.

[164] Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism," p. 191. Argall also prefers a term 'revealed wisdom' due to similarities between Sirach and *1 Enoch*. See Randal A. Argall, *1 Enoch and Sirach: a Comparative Literary and Conceptual Analysis of the Themes of Revelation, Creation, and Judgment*, SBLEJL 8 (Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1995), p. 251.

[165] Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism," pp. 191–192.

[166] VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, pp. 56–62; Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism," p. 193. Bedenbender himself cites p. 61.

himself admits.[167] The apocalyptic preoccupation with revelation contrasts highly with the technical interpretation of phenomena as appears in the Mesopotamian literature.[168] Indeed, at least at Mari, the mantic arts often functioned to verify messages received via prophetic means (i.e., 'revelation').[169] When dreams are mentioned in Mesopotamian texts, their meaning is straightforward and clear, requiring only verification rather than explanation.[170] It is therefore hard to understand the role of dream-interpretation-through-revealed-exegesis as 'mantic,' and thus, the character of Daniel is no mantic.[171] There is little if any evidence of apocalyptic authors' interest in the interpretation of entrails; there is, however, much interest in the eschatological interpretation of the Torah and prophets. This points to another difficulty with Müller's thesis which Bedenbender's critique notices: the prediction of the near future and of the eschaton are two very different concepts that need not lead from one to the other.[172] While omen literature and the apocalypses do often deal with the future, the future with which they deal are of qualitatively different kinds: it is the difference between predicting the outcome of the next presidential election and predicting the fall of the current world order. One does not lead to the other without some serious impetus and change of assumptions.

Mesopotamian traditions certainly did influence the Jewish apocalypses, but mantic traditions are not the most prevalent of those traditions. Other considerations should be sought to explain both the relevance of sapiential literature and of scribal traditions. More to the fore is the appearance of revealed interpretations rather than mantic interpretations.

The relationship between sapiential and apocalyptic literature has again occupied scholars of late, and Wright and Wills offer a sample of some results from recent scholarly discussion.[173] While pointing to the variety of ways in which apocalyptic and sapiential forms and preoccupations mutually influenced each other as the Second Temple period progressed, a number of authors also broach the issue of the social loci of the literature. What emerges from a number of scholars' suggestions and observations—more implicitly than explicitly—

---

[167] VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, pp. 57–59.

[168] Cf. The examples of omen interpretation in James B. Pritchard, ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, 3rd ed. (Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1969), p. 495; Morris Jr. Jastrow, *Babylonian-Assyrian Birth-Omens and Their Cultural Significance*, Religionsgeschichtliche Versuche und Vorarbeiten 14.5 (Giessen: Töpelmann, 1914). The dreams which appear in ANET do not appear to require any specialized interpretation (Pritchard, ed., *ANET*, p. 451, 606).

[169] Cf. the documents in Nissinen, *Prophets and Prophecy in the Ancient Near East*, nn. 8, 10, 14, 16, 17, 22, 25, 27, 29, 36, 38, 39, 44. For a discusison, see Daniel E. Fleming, "Prophets and Temple Personnel in the Mari Archives," *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Alice Ogden Bellis (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 55–56.

[170] Nissinen, *Prophets and Prophecy in the Ancient Near East*, nn. 36 and 38.

[171] Cf. the similar comment Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism," p. 191.

[172] Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism," p. 194.

[173] Wright and Wills, eds., *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*.

is the importance of a common denominator for every book: scribal origins.[174] While Nickelsburg's early, tentative term 'wisdom circles' may leave a desire for increased precision,[175] it is clear that both genres and styles are related by a shared social situation, if not necessarily shared ideologies or groups. Recognizing the scribal origin of all genres then also points to several issues which the student of apocalypticism must consider: the role and nature of education and the development of scribal hermeneutics.[176]

If one understands sapiential literature as related to the training of scribes, then one of the keys for understanding the relationship between the genres is epistemology, or more specifically, the issue of revelation. While all scribes would have been trained through the cultivation of traditional and Torah-based knowledge, they clearly did not hold uniform views on the roll or importance of revelation, and thus on the interpretation and relative role of the traditional wisdom. A scribe who accepted a revelatory epistemology would be willing to write, read, and study apocalypses, while a scribe who rejected it would not. However, even if a scribe who accepted a revelatory epistemology did not write an apocalypse, that scribe's hermeneutic and literary production would still bear the hallmarks of such an approach to tradition. Goff's study of *4QInstruction* is in this regard illuminating.[177] He notes that *4QInstruction*, while sharing a pedagogical function with the sapiential literature, *presumes an already known revelation.* Whereas an apocalypse imparts or shares the experience of a new revelation and gives it authority, *4QInstruction* admonishes scribes to study a revelation which is already accepted as authoritative. To put this in more concrete terms, *Sirach* represents a scribe who rejects a revelatory epistemology, *1 Enoch* represents scribe(s) who wish to impart a new revelation, and *4QInstruction* represents scribes who have accepted a new revelation and continue in the scribal tradition of study and interpretation (including that revelation). One of the decisive factors in characterizing these works is their hermeneutical presuppositions,

---

[174] Cf. George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Wisdom and Apocalypticism in Early Judaism: Some Points for Discussion," p. 20, 34; Sarah J. Tanzer, "Response to George Nickelsburg, 'Wisdom and Apocalypticism in Early Judaism'," p. 48; Benjamin G. Wright, III, "Putting the Puzzle Together: Some Suggestions concerning the Social Location of the Wisdom of Ben Sira," p 108; and Richard Horsley, "The Politics of Cultural Production in Second Temple Judea: Historical Context and Political-Religious Relations of the scribes Who Produced 1 Enoch, Sirach, and Daniel," p. 124, 145, all of which are in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, (eds. Benjamin G. Wright, III and Lawrence M. Wills; Symposium; Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005). A similar viewpoint may be discernable in Michael A. Knibb, "Apocalyptic and Wisdom in *4 Ezra*," *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 13.1–2 (1982): pp. 63–65.

[175] As Tanzer herself comments in the note cited above.

[176] Note in particular the contributions by Goff and Horsley, Matthew J. Goff, "Wisdom, Apocalypticism, and the Pedagogical Ethos of 4QInstruction," *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, eds. Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills, Symposium (Atlanta: SBL, 2005), pp. 57–68; Horsley, " Politics of Cultural Production," pp. 123–148.

[177] Goff, "Pedagogical Ethos of 4QInstruction," particularly pp. 64–67. Cf. his elaboration in Matthew J. Goff, "Discerning Trajectories: 4QInstruction and the Sapiential Background of the Sayings Source Q," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 124.4 (2005): pp. 657–659, 661–667.

as well as their chronological relation towards the material from which they derive their wisdom.

From Prophecy-Wisdom Dichotomy to Interpretation

The above discussion of prophecy and wisdom highlights the importance of interpretation for apocalyptic. An interesting contribution to this debate can be found in Smith's studies comparing a variety of genres and cults from the Ancient Near East.[178] He understands apocalyptic movements and apocalypses to stem from what he calls an 'apocalyptic situation'—in the context of the Ancient Near East, the scribes' loss of royal patronage—but more generally, in a situation in which traditions require 'rectification.'[179] This 'rectification' is not a result of failed prophecy, but the need to fit a new situation into an older paradigm, to fit a previously unimaginable situation into a traditional framework. Smith's comments highlight the importance of reinterpretation and (at least in the Ancient Near Eastern context) the important role of scribes in the appearance of apocalypticism. This perspective is a helpful corrective to appeals to cognitive dissonance or relative deprivation for several reasons. First, cognitive dissonance depends too much on an idea of unfulfilled predictions: the sources and preoccupations of the apocalypses are much broader than the 'correction' of failed prophecies.[180] Secondly, the concept of relative deprivation—encompassing any *perceived* deprivation—is too nebulous to count as a meaningful analytical tool.[181] The intellectual aspect which these two ideas do invoke and have in common, however, is the reinterpretation of older traditions in the light of a new situation. This is, of course, a matter of hermeneutics.

Aune investigates the role of biblical interpretation which claimed revelatory status as Jewish or Christian 'prophecy' (including the apocalypses), also known as 'charismatic exegesis.' He understands this phenomenon as a 'hermeneutical ideology' in a context of interpretive disputes.[182] This ideology presupposes a common sacred text as well as difficulty in its interpretation. While this phenomenon is not restricted to apocalypses, it is an

---

[178] Jonathan Z. Smith, "Wisdom and Apocalyptic," *Religious Syncretism in Antiquity*, ed. Berger A. Pearson (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975), pp. 131–156, reprinted in Jonathan Z. Smith, "Wisdom and Apocalyptic," *Map is Not Territory*, ed. Jonathan Z. Smith (Leiden: Brill, 1978), pp. 67–87; Jonathan Z. Smith, "Native Cults in the Hellenistic Period," *History of Religions* 11.2 (1971): p. 237.

[179] Smith, "Wisdom and Apocalyptic," p. 137, 149; Jonathan Z. Smith, "A Pearl of Great Price and a Cargo of Yams: a Study in Situational Incongruity," *History of Religions* 16.1 (1976): pp. 7–8, 16, 19. Also discussed in Jonathan Z. Smith, *Imagining Religion: From Babylon to Jonestown*, Chicago Studies in the History of Judaism (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1982), chapter 5.

[180] Contra Robert R. Wilson, *Prophecy and Society in Ancient Israel* (Philadelphia: Fortress, 1980), pp. 307–308; cf. the convenient overview in George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Apocalyptic Judaism," *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*, eds. Jacob Neusner, et al., vol. I: A-E (Leiden: Brill, 2005), p. 74, 81–83, where he does not even mention failed prophecy.

[181] Cf. the similar reservations of Newman, *Proximity to Power*, pp. 7–11.

[182] Aune, *Apocalypticism*, p. 298.

important factor in them and their general setting. This idea places the apocalypses in a context which requires other previous and contemporary genres: based on generally accepted revelatory texts, they claim either an additional or an interpretive revelation in reference to a pre-existing text or tradition which is counter other contemporary interpretations of the same texts or traditions. Since claims to revelation are not unique to apocalypses, this begs the question of why the authors chose this form to express their ideas rather than other contemporary forms (such as *pešer*). While this is an intriguing question which cannot be answered here, it points to a few important contexts for the apocalypses: the role of interpretation, the situation of interpretational conflict, and the presence of 'authoritative' texts.

Tigchelaar, in his careful study and comparison of Zechariah and the *Book of Watchers*,[183] emphasizes the importance of the interpretation and the systematization of prior traditions in both books,[184] although he sees this as less true for the *Book of Watchers*.[185] He also briefly notes an apparent shift from prophets to scribes, probably in the context of the "accumulation of a corpus of religious texts."[186] While all living traditions receive continual (re)-interpretation, Tigchelaar's observations lead to further questions on the cause and effects of this process in Second Temple Judaism, in particular the methods of interpretation (the hermeneutics) used and their sources. The importance of these questions is borne out further by his observation that the disparate and encyclopaedic interests of the texts still serve to further a "comprehensive interpretation."[187]

For these reasons, this study understands the relationships between prophecy, wisdom, and apocalyptic through the lens of an *Apocalyptic Hermeneutic*. The apocalyptic hermeneutic is primarily to be regarded as a *shared interpretive framework* which interrelates apocalypticism, the apocalypses, and millenarianism. It is not a shared theology, nor is it a coherent, systematic philosophy. It is a method of receiving and reshaping traditions which shares identifiable aspects while producing noticeably divergent results. It is an intellectual paradigm through which many Judaeans of the Second Temple period channelled their concerns, queries, and teachings. By correlating apocalyptic to the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic and placing the primary locus of Iranian influence there, this study maintains that Persia's

---

[183] Eibert J. C. Tigchelaar, *The Prophets of Old and the Day of the End: Zechariah, the Book of Watchers, and Apocalyptic* (Leiden: Brill, 1996).
[184] Tigchelaar, *Prophets of Old*, pp. 243–244, 253, 265.
[185] E. J. C. Tigchelaar, "Some Remarks on the Book of the Watchers, the Priests, Enoch and Genesis, and 4Q208," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), p. 145; Tigchelaar, *Prophets of Old*, p. 248.
[186] Tigchelaar, *Prophets of Old*, p. 254, 263.
[187] Tigchelaar, *Prophets of Old*, p. 247.

relevance to *apocalyptic* as a whole and not just individual *apocalypses* can be better understood and formulated. This is further explored in Chapter V.

Foreign Sources

In addition to native Judaean precursors, the material in apocalyptic can be understood in relation to a variety of foreign sources. One of the more common referents for Jewish apocalyptic is the matrix of Jewish nationalism in the face of an encroaching Hellenism.[188] There is no denying the importance of the Hellenistic context of many of the apocalypses nor that nationalistic sentiment certainly factors heavily into the context of many of the analogous texts from around the Ancient Near East. The term 'Hellenism,' however, is problematic and should not be understood as the dichotomized opposite of Judaism, as sometimes understood.[189] A group's interaction with the *zeitgeist* may be better understood as a complex dialectic than a confrontation. There is no denying the importance of renewed nationalistic interests in the Hellenistic world, from traditional cultural motifs to desires for political independence, yet this resurgence also happened in the context of a remarkable, pan-Ancient Near Eastern admixing and borrowing of myths, religions, and laws.[190] However strong a nationalistic urge in any given movement is, this is rarely an effective barrier to the influence of foreign elements, even among so-called nativist/revivalist movements.[191] Further, the various regions which produced apocalypse-like literature shared not only the experience of Hellenistic rule but also shared the experience of Achaemenid rule and its end. One may wonder, then, whether the Persian past or Hellenistic present was the more important aspect of the era's common *zeitgeist.* Although any discussion of the apocalypses by needs must deal with their Hellenistic context, the significantly pre-

---

[188] Martin Hengel, *Judaism and Hellenism*, trans. John Bowden (London: Xpress Reprints, 1996), p. 196; John J. Collins, "Jewish Apocalyptic Against Its Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 220 (1975): pp. 27–36; Russell, *Method and Message*, p. 15; Müller, "Mantische Weisheit und Apokalyptik," pp. 290–292.

[189] E.g., especially, Hengel, *Judaism and Hellenism*, p. 196: "*Thus the picture of history in apocalyptic is above all a fruit of the Jewish struggle for spiritual and religious self-determination against the invasion of Jerusalem by the Hellenistic spirit.*" (emphasis his); this has been critiqued; David E. Aune, "Transformations of Apocalypticism in Early Christianity," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2003), p. 60; Collins, "Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment," pp. 30–31; Erich S. Gruen, "Hellenistic Judaism," *Cultures of the Jews*, ed. David Biale (New York: Schocken, 2002), pp. 95–96. Note in particular the work of Gruen, *Heritage and Hellenism; the reinvention of Jewish tradition* (University of California Press, 1998), notably pp. 1–40; Morton Smith, *Palestinian Parties and Politics that Shaped the Old Testament*, 2nd ed. (London: SCM, 1987), pp. 57–61; a convenient overview of the subject is available in Lee I. Levine, *Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence?*, Samuel and Althea Stroum Lectures in Jewish Studies (Seattle: Univ of Washington P, 1998), pp. 3–15.

[190] E.g., *Prophecy of a Potter*, *Demotic Chronicle*, *Oracle of Hystaspes*, *Sibylline Oracles*; Cf. Smith, *Palestinian Parties*, pp. 60–61; Levine, *Judaism and Hellenism*, pp. 18–19.

[191] Cf. The observations of Anthony F. C. Wallace, "Revitalization Movements," *American Anthropologist* New Series, 58.2 (1956): p. 276; Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," p. 10; Smith, "Native Cults in the Hellenistic Period," pp. 236–249.

Maccabaean appearance of the oldest known Jewish apocalypse (*The Book of Watchers*) begs the question whether Hellenism's role was in the origins or the evolution of the phenomena.

In Collins's study of the overall phenomena of apocalyptic literature in the Ancient Near East, he argues that it appears in the wake of Alexander, at least partially linked with a resurgence of nationalism caused thereby,[192] as well as fits into an overall Hellenistic *zeitgeist*.[193] It is worth noting, however, that Alexander's empire was largely contiguous with the Achaemenid Empire. The relative roles of Hellenism and the previous 'Achaemenid *Koine*' have yet to be assessed. Collins argues that apocalypticism has eclectic sources but combines them uniquely into a novel entity;[194] he is certainly right to emphasize the role of a new synthesis in apocalyptic. However, significant work still remains to be done on identifying and understanding the various elements which contributed to the apocalyptic syntheses. A number of contexts for these elements can be considered.

Mowinkel claims an 'Irano-Chaldean' syncretism is the source for certain apocalyptic motifs, in particular the contentious 'Son of Man.'[195] Mowinkel's overall analysis of the appearance of apocalyptic appears to be a useful model: the reinterpretation of scripture along the lines of non-scriptural ideas, in the context of Persian ideas as catalyst.[196] His model, however, leaves a need for a more detailed investigation of this catalyst beyond an unfortunately nebulous 'Irano-Chaldean syncretism.'

Kvanvig argues for the importance of Babylonian materials on the traditions, most notably of Enoch and Daniel.[197] He claims that in the Enochic traditions the characters of Enoch and Uriel share the roles played by Uanadapa in Babylonian myths. He also finds a parallel between the Babylonian 'first man' and the Son of Man figure. He ultimately understands the Enochic tradition and Daniel 7 as stemming from *The Poem of Erra* and *The Vision of the Netherworld*, respectively.[198] These were gradually transformed in a Jewish context into a visionary form.[199] For Kvanvig, the Mesopotamian influence is decisive and distinctive for this literature.[200] There is no doubt that Babylonian materials are significant for Judaism,

---

[192] Collins, "Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment," pp. 27–30.

[193] Collins, "Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment," p. 33; John J. Collins, "Cosmos and Salvation: Jewish Wisdom and Apocalyptic in the Hellenistic Age," *History of Religions* 17.2 (1977): p. 138, 142; John J. Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, Biblical Resource Series, Second ed. (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998), pp. 34–38.

[194] Collins, *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages*, p. 343.

[195] Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, pp. 422–433.

[196] Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, p. 266, 418; 270–271.

[197] Helge S. Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic: The Mesopotamian Background of the Enoch Figure and the Son of Man*, Wissenschaftliche Monographien Zum Alten und Neuen Testament 61 (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1988).

[198] See the convenient summary of his argument, Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 568–571.

[199] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, p. 605.

[200] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 609–611; Cf. Helge S. Kvanvig, "Origin and Identity of the Enoch Group," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19-23, 2001.*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), p. 212; Helge S. Kvanvig,

although some of Kvanvig's particular parallels have confronted resistance.[201] While he is certainly right to emphasize the lack of direct correspondence between myth and history (i.e., a mythic story does not by definition correspond one-to-one with any contemporary event)[202] and a pre-Hellenistic origin to many elements,[203] his discussion of the Persian context of the proposed Babylonian backgrounds leaves significant room for at least another layer of transformation before the apocalypses.[204] Indeed, the present author is left wondering whether the Babylonian substratum or the Persian adaptation of it is the more decisive matter.

Few would dispute the influence of Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian, and Greek contexts. While the possible relevance of Persia is often alluded to, it has long gone without a serious evaluation. If one accepts that the traditions of the Judaeans were affected by the other imperial powers with which they came into contact, one would *prima facie* assume the same must be true for the Persian Empire. Certainly, if Persia did not, there ought to be a significant reason for such an exceptional status. This study attempts to begin a test of the hypothesis that Persia was not an exception.

Apocalyptic and the Nature of Religious Discourse

Types of Language

An important consideration in apocalyptic studies is the type of language used and form of discourse it represents. Sandy draws attention to the importance of understanding the types of language used in the prophetic and apocalyptic literature; he is more concerned with the understanding of the genres than with a strict delineation of them.[205] He takes considerable time trying to understand the types of language used, focusing more on the overall message and impact of a text than with a detailed exegesis, noting that with both types of literature an emotional as well as an intellectual response appears to be what the authors desired.[206] He even suggests that the apocalypses depend on a sense of mystery for their effectiveness.[207] The poetic and artistic aspects of the literatures certainly should be kept in mind when attempting to understand them: the people responsible were poets and artists

---

"Throne Visions and Monsters: The Encounter Between Danielic and Enochic Traditions," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 117.2 (2005): pp. 248–272.

[201] E.g., John J. Collins, "Review: *Roots of Apocalyptic: The Mesopotamian Background of the Enoch Figure and of the Son of Man*, by Helge S. Kvanvig," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 109.4 (1990): pp. 717–718, where he is accepting of the Enoch but not the Danielic parallels; Ernest C. Lucas, "Daniel: Resolving the Enigma," *Vetus Testamentum* 50.1 (2000): p. 71.

[202] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 558–613.

[203] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 547–549, 604; Kvanvig, "Origin and Identity," pp. 208–209.

[204] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 540–555.

[205] Cf. D. Brent Sandy, *Plowshares and Pruning Hooks* (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity Press, 2002), p. 109, where he seems to take a family resemblance approach.

[206] Sandy, *Plowshares and Pruning Hooks*, p. 198.

[207] Sandy, *Plowshares and Pruning Hooks*, p. 127.

as well as communicators, not necessarily systematic theologians or astute politicians. While they had urgent and deeply-felt opinions on various matters, their ideology need not necessarily reduce to simple or propositional ideas. The nature and type of languages, as well as the forms employed, could hold meaning for the authors in these less cerebral ways. When attempting to understand the texts it is important to consider categories of hyperbole, symbol, and metaphor as well as myth and theology.

A useful notice in this regard is offered by Bryan in his proposal to situate at least aspects of the apocalypses within the framework of 'the Kosher mentality.'[208] His point of departure is that the use of symbolism often cannot be reduced to merely the supposed referent: other connotations and shades of meaning are carried by the use as well.[209] While one may quibble over his understanding of Kosher regulation, his careful attention to the way in which forms of speech, intellectual backgrounds, and types of language function to create meaning in texts is a valuable contribution. People's contexts—be they Kosher-legal or imperial—play subtle roles in the creation and interpretation of meaning, and symbols cannot be merely reduced to philosophical categories or singular referents.

From his in-depth study of *4 Ezra*,[210] Stone distills insights into the nature of the apocalypses which previous scholarship had ignored. His approach highlights the need to understand the texts as religious texts, not necessarily theological treatises,[211] and this opens up analyses in a few new directions and methodologies. In particular, this means an openness to the potential of the texts to transmit authentic religious experiences, and that traditional text-critical categories are therefore misleading in this respect.[212] Stone's approach underscores the importance of understanding the texts not merely in the context of ideological struggle, which is of course important, but in the context of real religious communities, with needs and experiences beyond analytical, disputational, or materialistic categories.[213] While culture forms the language and style of any textual creation, traditional

---

[208] David Bryan, *Cosmos, Chaos and the Kosher Mentality*, JSPS 12 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995).
[209] Bryan, *Kosher Mentality*, pp. 27–31.
[210] In particular, Michael E. Stone, *Fourth Ezra: a Commentary*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1990).
[211] Michael E. Stone, "On Reading an Apocalypse," *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocalyptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium*, eds. John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth, JSPSS 9 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991), p. 72;
[212] Michael E. Stone, "A Reconsideration of Apocalyptic Visions," *Harvard Theological Review* 96.2 (2003): pp. 177–179; Cf. Rowland, *Open Heaven*, pp. 217–234.
[213] Similar considerations have been argued recently by sociologists; for a critique of excessive economic-materialistic concerns, see Steve Bruce, "Religion and Rational Choice: a Critique of Economic Explanations of Religious Behaviour," *Sociology of Religion* 54.2 (1993): pp. 193–205; for the diversity of interests and motivations, see Tomas S. Drønen, "Scientific Revolution and Religious Conversion: a Closer Look at Thomas Kuhns's Theory of Paradigm-shift," *Method and Theory in the Study of Religion* 18.3 (2006): p. 241 (citing Smart's 'six dimensions of religion').

language, tropes, or subjects need not eliminate either the genuineness of experience or the variety in potential interests.[214]

Nature of 'Traditions'

An extremely important aspect to apocalyptic studies is the nature of human traditions; 'tradition' functions as a middle-level referent in the terminology posited above. A pioneer in this regard, Boccaccini attempts to understand what he terms as 'Middle Judaism' (Judaism between ca. 300 B.C.E.–200 C.E.) by way of intellectual 'traditions.'[215] Noting that genres and even identical ideas can service very separate agendas or ideologies, Boccaccini seeks to trace 'ideological traditions'—traditions which transcend genre and even party boundaries—behind the various extant literatures of Second Temple Judaism. He identifies three main traditions: a Zadokite tradition, a Sapiential tradition, and an Enochic tradition. It is the Enochic tradition which must be connected with an apocalyptic tradition, if one exists.[216] The Zadokite tradition belongs to the new post-exilic priesthood, the Sapiential tradition stems from the educated laity and administrative scribal class, and the Enochic tradition supported disenfranchized priests.[217] In some ways, Boccaccini's discussion recalls Smith's discussion of parties and politics,[218] replacing the terminology of politics with 'tradition.' While it is nebulous and perhaps requires further elucidation, 'tradition' appears to be a better way to acknowledge both the continuity and changes visible in the texts as well as their independence from particular 'parties.' An individual is certainly capable of being influenced by several intellectual 'traditions' regardless of social-economic status or 'party' affiliation. However, his temptation to limit apocalyptic to only the Enochic tradition like his mentor Sacchi is surely misleading and unfortunate.[219]

Boccaccini's emphasis on the antagonistic stances possible within the genre and worldview of the apocalypses, as he illustrates between the *Book of Dreams* and Daniel, is apt and needs to be kept in mind when discussing the apocalyptic phenomenon. A cursory overview of sectarian and political strife will confirm that the bitterest debates can flourish between the closest of ideological allies. His reminder that similar positions can reappear in a variety of genres and among different parties must also be remembered in the discussion.

---

[214] Stone, "A Reconsideration of Apocalyptic Visions," p. 179; cf. the difference in speculative content noted in Michael E. Stone, "Lists of Revealed Things in the Apocalyptic Literature," *Magnalia Dei, the Mighty Acts of God: Essays on the Bible and Archaeology in Memory of G. Ernest Wright*, eds. Frank Moore Cross, et al. (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1976), p. 420, 435–436.

[215] Gabriele Boccaccini, *Middle Judaism: Jewish Thought 300 BCE to 200 CE* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1991), p. 25, 129.

[216] Boccaccini, *Middle Judaism*, pp. 129–130.

[217] See the book Boccaccini, *Rabbinic Judaism*, particularly the summarizing diagram at the beginning.

[218] Smith, *Palestinian Parties*.

[219] Boccaccini, *Middle Judaism*, pp. 129–130, 160. Cf. the critique in Collins, *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages*, p. 295.

These insights, however, do not invalidate investigations into individual texts, the overall worldview inherent in them, nor of their sources. They should, however, qualify their significance, and cause pause before hypothesizing conventicles, movements, or sects based simply on shared traditions.

Martínez uses the term 'apocalyptic' to refer to a tradition, much as Sacchi or Boccaccini do, something which is evident in, but not restricted to, the apocalypses. He defines this tradition as

> A current of thought that is born in the religious context and specific culture of post-exilic Judaism, that develops over a long period, reacting interactively with other currents of thought of the Jewish environment, such a prophetic tradition to the wisdom tradition [sic], and is shaped in the various works that we call 'apocalypses.'[220]

He notes that Collins objects to a single apocalyptic tradition, preferring to speak of multiple apocalyptic traditions (such as Enochic and Qumranic apocalyptic traditions), which are more cohesive and fall under an umbrella worldview of apocalypticism.[221] To Martínez, however, a tradition is able to contain contradictory positions within itself, as a tradition consists of both inheritance and development.[222] While he is certainly right to note that traditions can contain both continuity and potentially divergent development, it also seems possible that there can be distinct heirs with significant enough discrete traits to speak of separate traditions (or sub-traditions). As he demonstrates, Qumran certainly inherited much from the Enochic tradition, but it is also characteristically different.[223] Because of this distinctiveness, it would be more clear to continue to speak, with Collins, of apocalypticism as an umbrella worldview within which a variety of apocalyptic traditions can be situated. The interactions between various traditions are not thereby negated, but it helps to maintain a distinction between the preoccupations of the common (apocalypticism) and the unique (a specific apocalyptic tradition).

A recognition of the role of traditions refocuses attention to the importance of the history of ideas for the study of apocalyptic. While the sociological and comparative approaches serve as a necessary corrective to previous studies, they too often ignore the importance of ideas—specifically religious ideas—in the respective texts, and thus misunderstand one of the central purposes of the texts. A recognition of the social,

---

[220] F. García Martínez, "Is Jewish Apocalyptic the Mother of Christian Theology?," *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism*, ed. E. J. C. Tigchelaar, Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 63 (Leiden: Brill, 2007), p. 147.

[221] F. García Martínez, "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls," *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism*, ed. E. J. C. Tigchelaar (Leiden: Brill, 2007), p. 199. Citing Collins in Collins, *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages*, p. 298.

[222] Martínez, "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls," p. 200, 226.

[223] Martínez, "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls," pp. 199–226.

economic, and political contexts of texts and people is vital, yet these contexts cannot exhaust the significance nor meanings in religious texts. A look at ideas and theology is necessary to both understand the texts in question fully, and to correlate the otherwise disjointed concepts of apocalypse, millenarianism, apocalypticism, and apocalyptic hermeneutics.

This dissertation is more concerned with the role and dissemination of ideas—theological, cultural, philosophical, political—than it is with history or sociology *per se.* However, the historical and sociological contexts are vital to understanding the import and development of ideas and cannot be ignored; furthermore, the appearance of apocalyptic literature occurred in a historic era, and this study attempts to understand it in the context of its contemporary and antecedent events and traditions, not merely in a timeless comparative manner, drawing parallels which cannot be justified in a plausible historical setting. The appearance of apocalyptic groups and apocalypses is often understood in matrices of materialistic concerns, of class rivalry and oppression, of political-economic machinations.[224] These, of course, are present and important. The texts themselves highlight issues of justice. Yet material concerns and political ambition do not exhaust the realms of human interest and motivation.[225] In texts which purport to be 'religious' in nature, it is also appropriate to seek more 'religious' motivations as well.

An exploration of historical theology begs the question of the source of new theologies: were they organic developments, products of schools or individuals, or were they borrowed from or inspired by other religious systems? It is apparent that in a topic as complex as apocalyptic literature the solution to such problems will often also be equally complex. It is likely that the development of ideas in Second Temple Judaism was a combination of individuals and schools studying and developing received traditions as well as exploring the ideas and systems of the people in which they came into contact. A variety of foreign influences are claimed for Jewish literature of various ages, as is briefly noted above. While elements of Hellenistic, Babylonian, Roman, and Egyptian cultures are often entertained by biblical scholars, the possibility of Iranian influence has largely fallen out of

---

[224] Ted Daniels, "Charters of Righteousness: Politics, Prophets, and the Drama of Conversion," *War in Heaven/Heaven on Earth: Theories of the Apocalyptic*, eds. Stephen D. O'Leary and Glen S. McGhee, Millennialism and Society 2 (London: Equinox, 2005), pp. 3–18, particularly 4–6; Richard Horsley, "Religion and Other Products of Empire," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 71.1 (2003): pp. 13–44; Horsley, " Politics of Cultural Production," pp. 123–148; Richard Horsley, "The Origins of the Hebrew Scriptures in Imperial Relations," *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity*, ed. Jonathan A. Draper (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004), pp. 107–135; Werner H. Kelber, "Roman Imperialism and Early Christian Scribality," *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity*, ed. Jonathan A. Draper (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004), pp. 135–154.

[225] Cf. a recent study on the causes of contemporary conflicts, where the category 'resources' only came in fourth as cause; the first was 'ideological change'. Anonymous, "Why Wars Happen," *The Economist* 16 Dec 2008: np., http://www.economist.com/daily/chartgallery/displayStory.cfm?story_id=12758508&source=features_box4.

fashion. Since Palestine was under Persian rule for over two hundred years and areas of the Diaspora lived under or in contact with the Parthians (and later, the Sassanians) for many centuries, this lacuna in scholarship deserves a reappraisal.

To understand some of the streams which fed into the apocalypses, it is necessary to understand the period which preceded them as well as their contemporary contexts. This preceding era includes both the Hellenistic period—which is often the focus of apocalyptic studies—as well as the Achaemenid period. This long 'post-exilic' period was extremely important, even if it is shrouded in mystery.[226] Out of it emerged a community which was ruled by a high priest, had a collective identity both 'religious' and 'ethnic,' which held texts as authoritative, and which had numerous variations and tensions. It had a homeland which was, for most of the period, subject to imperial powers as well as a large diaspora. Judaeans in this period did not all inhabit the same social location, and thus probably held divergent interests and tendencies. Which factors played the most decisive roles in the formation of this new polity—whether political, socio-economic, geographic, or theological—is difficult to ascertain from the sources. In any case, it is likely that all of them played respective roles in one way or another. However, one ingredient in the appearance of apocalyptic must surely be 'foreign influence.'

Types of Influence and Transmission

The positing of foreign influence has a long scholarly pedigree. Yet, as highly literate scholars working primarily with textual evidence, researchers have often understood the ancient processes of tradition-creation and –dissemination as if carried out through a cut-and-paste method appropriate to their modern world. The proper understanding of the ancient texts themselves and the methods of cultural influence in general require the recognition of several communicative contexts. First, it is important to note that the vast majority of the population was either completely or functionally illiterate. Except for the educated elites, all knowledge of traditions by definition was acquired aurally. Secondly, the creators of our texts were scribes, and thus literate. They, however, did not have the luxury of vast and accessible deposits of texts; even their textual activities were in a more

---

[226] For some studies of this era, see Daniel L. Smith, *The Religion of the Landless* (Bloomington, IN: Meyer-Stone Books, 1989); Berquist, *Judaism in Persia's Shadow*; Lisbeth S. Fried, *The Priest and the Great King: Temple-Palace Relations in the Persian Empire*, Biblical and Judaic Studies from the University of California 10 (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2004); Lester L. Grabbe, "Archaeology and *archaiologias*: Relating excavations to History in Fourth-Century B.C.E. Palestine," *Judah and the Judeans in the Fourth Century B.C.E.*, eds. Oded Lipschits, et al. (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2007), pp. 125–135; Diana V. Edelman, *The Origins of the 'Second' Temple: Persian Imperial Policy and the Rebuilding of Jerusalem*, Bible World (London: Equinox, 2005); J. Maxwell Miller and John H. Hayes, *A History of Ancient Israel and Judah*, 2nd ed. (London: SCM, 1999), pp. 437–476; Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming, eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period* (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006); Oded Lipschits, et al., eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Fourth Century B.C.E.* (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2007).

thoroughly oral environment than today. Because of this, it is necessary to investigate the role and effects of the introduction of new media upon a society in terms of not only the preservation, creation, and dissemination of tradition, but in the interaction of traditions (i.e., influence). This topic is highly contentious and complicated but cannot be ignored without significant peril. Chapter III will more thoroughly investigate the issue in relation to modes of transmission. For the present purposes, all that needs to be noted is that influence and parallels cannot be restricted to direct textual quotations or borrowings.

To discuss questions of influence, it is first necessary to clarify what is meant by the term and to specify a working methodology for assessing its presence and effects.[227] The term 'influence' is here understood as one type of 'interaction.' 'Interaction' denotes a variety of types of intercourse, from superficial to significant, including the social-situational phenomenon of the meetings of cultures as well as the 'intellectual' side. Political and social structures as well as cultural and religious elements are included in the concept. This is generally recognized as being nigh universal.[228] The scholarly use of the term for the intellectual side of interaction—'influence' or 'dialogue'—is inconsistently used, however, with a variety of connotations attached. It is therefore important to note what is not meant by the word 'influence' here: it does not mean a wholesale 'cut and paste' of literate materials from one canon to another (say, from the *Bundahišn* to *1 Enoch*). Neither does it denote a religious conversion under another name, nor does it indicate the 'syncretism' or 'assimilation' of anthropologists.[229] Of concern here is not the development of entirely new

---

[227] This seems to not have received much attention as a topic in and of itself. Critiques of comparative methods, however, abound. Cf. Shemaryahu Talmon, "The 'Comparative Method' in Biblical Interpretation: Principles and Problems," *Congress Volume, Göttingen 1977*, Vetus Testamentum Supplement 29 (Leiden: Brill, 1978), pp. 320–356; Sandmel, "Parallelomania," pp. 1–13; Fitz John Porter Poole, "Metaphors and Maps: Towards Comparison in the Anthropology of Religion," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 54.3 (1986): pp. 411–457. Smith, *Imagining Religion*, pp. 19–35 discusses the issues involved, but offers no methodology for use. Useful in regards to comparison in general are the essays by Wilfred Cantwell Smith and Mercea Eliade in Mircea Eliade and Joseph M. Kitagawa, eds., *The History of Religions: Essays in Methodology* (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1959). John M. G. Barclay, *Jews in the Mediterranean Diaspora: From Alexander to Trajan (323 BCE–117 CE)* (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1998), pp. 82–102, analyzes interaction in the context of Hellenization using the terms 'asssimilation,' 'acculturation,' and 'accommodation.' He seems to overlook the unconcious aspects in his discussion, however.

[228] Alexander Lesser, "Social Fields and the Evolution of Society," *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology* 17.1 (1961): p. 41; Timothy Light, "Orthosyncretism: an Account of Melding in Religion," *Method and Theory in the Study of Religion* 12.1 (2000): p. 185; Hendrik M. Vroom, "Syncretism and Dialogue: a Philosophical Analysis," *Syncretism in Religion: a Reader*, eds. Anita M. Leopold and Jeppe S. Jensen (London: Equinox, 2004), p. 109; Robert Boyd and Peter J. Richerson, *The Origin and Evolution of Cultures* (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2005), p. 333, 421; Morris Swadesh, "Diffusional Cumulation and Archaic Residue as Historical Explanations," *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology* 7.1 (1951): pp. 1–21.

[229] Anthropologists seem to be more interested in a biologically-inspired typology ('phyogenetics'); cf. Ward H. Goodenough, "Phylogenetically related cultural traditions," *Cross-Cultural Research* 31.1 (1997): pp. 16–26; Fred R. Dallmayr, *Beyond Orientalism: Essays in Cross-Cultural Encounters* (SUNY Press, 1996), Chapter 1; William H. Durham, "Applications of Evolutionary Culture Theory," *Annual Review of Anthropology* 21 (1992): pp. 331–355. See also Michael Pye, *Syncretism versus Synthesis*, British Association for the Study of Religions Occasional Papers 8 (Cardiff: Open University, 1993), especially p. 9.

systems or traditions, but of change within a system due to external interaction; the question of how much change a system or tradition can undertake before being a new system is an interesting problem, but it cannot be broached here.[230] Interaction and influence are understood as unavoidable aspects of the human condition, one which has impacted and continues to impact all traditions and religions. In all cultures, and particularly in largely oral cultures, influence is a subtle affair, and requires much thought to tease out.

Hinnells offers a suggestive discussion of the types of influence possible between communities, and his ideas are worth keeping in mind when assessing questions of influence.[231] He notes two basic types of influence, each with their own variations: 1) the conscious imitation or borrowing of elements from another tradition. This can be either positive (i.e., accepting ideas accepted in another tradition) or negative (i.e., rejecting ideas which are rejected in another tradition); 2) conscious rejection of another tradition. The rejection of a tradition, however, can still affect the rejector's own tradition in two ways: a) by rejecting aspects of own traditions seen to conform too closely to the rejected one; b) by utilizing the modes of discourse of the rejected tradition to combat or argue with it. Hinnells notes that type 1 will often occur consciously while type 2 will often occur unconsciously, although either can simultaneously function consciously and unconsciously.[232] In addition to these forms of influence, a tradition can be influenced by using new ideas to re-interpret native ideas. This last type of influence is the most difficult to detect, because it will for the most part utilize native ideas and motifs and will claim to be an organic growth of the tradition. All of these types of influence are possible—even likely—even in situations *without* external coercion (such as a state-mandated reform program). In other words, an officially supported 'missionary' program is not necessary for influence to occur; it can quite simply happen when two cultures interact on a personal level. This personal level includes administrative scenarios as well as scenarios from the course of everyday life. The potential

---

Some of the differences in terminology seem to relate to focus: 'syncretism' often seems to imply either the wholesale merging of two (or more) independent traditions or the highly deliberate, conscious 'cherry-picking' of foreign elements by an individual or community (e.g., Anthony M. Stevens-Arroyo, "Syncretic Sociology: Towards a Cross-Disciplinary Study of Religion," *Sociology of Religion* 59.3 [1998]: pp. 217–236). The first is not the intention here; the second would only be one kind of influence.
'Assimilation' is sometimes used in ways amenable to the present study, cf. Kamyar Abdi, "Notes on the Iranization of Bes in the Achaemenid Empire," *Ars Orientalis* 32 (2002): 133–162. The older (1936) definition cited by Jack M. Balcer, "The Greeks and the Persians: the Processes of Acculturation," *Historia* 32.3 (1983): p. 257 is satisfactory, but he provides no elaboration. Similarly, Raymond H.C. Jr. Teske and Bardin H. Nelson, "Acculturation and Assimilation: a Clarification," *American Ethnologist* 1.2 (1974): pp. 351–367 attempts to delineate 'assimilation' and 'acculturation' but offers no criteria for texts.

[230] For the purposes of discussion, 'tradition' and 'system' are deliberately broad: they include both overarching religions (e.g., Judaism) and more specific groups (e.g., Qumranic Judaism). For an interesting attempt at such a discussion, see Drønen, "Scientific Revolution," pp. 232–253; in the context of globalization, see Simon Harrison, "Cultural Boundaries," *Anthropology Today* 15.5 (1999): pp. 10–13.

[231] See Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," pp. 9–11.

[232] Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," p. 10.

role of home life and women in particular, in terms of intermarriage, should also be kept in mind, although it is not addressed in any detail here.[233]

Two studies from a slightly different scholarly debate[234] highlight two important aspects of any religious tradition: within each system there is a continual presence of hermeneutics as well as a hierarchy of importance for each element within the tradition.[235] No human is static, and tradents will continually (re-)interpret their traditions. However, in this process, elements which are considered to be more peripheral are prone to more extensive reinterpretation than those which are central. Vroom, emphasizing the incorporation of 'foreign' and 'incompatible' elements within a tradition, argues that such incorporation involves the reinterpretation of old beliefs as well as a reconfiguration of the relative structural importance of elements within the receiving system.[236] Without limiting the discussion to traditions which are 'incompatible' as Vroom does, his observations on the results of influence or borrowing on the receiving tradition are still useful for evaluating less radical influences. The reinterpretation of elements within a system and the importation and adaption of elements into a system will necessitate the altering of the 'ratios' and relations in that system. When analyzing potential instances of influence, then, it is necessary to consider 1) areas in the receiving tradition which are most susceptible to reinterpretation (i.e., how central or peripheral it is); 2) the re-interpretation which would be needed or effected by the influence or borrowing; 3) the relative structural impact on the receiving system.

Light understands religions to consist of three 'cognitive entities': symbols, categories into which symbols are arranged, and the organizational rules which govern the importance and interactions of symbols and categories.[237] The rules which govern the relative importance or types of acceptable change will vary drastically from tradition to tradition, so that rules which are valid for one tradition will not likely be the same for another. This means that a change (or influence) which one tradition may be able to accept as normal and unproblematic could very well be "*a drastic and traumatic alteration in foundational understanding from the viewpoint of the other tradition.*"[238] This relates to Vroom's understanding of the structural importance of a given element within a tradition, and Light's illustrations make the

---

[233] For studies of women in the Achaemenid context, see Maria Brosius, *Women in Ancient Persia (559–331 BC)*, Oxford Classical Monographs (Oxford: Clarendon, 1998); Janine Bakker, "The Lady and the Lotus: Representations of Women in the Achaemenid Empire," *Iranica Antiqua* 42 (2007): 207–220. For a discussion of the different social levels in which such interactions take place, see Julian H. Steward, "Levels of Sociocultural Integration: an Operational Concept," *Journal of Anthropological Research* 42.3 (1986): pp. 337–353, especially 352–353.

[234] The History of Religions and Anthropological debate over 'Syncretism,' which appears to focus on slightly different questions than the ones of interest to this study.

[235] Vroom, "Syncretism and Dialogue," pp. 103–112; Light, "Orthosyncretism," pp. 162–185.

[236] Vroom, "Syncretism and Dialogue," p. 109.

[237] Light, "Orthosyncretism," p. 163.

[238] Light, "Orthosyncretism," p. 178. Emphasis original.

point amply clear: while the Chinese religions are easily able to assimilate a new deity, the same is not true of the monotheistic religions. Even though two religions may share an analogous category of 'divinity,' they need not have the same structural importance, thus qualifying any superficial parallel between them.[239] Thus, to a Christian scholar, the adoption of a new deity looks like a drastic change, while to a devotee of Chinese religion, it would not. As a result, Light posits 'two principles of religious syncretism': the principle of religious change and the principle of cognitive integrity,[240] which could interact suggestively with a metaphor of 'recipe.'[241] These are similar to the views of Vroom noted above. Light posits that change will most likely produce a re-arranging of the structure and a redefinition of symbols within that structure, although the tradents will understand the process as simply a normal part of the hermeneutical process. Further, it is to be expected that the elements most likely to be influenced or borrowed are of less structural importance to or fit within currently existing categories of the receiving tradition. In other words, interaction will appear completely natural and organic within the adapting system, even if, from another (outside) perspective, it appears to be quite radical.

For the purposes of this study, the terms 'interaction,' 'influence,' and 'borrowing' are distinguished and defined as follows. 'Interaction' denotes the participation in social and intellectual intercourse with those of other religions and cultures which occurs in normal human society.[242] This interaction can have three types of result on a culture as is visible in texts. 'Borrowing' refers to the usage of a term, story, or other discrete element which is taken from another culture or religion. This is similar to, but here distinguished from, 'quotation,' which is reserved solely for the direct and intended reference to a text or saying. 'Influence' designates the reshaping, selection, and/or interpretation of ideas, stories, characters, or doctrines from the native traditions due to interaction with another culture.[243] As noted by Hinnells, this can be conscious or unconscious, positive or negative. These three forms of interaction are not, in practice, so easily delimited; however, it is useful to make the distinction for purposes of clarity (see Figure 2). Immediately apparent from these definitions is the fact that two types of interaction—incidences of quotation and borrowing—are the easiest to identify.[244] All four forms of influence delineated are difficult

---

[239] Similar to the objections put forward by Sandmel, "Parallelomania," p. 5, 7.
[240] Light, "Orthosyncretism," p. 180.
[241] R. Lee Lyman and Michael J. O'Brien, "Cultural Traits: Units of Analysis in Early Twentieth-Century Anthropology," *Journal of Anthropological Research* 59.2 (2003): pp. 225–250.
[242] Thus, similar to 'assimilation' in Barclay, *Jews in the Mediterranean Diaspora*, p. 92.
[243] Similar to 'accommodation' in Barclay, *Jews in the Mediterranean Diaspora*, p. 96.
[244] For a discussion of the problematics of identifying allusions, see Benjamin G. Wold, *Women, Men, and Angels: the Qumran wisdom document Musar leMevin and its allusions to Genesis creation traditions*, Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. 2. Reihe, 201 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2005), pp. 49–78; for quotations, see Richard L. Schultz, *The Search for Quotation: Verbal Parallels in the Prophets*, JSOTSS 180 (Sheffield:

to spot, with the negative forms perhaps impossible without the aid of additional, non-textual evidence.[245] A rather intimidating amount of data would probably be needed to demonstrate the unconscious rejection of internal traditions due to similarities with another tradition, and as such it is probably not often possible for Second Temple Judaism; nevertheless, the possibility ought to be kept in mind.

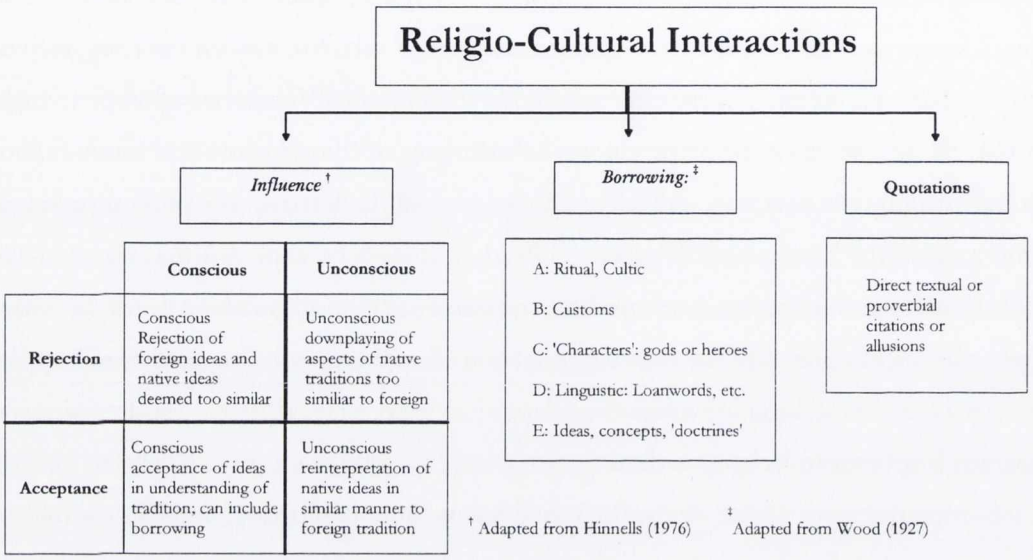


Figure 2: Terms for Religio-Cultural Interactions
Author's Own

Given the subtleties involved in interaction, how can the presence and effects be detected in texts, the primary remaining source of evidence for ancient civilizations and religions?

Barr delineates two basic approaches to comparative studies: general and specific.[246] He notes that general comparisons or lists of parallels do not constitute evidence of interactions; detailed, specific argument is needed to demonstrate that the general parallel is indeed not just happenstance.[247] Specifically, he emphasizes the need for explanatory circumstances and motivations which occasioned borrowing. This also needs to be

---

Scheffield Academic Press, 1999), pp. 109–112, 214. Patricia Tull Willey, *Remember the Former Things: The Recollection of Previous Texts in Isaiah 40–55* (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 1997), pp. 82–83 presents Hayes's seven criteria for an allusion, some of which are of dubious validity. For a better context for such considerations, see Chapter III (which replaces Willey's intertextuality with orality).

[245] For a discussion of these question in the context of archaeology see the thought-provoking collection in Joanne Clarke, ed., *Archaeological Perspectives on the Transmission and Transformation of Culture in the Eastern Mediterranean.* Levant Supplementary Series 2 (Oxford: Oxbow, 2005). Althought the terminology utilized here is quite different, the overall conceptualization is quite amenable to that proposed by Abdi, "Notes on the Iranization of Bes in the Achaemenid Empire," p. 135.

[246] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 204; cf. Richard N. Frye, "Iran and Israel in Antiquity," *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 44 (1973): p. 71, 'general' and 'detailed.'

[247] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 206.

undertaken with an understanding of the structural import of the proposed influence or borrowing in both source and new context. Although Barr only briefly alludes to the possibility of negative or unconscious influence,[248] his insistence that proposed parallels must be understood within the greater structural contexts is important. Rarely do people or groups adopt wholly different ideas to their own, nor do they adopt them without adaptation to their own worldview. The student must be careful to understand how a detail or concept could both be transformed by *and* transform the receiving tradition.

In broaching the question, Wood suggests five criteria which a proposed parallel must satisfy to be considered an instance of borrowing: 1) Did the receiving tradition have a need which the borrowed idea fulfilled? 2) Are there similar sources in the receiving tradition which could evolve in a similar manner? 3) Did similar ideas pre-exist in the receiving tradition? 4) Could the element come from elsewhere as well? 5) Can the source tradition be reliably dated earlier?[249] Wood's last criterion is certainly the most important; the source must predate the reception. The fourth question is also a valid concern; if similar ideas do appear in multiple contexts, one must decide whether there are enough details to justify the identification of a single source, or whether the idea is more the result of a general *zeitgeist.* However, the first criterion is historically dubious, depending on the intent of the question: the proper historical question is not the *necessity* but the *probability* of what *did* happen in the past.[250] If Wood means that there must be a 'space' or way in which element can be utilized, then that is the same as the next two criteria. The second and third criteria appear to be the same criterion. For interaction to exist, there must be a 'hanger' upon which the borrowed 'coat' can hang in the receiving 'wardrobe.' People rarely adopt ideas which appear to them wholly alien.[251] Thus, Barr's concerns about the structural import in both traditions is necessary to understand the nature and likelihood of interaction.[252] Kraeling's proposals, besides offering similar concerns to Barr and Wood, merely add a concern for the historical particulars and scholarly consensus.[253]

---

[248] Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 208, 230.

[249] Adapted from Irving P. Wood, "Borrowing between Religions," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 46.1/2 (1927): pp. 104–105.

[250] Cf. the comment in Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," p. 9.

[251] 'Alien' is not the same as 'novel'; the criteria for an element being 'alien' rather than simply novel vary greatly between individuals and systems.

[252] Further—despite the impact of systemic and unconcious forces—individual/discrete communal choice must also play a role in this interplay. A quote by Dostoyevsky is pertinent in this regard: "One's own free and unfettered choice . ... overwrought though it sometimes may be to the point of madness—that is that same most desirable good which we overlooked and which does not fit into any classification, and against which all theories and systems are continually wrecked." (Fyodor Dostoevsky, "Notes from the Underground," trans. David Magershack, *The Best Short Stories of Fyodor Dostoevsky* [New York: Modern Library, 2001], p. 116). This aspect remains pertinent, even if other communal factors are in play (e.g., Kevin W. Welch, "An Interpersonal Influence Model of Traditional Religious Commitment," *Sociological Quarterly* 22.1 [1981]: pp. 81–92).

[253] Carl H. Kraeling, "Method in the Study of Religious Syncretism," *Journal of Bible and Religion* 9.1 (1941): pp. 28–34, 66.

In light of the above considerations, five general criteria and one additional criterion for 'influence' are here proposed. The first two criteria are really preconditions: 1) the proposed source must predate the proposed incidence of interaction, and 2) there must be a plausible historical context for the interaction. The remaining criteria are more difficult to establish or demonstrate. 3) The foreign element must make more structural 'sense' in the original context than in the new one; 4) there must be a 'hook' or way in which the foreign element could be included in the receiving tradition; 5) there must be discrete, distinctive elements which betray the origin of the element. These must be more distinctive or specific than potential parallels from other sources. Any form of borrowing in a text is certainly evidence that interaction on some level has occurred, but on its own is insufficient to demonstrate the presence of influence. The accumulation of multiple, detailed borrowings certainly tilts the scales towards the possibility of influence,[254] yet a sixth criterion is needed to demonstrate influence as defined above: 6) there must be an interpretive or structural change in the receiving tradition on account of the influence. This is perhaps the most important (albeit evanescent) of the six criteria.

The first two criteria are straightforward and require no further justification. The others require more elucidation. The third criterion—the foreign element must make more structural sense in its original context—means that there should be indications that the element more 'organically'[255] fits within the source tradition than in the receiving one, therefore making it more probable that its appearance in the receiving tradition is due to interaction rather than parallel internal developments. For example, the belief in the Davidic covenant in Jerusalem leads logically to the concept of the inviolability of Zion. If the same Zion doctrine were discovered in a text from a neighboring country without an analogous royal tradition, it could indicate borrowing or influence. The fourth criterion is the requirement for a 'hook' or space for the new element in the receiving tradition. This is similar to Wood's insistence on the fulfilling of a need and Barr's insistence on a plausible motivation.[256] There must be a way in which the receiving tradition could have incorporated the element and still have perceived it as being consonant with said tradition (in line with Light's principle of cognitive integrity).[257] A potential example would be the adaptation of a dualism as a response to monotheistic theodicy. The fifth criterion—the need for discrete details—is the most commonly utilized. One must demonstrate why the proposed source tradition is more probable than another. Many societies have analogous stories and traditions; for the parallel to be more than merely illustrative there must be discrete, distinct

---

[254] Provided the borrowings are of an useful nature; cf. Sandmel, "Parallelomania," p. 10.
[255] To use the term utilized by Shaked, "Iranian Influence on Judaism," p. 323.
[256] Cf. Wood, "Borrowing between Religions," p. 104; Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 206.
[257] Light, "Orthosyncretism," p. 180.

details betraying the original source. These could be linguistic terms or names, but could theoretically be anything. The last criterion, six, relates to the overall structure of the receiving tradition as it can be reconstructed. This is perhaps the vaguest and most difficult of the criteria to be demonstrated adequately, but it is necessary for the attempt to be made. As both Vroom and Light note, the introduction of new elements into a system often necessitates either a reinterpretation or a reorganization of other elements in the receiving tradition (as well as the reinterpretation of the element itself). Thus, a polytheistic religion which adopts a new god will most likely correspondingly modify the functions of other, similar gods in the pantheon, perhaps even replacing some of them. It is within this criterion that Light's discussion of symbols, categories, and organizational rules becomes most helpful. Each tradition has symbols and categories which are more central and others which are more peripheral. Central elements will be more resistant to influence, while more peripheral ones will be less so. When analyzing the structure of a proposed receiving tradition, it is necessary to determine the radicalness of the proposed element within the perspective of that tradition: the 'organizational rules' of the receiving tradition must be taken into account. For example, the structural importance of monotheism in Christianity would lead one to expect that either no foreign deities would be adopted or would be adopted in a drastically different understanding to their original function. This, of course, fits the assimilation of deities as saints and angels: open categories in the Christian tradition in a way the category 'divinity' is not. This is not the case in traditions such as Buddhism.[258]

When seeking to understand the potential relevance of Iranian (or any other) traditions on the development of Second Temple Judaism, then, it is important to remember the types of interaction which could occur (not only quotations or direct, discrete borrowings, but influence, conscious and unconscious, positive and negative), as well as to consider the six different aspects related to the criteria noted above. Prior to analysis of particular texts or elements, however, must come at least a preliminary investigation of the structure of the two traditions in focus. The scholar must consider how the proposed interaction would have been perceived by contemporary tradents, who most likely had different priorities and perspectives than the contemporary scholar. Finally, the overall interpretative import must be considered.

The discussion in this study, therefore, proceeds to first establish the historical priority of the Iranian traditions as well as discussing their relative structures, then considers the historical and social contexts in which interaction could have occurred, before attempting to directly investigate individual apocalyptic texts. The final step is to analyze the

[258] Cf. James H. Grayson, "The Accommodation of Korean Folk Religion to the Religious Forms of Buddhism: An Example of Reverse Syncretism," *Asian Folklore Studies* 51.2 (1992): pp. 199–217.

hermeneutical changes which a potential Iranian influence would entail upon a receiving Judaism. Ultimately, analysis of 'sectarian' factors (as against merely 'tradition') would potentially be important,[259] but that cannot be pursued here.

THESIS

The thesis which this dissertation presents is that one of the catalysts towards the development of the apocalypse and its related worldview in Second Temple Judaism was the adoption of a new 'apocalyptic hermeneutic' by some Judaeans. This new 'apocalyptic hermeneutic' was one which incorporated ideas and methods which find their best explanation in having been inspired by an Iranian milieu. The development of this new hermeneutic was undertaken by scribes and thus heavily influenced by the increasing importance of written over oral modes of discourse. One of the reasons this hermeneutic has eluded scholarship is due to its 'evanescent' nature as a new, literate *interpretation* of recently written texts, as opposed to an entirely new theological or philosophical system, or indeed, rather than merely a question of the identification of textual allusions in the manner of traditional text-critical methods. It is this kind of hermeneutic and the ideas it usually implies that links the phenomena of the apocalypse and the millenarian movements.

Overview of Dissertation

The dissertation contains five chapters with prolegomena and metalegomena, plus appendices. **Chapter I** describes the sources on Iranian religion, the issues involved in attempting a historical reconstruction, and the methodology by which one can date the various texts and ideas. **Chapter II** argues for the historical and sociological likelihood of Iranian-Judaean interaction by discussing the various Achaemenid sources available. The thesis of a 'Persian authorization of the Torah' is briefly mentioned in this context. **Chapter III** discusses Oral Theory, describing the kinds of processes and worldview in which Iranian-Judaean interaction occurred, critiquing the standard text-centric method of current Biblical Scholarship. It also analyzes various apocalyptic texts for views on orality and textuality. **Chapter IV** analyzes some of the major texts which have been considered either 'proto-apocalyptic' or apocalyptic, both within the Hebrew Bible and in other sources, for details which can best be understood in an Iranian milieu. This is divided into Parts A (Biblical Literature) and B (Enochic Literature). **Chapter V** brings together the various themes and theologies which were analyzed in Chapter IV to argue for an 'Apocalyptic Hermeneutic' which is responsible for both the differences and similarities which scholars have seen in the

[259] E.g., Welch, "Interpersonal Influence," pp. 81–92.

prophetic and apocalyptic literatures. It relates the phenomena of apocalypticism (ideas), apocalypse (literary genre), and millenarianism (social movements), seeing the hermeneutic as a dialectical thread holding them all together as well as apart. This is intimately intertwined with the growth of a highly literate scribal elite (as discussed in Chapter III). The **Metalegomena** brings together all of the analyses of the previous chapters, and points towards the importance of the subject, as well as to possible implications for further areas such as the relationship between various Jewish 'sects,' the historical Jesus, early Christianity, and the sociology of millenarism. **Appendix I** gives a brief explanation of the sources utilized in the reconstruction of Achaemenid Iranian religion. **Appendix II** explains the orthography adopted here. **Appendix III: Glossary of Terms** provides explanation of the many Iranian terms which are used in the dissertation. **Appendix IV** annotates the definitions adopted in this study for controversial English terms.

Explanation of the Textual Sources and Translations

Jewish Sources

For the biblical materials the standard texts used are the *Biblia Hebraica Stutgartensia* for the Hebrew and *Septuaginta* for the Greek. The default English text used is the NRSV unless otherwise stated. The biblical texts discussed here are texts which are often labelled either 'apocalyptic' or 'proto-apocalyptic' by biblical scholars. They are Ezek 37:1–14; 38–39; and Dan 2.

Ezekiel 37:1–14

The famous vision of the Valley of Dead Bones has long been an important crux for the development of belief in bodily resurrection. This pericope offers an early example of how attention to the re-interpretive aspects of tradition affects understandings of apocalyptic.

Ezekiel 38–39

Often considered apocalyptic or proto-apocalyptic, the prophecy to Gog still plays a role in modern apocalyptic speculations and sits on the border between prophecy and apocalyptic. Like the previous passage, it offers a glimpse at ways interpretation can be suggestive well before the Hellenistic period.

Daniel 2

The four empire schema of world history, with its implicit eschatology, has long been considered in conjunction with Iran. It offers a classic opportunity to reassess Iranian influence.

Enochic Literature

Of course, much of the literature relevant to apocalyptic studies is extra-canonical. The texts studied in depth here are the books of *Enoch*. Only the first corpus under his name, *Ethiopic* or *1 Enoch* is discussed in any depth. Most attention is paid to the earliest works of the compilation, *the Astronomical Book* and *the Book of Watchers*. The standard English text utilized for *1 Enoch* is Nickelsburg and VanderKam's edition.[260] For the Dead Sea Scrolls, *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*[261] is used for both the original and the English translation, unless otherwise stated. The basic English translation for other extra-canonical literature referenced here is Charlesworth's.[262]

Iranian Sources

The Iranian sources are multiple and often fairly inaccessible. The texts are briefly defined below; critical editions and translations are available in Appendix I.

The *Gāthās* are a collection of five esoteric hymns in the language called 'Old Avestan.' They are situated at the heart of the Zoroastrian liturgy, known as the *Yasna*. They surround another group of texts known as the *Yasna Haptaŋhāiti* which are also in Old Avestan. These are 'rhythmic prose' sections of the liturgy.[263] The remainder of the liturgy is in 'Young Avestan.' In addition to the liturgical texts, a collection of hymns (*Yašts*) and a collection of purity laws (the *Vidēvdāt*) also exist in Young Avestan. These texts together are known collectively as the Avesta.

In addition to the Avestan texts, a large number of texts in Middle Persian, or Pahlavi, also exist. Perhaps the most famous of these is the *Bundahišn*, an epitome of cosmological, eschatological, and mythical lore. The apocalypse known as the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* (also known as *Vohuman Yašn*, *Zand-ī Bahman Yašt*, or *Zand-ī Wahman Yašn*) also exists in Pahlavi. Finally, a lost work which survives only in various quotations in Classical sources is called the *Oracle of Hystaspes*. A variety of theological treatises and related works are also extant in Pahlavi.

Beside the religious texts, a number of inscriptions have survived in Old Persian from the reign of Darius I onwards. Additionally, archaeological discoveries have provided administrative tablets in Neo-Elamite from the area of Persepolis, tablets from Babylonia, and Aramaic papyri from Egypt.

---

[260] George W. E. Nickelsburg and James C. Vanderkam, *1 Enoch: A New Translation Based on the Hermeneia Commentary* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2004).
[261] F. García Martínez and E. J. C. Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, 2 vols. (Leiden: Brill, 1998).
[262] James H Charlesworth, ed., *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments*. vol. 1 (New York: Doubeday, 1983), and James H Charlesworth, ed., *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha: Expansions*. vol. 2 (New York: Doubleday, 1985).
[263] Almut Hintze, "On the Literary Structure of the Older Avesta," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 65.1 (2002): p. 46.

I

The Iranian Sources: Religion and Royal Ideology

As Grabbe argues, the question of Iranian influence on Judaism faces several methodological issues which must be addressed before discussing any suspected instances of influence.[1] Grabbe identifies five broad areas of consideration: the dating of Zarathuštra (Latinized Greek, Zoroaster) and his subsequent tradition; philological and textual problems; the dating of the literature; the mechanisms for influence; and the difficulty of demonstrating or disproving influence in general. This chapter addresses the issues of the dating, nature, and content of Iranian traditions and texts; the subsequent chapter investigates the historical setting in view of establishing possible mechanisms and settings for influence. While all of the issues Grabbe identifies must be dealt with, the list itself unnecessarily limits the discussion to Zoroastrianism *per se*. Because the religious and ideological traditions in Iran most likely encompassed much more than what became known as orthodox Zoroastrianism, this chapter explores the question of Iranian religion as it can be reconstructed by the sources rather than getting caught up in the evaluation of Zoroastrianism(s).

For the purposes of influence, the date of Zarathuštra (or even his existence) is really a non-question; Zarathuštra's date, whether 1500 B.C.E. or 569 B.C.E., is still before the rise of Jewish apocalyptic literature—indeed, before the rise of the Achaemenid state. The important question is the date of Zoroastrian ideas reaching the west from the east, as well as the level of dissemination of Iranian ideas generally in the west. Knowledge of and influence by Zoroastrian and Iranian ideas can be demonstrated in various Greek writers; the information available from these sources allows one not only to confirm the approximate arrival of Iranian religious ideas to the west, but also to verify something of the nature and content of those ideas and their accessibility to non-Iranians. Thus, even if the linguistic evidence is misleading and Zoroastrianism is not much older than the Achaemenid Empire, the influence of ideas traditionally associated with Zarathuštra existed within the empire well before the emergence of Jewish apocalyptic.[2] Additionally, the important focus of investigation is the ideas which were current during the Achaemenid and Parthian empires, not necessarily those which dominated during the Sassanian Empire. Hence, ideas and

---

[1] Grabbe, *Yehud*, pp. 362–363.

[2] This could be archaeologically corroborated if a seal republished in Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 249, fig. 28b, is reliable. This seal supposedly depicts a typical altar scene with an Aramaic inscription reading, "*Zaraθuštriš*." However, Briant merely prints a drawing of the seal, citing P. R. S. Moorey, "The Persian Empire," *Cambridge Ancient History*, ed. John Boardman, vol. Plates to Volume IV (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988), p. 44, seal c. Moorey, however, also only shows a drawing, and cites André Parrot, Stuart Gilbert, and James Emmons, *Nineveh and Babylon* (London: Thames & Hudson, 1961), figure 160. The author has been unable to source this book, but a personal email from the publisher (16 Feb. 2009) indicated that the illustration was p. 260 and cited as in an unnamed private collection. The author still awaits response from the French publisher to whom he was directed.

symbols which may from a later perspective be considered 'heterodox' or 'non-Zoroastrian' are still relevant for exploration.

Therefore, the question of Persian religion need not be limited to the Zoroastrian texts or even to the Zoroastrian tradition. Besides this tradition one must be open to the possibility of influence by other Iranian religious traditions (perhaps 'unorthodox' traditions), Imperial ideology and propaganda, and cultural influences of a more general nature, indeed even of general *Zeitgeist*. It is worth recalling on this point that the modern segregation of life into 'religious' and 'secular,' 'political' and 'cultural' realms is misleading for the ancient world.[3] While much academic interest in Judaean traditions centers on 'Judaism,' potential influences need not be limited to modern conceptual categories.

Having expanded the discussion beyond so-called orthodox Zoroastrianism, the question remains as to the form of the religious beliefs which were present in the Achaemenid and Parthian Empires. The basic premise of the methodology used here is that at least some aspects of the contemporary religious beliefs and practices may be reconstructed by the careful and critical comparison of several sources: 1) The Old Persian inscriptions and other contemporary written documents and archaeological remains, such as those found at Persepolis; 2) The reports of the classical authors as they pertain to the politics and religion of the Persians; 3) and the Zoroastrian writings.

Each of these three main sources has benefits and difficulties. The Old Persian inscriptions have the advantage of being securely dated and contextualized, and thus offer very valuable checks for chronology. They are, however, unfortunately terse and focus on a rather narrow range of topics, largely dedicatory. While they do reveal some important information, the amount of detailed information to be gleaned from them is infuriatingly small and/or ambiguous. In addition to the inscriptions, a variety of archaeological remains and administrative records (in Neo-Elamite and Aramaic) provide valuable sources. Like the Old Persian inscriptions, the classical sources have the benefit of being more or less securely dated. They also tend to be much longer than the Old Persian materials and offer a vast variety of reports, anecdotes, and opinions on the Persians and their traditions. However, the various classical writers vary in reliability and must be used with much caution. Some of the authors (such as Herodotus) may indeed offer some of their material from personal observation; often, however, they (mis)understand the Persians to fit their narratological or philosophical purposes (such as Xenophon's depiction of Cyrus as the ideal philosopher-king). The classical writers certainly provide valuable perspectives on the nature of Persian

---

[3] One could argue they are not always easily delineated in modern society, either.

ideas available to other groups, even those outside of Iranian empires, but one has to be careful to separate the Iranian material from the Greek interpretation.

The final primary sources of material are the Zoroastrian writings, mainly extant only in their ninth century C.E. redaction. These writings are an extremely varied and complex conglomeration of writings from a vast variety of eras and locations—the late dating of the extant manuscripts is no more decisive for antiquity than the Qumran finds for the writing of the Hebrew Bible. The most important of these texts is the Avesta, the sacred scripture of the Zoroastrians.[4] The remainder are largely late compilations in Pahlavi (Middle Persian) which purport to translate, comment on, and/or systematize the teachings of the Avesta. The more famous of these compilations include the *Bundahišn*,[5] which is a collection of cosmological and eschatological lore, the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*,[6] which is an apocalypse supposedly written as a commentary to a lost Avestan *Yašt*,[7] and the *Mēnōg-ī Xrad*, which is a collection of a ninth century Zoroastrian priest's summary of Zoroastrian theology. The final compilations of all of these Pahlavi works can be dated due to references to events of (or the fall of) the Sassanian Empire. It is primarily these Pahlavi works which are vulnerable to the charge of anachronistic usage for comparative purposes, as they are manifestly late. However, even here the picture is not as simple as it may first appear. Much in these writings is classified as *zand*, or 'interpretation': they often quote an Avestan text and then proceed to comment and expand on it. This form is analogous to the *pešer*-literature found at Qumran. Sometimes the *zand* even quotes the verse in Avestan before translating it into Pahlavi; when these quotations are compared with known Avestan passages, they are usually

---

[4] The Avesta is the 'Bible' of the Zoroastrians; the surviving portions consist mostly of hymns (*Yašts*) and liturgy (*Yasna*), including the *Gāthās*, the hymns attributed to Zoroaster. The most convenient edition of the entire extant Avesta is still in the Sacred Books of the East series; the *Gāthās* alone are much more readily available. For critical editions, see Appendix I. The standard critical analysis of the extant Sassanian collection and its textual history is Karl Hoffman and Johanna Narten, *Der Sasanidische Archetypus: Untersuchungen zu Schreibung und Lautgestalt des Avestischen* (Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1989).

[5] The work known as the *Bundahišn* or *Zand-ī Akasīh*, is an epitome and commentary on Avestan texts which deals primarily with cosmological and eschatological material. It survives in two redactions known as the Greater/Iranian and Shorter/Indian *Bundahišn*s. A translation of the *Greater Bundahišn* is available in Behramgore T. Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh: Iranian or Greater Bundahisn: Text and Translation* (Bombay: Rahnumae Mazdayasnan Sabha, 1956) and a translation of the *Shorter Bundahišn* is available in the SBE series, *The Bundahis, Bahman Yast, and Shāyast Lā-Shāyast*, trans. E. W. West, *Pahlavi Texts I*, ed. F. Max Müller (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987), Sacred Books of the East 5, pp. 1–152. A summary of its contents is available in D. N. MacKenzie, "Bundahišn," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): pp. 147–551.

[6] The *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* is generally believed to be a an epitome and commentary based on a lost Avestan *Yašt* to Bahman. The text is available in the SBE volume in the previous footnote, in Behramgore T. Anklesaria, *Zand-î Vohûman Yasn and Two Pahlavi Fragments: Text, Transliteration, and Translation* (Bombay: Mrs. B. T. Anklesaria, 1957), and in a critical edition by Carlo G. Cereti, *The Zand-ī Wahman Yasn: a Zoroastrian Apocalypse*, SOR 75 (Rome: 1995). It is discussed in depth by Widengren and Hultgard in David Hellholm, ed., *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12–17, 1979* (Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983) and again in Anders Hultgård, "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse," *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocalyptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium*, eds. John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1991), pp. 114–134.

[7] *Yašts* are hymns devoted to a deity.

quite accurate. Since the *zand* sometimes quotes a passage which is not found in the extant Avesta, the Pahlavi sources can be quite useful for the reconstruction of lost Avestan texts and ideas.[8]

Zoroastrian tradition claims that there were originally 21 *Nasks* ('books') of the Avesta, although only one of those *Nasks* survives as fully extant. While the number 21 may be a later, theologically based number, it is clear that much lore and theology has been lost (it is traditionally claimed that only one third of the original Avesta has survived). Because of this, the Pahlavi *zand* offers an invaluable source of Avestan material which has otherwise been lost. The most famous example of this type of material is the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*: while there is no known extant *Yašt* to *Vohu Manah* (the Avestan name for *Vahman*), it seems most likely that there was one which has been lost, and at least the quoted sections belonged to it.[9] This means that the late material cannot simply be ignored. Thus, even though the majority of written Iranian material is extant only in late sources, it can be useful with careful critical analysis.

As part of the effort to define the genre of apocalypse, Collins investigated the phenomenon in Iranian literature.[10] As is appropriate in a volume dedicated to the genre of apocalypse, Collins's discussion deals primarily with the Persian texts which may shed some light on the existence of the genre in the Persian tradition. He finds two (*Zand-ī Vahman Yasn* and the *Ardā Virāz Nāmag*) which conform to his paradigm (Ia, IIc).[11] His use of the material is rightfully cautious in light of the text-critical problems involved with the Iranian texts. His analysis is admirable for dealing with the genre as extant in Iranian tradition, but it bypasses the question of the relevance of Iran in questions of influence. Although he dates the generic apocalypses late, the influence of Iranian ideas need not be restricted by the limits of genre. Other texts which are not formally classed as apocalypses may nevertheless hold relevance.

With these caveats in mind, a brief introduction and overview of Iranian religion during the Achaemenid period and its sources, as well as considerations on historical methodology, follows.

Much debate over the possibility of Persian influence on Judaism in the Achaemenid and Hellenistic Periods gets caught up on the date of Zarathuštra (commonly 'Zoroaster' in

---

[8] Cf: Anders Hultgård, "Forms and Origins of Iranian Apocalypticism," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983), pp. 391–392; Geo Widengren, "Leitende Ideen und Quellen des Iranischen Apokalyptic," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12-17, 1979*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1983), pp. 101–104.

[9] Hultgård, "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse," pp. 127–128.

[10] John J. Collins, "The Persian Apocalypses," *Semeia* 14 (1979): pp. 207–217.

[11] Collins, "The Persian Apocalypses," p. 208.

English, from the Greek Ζοροαστης), and thus on the antiquity of the religious ideas evidenced in the late writings of the Zoroastrians. Experts in Iranian Studies have no real consensus on a date for his life; two schools give widely divergent dates—one based on a native tradition of 258 years before Alexander, and the other based largely on linguistic grounds (usually placed ca. 1500–1000 B.C.E.).[12] The unreliability of the 'traditional date' for Zarathuštra (ca. 569 B.C.E.) is argued by Shahbazi and Boyce; Zarathuštra had to pre-date Cyrus's invasion of the north-eastern Iranian lands, and there was no tradition of fixed dating until the Seleucids.[13] More recently, Skjærvø suggests that the so-called 'traditional date' itself rests on 'mythical' chronology, hardly a promising starting point for historical dating.[14] It is worth noting, however, that *both* chronologies place Zarathuštra *prior* to the Achaemenid Empire. Thus, the correctness of either school of thought little affects the antiquity relative to Jewish apocalyptic literature.

The Iranian texts of relevance are extant in a number of languages, which are all classed as members of the Iranian half of the Indo-Iranian group of Indo-European languages, and which come from different time periods and locales. The most relevant languages are conventionally known as 'Avestan' (divided into 'Old Avestan' or 'Gathic' and 'Young Avestan'), Old Persian, and Middle Persian or Pahlavi. Avestan is the language which is used by the Avesta; it is classed as a North-eastern Iranian Language. Old Persian is the language of the Achaemenid inscriptions, and is classed as a South-eastern Iranian

---

[12] Kurt Rudolph, "Zarathuštra - Priester und Prophet: Neue Aspekte der Zarathuštra- bzw. Gatha-Forschung.," *Numen* 8.1 (1961): pp. 84–88, gives a convenient overview of the two sets of dates, and chooses the ninth and eighth centuries. Mary Boyce even in her own work gives divergent dates for Zoroaster: 1000–900 B.C.E. in Mary Boyce, *A History of Zoroastrianism: The Early Period*, vol. I, Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.1 (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1975), p. 3; 1500–1300 B.C.E. in Mary Boyce, "Persian Religion in the Achaemenid Age," *The Cambridge History of Judaism*, eds. W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein, vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2000), p 280; 1400–1200 B.C.E. in Mary Boyce, *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism*, Textual Sources for the Study of Religion (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984), p. 11, in Mary Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices* (London: Routledge, 2001), p 2, and Mary Boyce, "On the Antiquity of the Zoroastrian Apocalyptic," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* XLVII.1 (1984): p. 75; A. T. Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire: Achaemenid Period* (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1948), pp. 102–103 accepts an equation of Darius's father Hystaspes with Zoroaster's patron *Vīštāspa* and thus a late date, as does Ernst Herzfeld, "The Traditional Date of Zoroaster," *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry*, ed. Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1933), p. 136 (570 BCE). It is much more likely that Hystaspes had been named in honour of the legendary Kavi, patron of Zarathuštra. The same opinion is held by Roland Grubb Kent, "The Name of Hystaspes," *Language* 21.2 (1945): p. 55. In fact, Kellens has analyzed nine of Darius's given genealogy as homonymic with the legendary figures of the Avesta (Cited by Albert de Jong, "The Contribution of the Magi," *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I*, eds. Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart [London: I. B. Tauris, 2005], p. 88; the author could not access the citation, however.)

[13] See A. Shapur Shahbazi, "The Traditional Date of Zoroaster Explained," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 40.1 (1977): pp. 30–31. His explanation of 569 (pp. 32–3) as a confusion with Cyrus's conquest of Babylon is quite plausible and interesting, although unprovable; cf. Boyce, "Persian Religion in the Achaemenid Age," pp. 279–280.

[14] Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 3 (2003-4): p. 16. The author is grateful to Dr. Almut Hintze for this reference. It is worth noting that this date may have been based on political propaganda by Xerxes; see Peter Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi: Iranian Themes among the Greeks, from Xanthus of Lydia to Plato's Academy," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 5.2 (1995): pp. 193–4.

language.[15] Pahlavi or Middle Persian is the language of the Sassanians, and developed out of Old Persian, beginning prior to Alexander's campaign.[16] Other Iranian languages and dialects also existed—such as Median, Parthian, and Sogdian—but are more scantily attested. It is clear for linguistic reasons that much of the Avesta (the scriptures of the Zoroastrians) is extremely ancient. The language of the Avesta (so-called 'Avestan') has long been recognized as related to and linguistically archaic like the language of the *Rig Veda* (Sanskrit). On this basis Indo-Iranicists usually date the Old Avestan language to the mid-second millennium B.C.E. The oldest sections of the Avesta—the so-called 'Old Avestan' sections of the *Yasna*—the *Gāthās* (the poems supposedly by Zarathuštra himself) and the 'Yasna of the Seven Chapters' (the *Yasna Haptaŋhāiti*) are usually dated by linguists around 1000 B.C.E. through comparison with Rig Vedic Sanskrit, and are possibly much older.[17] Skjærvø avers this from the various archaic features of Old Avestan compared with Young Avestan: the non-contraction of vowel sequences, the retention of *ii* and *uu* vowels, the regular use of aorist forms, and the unity of ablative and genitive endings.[18] These features of the Old Avestan sections require it to predate the Younger Avesta by at least 200 years.[19] The other parts of the Avesta are more recent—the 'Young Avesta' dates from the pre-Achaemenid to the early Parthian Periods, and the *Vidēvdāt* ('Laws against the demons') to the late Achaemenid period.[20]

The evidence for this is linguistic. The end of the Old Persian language is securely dated by the Old Persian inscriptions and the appearance of the transition into Middle Persian (Pahlavi) in the fifth century B.C.E. evidenced therein (by loss of case endings, vowel shifts, etc.).[21] The appearance of four similar changes in both Old Persian and Young Avestan indicate a common origin which must predate the historical emergence of Old Persian (ca. ninth century B.C.E.).[22] The Persians appear to history in Western Iran in the ninth century, therefore the split between Young Avestan and Old Persian must predate that

---

[15] Cf: Benjamin W. Fortson, IV, *Indo-European Language and Culture: An Introduction* (Oxford: Blackwell Press, 2004), pp. 203–204.

[16] Cf. Fortson, *Indo-European Language*, pp. 210–212; Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 36.

[17] Fortson, *Indo-European Language*, p. 205. Cf. Rudolph, "Zarathuštra," pp. 87–88, 98; Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 3; Jean Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, trans. Prods Oktor Skjærvø, Bibliotheca Iranica: Zoroastrian Studies Series (Costa Mesa, CA: Mazda Publishers, 2000), p. 1. Cf. Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," pp. 36–37, where he gives a tentative timetable which places the Old Avesta ca. 1700–1200 B.C.E. and the Young Avesta ca. 600–400 B.C.E.

[18] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," pp. 26–27.

[19] Jean Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 35; Fortson, *Indo-European Language*, p. 205.

[20] Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Avesta as Source for the Early History of the Iranians," *The Indo-Aryans of Ancient South Asia*, ed. G. Erdosy, Indian Philology and South Asian Studies 1 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995), p. 63 implies a late Achaemenid date; Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 35, however, considers it Sassanian.

[21] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 36.

[22] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 33.

time, as they appear speaking Old Persian.[23] Since Old Persian itself was turning into Pahlavi by the end of the Achaemenid Empire, its parallel dialect is unlikely to have lasted drastically longer as a spoken language.[24] Therefore, language of the Younger Avesta is more or less contemporaneous with the Old Persian inscriptions,[25] and on this basis alone the *Gāthās* and the *Haptaŋhaiti* must date at least to 700 B.C.E. Thus, the entirety of the extant Avesta—by linguistic evidence alone—must pre-date or be contemporaneous with the Achaemenid Empire. The lack of Iron Age references, references to the Western Iranian lands, or of an urban civilization or empire in the Avestan texts is consonant with the linguistic dating.[26] The linguistic development of the name of Ahura Mazda from a separable pair of epithets in the *Gāthās*, to a fixed name in the Young Avesta, to a single word (*Auramazdā*) in the inscriptions is also consistent with a dating which is prior to and contemporaneous with Old Persian's use.[27] Widengren further avers that the Sassanian Zoroastrian scholar-priests' use of Pahlavi translations of the Avesta for their commentaries and epitomes demonstrates that the Avestan language was long dead, and that the texts preserved in that text are more likely to be preservations than late compositions.[28]

Beyond linguistic relationships, the close parallels between the Avesta and the *Rig Veda*, and between Zoroastrian practice and Brahmanic practice demonstrate that some of the ideas, religion and rituals evidenced in the writings go well back into Indo-Iranian prehistory.[29] It is agreed by most scholars, however, that these scriptures were oral and not

---

[23] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 33.

[24] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 36.

[25] Fortson, *Indo-European Language*, p. 212; Roland Grubb Kent, *Old Persian: Grammar, Texts, Lexicon*, 2nd ed. (New Haven, CT: American Oriental Society, 1961), p. 6, does not comment on the relative age of Old Persian.

[26] Boyce, "On the Antiquity," p. 75; Mary Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 1–3; Rudolph, "Zarathuštra," pp. 92–93; Richard N. Frye, *The Heritage of Persia*, History of Civilisation, 2nd ed. (London: Cardinal, 1976), p. 40. See also the opinion of Stausberg, who sees the city as an Achaemenid innovation. Michael Stausberg, "Persepolis, Zoroastrianopolis, Metropolis: Städte und Tempel in der zoroastrischen Religionsgeschichte. Eine Skizze," *La Cité de Dieu/Die Stadt Gottes. 3. Symposium Strasbourg, Tübingen, Uppsala 19.-23. September 1998 in Tübingen.*, eds. Martin Hengel, et al. (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2000), p. 14.

[27] Sven S. Hartman, "Datierung der junavestischen Apokalyptik," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12-17, 1979*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983), pp. 69–72. See his very useful chart (fig. 2). Cf. Asmussen, "Die Verkündigung Zarathustras im Lichte der Religionsgeschichte," p. 21.

[28] Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," pp. 153–155. A few scholars have also commented that the prophet's name, 'Zarathuštra', itself may be telling; it contains the particle *–uštra*, 'camel', an animal whose domestication is uncertain, but not important in the west until ca. 1100 B.C.E., consonant with an earlier, eastern derivation. E.g., Ilse Köhler-Rollefson, "Camels and Camel Pastoralism in Arabia," *Biblical Archaeologist* 56.4 (1993): p. 183; Cf. Rudolph, "Zarathuštra," p. 91.

[29] The field of Indo-European Studies is based on the linguistic comparison of many modern and ancient languages, and posits a single common antecedent group for all of them. This group includes Old Irish, Norse, Latin, Hittite, Sanskrit, and the Iranian languages. 'Indo-Iranian' is used of a branch of that family which is understood to have remained together after the initial migrations, due to close similarities. For an overview, see Fortson, *Indo-European Language*; Anna Giacalone Ramat and Paolo Ramat, *The Indo-European languages* (London: Routledge, 1998); James Mallory, "A Short History of the Indo-European Problem," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 1 (1973): pp. 21–65.

written down until very late, perhaps not until the Sassanian period.[30] Thus the discrepancy between the linguistic evidence for the 'composition' and the date of the earliest manuscripts (at least 2000 years) requires a very long period of oral transmission, of which some biblical scholars are understandably skeptical.[31] The antiquity of the traditions, however, can be investigated through several avenues: the linguistic evidence, parallels with the *Rig Veda*, parallels with Achaemenid texts and archaeology, and the evidence of Greek authors. Beside the close linguistic and terminological affinities, the religion of the *Rig Veda* offers other parallels to the understanding of the Avesta, as well as corroborating the antiquity of some of the details. A full exploration is not necessary here, but a few illustrative parallels can be noted.[32] Characteristic of the Indo-Iranian religions is the ritual use of *Haoma* (Avestan)/ *Soma* (Sanskrit). This was the liquid, procured by pounding a now unknown plant, which was ritually drunk or poured out; the large find of mortars and pestles at Persepolis is usually linked to this activity[33] (See Figure 4). It was deified in both traditions, although Zarathuštra's attitude towards it is debated—its appearance in the *Gāthas* is minimal and ambiguous—it is characteristic of rites from very early on through to modern Zoroastrianism.[34] Scholars also debate whether the liquid was stimulating, intoxicating, hallucinatory, or all three, with multiple suggestions for identification of the original plant (modern Zoroastrians use *Ephedra*).[35] The ritual respect of the hearth fire and the use of grass or twigs (*barəsman*) are also common to both.[36] Bundles of twigs usually interpreted as the *barəsman* can frequently be seen on Achaemenid seals and engravings (See Figure 3).

---

[30] Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 33; Cf. R. C. Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight of Zoroastrianism*, History of Religion (London: Phoenix, 2003), pp. 25–26; Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," especially p. 92, 153–155.

[31] For example, Lester L. Grabbe, *Judaism From Cyrus to Hadrian* (London: SCM, 1992), p. 101.

[32] A fuller examination is supposedly available in Louis H. Gray, *The Foundations of the Iranian Religions*, K. R. Cama Oriental Institute Pub. 5 (Bombay: D. B. Taraporevala, 1930), but was not available in time for this study.

[33] For example see Raymond A. Bowman, *Aramaic Ritual Texts From Persepolis*, University of Chicago Oriental Institute Pub XCI (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970), p. 7; Muhammad A. Dandamaev and Vladimir Lukonin, *The Culture and Social Institutions of Ancient Iran*, trans. Philip L. Kohl (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1989), p. 334; George G. Cameron, *Persepolis Treasury Tablets*, Oriental Institute Publications 65 (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1948), p. 5.

[34] The *Gāthās* only possibly allude to *Haoma* twice, in *Yasna* 32.14 and (possibly) 48.10 (S. Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, trans. S. Insler, Acta Iranica 8 [Leiden: Brill, 1975], p. 49, 93); the Younger Avesta, however, makes much mention of *Haoma*, both as plant and as divinity—*Yasna* IX–XI, also called the *Hom Yašt*, (see *The Yasna, Visparad, Āfrīnagān, Gāhs, and Miscellaneous Fragments*, trans. Lawrence H. Mills, *The Zend-Avesta III*, ed. F. Max Müller [Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988], Sacred Books of the East 31, pp. 230–247).

[35] R. Gordon Wasson, "The Soma of the Rig Veda: What was it?," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 91.2 (1971): pp. 169–187 identifies it with a hallucinogenic mushroom; Gerot L. Winfuhr, "Haoma/Soma: the plant," *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce*, eds. H. W. Bailey, et al., vol. 2, Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI (Leiden: Brill, 1985), pp. 699–726 identifies it instead with ginseng. Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices*, p. 5, 125, 173 describes the current use of Ephedra. For a fuller discussion see Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 157–160; Gherardo Gnoli, "Bang I: In Ancient Iran," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 689.

[36] Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices*, p. 5; Albert de Jong, *Traditions of the Magi: Zoroastrianism in Greek and Latin Literature*, Religions in the Greco-Roman World 133 (Leiden: Brill, 1997), p. 117; M. F. Kanga, "Barsom," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): pp. 825–827.

These details show that both Achaemenid archaeology and the Indian parallels conform to the general ritual pattern visible in the Avesta.

Fig. 3: Man with the Barəsman
Gold Plaque, British Museum ANE 123949
Used by Permission of the British Museum. © The Trustees of the British Museum

Prior to their split, the Indo-Iranians had two classes of divinities, the *Ahuras/Asuras* and the *Daēuuas/Devas*, which Boyce characterizes as 'ethical' and 'amoral,' respectively.[37] In India the *Asuras* became demons, and the *Devas* the gods, and the reverse in Iran. That these terms are Indo-Iranian can be seen by the correspondence of some of the names of the *Daēuuas* in the Young Avesta with the *Devas* of the *Rig Veda*—notably Indra and the Nasatyas (both of which also occur in the famous Mitanni treaties).[38] The Gathic innovation seems not to have been the 'demonization' of the *Daēuuas* as such, but rather the rejection of their propitiation; the *Asuras* continue to receive sacrifice in the *Rig Veda*, even after their loss of status.

Central to the religious systems of both the *Rig Veda* and the Avesta is the concept of *aša* or *rta*—'cosmic right order,' 'truth'—although they developed in different ways. Whereas in India *rta* was usually contrasted with *anrta*, 'disorder,' in Iran *aša* came to be contrasted with *druj*, 'falsehood,' 'deceit.'[39] Whether or not Zarathuštra is the initiator of this alteration

---

[37] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 52–55; Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight*, p. 37, 39, 66, characterizes the Vedic difference rather in terms of remoteness and closeness.
[38] Paul Thieme, "The 'Aryan' Gods of the Mitanni Treaties," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 80 (1960): pp. 301–17.
[39] Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 100. Cf. below.

it is clearly integral to the thought of the *Gāthās* and can be seen in the inscriptions of Darius I, and to a lesser extent, Xerxes I (see discussion of Herodotus below).

Both traditions have hereditary priests who are considered *mąθran-/mantrín-*, 'expert in *maθras* (the divine word).'[40] Boyce considers it likely that Zarathuštra himself was trained up as a priest from the age of seven, as is evidenced among the Brahmans and the modern Zoroastrians;[41] however, the antiquity of the tradition is unaffected by Zarathuštra's historicity.[42] The memorization and recitation of the sacred word was one of the chief duties of the Indo-Iranian priests and appears to be characteristic of the profession in both traditions. Even in modern times, the verbatim recitation of hymns by Hindus by memory is reported.[43] The parallels noted above serve to demonstrate the antiquity of the religious milieu visible in the Avesta and in the Zoroastrian tradition generally.

The Zoroastrian tradition contains much more material, however, than just the extant Avestan texts; indeed, the tradition claims that the extant Avesta is itself only one third of the original Avesta.[44] A variety of epitomes, commentaries, and translations of Zoroastrian scriptures also survive in Pahlavi works of the ninth century C.E. Much of the mythology and theology for which the Zoroastrians are known comes largely from these very late works. Works such as the *Bundahišn,* the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*, and the *Dēnkart* contain much material that appears archaic but is available only in these late, post-Islamic redactions. Yet, with careful methodology, even these works provide a valuable source of information on much earlier traditions. It is worth noting that Widengren offers a number of criteria for determining quotations, translations, and paraphrases of Avestan material in Pahlavi works.[45] While these late text can prove valuable, then, they are used here merely as supplementary material to the more surely archaic material of the Old Persian sources, Greek authors, and the Avesta.

The usage of the Zoroastrian literature does not require an uncritical assumption of the antiquity of late texts. There are several methods to establish earlier dates and contexts for some of the texts and ideas in the late books. Firstly, a variety of classical writers

---

[40] Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 88, 99; Cf. J. Gonda, *Vedic Ritual: the Non-Solemn Rites*, Handbuch der Orientalistik 4.1 (Leiden: Brill, 1980), pp. 213–239; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 8–11.

[41] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 7, 183.

[42] For a very readable description of contemporary research on Zoroaster (which rejects his historicity), see Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The State of Old Avestan Scholarship," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 117.1 (1997): pp. 103–114.

[43] See Müller as quoted in Robert C. Lester, "Hinduism: Veda and Sacred Texts," *The Holy Book in Comparitive Perspective*, eds. Frederick M. Denny and Rodney L. Taylor (Columbia, SC: Univ of SC Press, 1985), p. 144.

[44] In *The Vendidad*, trans. James Darmesteter, *The Zend-Avesta I*, ed. F. Max Müller (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1992), Sacred Books of the East 4, pp. xxxi–xxxii, Darmesteter notes that 18 out of 30 supposed *Yašts* and only 1 *Nask* (book) out of 21 (The *Vidēvdāt*) is wholly extant. Cf. H. Humbach, et al., *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra and Other Old Avestan Texts*, Indogermanische Bibliothek: Reihe 1, Lehr- und Handbücher, 2 vols. (Heidelberg: Carl Winter, 1991), vol. 1, p. 4.

[45] Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," pp. 101–104.

mention or describe aspects of Persian religious thought and practice, offering valuable accounts datable to, during, or shortly after the Achaemenid Empire. Secondly, the Old Persian inscriptions and other Achaemenid archaeological sources provide hints and parallels to the internal and official understandings of religious concepts in the empire. Thirdly, the Avestan texts can be dated for linguistic reasons to the beginning of the Parthian period at the absolute latest. The basic methodology assumed here compares the evidence of the Greek and Latin authors, the archaeology, and the Avesta for Persian religion. Each will be allowed to speak on its own terms but in the context of the evidence available from the others, and keeping in mind a probable continuum of variation. Additionally, the Pahlavi texts will be carefully explored for supplementary sources to those available in the Avesta. If a classical or Achaemenid text can be demonstrated to parallel a Pahlavi text, it is considered likely that at least a nucleus of that idea existed in the Achaemenid period, even if the final form as evidenced in the Pahlavi did not. Each text and passage will have to be assessed on its own. Despite their lateness, comparisons with the Pahlavi texts can help make better sense of the ideas in the earlier texts; the Avestan texts consist largely of allusive poetry and liturgy, while the Pahlavi works contain epitomes and systematic treatises.

On purely linguistic grounds, this study accepts that the extant Iranian texts can be roughly dated as follows (following Skjærvø): the Old Avestan texts: pre-Achaemenid; Old Persian texts: Achaemenid; the Young Avestan texts: roughly late Achaemenid (This includes the *Vidēvdāt*[46] and the Avestan sections of the *Aogəmadaēca*);[47] the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*: Early Hellenistic core with later accretions; the remainder of the Pahlavi Texts: considered late, unless comparisons with Rig Vedic, Classical, and Old Persian texts demonstrate a likely antiquity, or can be demonstrably shown to be quotations.[48] The question of Iranian religion thus offers several layers of evidence, which can be critically compared to establish reasonably certain antiquity for practices and beliefs. It is historically valid, therefore to begin with a comparison of the Greek material, Achaemenid archaeology, and the Avesta, and from there to carefully sift later works where potentially illuminating. The analyses here, then, are based on the comparison of the Old Persian inscriptions and the various related textual sources, the evidence of the Greek authors, and the Avesta, as these all may be comfortably used as witnesses at the latest to the end of the Achaemenid Iran. When

---

[46] The *Vidēvdāt* is a collection of purity laws and some mythology, named from a corruption of a phrase meaning 'Laws against the demons.'

[47] The *Aogəmadaēca* is a funeral liturgy which compiles Avestan verses, and overlays them with a Pahlavi translation and commentary.

[48] For this timeline see: Skjærvø, "The Avesta as Source," pp. 166–167; Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 39; cf. Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," p. 92, 153–155. Pallan R. Ichapora, "The Legendary History of Iran in the religio-Historical Account of the Zamyād Yašt (Yt. 19)," *Irano-Judaica IV*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999), pp. 106–110 supports the Achaemenid dating for the *Yašts*.

necessary and useful, later Pahlavi texts are consulted for clarification, but only where either comparison with the Greek material or linguistic criteria reasonably predate the material. Thus, despite the heavy emphasis on the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* and the *Oracle of Hystaspes* in the literature, the method here focuses more the Avestan liturgies and hymns and the Greek reports of Iranian religion. While these two texts may indeed be valuable witnesses, the Avesta is be considered a safer and more reliable guide to the antiquity of ideas.

Evidence from Classical Authors

A useful place to begin investigating the religions of the Iranians is the more concretely datable classical authors. The following only selects a few significant points from several authors to illustrate the basic method and background utilized in this study. A convenient collection of the relevant classical sources is collected by Clemen;[49] a useful discussion of this evidence is available by de Jong.[50]

Plato

The first datable appearance of the name of Zarathuštra/ Zoroaster in Greek is in Plato's *Alcibiades* I.121–122. In this passage Plato discusses the training of the Persian royal heir. The 'wisest' of the child's four teachers teaches him 'the Magian lore of Zoroaster, son of Horomazes; that is the worship of the gods' (ὁ μεν μαγείαν τε διδάσκει τήν Ζωροαστρου του Ὡρομαζου ἔστι δε τουτο θεων θεραπεία).[51] This passage is important as it reveals knowledge of the name of Zoroaster as well as his adoption by/ association with the Magi circa 390–374 B.C.E. It also shows the Greeks, however muddled their understanding, considered the royal religion to also be associated with Zoroaster. According to Diogenes Laertius *Lives of the Philosophers* III.6–7, Plato even planned a trip to visit the Magi.[52] If true, this would imply that the Magi were well known and had a reputation for learning. Seneca even claims that Magi were in Athens when Plato died and offered sacrifice to him at his death.[53] Plato also demonstrates the success of Darius's Behistun propaganda (*Laws* III.695B): he repeats the story of Bardiya's usurpation as given by Darius.[54] These brief

---

[49] Carolus Clemen, *Fontes Historiae Religionis Persicae* (Bonn: Marcus & Weber, 1920).
[50] Jong, *Traditions of the Magi.*
[51] Plato, *Alcibiades I*, trans. W. R. M. Lamb, *Carmides, Alcibiades I & II, Hipparchus, The Lovers, Theages, Minos, Epinomis*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1964), p. 67.
[52] Diogenes Laertius, *Vitae Philosophorum*, trans. R. D. Hicks, *Diogenes Laertius I*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1980), p. 283; Cf. Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, p. 449.
[53] Letter 58, line 31 (Seneca, *Ad Lucilium Epistulae Morales*, trans. Richard M. Gummere, vol. I, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1961], pp. 404–407).
[54] Plato, *Laws*, trans. R. G. Bury, *The Laws, Books I–VI*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1967), pp. 228–229. However, Christopher Tuplin, "Darius' Accession in (the) Media," *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern*

passages seem to link—at least in nominal form—the Zoroastrian tradition and the royal cult, as well as imply that a combination of official propaganda and a modicum of non-official information on the Achaemenid Empire was available to the Greek world.

Aristotle

Two fragments from Aristotle's *On Philosophy* give relevant information.[55] According to Pliny, Aristotle states that Zoroaster lived six thousand years before the death of Plato. Shahbazi considers the number 6000 to be an interpolation for 600, and he uses this revised number as support for his dating of Zoroaster (ca. 1080 B.C.E.).[56] Although ingenious, this explanation implies that the Iranians had kept a more or less reliable chronology of the prophet's life, which seems unlikely. Kingsley notes that, according to Diogenes Laertius, Xanthus the Lydian—one of Aristotle's sources—recorded that Zoroaster had lived 6000 years before Xerxes's crossing of the Hellespont.[57] Since the number 6000 is prominent in a variety of Iranian and Armenian eschatological schemata, Kingsley suggests this piece of information was royal propaganda portraying Xerxes as ushering in the eschatological renovation of the world, *Frašo.kərəti* ('making fruitful, renovation').[58] He further argues that after the failed invasion, the prophecy was altered by Magi visiting Athens to portray Plato in a similar light.[59] If this is true, then here is evidence of deliberate religio-political propaganda from the Achaemenids reaching Greek ears. This propaganda also presupposes much of the eschatology found in the late *Bundahišn* and the *Dēnkart*. Besides this 'official' propaganda, Diogenes Laertius credits Aristotle with describing the teaching of the Magi as an ontological dualism, with a good spirit named 'Zeus and Oromasdes' and an evil god named 'Hades and Areimanius.' These names are very clearly those of Ahura Mazda/Ohrmazd and Angra Mainyu/Ahriman with their logical Greek counterparts. It is quite apparent in the Greek writings and inscriptions that Ahura Mazda is frequently identified with Zeus.[60] The depth

---

Society, eds. Piotr Bienkowski, et al. (London: T & T Clark, 2005), p. 237, emphasizes the differences in the accounts.

[55] Sir David Ross, *Select Fragments*, The Works of Aristotle, Vol. 12 (Oxford: Clarendon, 1952), pp. 79–80.

[56] Shahbazi, "The Traditional Date of Zoroaster Explained," p. 34–35; Humbach, et al., *Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, p. 26 also accepts the 600 revision and uses it to place Zoroaster ca. 1080 BC.E.

[57] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," p. 190.

[58] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 191–194. A similar understanding of the fragment was advanced by V. V. Strouve, "Religion of the Achaemenides and Zoroastrianism," *Cahiers d'Historie Mondiale* 5 (1959–60): p. 534, but in a context of suggesting that the king supplanted the role of Zoroaster in the Persian Empire.

[59] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 195–196.

[60] Classical renderings of Iranian dieties are not necessarily so straightforward, however. Cf. Arrian *Anabasis* VII.14.5 (Arrian, *Anabasis Alexandri Books V–VII; Indica*, trans. P. A. Brunt, *Arrian II* [Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1983], p. 251), where he speaks of a temple to 'Asclepius' at Ecbatana; a number of problematic identifications could be proposed here: is it *Airyaman*, *Θraētaona*, *Trita*, *Anāhitā*, *Haurvātat* and *Amərətat*? On divinities of healing, see Albert J. Carnoy, "The Iranian Gods of Healing," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 38 (1918): 294–307.

of Aristotle's engagement with or investigation of the philosophical implications of this dualism cannot be determined from the length of the fragment, but it is possible other (earlier) Greek philosophers did (see discussion of the influence on Greek thought below). These two fragments, then, seem to confirm a pre-Hellenistic antiquity for both eschatology and ontological dualism in the Iranian religious tradition, as well as at least nominal dissemination of the ideas outside 'theological' Magian circles.

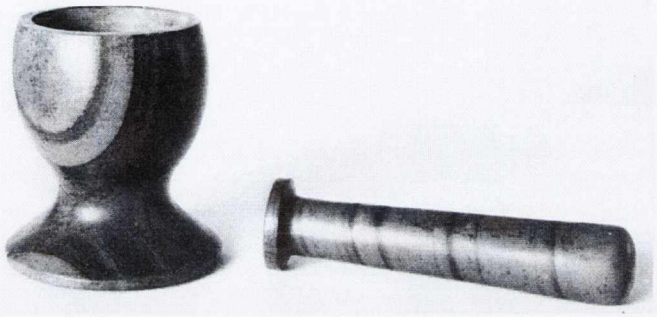


Figure 4: Mortar and Pestle from Persepolis
Chicago Oriental Insitute P-57934
Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago
© University of Chicago

Herodotus

Herodotus, the most extensive written source for first half of the Achaemenid Period, records valuable information on Persian religious practice. In his *Persian Wars* (or *Histories*) I.131–132, Herodotus presents his well-known observation that the Persians do not 'set up statues and temples and altars,' considering such behaviour incongruous with the non-anthropomorphic nature of the gods.[61] He claims they sacrifice on mountain tops, worshipping a list of naturalistic gods (sun, moon, earth, fire, water, winds) as well as the 'whole circle of heaven' which he calls Zeus. Calling Ahura Mazda the 'whole circle of heaven' is a reasonable understanding of an Avestan idea; the Avesta describes him as clothed in the sky (*Yasna* 30:5).[62] Boyce considers the list a 'fair attempt' at rendering the *Amǝša Spǝntas* (a doctrine discussed below),[63] but this is an unnecessary identification: the list is congruent with the nature-worship and the worship of *Miθra* (with his frequent

---

[61] Herodotus, *The Persian Wars*, trans. A. D. Godley, *The Persian Wars, Books I–II* LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002), pp. 170–173.

[62] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 193; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 179–180; the phrase in question seems to strictly speaking refer to Spenta Mainyu. Cf. William W. Malandra, *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion*, Minnesota Publications in the Humanities 2 (Minneapolis, MN: Univ of Minnesota Press, 1983), p. 40; Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 33; Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Ahura Mazdā and Ārmaiti, Heaven and Earth, in the Old Avesta," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 122.2 (2002): pp. 401–2.

[63] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 179. However, Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 102, rejects this, seeing a naturalistic explanation.

identification with the sun) attested in the Avesta and the Persepolis finds.[64] The issue of (fire-)temples in Achaemenid Persia is much more fraught.[65] Herodotus also claims they have a rather simple worship ceremony at which a Magus is required to sing 'of the birth of the gods' (θεογονίην). Boyce considers this description as consonant with 'orthodox Zoroastrian lay observance,' although Benveniste and Zaehner dissent.[66] The issue of 'orthodoxy' aside, it fits well with the evidence for Achaemenid practice in particular and Indo-Iranian practice generally. It is tempting to identify the Magi's song with the *Gāthās* or the *Yašts*, but his lack of specificity only leaves it as a tantalizing possibility. Even though the *Gāthās* cannot strictly be described as about the birth of the gods, it is unlikely that Herodotus knew the Avestan language, and if he heard the hymns chanted or described, he quite possibly would have considered the hymns as equivalent to Hesiod.[67] It is also possible Herodotus refers to now lost cosmogonic hymns.

Also well known is Herodotus's claim that Persian boys are taught 'riding, archery and truth-telling,' (I.136) and that the Persians consider lying to be one of the greatest offences (I.138).[68] The importance of the idea of truth (Avestan *Aša*, Old Persian *Arta*) can be seen positively in the *Gāthās* as well as negatively in the Bisitun (Behistun) inscription of Darius I (see figure 5). *Aša* is an extremely important concept in the *Gāthās*: one of the *Amәša Spәntas* (see below), it appears both personified and as a common noun.[69] Those who choose *aša* are commonly contrasted with those who choose *druj* ('falsehood').[70] *Aša* occurs in the *Gāthās* over 80 times, quite remarkable given the length of the text. In the Bisitun

---

[64] E.g., Richard T. Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, Oriental Institute Publications 92 (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1969), p. 559 (PF 1955), 567–8 (PF 1960, line 4); the various natural gods in the *Yašts*. Herodotus's information on *Miθra* is, however, problematic. For one solution, see M. J. Edwards, "Herodotus and Mithras: Histories I.131," *American Journal of Philology* 111.1 (1990): p. 4.

[65] For discussions, see Edward J. Keall, "Archaeology and the Fire Temple," *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the the Persian Empire*, ed. Charles J. Adams (Montreal: McGill, 1972), pp. 15–22; David Stronach, "On the Evolution of the Early Iranian Fire Temple," *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce*, eds. H. W. Bailey, et al., vol. 2, Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI (Leiden: Brill, 1985), pp. 605–627; Mary Boyce, "Ātašdān," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): pp. 7–9; Stausberg, "Persepolis, Zoroastrianopolis, Metropolis," pp. 48–49; Wouter Henkelman and Kristin Kleber, "Babylonian Workers in the Persian Heartland: Palace Building at Matannan in the Reign of Cambyses," *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire*, ed. Christopher Tuplin (Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007), p. 169.

[66] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 181; Emile Benveniste, *The Persian Religion According to the Chief Greek Texts*, Ratanbai Katrak Lectures I (Paris: Paul Geuthner, 1929), pp. 29–30. Cf. Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, p. 167.

[67] Emile Benveniste, *The Persian Religion*, p. 31, thinks that the 'theogony' is likely the *Yašts*, but not the *Gāthās*, as the *Yašts* are explicitly liturgical; this position, however, ignores that the entirety of the *Yasna*, which includes the *Gāthās*, is a liturgical text. James R. Russell, "Zoroastrian Notes," *Iran and the Cacasus* 6.1/2 (2002): p. 6, suggests *Yasna* XXX. Most commentators, however, favor a *Yašt*; cf. Ilya Gershevitch, "Old Iranian Literature," *Iranistik: Literatur*, Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1 (Leiden: Brill, 1968), pp. 2–3.

[68] Herodotus, *Wars I-II*, pp. 176–179.

[69] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, does not distinguish between the proper and common meanings in his translation, but see *Yasna* XXVIII.3; XXXIII.7, 12; XXXIV.6; XLIV.9 for examples of where personification seems likely. Cf. the comments on the alternation between Divinity and concept in Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 212–213; Johanna Narten, "Bahman I: In the Avesta," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 487.

[70] I.e. *Yasna* XXX.10; XXXI.1; XLVI.6, 11; XLIX.11; LI.10, 14; LIII.6.

inscription, Darius attributes the uprisings surrounding his accession and the authority of the 'Pseudo-Bardiya' to *Drauga* ('Falsehood'), the Old Persian equivalent of *Druj*. *Drauga* as an active force is mentioned four places,[71] while the act of insurrection is several times referred to as 'he lied' (*adurujiya*).[72] In fact, Darius repeatedly declares that 'Ahuramazda brought me aid' (*Auramazdāmai upastām abara*) and that this was so because he was 'no follower of Falsehood' (*nai draujana āham*).[73] While the Behistun text clearly served a political purpose, the rhetoric of the text frequently utilizes religious language consonant with the religious tradition and the importance of the *Aša-Druj* dichotomy.[74] Indeed, Skjærvø is impressed by the 'lexical correspondences' between DBb 6–13 and *Yasna* LX.5[75] and suggests that Darius saw himself as the ideal worshipper of Ahura Mazda, perhaps even portraying himself as a *Saošiiant*[76] in the Susa inscription (DSf 15–18).[77] Since in the *Rig Veda*, *Rta* (=*Aša*) is contrasted with *anrta* (=**anaša*, 'disorder') rather then the Sanskrit equivalent of *druj*, *druh*,[78] it seems that the opposition of Truth/Order (*Aša*) to Falsehood/the Lie (*druj*) is characteristic of at least Iranian religious thought, if not Zoroastrianism *per se*.[79] It seems highly likely that Herodotus was accurate in pinpointing this area of royal ideology, which was also consonant with the thought of the Avesta.[80]

---

[71] Rüdiger Schmitt, *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text*, Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum (London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991), I §10, IV §54–56, IV §63, IV §64 (p. 51, 54–56, 63, 64).

[72] Schmitt, *Bisitun: Old Persian*, I §16, III §49, IV §52 (p. 54, 67, 68).

[73] Schmitt, *Bisitun: Old Persian*, IV §63 (p. 71).

[74] Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations in Old Persian? Literary Sources of the Old Persian Inscriptions," *Irano-Judaica IV*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999), p. 10. Cf. M. Schwartz, "The Religion of Achaemenian Iran," *Cambridge History of Iran II*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), pp. 685–6, where he considers the inscriptions of Darius as consonant with Zoroastrianism; however, Benveniste, *Persian Religion*, pp. 35–40, strongly disagrees.

[75] Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," pp. 50–51.

[76] *Saošiiant* is a Gathic epithet meaning 'victorious one, over-comer, savior' which becomes a technical term for the final eschatological savior.

[77] Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 57, 58.

[78] Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 101.

[79] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 120–121, thinks that Darius's use of *drauga* indicates his Zoroastrianism. Cf: Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 55.

[80] It is incidentally worth mentioning that *Aša* appears in the common Achaemenid throne name 'Artaxerxes' (OP *Artaxšasa*, 'ruling through truth'); Cf. Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 178; Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): pp. 654–655; Chapter IVa, 'Daniel.'

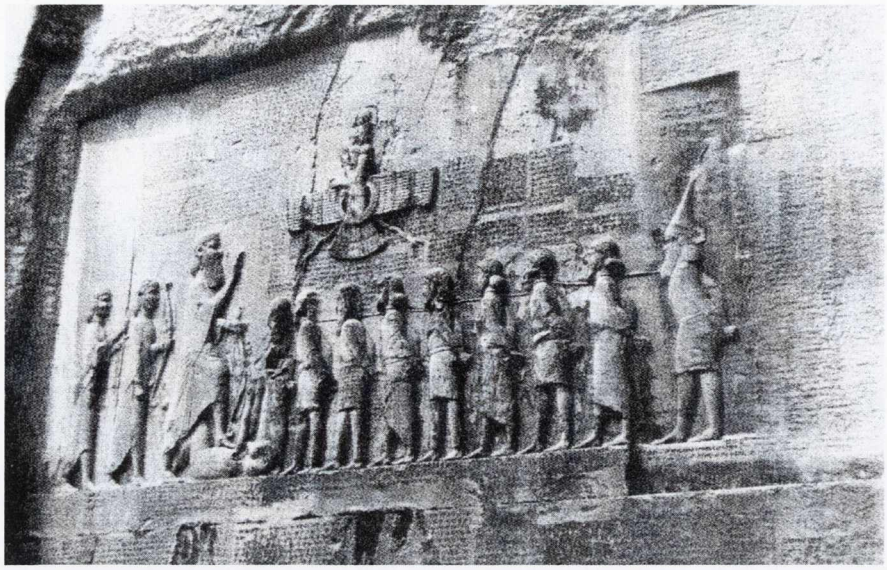


Figure 5: Darius's Bisitun (Behistun) Inscription

From Schmitt, Rüdiger. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. (London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991), plate 29. Photo by Heinz Luschey. Courtesy of Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum.

Herodotus also declares that the Persians consider the sun to afflict leprosy in recompense for sin (I.138). This clearly must refer to *Miθra*, who was frequently identified with the sun and responsible for protecting the contract.[81] In the *Bahram Yašt* (XIV.48) one of *Miθra*'s associated deities, *Vərəθragna*, protects the faithful who do not lie to *Miθra* from leprosy.[82] In Zoroastrianism *Miθra* was one of the deities who weighed the actions of the dead.[83] This information fits well with the Avestan evidence. He also notes that the Magi practice exposure, while the Persians embalm their dead in wax before burial (I.140).[84] Both of these burial practices are attested in the archaeological record of Asia Minor.[85] In the midst of a somewhat legendary tale, Herodotus notes that King Darius (I) refused to pass under the remains of a dead body (I.187).[86] If this story has any historical reality, it seems to

---

[81] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 24–25; Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 179. Richard N. Frye, "Mithra in Iranian History," *Mithraic Studies: Proceedings of the First International Congress of Mithraic Studies*, ed. John R. Hinnells, vol. 1 (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975), p. 64, is happy to see Greek evidence as confirming *Miθra*'s role with oaths.

[82] *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 244. The previous verse (47) explicitly links the protection to not-lying.

[83] *Miθra* is described as being 'debt-paying' and having 10,000 eyes in the *Mihr Yašt* (X):7, 18–19,69, 82; (Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 77, 83, 107, 113; *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 121, 124, 139–140); Boyce, *Textual Sources*, pp. 28–29; Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 31.

[84] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 178–181. Strabo (XV.3.20) repeats this, but adds a detail of incestuous marriage. (Strabo, *Geography*, trans. Horace Leonard Jones, *The Geography of Strabo. VII*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1930], pp. 183–185).

[85] A. Shapur Shahbazi. "The Irano-Lycian Monuments: The Principle Antiquities of Xanthos and its Region as Evidence for Iranian Aspects of Achaemenid Lycia." (Ph.D, London Univ, 1973), pp. 174–189.

[86] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 235.

indicate some form of concern for ritual purity in regards to death. Some have thought the rock tombs of the Achaemenids, as well as the reference to embalming in wax, indicate a concern for the avoidance of contamination, but there is evidence that regular Persians were interred with no ritual barriers, only clay coffins, between the corpse and the earth.[87] It is certain that later Sassanian scruples over burial were not yet universally current in the Achaemenid period, but the Magi may have been beginning to think in that direction. Evolution in Iranian funeral practices is likely illustrated by the change in meaning of the word *daxma* from 'grave' to 'exposure area.'[88] At least one clear concern for purity exists, however—the protection of fire from the contamination of bodies. Herodotus reports that fire was venerated as a god (III.16).[89] *Ātar*, 'fire,' appears often in the Avesta, and the image of 'fire altars' are common on Achaemenid seals.[90]

In the course of the Greek campaign, Herodotus claims Xerxes buried alive nine boys and maidens at 'Nine Ways,' and that Xerxes's wife buried fourteen nobles' sons to the god of the netherworld (VII.114).[91] Such apotropaic rites are strictly forbidden in Zoroastrianism, but they are evidence of a divide between the good gods (*Ahuras*) and the evil gods (*Daēuuas*). This behavior contradicts the earlier information given by Herodotus that the Magi were concerned with the defiling aspects of the corpse, if indeed they practiced exposure for that reason, and if Darius's above scruple is historical. If the accounts of burial alive are historical, there seem to be two possible explanations; either the Magi had yet to develop a concern for the purity of the earth and the practice was some form of 'black' Iranian practice, or the events were more political or judicial rather than religious. Considering the so-called '*Daivās* (Old Persian for *Daēuuas*) Inscription' of Xerxes (XPh

---

[87] Erich F. Schmidt, *Persepolis II: Contents of the Treasury and Other Discoveries*, Oriental Institute Publications 69 (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1957), pp. 117–123; David Stronach, *Pasargadae: a Report on the Excavations* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1978), pp. 40–43 does not mention any graves, but he suggests purity as a possible reason for the design of Cyrus's tomb. Cf: Richard N. Frye, "Religion in Fars Under the Achaemenids," *Orientalia J. Duchesne-Guillemin Emerito Oblata*, Acta Iranica 23 (Leiden: Brill, 1984), p. 175.

[88] Frantz Grenet, "Burial II: Remnants of Burial Practices in Ancient Iran," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): p. 559.

[89] Herodotus, *The Persian Wars*, trans. A. D. Godley, *The Persian Wars, Books III–IV*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000), p. 23.

[90] Cf: *Yasna* XXXVI.1, 3 (Johanna Narten, *Der Yasna Haptaŋhaiti* [Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1986], pp. 40–41); *Yašt* XIX.46–49 (Almut Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt: Edition, Übersetzung, Kommentar*, Beiträge zur Iranistik 15 [Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1994], pp. 241–266); For some seals, see Arthur Upham Pope and Phyllis Ackerman, eds., *A Survey of Persian Art*, 16 vols. (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1938-), Vol. 4, plate 123, C and F; plate 126, J and H; drawings in Moorey, "The Persian Empire," p. 47; also the discussion in J. Houtkamp, "Some Remarks on Fire Altars of the Achaemenid Period.," *La Religion iranienne a l'epoque achaemenide (Actes du collogne de Liege 11 decembre 1987)*, ed. Jean Kellens, Iranica Antiqua Supp. 5 (Gent: Iranica Antiqua, 1991), pp. 23–48 and in Margaret Cool Root, "From the Heart: Powerful Persianisms in the Art of the Western Empire," *Achaemenid History VI*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991), pp. 118–122; Jamsheed K. Choksy, "Reassessing the Material Contexts of Ritual Fires in Ancient Iran," *Iranica Antiqua* 42 (2007): pp. 229–226; also note the comments of Strabo XV.3.14, 16 on the purity of fire and water (Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 175, 179).

[91] Herodotus, *The Persian Wars*, trans. A. D. Godley, *The Persian Wars, Books V–VII* LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006), p. 417; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 167–169.

§4b.35–41), where Xerxes boasts of ending the worship of the *Daēuuas* in an unmentioned location (*daivadāna*)[92]—he even contrasts the worship of the *Daivās* with the worship of Ahura Mazda and *Arta*[93]—it is difficult to accept Xerxes assenting to a 'black' ritual. If these events are compared with the stories Herodotus tells of Cambyses's treatment of a royal judge who accepted a bribe (V.25)[94] and Astyages's treatment of Harpagus (I.119),[95] it seems a political or judicial setting might be more probable. While the Harpagus incident is suspect due to Herodotus's largely legendary treatment of Median history and the Cambyses incident could fit into his portrait of the emperor as a madman, the Great King still was the final arbiter of justice and not beyond drastic punitive measures. Many of the Greek authors are intent on portraying moral lessons in their writings, with the decadence of the Persian kings a favourite topic.[96] Attributing these burials alive to apotropaic rites or a queen's selfishness may be a 'misunderstanding' that fits Herodotus's theory of Xerxes's *a priori* inferiority to his father and to Cyrus.

Herodotus (I.140) also notes that the Magi kill every creature except dogs, something consonant at least with the later Zoroastrian practice of killing '*xrafstras*,' obnoxious creatures considered the creation of Angra Mainyu.[97] Instruments for the destruction of such creatures can be found in the Avestan text, the *Vidēvdāt*.[98] This is quite a peculiar practice to Herodotus, and he remarks that the Magi consider it virtuous; something of the later theological justification for the practice must have existed in at least some form by this time. Indeed, it is perhaps related to Xerxes's habit for sponsoring the killing of scorpions north of Susa.[99] Despite some scholars' opinions that this habit was a Magian or Median innovation, the killing of *xrafstras* appears to be an Iranian practice, as it appears in such a role in Indian texts.[100] Further, Herodotus records Xerxes honouring a particularly beautiful tree

---

[92] Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 150–152; Malandra, *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion*, p. 51; Boyce, *Textual Sources*, p. 105; another translation can also be found in Pritchard, ed., *ANET*, pp. 316–317. Discussion of the meaning of the inscription can be found in Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 175–177; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 550–553. A convenient summary of scholarship on this issue can be found in Kamyar Abdi, "The 'Daiva' Inscription Revisited," *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 6.1–2 (2006): pp. 46–50, although his conclusions are tenuous.

[93] XPh §4b.40–41 (Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 150–152).

[94] Cambyses is said to skin a judge who took a bribe, cover the judicial chair with his skin, and force his son to sit on and judge from that seat. Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 27.

[95] Astyages is said to feed Harpagus his own son. Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 154–157.

[96] Cf. Plato, *Laws*, (III.695), pp. 230–233; Cf. For a discussion of Greek moralistic models see Amélie Kuhrt, "The Achaemenid Persian Empire (c. 500–c. 330 BCE): continuities, adaptations, transformations," *Empires: Perspectives from Archaeology and History*, eds. Suasan E. Alcock, et al. (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2001), pp. 97–98.

[97] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 178–181; Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices*, p. 44, 76, 179; On veneration of dogs: Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 302–303.

[98] *Vidēvdāt* XIV.8 and XVIII.2 (*Zend-Avesta I*, p. 168, 189).

[99] Aelian, *On the Characteristics of Animals*, trans. A. F. Scholfield, *On the Characteristics of Animals III (Books XII–XVII)*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1959), pp. 250–253; Cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 402.

[100] Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 338–342.

(VII.31).[101] Boyce finds this to be typical of Iranian religious practice and possibly related to one of the *Aməša Spəntas*.[102] Whether or not there is any relation to an *Aməša Spəntas*, this act fits with the nature-worship recorded earlier by Herodotus, as well as with the noted Persian predilection for paradises.[103]

Greeks quite commonly remarked on the Persians' veneration of rivers or water, but Herodotus records that Xerxes scourged the Hellespont with a hundred lashes, calling it a 'bitter water' (πικπον ὕδωρ) (VII.35).[104] Later Zoroastrian doctrine considered salt water to be fresh water corrupted by Angra Mainyu, which Boyce thinks explains this behavior.[105] While the source she quotes is quite late (The *Greater Bundahišn* is Sassanian), the account in Herodotus could be considered evidence for the antiquity of the belief. The first chapter of the *Vidēvdāt* contains an analogous system of Angra Mainyu's counter-creations, although salt water is not included in the pericope.[106] The earlier noted occurrence of *xrafstras* in Herodotus, however, may indicate that theological speculation on such issues was already underway in Xerxes's time. In VII.191,[107] the Magi sacrificed to Thetis and the Nereids to make a storm cease. Shahbazi considers the Nereids to be an Hellenized form of the Ahuranis, consorts of Ahura Mazda. It is possible that Thetis is an attempt to translate *Arədvī Sūrā Anāhitā*, a water-goddess of Indo-Iranian origin who was later assimilated to Anaïtis, and whose cult is well-attested in Achaemenid times.[108] Whatever the exact Iranian deities involved, this detail is unsurprising, and it highlights the problems involved in divine equations.[109]

---

[101] Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 245.

[102] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 165.

[103] Although their exact purpose and import is debated; See a lengthy discussion of the evidence in Christopher Tuplin, *Achaemenid Studies*, Historia 99 (Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 1996), pp. 80–131; cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 442–443. It is worth noting that trees do appear to have been deliberately cultivated by the administration. PFa 33 links ten types of trees with the location of several *partetaš* (Hallock translates these as including olive, apple, quince, mulberry, pear, and date). This must be relevant, even if *partetaš* itself cannot be directly related to *paradise*. See Richard T. Hallock, "Selected Fortification Texts," *Cahiers de la D. A. F. I.* 8 (1978): p. 116, 135–136; cf. David Stronach, "Čahārbāg," *Encyclopaedia Iranica* IV (1990): p. 624.

[104] Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, pp. 346–349.

[105] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 166; Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 232. Cf. Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, p. 160.

[106] *Zend-Avesta I*, pp. 4–10; T. Anklesaria, *Pahlavi Vendidâd (Zand-î Jvît-dêv-dât): Transliteration and Translation in English*, Dinshah Kapadia, ed. (Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Institute, 1949), pp. 1–14.

[107] Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 509.

[108] Shahbazi. "Monuments," p. 156; Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 71–72; Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 160–161. Anāhitā's cult certainly predates Artaxerxes II, as she appears on seals. P. R. S. Moorey, "Aspects of Worship and Ritual on Achaemenid Seals.," *Akten des VII International Kongress für Iran: Kunst und Archäologie (Munich, 1976)* (Berlin: Dietrich Reimer, 1979), p. 225, even suggests her iconography can be found among the Oxus Treasure finds.

[109] For a convenient table of Herodotus's equations between Greek and foreign gods, see Thomas Harrison, *Divinity and History: The Religion of Herodotus*, Oxford Classical Monographs (Oxford: Clarendon, 2002), pp. 210–211.

Another indistinct element in his work is his mention of the Magi. Herodotus periodically associates the Magi with the interpretation of dreams (I.107, 120; VII.19).[110] This could be considered a Greek confusion with the Babylonians, long noted for astrology and oneiromancy, but Duchesne-Guillemin considers it characteristic of their practice (albeit without much discussion).[111] While the first mention of dream-interpretation is in a clearly legendary tale of Astyages, it is probable that the professional religious caste of the Achaemenids served their royal patrons in this manner, since it was a traditional priestly duty in many (if not all) of the conquered lands. On their own, these reports of oneiromancy are insufficient to ascertain the level and importance of such activity among the Magi. Despite their fame and obvious importance to Iranian religious life, the Magi remain unfortunately little known. Herodotus's general picture of the Magi as important priests in the empire is—at least on that point—consistent with the evidence from Persepolis, if not particularly illuminating.[112]

Herodotus offers a great variety of information of the Achaemenid Empire, much of it confirmed by Iranian sources. While his claims often need to be carefully considered, they offer a valuable insight into what an interested Greek could discover about the Persians and their religious ideas. It should be kept in mind that Herodotus's interests were ultimately in understanding the sources of the Greco-Persian wars and not in illuminating theology.

Xenophon

Xenophon offers extensive materials from the Achaemenid period but is problematic for historical investigation. It is clear much of his historiography is dependent on previous writers, particularly Herodotus, and that he has Hellenized, philosophized, or novelized much of his material. Still, a brief investigation of the evidence may prove useful.[113] Xenophon follows Herodotus in crediting the Persian education with truth-telling (*Cyropaedia* I.vi.33).[114] He has Cyrus offer libations after dinner (*Cyr.* II.iii.1);[115] a note in the Loeb edition

---

[110] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 139, 156–159; Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 333.

[111] Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, "The Religion of Ancient Iran," *Historia Religionum*, eds. C. J. Bleeker and Geo Widengren, vol. I (Leiden: Brill, 1969), p. 351.

[112] The Magi do appear in various tablets, often associated with the mysterious *Lan* ceremony. The significance and meaning of this is still debated; cf. Morrison Handley-Schachler, "The *Lan* Ritual in the Persepolis Fortification Texts," *Studies in Persian History, Essays in Memory of David M. Lewis.*, eds. Maria Brosius and Amélie Kuhrt, Achaemenid History XI (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1998), pp. 195–204; Shahrokh Razmjou, "The *Lan* Ceremony and Other Ritual Ceremonies in the Achaemenid Period: The Persepolis Fortification Tablets," *Iran* 42 (2004): pp. 103–117.

[113] On the usefulness of Xenophon for historiography, see Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, "The Death of Cyrus: Xenophon's *Cyropaedia* as a Source for Iranian History," *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce*, eds. H. W. Bailey, et al., vol. 2, Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI (Leiden: Brill, 1985), pp. 459–471.

[114] Xenophon, *Cyropaedia*, trans. Walter Miller, *Cyropaedia, Books I–IV*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001), p. 119.

[115] Xenophon, *Cyr. I–IV*, p. 177.

claims that this is a Greek interpolation, but libations are attested both in later Zoroastrian use and in the Persepolis tablets, both for the *Haoma*-ceremony and additional to it.[116] His descriptions of Cyrus's sacrifices are reminiscent of the phrases which appear in the Old Persian inscriptions (such as 'Ahuramazda and the other gods who are')—in *Cyr.* III.iii.21–22 Cyrus sacrifices to Zeus and every god brought to his attention; in VII.i.1 he has Cyrus offer sacrifice and libation to 'ancestral Zeus;' in VIII.v.57 Cyrus sacrifices to Hestia, ancestral Zeus, and 'any other god the Magi suggested.' Again, they offer holocausts (ὡλοκαύτησαν) in VIII.iii.24, and, in VIII.vii.3, he offers to ancestral Zeus, Helius, and all the gods.[117] Zeus and Helius could easily be understood as Ahura Mazda and *Miθra* or *Huuar Xšaēta* (*yazata* of the sun) and Hestia is quite possibly linked to the cult of the hearth fire.[118] Xenophon claims Cyrus was devout, singing and sacrificing daily, and that he instituted a college of Magi (VIII.i.23–24).[119] The Magi do appear frequently in the Persepolis tablets, and it is likely that they were the official priests to the Achaemenid dynasty from the beginning, perhaps holding pre-eminence in the Median Empire as well.[120] It is possible that Cyrus organized an official cult training apparatus, even though no Iranian 'church' is known until the Sassanian period,[121] but Xenophon could also be simply projecting his image of the ideal ruler onto Cyrus.

Xenophon describes a procession of Cyrus as headed by four bulls for 'Zeus and the other gods as the Magi directed,' commenting that the Persians think they must consider the religious professionals' opinion. The procession also had horses to be sacrificed to the Sun and three chariots—a chariot for Zeus (with white horses), one for the Sun, and a third chariot (unassigned) with purple trappings, followed by a fire altar (VIII.iii.11–12).[122] Since by Artaxerxes II's reign (404–359), the court acknowledged Ahura Mazda, *Miθra*, and *Anāhitā* in its inscriptions,[123] and Xenophon's expedition was during Artaxerxes II's reign, it is reasonable to assign the three chariots to this triad; in any case, the chariot for Zeus is certainly for Ahura Mazda and that of the sun for *Miθra.* Perhaps one may wish to see the

---

[116] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 155–6; On the *Haoma* ceremony, see pp. 157–162; Duchesne-Guillemin, "The Religion of Ancient Iran," pp. 353–354. For the tablets, e.g., George G. Cameron, *Persepolis Treasury Tablets*, Oriental Institute Publications 65 (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1948), on Tablet 11 (p. 101) appears a *Haoma*-priest; Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, PF771 (p. 229) is the receipt for a libation to Ahura Mazda.

[117] Xenophon, *Cyr. I–IV*, p. 279; Xenophon, *Cyropaedia*, trans. Walter Miller, *Cyropaedia, Books V–VIII*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000), p. 203, 287, 361, 423.

[118] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 154–155.

[119] Xenophon, *Cyr. V–VIII*, p. 317.

[120] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 245–246, 267–268; Dandamaev and Lukonin, *Culture*, pp. 331–332; Cf. Bowman, *Aramaic Ritual Texts From Persepolis*, p. 6, 10, 31. For the tablets, e.g., Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, PF 757, 788, 769, 772 (pp. 226–227, 229).

[121] For a concise overview, see Duchesne-Guillemin, "The Religion of Ancient Iran," pp. 323–76.

[122] Xenophon, *Cyr. V–VIII*, p. 355.

[123] Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 154.

other member of the old Indo-Iranian triad, **Vouruna*, as here venerated,[124] but is unlikely considering the lack of attestation for his worship. If Ahura Mazda is **Vouruna*, as Zaehner suggests,[125] then the third chariot cannot be his in any case. The one piece of evidence given of this god is the purple trappings. Shahbazi suggests that the chariot was in honour of Kavi Vīštāspa, the patron warrior-king of Zarathuštra (or more properly, his *frauuašī*).[126] If Arrian is to be believed, deceased kings were given sacrifical honors,[127] and some scholars argue that the kings' *daimon* in Plutarch's *Artaxerxes* is the royal *frauuašī*.[128] Additionally, Boyce claims that in Iran purple was the color of warriors[129] and Strabo mentions purple as one of the summer wardrobe choices of Persian warriors, but it is unclear why.[130] If this warrior association is correct, then Shahbazi's suggestion is possible, although the martial aspects of *Anāhitā* in her assimilation to Ishtar may also explain the purple trappings. Since it is known that Artaxerxes II set up temples to *Anāhitā*[131] but references to Vīštāspa's *frauuašī* are lacking, *Anāhitā* seems a more likely candidate for the chariot.

The information derivable from Xenophon is largely consonant with the other sources, albeit in a Greek veneer. While useful as a check, it offers little that is completely novel, of major consequence, or not massively problematic for use.[132]

Plutarch

In his *Moralia*, *Isis and Osiris* (46–47), Plutarch gives a fairly lengthy description of Persian religion.[133] Although Plutarch wrote around 120 C.E., he claims his information comes from Theopompus, who wrote in the fourth century B.C.E.[134] This passage is very significant for the dating of several concepts, and has been much discussed by scholars. He

---

[124] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 37; Boyce even argues that the formula '*Auramazdā utā Miθra baga*' in A²Pa 24–25 (Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 156) is the triad Mazda, *Miθra*, and **Vouruna*. See Mary Boyce, "Apąm Napāt," *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.2 (1986): p. 149. It should be noted, however, the numerous interpretations proposed for '*baga*.' Cf. N. Sims-Williams, "Baga II: in Old and Middle Iranian," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 405.

[125] Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 66–68, as does Roman Jakobson, "The Slavic God Velesb," *Selected Writings VII*, ed. Stephen Rudy (Berlin: Mouton, 1985), p. 42.

[126] A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Iranian notes 1–6," *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce*, eds. H. W. Bailey, et al., vol. 2, Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI (Leiden: Brill, 1985), pp. 500–502.

[127] *Anabasis* VI.29.7 (Arrian, *Anabasis Alexandri Books V–VII; Indica*, p. 295).

[128] XV.5 (Plutarch, *Artaxerxes*, trans. Bernadotte Perrin, *Plutarch Lives XI (Aratus, Artaxerxes, Galba, Otho)*, LCL ed. [Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002], p. 163). Cf. Lily R. Taylor, "The 'Proskynesis' and the Hellenistic Ruler Cult," *Journal of Hellenic Studies* 47.1 (1927): pp. 53–62, esp. 54, 57.

[129] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 21, 147, 287. She does not give reasons, however.

[130] XV.3.19 (Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 183).

[131] Stanley M. Burstein, *The Babyloniaca of Berossus*, Sources and Monographs on the Ancient Near East 1.5 (Malibu: Urdena, 1978), p. 29 (III.5.2).

[132] For a discussion of Xenophon's evidence in regards to garrisons, see Christopher Tuplin, "Persian Garrisons in Xenophon and Other Sources," *Achaemenid History III: Method and Theory*, eds. Amélie Kuhrt and Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1988), pp. 67–70.

[133] Plutarch, *Isis and Osiris*, trans. F. C. Babbitt, *Moralia V*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1935), pp. 111–115.

[134] Benveniste, *Persian Religion*, p. 69.

ascribes to Zoroaster (as well as 'the great majority of the wisest of men') an ontological dualism. He also describes a good god 'Oromazes' and an evil god 'Areimanius,' with Mithras in the middle, an apotropaic rite involving 'omomi' (ὀμωμι), the killing of noxious animals, an eschatological battle between the two gods, the creation of six supportive- and counter-gods, and a cosmology. This passage presents a number of interesting and problematic claims. Putting aside the question of the orthodoxy of the Zoroastrianism described here for the moment, a few important ideas are unambiguously evidenced here. A radical ontological dualism is linked with an eschatology which contains a period of war and a final victory for the forces of the good god, and these two antagonists are clearly identified as Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu. This is also accompanied by what could be called a proto-angel- and demonology, creatures which are clearly created by the respective gods to aid them in their battles against each other. Sundermann would even argue that Plutarch's description of Angra Mainyu's demise as due to hunger parallels the myth of his swallowing by *Āz*, the demon of hunger.[135] The eschatological scenario described by Plutarch nearly exactly parallels many details in the *Bundahišn* (e.g., I.17–18,26–27; II.5–7; XXX.7–32).[136] These passages in the *Bundahišn* have a much more systematic and exensive eschatology than any other extant Iranian text; the appearance of the same themes in Plutarch, however, prove that the ideas long predate the *Bundahišn*'s ninth century redaction. The killing of noxious creatures and other issues were already seen in Herodotus.

It is frequently pointed out that the rites described in Plutarch's passage are not consonant with Zoroastrian teachings.[137] Indeed, the practice of apotropaic rites is generally considered to be one of the integral prohibitions of Zarathuštra. However, (see discussion below) attempting to limit the discussion of Persian religious ideas to the 'orthodox' Zoroastrian position is to ignore both the historical data as well as historical likelihood.[138] The information Plutarch gives here reveals an interesting blend of religious ideas that may

---

[135] Werner Sundermann, "The Zoroastrian and the Manichaean demon *Āz*," *Paitimāna: Essays in Iranian, Indo-European, and Indian Studies in Honor of Hans-Peter Schmidt*, ed. Siamak Adhami (Costa Mesa, CA: Mazda Publishers, 2003), p. 333.

[136] *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 7, 9–10, 12, 123–129; Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsih*, p. 7, 9, 33, 261–263. For discussion of the complexity of part of the *Bundahišn*, see Anders Hultgård, "The First Chapter of the Bundahišn. Remarks on the Text and Composition," *Proceedings of the First European Conference of Iranian Studies (Turin, September 7-11, 1987)*, eds. Gherardo Gnoli and Antonio Panaino, vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies (Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990), pp. 167–190. He further discusses Plutarch in Anders Hultgård, "Persian Apocalypticism," *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity*, ed. John J. Collins (New York: Continuum, 2000), pp. 70–74.

[137] Benveniste, *Persian Religion*, pp. 73–75; Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 171; cf. Mary Boyce and Frantz Grenet, *A History of Zoroastrianism: Zoroastrianism under Macedonian and Roman Rule*, vol. III, Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2.3 (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1991), pp. 456–460; R. C. Zaehner, *Zurvan, a Zoroastrian Dilemma* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1955), p. 13; Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 128–130; J. Gwyn Griffiths, *Plutarch's De Iside et Osiride: Introduction, Translation, and Commentary* (Swansea: Univ of Wales Press, 1970), pp. 474–475.

[138] However, Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 179–180, sees the description as based on Zoroastrian polemic, and thus not reflective of any real sect at all.

hint towards the origins of the religious movement known as Mithraism; however, contra Boyce and others, the role of *Miθra* as mediator is not necessarily so foreign to Iranian doctrine—the role of *Miθra* as judge could easily be interpreted or extended to mediation, as could his role as protector of the contract.[139] The role of *Miθra* as mediator or judge does appear in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*, and Shaked understands Plutarch as reflecting an older understanding which was lost by the Pahlavi redactions.[140] It is also worth noting that the system of six good gods and six counter-gods seems to be identical to the doctrine of the *Amәša Spәntas* and their evil counterparts.[141] His subsequent mention of twenty-four deities can also be related to the Zoroastrian calendar dedications.[142] It is remarkable, then, how much of Plutarch's information is constant with the late Pahlavi writings. It is certain, anyway, that similar cosmological and systematic treatments of Iranian traditions were underway centuries before the Sassanians.

Strabo

Strabo, writing in the first century C.E., seems to have combined personal observation with the works of previous Greek authors. His *Geography* provides a few details on Persian religious customs which are congruent with the Zoroastrian tradition and the Old Persian inscriptions. In XV.3.13, he essentially restates Herodotus (I.131), including the information that the Persians use neither statues nor altars.[143] However, two sections later he notes not only a large number of 'temples to the Persian gods' in Cappadocia, but claims to have seen a procession of a statue of 'Omanus' himself (XV.3.15);[144] he had previously noted Armenian temples to Anaïtis (XI.14.16).[145] This can be understood two ways: that there was a historical development in Persian religion from the time of Herodotus to Strabo in which 'fire temples' (Πυραιθεῖα) became normative; or, that temples were used 'selectively,' either only for certain gods or rituals or by certain groups who existed simultaneously with 'traditional,' 'exterior' worship. Boyce and Grenet suggest that 'Omanus' is *Vohu Manah*, one of the *Amәša Spәntas*;[146] perhaps this points to either a prominence of the *Amәša Spәntas* by

---

[139] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 478–479; Benveniste, *Persian Religion*, p. 88.
[140] Shaul Shaked, "Mihr the Judge," *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam. Collected Studies* (Aldershot: Variorium, 1995), pp. 14–19 (Section V); Cf: F. B. J. Kuiper, "Remarks on the Avestan Hymn to Mithra," *Indo-Iranian Journal* 5 (1961): p. 46.
[141] Humbach, et al., *Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, p. 13, n. 17 understands a reference to the *Amәša Spәntas* in this passage.
[142] Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 195.
[143] Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 175.
[144] Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 177.
[145] Strabo, *Geography*, trans. Horace Leonard Jones, *The Geography of Strabo V*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1928), p. 341.
[146] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 250, 270.

the first century, or to a link between adherence to the doctrine and temple-use. Wikander understands this appearance of *Vohu Manah* as evidence for an older Vayu-cult, but his interpretation is tenuous and tendentious.[147]

Strabo's depiction of the education of Persian boys (noble, presumably) is quite suggestive, particularly if it is more than an elaboration of the account in Plato. Beyond paralleling the particular disciplines of study, Strabo describes a course of oral training which sounds distinctly like an heroic-poetic tradition.[148] In a largely oral culture, the deliberate inculcation of cultural and religious traditions is to be expected, especially among the nobility.[149] An anecdote attributed to Dinon also places minstrels, at least, as early as the Median court.[150] Strabo's description, then, confirms the existence of at least one potential medium for the transmission of the traditions which are extant only in later manuscripts.

Strabo also offers descriptions of the general Persian sacrificial rituals, all of which are similar to the pictures drawn from the Avesta and Old Persian.[151] He describes sacred fires, prayers, blood sacrifice, libations, bundles of sacred twigs, and the presence of Magi. These descriptions require all of these elements—if based on personal observation—to date to the early Roman period at the latest, and—if based on previous Greek writers—to a much earlier period. The Persian archaeological record, however, confirms Strabo's description as accurate for the Achaemenid period as well: seals discovered at Persepolis depict a ritual with a man/two men with mouth(s) covered holding twigs before a table with mortar and pestle and a fire altar.[152]

Persian Influence on Greek Thought

As a parallel consideration to Irano-Judaean interaction, it is relevant to note that, beyond awareness of Persian ideas, some scholars argue that Greek philosophy and culture were influenced by Iran. The question of Persian-Greek interaction is perhaps even more

---

[147] Stig Wikander, *Vayu: Texte und Untersuchungen zur Indo-Iranischen Religionsgeschichte*, vol. I: Texte, Quastiones Indo-Iranicae 1 (Uppsala: Lundequistska Bokhandeln, 1941), pp. 36–37. Wikander's views on Vayu have not received much acceptance among Iranicists (Private communication, Dr. Almut Hintze).

[148] XV.3.18 (Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 179).

[149] Mary Boyce, "The Parthian *gōsān* and Iranian Minstrel Tradition," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (1957): pp. 10–45; Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Royalty in Early Iranian Literature," *Proceedings of the Third European Conference of Iranian Studies, Cambridge, 11-15 September 1995*, ed. Nicholas Sims-Williams, vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies, Beiträge zur Iranistik 17 (Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1998), pp. 99–108.

[150] Athenaeus, *The Deipnosophists*, trans. Charles B Gulick, *Athenaeus VI*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1937), XIV.633 (pp. 417–419).

[151] See XV.3.14, 15, 16 (Strabo, *Geography VII*, pp. 175–6, 177, 179).

[152] See Schmidt, *Persepolis II*, p. 26, plate 7 (PT3 363); pp. 9–10, plate 7; one of which is reproduced as fig. 8 in A. Shapur Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol: II Farnah (God Given) Fortune Symbolised," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 13 (1980): p. 134.

fraught than Iranian-Jewish since both share a common Indo-European inheritance.[153] A few scholars' suggestions are here mentioned by way of contextualizing the study of Second Temple Judaism. Duchesne-Guillemin notes that Heraclitus's doctrines of the *logos* and of the nature of fire are quite similar to the Iranian concepts of *aša* and fire, respectively, and can be interpreted as borrowed.[154] He also notes the astronomical list of Anaximander parallels Pahlavi texts, but considers these to be parallel developments;[155] West, however, considers Anaximander's system to be a combination of Babylonian and Persian systems.[156] Afnan argues that the early Greek Philosophers knew of the Persian ideas but rejected them due to dislike of 'revelatory' religion, but goes on to claim that Plato's concept of the ideals was inspired by the *Aməša Spəntas*.[157] West argues for Persian influence on Anaximander, Anaximenes and Heraclitus.[158] According to him, Xerxes's attack on Athens ended a period of 'active Iranian influence' (550–480).[159] Kingsley, however, rejects an end to an era of Persian influence, claiming that Magi were present in Athens at least until the death of Plato.[160] Boyce also positively discusses the possibility of Zoroastrian influence on Greek Philosophy.[161] These possibilities cannot be explored in depth here, yet even these brief comments highlight the availability of Persian ideas during the Achaemenid Empire. If a people outside the confines of the Persian Empire had opportunity to hear about Persian ideas, how much more so a people which had lived entirely within its confines for two centuries?

Religious Situation in Iran

A common hindrance in the evaluation of Persian influence is to limit the discussion to Zoroastrianism *per se*; much of the content and worldview of the Iranians in general and the Zoroastrians in particular pre-dates the 'reforms of Zaraθuštra.' While many of the ideas most likely to have been borrowed became standard doctrine in Sassanian Zoroastrianism, various other ideas were available during the same periods and may have also played their own roles. The details of the antiquity and relation of various religious strands are heavily

---

[153] A lucid description of the perils of such research (albeit with an unfortunate rejection of the entire enterprise) is given by Bruce Lincoln, "The Center of the World and the Origins of Life," *History of Religions* 40.4 (2001): pp. 311–326.

[154] Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, "Heraclitus and Iran," *History of Religions* 3 (1963): pp. 34–49.

[155] Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, "Fire in Iran and in Greece," *East and West* 13 (1963): pp. 200–1, 206.

[156] M. L. West, *Early Greek Philosophy and the Orient* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1971), pp. 89–91.

[157] Ruhi Muhsen Afnan, *Zoroaster's Influence on Greek Thought* (New York: Philosophical Library, 1965), pp. 9–13, 138–139.

[158] M. L. West, *Early Greek Philosophy and the Orient*, p. 89, 96–97 (Anaximander); pp. 107–8 (Anaximenes); 202 (Heraclitus).

[159] West, *Early Greek Philosophy and the Orient*, p. 203.

[160] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 196–208.

[161] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 150–163 (ch. 9); Cf. the very brief discussion in Duchesne-Guillemin, "The Religion of Ancient Iran," pp. 371–2.

debated, but aspects relevant to the question of influence on Jewish apocalyptic can be picked out from amid the melée without having to decide on all of the tricky questions in the history of Iranian religion.

In the above discussion of the evidence of the Greek writers, it was briefly noted that much debate on the question of religious influence gets unduly caught up on the question of orthodox Zoroastrianism. Before approaching the issue of Judaean-Iranian contacts, it is necessary to investigate the religious situation in Iran and the matrix of religious ideas likely to have been encountered in the Achaemenid Empire (and the later Parthian Empire).

It is common to distinguish between three forms or stages in the development of Iranian religion: the early Indo-Iranian religion, the religion of the reformer (the so-called 'Zarathuštrianism'), and later Zoroastrianism;[162] Boyce, however, dissents from many in the evaluation of the difference between 'Zarathuštrianism' and Zoroastrianism, seeing a greater continuity of thought between the *Gāthās* and the Avesta.[163] Many scholars also add a fourth 'Zoroastrian heresy' commonly called Zurvanism.[164] Jong characterizes three basic approaches to the history of Zoroastrianism, which he calls the 'fragmenting, harmonizing, and diversifying' approaches, and he criticizes what he sees as an overly Hegelian view of history in each.[165] Rather than trying to impose evolutionary or dialectical models on the evidence, it is important to allow a realistic picture—one which will often be messy and contradictory. Also important for evaluating the influence of Persian ideas is the nature of the religious ideas which pre-dated Zarathuštra, and which were never completely 'suppressed,' regardless of how much one thinks was eliminated or anathematized (or not) by the prophet. This section will attempt to put the religious situation into a perspective suitable for investigating influence; detailed analysis of texts and theological trends will be dealt with elsewhere.

Shaked has rightly criticized the prevailing understanding of Zurvanism as a Zoroastrian heresy or independent religion,[166] such as dominates much discussion of

---

[162] A fairly standard description of the situation is available in Malandra, *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion*, p. 4; Cf: Schwartz, "The Religion of Achaemenian Iran," pp. 664–697; Gershevitch added an additional term 'Zarathuštricism,' but it apparently was not taken up subsequently. See Ilya Gershevitch, "Zoroaster's Own Contribution," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 23.1 (1964): pp. 12–38.

[163] See, for example, her comments in Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 241–242.

[164] E.g., the overview in Mary Boyce, "Some Reflections on Zurvanism," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 19.2 (1957): pp. 304–316; a particular proponent was Zaehner: R. C. Zaehner, "Zurvanica I," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 9.2 (1938): pp. 303–320; R. C. Zaehner, "A Zervanite Apocalypse I," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 10 (1940-2): pp. 337–398; R. C. Zaehner, "A Zervanite Apocalypse II," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 10.3 (1940): pp. 606–631; Zaehner, *Zurvan*. Although these studies are dated, Zurvan still makes periodic forays into the discussion.

[165] Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 43–45.

[166] Shaul Shaked, *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam*, Collected Studies (Aldershot: Variorium, 1995), Section V (pp. 220–240); previously published in Shaul Shaked, "The Myth of Zurvan: Cosmogony and Eschatology," *Messiah and Christos: Studies in the Jewish Origins of Christianity*, eds. Ithamar Gruenwald, et al., Texte und Studen zum

Achaemenid period religion.[167] 'Zurvanism' refers to the myth that both Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu were twins born of the god Zurvan ('Time') that some scholars take to be the defining belief of a separate 'heresy' or faith. The question of the relationship between Zoroastrianism and Zurvanism is essentially the perennial question of whether the religion as taught by Zarathuštra was monotheistic or dualistic: was the dualistic understanding a corruption or faithful continuation of the religion of the *Gāthās*? And, was the dualism 'primary' or 'secondary'? The debate essentially hinges on the interpretation of a single Gathic passage, *Yasna* XXX.3–5. Insler translates this passage as the following:

> [3]Yes, there are two fundamental spirits, twins (*yəmā*) which are renowned to be in conflict. In thought and in word, in action, they are two: the good and the bad. And between these, the beneficent have correctly chosen, and not the maleficent. [4]Furthermore, when these two spirits first came together, they created life and death, and how, at the end, the worst existence shall be for the deceitful but the best thinking for the truthful person. [5]Of these two Spirits, the deceitful chose to bring to realization the worst things. (But) the very virtuous spirit, who is clothed in the hardest stones, chose the truth, and (so shall those) who shall satisfy the Wise Lord continuously with true actions.[168]

Particularly vital to the interpretation of this passage is the understanding of the term 'twins' (*yəmā*). Some interpret it literally, and thus posit an original but derivative dualism;[169] others metaphorically. Of these latter, depending on whether or not Spenta Mainyu is equated with Ahura Mazda, some conclude a dualism,[170] or a monotheism[171] (See Figure 6). In the midst of this hermeneutical melée, however, two things are certain: the interpretation of the verse is exceedingly difficult and ambiguous, and that the force of Zarathuštra's

---

antiken Judentum 32 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1992), pp. 219–236. Cf. Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 66, who agrees.

[167] In particular, see the work of Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 175–247, and, of course, Zaehner, *Zurvan*; Cf. the work of Widengren, e.g., Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," pp. 129–136.

[168] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, pp. 32–33. Avestan: 3 āt ta mainyū paouruyē/ yā yəmā xᵛafənā asrvātəm/ manahicā vacahicā/ šyaoθanōi hī vahyō akəmcā/ åscā hudåŋhō/ ərəš vīšyātā nōit duždåŋhō/ 4 atcā hyat tā həm mainyū/ jasaētəm paourvīm dazdē/ gaēmcā ajyāitīmcā/ yaθācā aŋhat apəməm aŋhuš/ acištō drəgvatąm/ at ašāunē vahištəm manō/ 5 ayå mainivå varatā/ yə drəgvå acištā vərəzyō/ ašəm mainyuš spəništō/ yə xraoždištəng asənō vastē/ yaēcā xšnaošən ahurəm/ haiθyāiš šyaoθanāiš fraorət mazdąm.

[169] Duchesne-Guillemin, "The Religion of Ancient Iran," p. 339; Douglas A. Fox, "Darkness and Light: The Zoroastrian View," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 35.2 (1967): pp. 132–133; Mircea Eliade, *A History of Religious Ideas*, trans. Willard R. Trask, vol. 1: From the Stone Age to the Eleusinian Mysteries (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1978), p. 310; Cf. the Zurvanite interpretation.

[170] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 193–4; (as a protest against monotheism) Walter B. Henning, *Zoroaster: Politician or Witch-Doctor?*, Ratanbai Katrak Lectures 1949 (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1951), pp. 46–49; Herman Lommel, *Die Religion Zarathustras nach dem Awesta dargestellt* (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1930), pp. 20–25.

[171] Martin Haug, *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings, and Religion of the Parsis*, Trübner Oriental Series, Third ed. (London: Routledge, 2000), p. 149, 304–305; Roland Grubb Kent, "The Name Ahuramazda," *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry*, ed. Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1933), p. 207; Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 50–51.

teaching was primarily an *ethical* dualism. The implications of these two points are very significant, and often overlooked in the discussion.

That the interpretation of this passage is ambiguous can be clearly seen in the continual divide between scholars, and can be touched upon in the references given in the footnotes above.[172] What is not appreciated is that this ambiguity most likely, if not definitely, *existed already in the adherents of the tradition* in the Achaemenid, Parthian, and Sassanian periods, just as it does today. It is in this light that the 'Zurvanite' myth must be viewed: this teaching took the word 'twin' literally and posited that Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu were twins born of the god Zurvan, 'eternal time,' an interpretation also followed by many modern commentators. Thus, a dualism grounded in a (remote) monotheism. Simultaneously, the Magi may have interpreted the word 'twins' simply as an ontological co-eternity of the two deities. Some modern commentators attempt to describe Zarathuštra's teaching as monotheistic in tendency or actuality, and see this tendency also in the inscriptions of Darius I and Xerxes.[173] While a plethora of gods or entities are evident in the *Gāthās* and the *Yasna Haptaŋhāiti*, there is no doubt that Ahura Mazda always takes a place of prime importance, as he does in the Old Persian inscriptions. Much scholarship considers the renewed presence of Indo-Iranian deities in the Younger Avesta and *Vidēvdāt* as a 'backslide' or capitulation to the old Iranian polytheism, but this is far from clear.[174] The resolution of this issue brings up the second point above: the focus of Zarathuštra's message.

	Ahura Mazda and Spenta Mainyu *Not* Identified	**Ahura Mazda and Spenta Mainyu Identified**
Monotheistic/ Monistic	**Ahura Mazda** ↙ ↘ **Angra Mainyu** v. **Spenta Mainyu**	**?** ↙ ↘ **Angra Mainyu** v. **Ahura Mazda = Spenta Mainyu**
Dualistic	**Angra Mainyu** v. **Ahura Mazda** ↓ **Spenta Mainyu**	**Angra Mainyu** v. **Ahura Mazda = Spenta Mainyu**

Figure 6: Mazdaean Monotheism or Dualism in* Yasna *30
Author's Own.

---

[172] Cf. the overview of Philippe Gignoux, "Monotheism or Polytheism in the Gathic Revelation?," *Irano-Judaica IV*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999), pp. 65–71, who refuses to make a decision on the matter.

[173] Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 155–161; Without commenting on monotheistic tendencies, Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 550–553, sees Xerxes's inscriptions as consonant with Zoroastrianism. Cf: Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 3, who sees a "close genetic relationship" between the two religions.

[174] Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 79–82; Benveniste, *Persian Religion*, pp. 26–27.

That the *Gāthās* teach an ethical dualism focused upon the person of Ahura Mazda is unquestionable, even if expressed with ritual terms.[175] All of the *Gāthās* can easily be seen to be drawn from this premise: that humanity is presented the choice between *aša* and *druj*, and that Ahura Mazda is the god exclusively of *aša*. This teaching had ontological implications; what is unclear is whether or not Zarathuštra himself drew these implications. The force of his teaching is, to borrow a term coined in the discussion of the monotheism of Israelite religion, *monolatrous*; whether or not other deities existed, Ahura Mazda alone was source of all which was worthy of worship. In this light, his teaching had a monotheistic-appearing tendency situated in an ethical dualism. However, in light of the subtlety of his verses, these two tendencies—monistic and dualistic—appear in constant flux, and have led modern commentators to conflate the ethical with the ontological dualism.[176] The tradition is thus susceptible to simultaneous interpretations of dualism and monotheism, in a tension which refuses to be removed.

In an interesting article, Boyd and Crosby discuss the history of this problem and attempt a solution which is highly illuminating.[177] They place the question of dualism versus monotheism in the perspective of eschatology: while current reality is dualistic, the end of history will also be the end of Angra Mainyu, and thus of dualism, or, as they phrase it, "Zoroastrianism combines in a manner unique to itself among the major religions of the world a cosmogonic dualism and an eschatological monotheism."[178] Two of the arguments which Boyd and Crosby utilize are of much interest to this study: they reveal the integral nature of time and the *eschaton* to the theological system, and the link of Ahura Mazda with wisdom. "Time plays an absolutely decisive role in the Zoroastrian religion, even to the point of altering in a fundamental manner the ontological status of Ahura Mazda."[179] It is this concept which unifies Zoroaster's monolatry and his ethical dualism, as well as explaining the myth of the subordination of Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu to Zurvan (the personification of the concept *zurvān akanārag*, 'eternal time')—the fates of both are indeed dependent on time.

---

[175] Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 25; Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, pp. 63–79, 91; Almut Hintze, "The Rise of the Saviour in the Avesta," *Iran und Turfan: Beiträge Berliner Wissenschaftler, Werner Sundermann zum 60. Geburtstag gewidmet*, eds. Christiane Reck and Peter Zieme, Iranica 2 (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1995), pp. 86–88, in a slightly different context, questions the ritualistic interpretation as Gathic elements.

[176] In fact, the use of 'dualism' in scholarship is too often imprecise, conflating all kinds of binary oppositions which may or may not be related. For a pertinent study to this effect (albeit with terminology which this author would not endorse) see John G. Gammie, "Spatial and Ethical Dualism in Jewish Wisdom and Apocalyptic Literature," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 93.3 (1974): pp. 356–385.

[177] James W. Boyd and Donald A. Crosby, "Is Zoroastrianism Dualistic or Monotheistic?," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 47.4 (1979): pp. 557–88.

[178] Boyd and Crosby, "Is Zoroastrianism Dualistic or Monotheistic?," p. 575.

[179] Boyd and Crosby, "Is Zoroastrianism Dualistic or Monotheistic?," p. 576.

The basic translation of the name 'Ahura Mazda' as either the 'The Wise Lord' or 'Lord Wisdom' is well-known;[180] the importance of this role as the god of wisdom is pointed out by Boyd and Crosby. It is this role, they argue, which enables Ahura Mazda to guarantee his ultimate victory over Angra Mainyu despite his ontological limitations and without compromising the role of the ethical human will.[181] This doctrine is highly sophisticated and balanced—indeed it seems to consistently elude highly educated minds—and it is to be expected that a multiplicity of understandings and simplifications of it would quickly circulate. That neither the monotheistic or dualistic interpretations are wholly correct helps explain some of the confusion over the matter, both in modern research and in ancient observers.

The second clear point is the ethical thrust of the above quoted passage, as of the *Gāthās* as a whole. While unavoidably containing cosmological, ontological, and ritual referents, the *Gāthās* are prayers which emphasize the righteous choice made by the speaker (the original composer as well as the present reciter) before the god, and as an 'added benefit' encourage the listener to make the same choice. The term 'twins' emphasizes the duality of the choice more than making an ontological statement. As Boyce noted, Zarathuštra was not a modern systematic theologian nor philosopher[182]—indeed, Choksy doubts that Zarathuštra can even properly be considered a priest or prophet, preferring to call him a devotional poet.[183] This choice is available to every man, just as it was to the divine beings—both or all hundreds of them. On its own the teaching is able to adapt to a form of polytheism by subordinating all to the choice, and thus either to the realm of Ahura Mazda or Angra Mainyu. Whether this 'adaptation' involved a fall from monotheism to polytheism or a reform from polytheism to monotheism is immaterial to present concerns.

Ethical dualism and ontological dualism are not the only important dualisms in the Zoroastrian texts; a dualism between material or tangible and immaterial or intangible (Avestan **mainyavaka-* and **gaēiθyaka-*, Pahlavi *mēnōg* and *gētīg*) also plays an important role.[184] This concept is both similar to and very different from the dualism between spirit and matter found in Greek philosophy, but the importance of this has generally been overlooked in the

---

[180] F. B. J. Kuiper, "Ahura Mazda 'Lord Wisdom'?," *Indo-Iranian Journal* 18 (1976): pp. 25–42 rejects the meaning 'Lord Wisdom,' and from his analysis of the name denies Achaemenid Zoroastrianism; Kent, "The Name Ahuramazda," pp. 200–209, accepts either interpretation and comes to the opposite conclusion towards the Achaemenids.

[181] Boyd and Crosby, "Is Zoroastrianism Dualistic or Monotheistic?," p. 578.

[182] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 201. Cf. William Gurdon Oxtoby, "Interpretations of Iranian Dualism," *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the the Persian Empire*, ed. Charles J. Adams (Montreal: McGill, 1972), p. 661.

[183] Jamsheed K. Choksy, "Hagiography and Monotheism in History: doctrinal encounters between Zoroastrianism, Judaism and Christianity 1," *Islam and Christian-Muslim Relations* 14.4 (2003): pp. 407–421.

[184] On the issue of *mēnōg* and *gētīg* in general see Lommel, *Die Religion Zarathustras*, pp. 93–129; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 229–236.

debates over potential Iranian or Hellenistic influences on Jewish thought. The material and immaterial dualism cuts across *both* of the other dualisms in Iran; neither is valued nor disvalued compared to the other, unlike in Platonic or Gnostic systems.[185] In fact, the physical world is of immense value as it was created with the express purpose of defeating Angra Mainyu.[186] While the implications of the *mēnōg* and *gētīg* dichotomy certainly underwent significant elaboration, possibly even absorbing some Neo-Platonic influences in the Sassanian period,[187] the dualism appears already in the *Gāthās*.[188] As Shaked shows, this dualism is intimately entwined with the eschatological perspective of Zoroastrianism, and it makes sense of the apparent duplication of eschatological events: justice is served both in the spiritual (*mēnōg*) and physical (*gētīg*) planes.[189]

A Zoroastrian idea which has been alluded to several times is the doctrine of the *Amәša Spәntas*, or 'Holy/Bountiful/Beneficent Immortals.'[190] These are abstract entities which appear in the *Gāthās* and are standardized into a list of six or seven in the Young Avesta. They are difficult to classify, as they are personifications of abstract ideas[191] and alternate in use between the abstract concept and personification. Some scholars consider them little more than 'emanations' of Ahura Mazda, while others classify them as independent deities.[192] The most important seem to be *Vohu Manah* ('Good Thought') and *Aša Vahišta* ('Best Truth/Order') in the *Gāthās*, and while the *Amәša Spәntas* were not systematized into a fixed list (or indeed even given that name) in the *Gāthās*, they clearly are important to its thought.[193] At some point, the *Amәša Spәntas* were associated with the seven

---

185 Shaul Shaked, "The Notions *mēnog* and *gētīg* in the Pahlavi Texts and Their Relation to Eschatology," *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam. Collected Studies* (Aldershot: Variorium, 1995), pp. 59–60; Hans P. Hasenfratz, "Iran und der Dualismus," *Numen* 30.1 (1983): pp. 37–38, 40.

186 E.g., *Gr. Bundahišn* III (esp. vv. 23–24)//*Sh. Bundahišn* II.9–11 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 20–45; *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 14); Cf. Shaked, "The Notions *mēnog* and *gētīg*," pp. 70–73.

187 Shaul Shaked, "The Notions *mēnog* and *gētīg*," p. 60.

188 E.g., *Yasna* XXVIII.2, XXXI.11, XLIII.3 (Humbach, et al., *Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, Vol. 1, p. 117, 129, 152).

189 Shaked, "The Notions *mēnog* and *gētīg*," p. 75, 83–84.

190 Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 196–197, 264. Unfortunately, Johanna Narten, *Die Amәša Spәntas im Avesta* (Wiesbaden: 1982), was not accessable for this study. A critical review of Narten's work can be found in Mary Boyce, "Review: *Die Amәša Spәntas im Avesta* by Johanna Narten," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 47.1 (1984): pp. 158–161. It should be noted that Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, largely accepts Narten's analysis.

191 They are standardized as *Vohu Manah* (Good Purpose or Thought), *Aša* (Truth, Order), *Amәrәtat* (Immortality), *Armāiti* (Devotion or Piety), *Haurvātat* (Health or Wholeness), *Xšaθra* (Dominion or Kingdom), and sometimes *Spәnta Mainiiu* (the Holy Spirit). See Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 203; Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 48.

192 As essentially eminations of Ahura Mazda cf. R. C. Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight*, p. 46; As independent beings, Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 201–204; Cf. H. Humbach, et al., *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, vol. 1, pp. 13–14, 16; Duchesne-Guillemin, *The Western Response to Zoroaster*, pp. 39–41; Mills, *Zarathuštra, Philo, the Achaemenids, and Israel*, p. 12; Kurt Rudolph, "Zarathuštra - Priester und Prophet," p. 110.

193 Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, pp. 50–54.

elements of the creation, possibly under Greek influence.[194] The subtleties of the debates over the nature of these beings reminds one of the Trinitarian debates in Christianity, and it is likely that, like those, the theological finesse of this doctrine was lost on the majority of believers. It is impossible to know exactly how Zarathuštra envisioned these entities, but Boyce may be right to consider them as an attempt to 'ethicize' the Indo-Iranian nature religion.[195] In the Bisitun Inscription of Darius and on his tomb, Darius is surrounded by six co-conspirators, and some have seen a conscious imitation of Ahura Mazda and the *Aməša Spəntas* here,[196] but beyond this, they only appear sporadically in more or less probable allusions during the Achaemenid period, including the passages noted above in Plutarch and Strabo. Given their highly ritual allusions, however, it is also possible their significance was confined to the priestly class.[197]

The exact extent of the reform of Zarathuštra (assuming he was both historical and a reformer) is a matter of much debate, but comparison with the *Rig Veda* enables the identification of some trends in Indo-Iranian religion which can be confidently identified as Iranian, regardless of their connection to Zoroaster.[198] It is clear that there were two classes of divinities, the *Ahuras* (Sanskrit *Asuras*) and the *Daēuuas* (Sanskrit *Devas*). Over time, in India the *Devas* became the good gods while the *Asuras* sank to the position of demonic gods, and the reverse occurred in Iran: the *Ahuras* became the good gods and the *Daēuuas* the evil ones.[199] This change likely was occurring before Zoroaster. As is amply paralleled in cultures around the world, the Indo-Iranian religious rites sacrificed to benevolent gods to secure favours and to maleficent gods to ward off evils. The radical ethical dualism as associated with Zoroaster, however, seems to have declared that apotropaic rites—by strengthening the forces of evil—were in themselves against *aša* and therefore illegitimate. With this doctrine, the *Daēuuas* changed from being legitimate gods (albeit malevolent ones)

---

[194] The seven elements are fire, water, earth, sky/metals, plants, animals/cattle, humanity. See Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 203–205.

[195] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 204–209, 220–222; cf. Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, p. 18; on p. 62 he refutes this.

[196] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 91–94; Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," p. 125; however, Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 56, n. 50, rejects this theory. See further on this topic in Chapter IVb, 'Mythic Geography.'

[197] Jong, "The Contribution of the Magi," p. 94; Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 186; Almut Hintze, "On the Literary Structure of the Older Avesta," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 65.1 (2002): p. 50; Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, never states this directly, but it is implied by his understanding of the *Gāthās* as "speculative ritual," e.g., p. 112.

[198] Kellens, echoing some earlier scholarship, throws doubt on the historicity of Zarathuštra, allowing for the *Gāthās* to be the work of a sect of some sort. Such a debate is familiar to biblical scholars; whether or not the man is historical, either position is irrelevant for the existence of the ideas in the writings. See Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, pp. 83–94. Cf. Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 38.

[199] Explained in Kuiper, "Ahura Mazda 'Lord Wisdom'?," pp. 25–42; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 54–55, 85.

to being false gods, and then to being demons (in the modern sense of the word).[200] The denial of the legitimacy of apotropaic rites, which are so amply attested in the Brahmanic literature and so central to the religious mindset of his time, easily explains at least some of the resistance experienced by the early Zoroastrian communities as evidenced in the *Gāthās*,[201] and perhaps also the persistence of some such rites, even after the adoption of some of Zoroaster's ideas.[202] Further, the similarity of rites as practiced by Zoroastrians and the older Indo-Iranian traditions is considerable. Both had similar sacrificial rituals using *haoma/soma* and the *barəsman/barsom*, honored the hearth fire, and utilized the traditional priests; the most important differences in ritual were the acceptance and use of the *Gāthās* as ritual poems and the (non-)propitiation of the *Daēuuas*.

The Magi

The evidence of the Greek authors and the Persepolis tablets make the importance of the Magi undeniable; if they did not hold a monopoly on religious specialization in the Achaemenid Empire, they certainly were the most important priests of the Iranian religion, at least in the western areas of the empire. What is decidedly uncertain is exactly what they were; Herodotus (I.101)[203] claims the Magi were one of the six tribes of the Medes, but they also consistently appear in his history as priests; they also receive rations for offerings in the Persepolis tablets, where they are linked to the mysterious *Lan* ceremony.[204] Strabo describes them as one of the three tribes of Persis, but he also labels the 'Chaldaean' wisemen both 'tribes' and 'sects.'[205] Scholars variously understand them to be an ethnic tribe, a sociological caste, or professional class,[206] portraying them as converts to Zoroastrianism, opponents to Zoroastrianism, and mercenary ritualists willing to sacrifice regardless of the convictions of the client.[207] Several scholars make the Magi central to their understanding of the

---

[200] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 85, 201, 251–3, 256–7; Kellens, *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism*, pp. 21–23; cf. Malandra, *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion*, p. 13, 21.

[201] See in particular *Yasna* XLVI.1–4, 8 and XLIX.1–12. Cf. *Yasna* XXVIII.6; XXXI.18; XXXII.13; XLIII.15; LI.12, 14 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 81, 83, 95, 25, 41, 49, 65, 105, and 107, respectively).

[202] Malandra, *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion*, p. 18; Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 225, 251–252. Cf. the above discussion on Plutarch's evidence.

[203] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 133.

[204] E.g., Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, pp. 226–227, 229 (PF757, 769, 772). For studies on the *Lan*, see Handley-Schachler, "The *Lan* Ritual in the Persepolis Fortification Texts," pp. 195–204; Razmjou, "The *Lan* Ceremony," pp. 103–117.

[205] As a Persian tribe: XV.3.1 (Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 157); on the Chaldaean sect-tribes, XVI.1.6 (p. 203).

[206] As a tribe: I. M. Diakonoff, "Media," pp. 36–148 in Ilya Gershevitch, ed., *The Cambridge History of Iran*. vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), p. 141; As a caste: Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 187; as a hereditary class: Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 19–20, 84–85.

[207] Converts: Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 161–165.
Opponents: Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 21, 66–67.
As due to royal influence, Schwartz, "The Religion of Achaemenian Iran," pp. 696–697.
As 'mercenaries,' Gershevitch, *Avestan Hymn to Mithra*, pp. 16–17.

transformation of 'Zarathuštrianism' into 'Zoroastrianism' and/or Zurvanism.[208] Much of the Greek and Latin evidence for the Magi is unusable, as the figure of the Magus gradually became assimilated with the image of the sorcerer (and thus the origin of the word *magic*).[209] The Greeks frequently credit the Magi with astrology, divination, and magic, traits scholars sometimes attribute to Babylonian influence.[210] While Babylonian influence on the Persians is undeniable, scholarly discussion of the influence upon the Magi is frequently in conjunction with the Magian 'corruption' or misunderstanding of the Zoroastrian tradition.[211] Indeed Zurvanism's supposed tendency towards fatalism is sometimes attributed to this influence.[212] As discussed above, however, this strict limitation of the interpretation of Iranian religion is problematic. Even though speculations on the 'gift of the Magi' may be interesting, the sources allow no conclusions on their influence as differentiated from Iranian religion in general.[213] All that is certain is that they were important, commonly associated with the name of Zoroaster, supported by the Great Kings, and hereditary.

Although relatively unnoticed, the ambiguity of the Magi seems to parallel the status of another priestly tribe, the Levites.[214] The Torah's description of the role and position of the Levites is ambiguous, just like the descriptions of the Magi: sometimes the Levites are distinguished from priests, and sometimes they are not.[215] Judges 17–18 seems to imply either the necessity or prerogative of the Levites to serve as priests. While their cultic duties, in whatever form, are essential, their status as a tribe is more ambiguous. While the normal tribal list consisted of twelve tribes including Levi, sometimes the list of twelve excluded

---

[208] P.F. M. Fontaine, *The Light and the Dark: The Cultural History of Dualism*, vol. V: Dualism in Ancient Iran, India and China (Amsterdam: Gieben, 1990), p. 27, 29, claims the Magi were Medians who corrupted Zoroastrianism into Zurvanism, echoing Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 198, 197, where the Magi are described as responsible for the Avesta's divergence from the *Gāthās*; Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, describes a ping-pong-like alternation between the 'Zurvanites' and the 'Mazdeans,' utilizing the terms 'primitive,' 'catholic' and 'reformed Zoroastrianism'; Cf. Fox, "Darkness and Light: The Zoroastrian View," pp. 133–134.

[209] Carsten Colpe, "Development of Religious Thought," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater, vol. 3(2) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 826–828; Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, p. 387, 393.

[210] Cf: Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 278, 368, 386–389; In the context of the Hellenization of the Parthians, see the discussion of the Greeks confusion over the Magi, Colpe, "Development," pp. 826–831.

[211] For Babylonian influence on Persia and Magian delinquency, see Schwartz, "The Religion of Achaemenian Iran," p. 690, 696–697; See also Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 182–253 (Lectures VI and VII), where he finds the Magi responsible for the Avesta and its 'Semitic overtones.' Jong, "The Contribution of the Magi," pp. 90–91 notes the unhelpfulness of this approach.

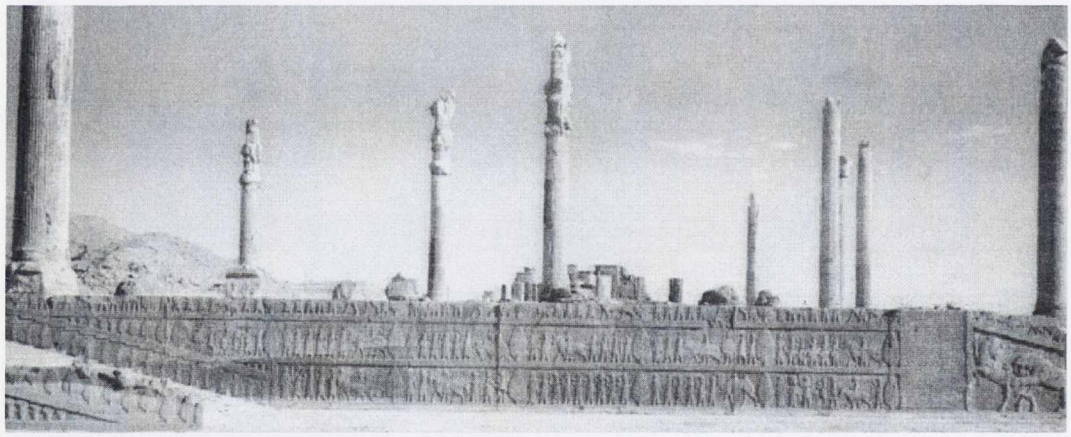
[212] Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 236–244; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 234–235.

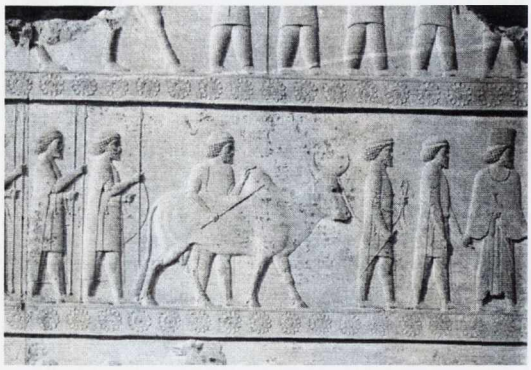
[213] Jong, "The Contribution of the Magi," pp. 90–92, 95.

[214] Jacob Neusner, "The Rabbi and the Magus," *Talmudic Judaism in Sasanian Babylonia: Essays and Studies*, ed. Jacob Neusner (Leiden: Brill, 1976), p. 81, would rather compare the Magi to the Rabbis.

[215] For example, see the overview in Lester L. Grabbe, *Priests, Prophets, Diviners, Sages: A Socio-Historical Study of Religious Specialists in Ancient Israel* (Valley Forge, PA: Trinity Press International, 1995), pp. 41–43, 52–53; Cf. Baruch A. Levine, *Numbers 1–20*, The Anchor Bible (New York: Doubleday, 1993), pp. 104–105; Stephen Shawn Tuell, *The Law of the Temple in Ezekiel 40–48*, Harvard Semitic Monographs 49 (Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992), pp. 121–152.

Levi.[216] Of course, the tribal number itself varies. Deuteronomy 33 only counts ten (including Levi); 2 Sam 19:43 has eleven (unspecified 10 plus Judah); 1 Kgs 11:31–32 counts eleven (unlisted); Gen 29:31–30:24 has eleven (excluding Benjamin); and 1 Chr 4–8 lists eleven tribes (including Levi, but excluding Zebulun). One of the oldest extant Hebrew poems, *The Song of Deborah* (Jdg 5), lists eleven tribes, but includes two unique tribes (Machir and Gilead) and excludes four others (Levi, Judah, Gad, Mannasseh). The much later Revelation counts twelve, but still excludes Dan (Rev 7:5–8). While these tribal lists allotted Levites no lands among the tribes, they are given cities (including 'cities of refuge') and religious duties.[217] Despite the tradition in the Torah of Levi's landlessness, Ezek 48 allots land to the Levites (and to the Zadokites) among the tribes (making a *de facto* fourteen tribes). The Levites were hereditary, just like the Magi (and indeed, the priests of many peoples, including the Indo-Iranian). If priests in these groups generally became priests because they were born into a priestly family, the image or analogy of a tribe is fairly apt, regardless of the origin of the group. Perhaps a better word to use than 'tribe' is 'caste.' It is worth noting that just as Second Temple Judaism had several parties within the priestly group, there is no reason to assume that the Magi were an unified group.





Figures 7–8: Apadana Reliefs; detail
Chicago Oriental Institute P-866 and P-73. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago
© University of Chicago

[216] With Levi: Gen 35:23; 46:8–25; Num 26; Deut 27:12–14; 1 Chr 2:1–2.
Without Levi: Num 1; 2–3; Cf: Gen 48:5.
[217] Num 18:23–24; 35:2–8; Deut 10:9; Josh 13:14; 14:4; 21.

While less specific than a particular cultus, the remains of Achaemenid imperial art reveal a consistent religio-political ideology of the Great King which differed from those of previous empires, some of which is consonant with Avestan ideas.[218] The art and archaeology of Iran deserves a much more thorough investigation in this regard.[219] Nylander points out subtle but significant alterations to Mesopotamian monumental traditions in the imperial reliefs that betray a specific and intentional royal ideology. This ideology glories in the extent and multiplicity of the empire and in its subjects' *voluntary* submission and subservience to the Great King.[220] The procession of peoples bearing gifts on the Apadana and at the 'Gate of All Nations' at Persepolis, as well as Darius I's foundation tablet at Susa, reveal this (See Figures 7–8). In contrast to Egyptian and Assyrian iconography, where the king is depicted crushing the opponents of world order, the Achaemenid art portrays the king as welcoming the collaboration of peoples in the maintenance of the world.[221] Whereas the Assyrians graphically used violence in their aesthetic, the only visible violence in the Achaemenid repertoire is the hero slaying a monster and the lion killing a bull (See Figure 9). Yet, even in these scenes there is still an odd sense of serenity, of the proper order remaining upheld.[222] Both the lion and the bull are common symbols in the Near East, but their ubiquity in Achaemenid art is one of its most conspicuous aspects. Bull and lions, either singly or together, appear in carvings, on seal impressions, coins, plates, and as the capitals of

---

[218] See the discussion in Carl Nylander, "Achaemenid Imperial Art," *Power and Propaganda: A Symposium on Ancient Empires*, ed. Mogens Trolle Larsen, Mesopotamia: Copenhagen Studies in Assyriology 7 (Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1979), pp. 345–360.

[219] For studies in these areas—which are not discussed here for want of space—see Appendix I.

[220] Margaret Cool Root, *The King and Kingship in Achaemenid Art: Essays on the Creation of an Iconography of Empire*, Acta Iranica 19 (Leiden: Brill, 1979), p. 262. Interesting is the way it appears to reuse tropes known in Elam, see Javier Alvarex-Mon, "Imago Mundi: Cosmological and Ideological Aspects of the Arjan Bowl," *Iranica Antiqua* 39 (2004): pp. 203–237.

Of course, it should be kept in mind that much of the iconography is lost due to its perishable nature. For reminders, see George G. Cameron, "Persepolis Treasury Tablets Old and New," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 17.3 (1958): p. 166; Quintus Cutius Rufus, *History of Alexander*, trans. John C. Rolfe, *Quintus Curtius I, Books I–V*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1946), V.vii.5 (p. 387). Based on his excavations, Erich F. Schmidt, *Persepolis I: Structures, Reliefs, Inscriptions*, Oriental Institute Publications 68 (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1953), speculates that extensive wall-hangings (pp. 78–79) and monumental sculptures (p. 81) graced Persepolis.

[221] Nylander, "Achaemenid Imperial Art," pp. 54–55.

[222] The Lion-Bull symbol is itself highly debated. Root, *King and Kingship*, p. 236, sees it merely as a symbol of royal power. A. D. H. Bivar, "Document and Symbol in the Art of the Achaemenids," *Monumentum H. S. Nyberg I*, ed. J. Duchesne-Guillemin, Acta Iranica 4 (Leiden: Brill, 1975), 49–67 sees it as a symbol of *Miθra* assimilated to Nergal; David Stronach, "Icons of Dominion: Review Scenes at Til Barip and Persepolis," *Iranica Antiqua* 37 (2002): p. 387, suggests it represents the Great Kings' total power over nature and man. Michael Axworthy, *Empire of the Mind: a History of Iran* (London: Hurst, 2007), p. 8, suggests (without discussion) a far-fetched interpretation of image as a symbol of Angra Mainyu attacking *Vohu Manah*. Bizarre interpretations have a long pedegree, however; perhaps the most lingering is an astrological/calendrical interpretation, cf. Willy Hartner, "Old Iranian Calendars," *Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: 1985), pp. 725–736; Marsh in Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis, et al., eds., *The Art and Archaeology of Ancient Persia: New Light on the Parthian and Sasanian Empires* (London: I. B. Tauris, 1998), p. 87; Alvarex-Mon, "Imago Mundi," p. 228, "Elementary powers charged with the stability of the world."

magnificent pillars. The prevalance and stylization of the bulls and lions indicates a deliberate and particularly Persian ideology in their use.

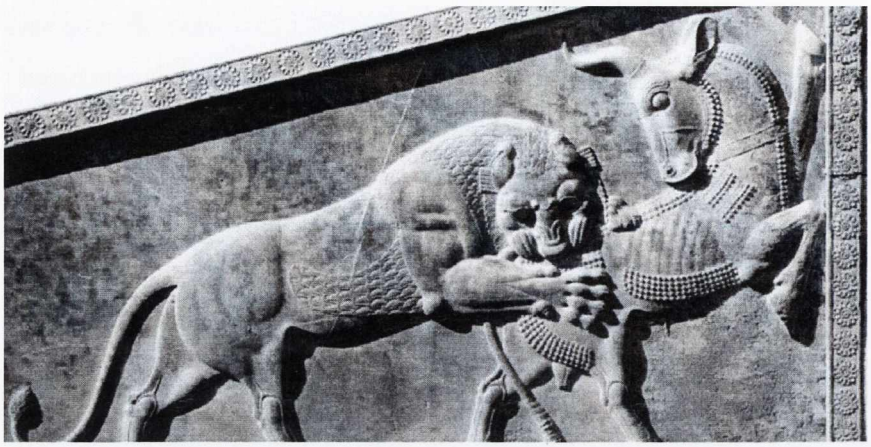


Figure 9: Lion and Bull Motif
Chicago Oriental Institute P-468. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

Far from implying a postmodern hero in the Great King, this ideology of diversity instead urges a recognition of the yet poorly understood ideological and theological underpinnings of the Persian Empire. That this world order is explicitly or implicitly in the name of Ahura Mazda is visible in all of the kings' inscriptions from Darius I.[223] Skjærvø even suggests that Darius not only quotes the Avesta in Old Persian translation, but saw himself as partially fulfilling the role of a *saošiiant* by making the world *fraša*, an important eschatological term.[224] It seems then that at least aspects of the Avestan tradition were important to royal ideology, at least from Darius I onwards. These are ideologies which could not have gone unnoticed by the Judaeans. These more overtly political sources, however, need not be ignored in the investigation of influence: political and religious ideas can interact in numerous ways, or have mutual influences on the expression of the other.[225] An example of iconography which may carry both religious and political overtones is the so-called winged disk.

---

[223] The texts are conveniently available in Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 116ff; Cf: Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Achaemenids and the Avesta," *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I*, eds. Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart (London: I. B. Tauris, 2005), pp. 52–53; Ugo Bianchi, "Mithra and the Question of Iranian Monotheism," *Étude Mithriaques*, ed. Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin (Leiden: Brill, 1978), pp. 39–40; Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," pp. 1–64.

[224] Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 57. However, Almut Hintze, "Frašō.kərəti," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 10 (2000): pp. 190–192, http://www.iranica.com/newsite/, considers the word *fraša-* to have no eschatological content in Old Persian; cf. H. W. Bailey, *Zoroastrian Problems in the Ninth-Century Books*, Ratanbai Katrak Lectures, Rev. ed. (Oxford: Clarendon, 1971), p. viii.

[225] For example, note the use of eschatological rhetoric for political ends by Xerxes I as argued by Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 173–209. See now Brent A. Strawn, "'A World Under Control': Isaiah 60 and the Apadana Reliefs from Persepolis," *Approaching Yehud: New Approaches to the Study of the Persian Period*, ed. Jon L. Berquist, Semeia Studies 50 (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 85–116.

Figure 10: Winged Disk with Figure
From Ghirshman, Roman. *Persia: From the Origins to Alexander the Great.* (London: Thames & Hudson, 1964), p. 199. Photo by Vahé. Permission pending.

Winged Disk

One of the most ubiquitous symbols of the Achaemenids is the winged disk. It is perhaps the only symbol which is used more often than the bull and/or lion. The symbol is generally considered to be borrowed via Assyria from the Egyptian solar disk. It appears on reliefs, coins, and seals. Sometimes it is merely a winged disk; sometimes the disk contains the upper half of a bust of a crowned male figure, holding a ring of power. Sometimes the lower part of the ring has an eagle tail.

As the winged disk borrowed the ninth century Assyrian representation for either Aššur or Šamaš,[226] many scholars have assumed that in Persian inscriptions the symbol stands for Ahura Mazda, the god mentioned in many royal inscriptions.[227] Shahbazi, however, demonstrates that the identity of the winged disk with Aššur was based upon an assumption of the identity of it in Persia with Ahura Mazda, and the identity with Ahura Mazda later supported by the identity with Aššur.[228] He further argues that beyond the circular logic, the identification in fact is questioned by four considerations: 1) it contradicts the evidence of Greek authors; 2) it is questioned by the variety of forms in which the symbol appears; 3) it ignores that the symbol is sometimes subordinate to other divine symbols; 4) it ignores the dissimilarity to known depictions of Ahura Mazda in post-

---

[226] Root, *King and Kingship*, pp. 210–213, cf. 178; Amélie Kuhrt, "The Achaemenid Concept of Kingship," *Iran* 22 (1984): p. 158.
[227] For examples, see: Root, *King and Kingship*, p. 213; Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 43; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 248–249; see the comment in A. Shapur Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol I: A Farewell to Fravahr and Ahuramazda," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 7 (1974): p. 135.
[228] Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol I," pp. 139–140.

Achaemenid Iranian art.[229] He instead proposes that the winged disk symbol was intended as a representation of *X'arənah*—both the Royal/Kingly and Iranian Glory (Persian *Farnah*/Avestan *X'arənah*).[230] Both Boyce and de Jong concur.[231] *X'arənah* in the Zoroastrian writings is a complex concept; closely linked with one of the later systematized *Amәša Spәntas*, (*Xšaθra*, 'kingdom'), *X'arənah* was a political and religious concept, and its precise translation is debated. The entire *Aštād Yašt* (XVIII) is devoted to the praise of the *X'arənah* of the Aryans, although Hintze considers the *Zamyad Yašt* (XIX) to be the most important text for understanding the concept.[232] It has been translated as 'glory,' 'fortune,' 'dignity,' 'luck,' and by Hintze as 'Glücksglanz.'[233] It was possessed by the Mazdayasnian religion (what the Zoroastrians call their religion), the Aryans and Arya (Indo-Iranians' designation of their own lands—the origin of 'Iran'), heroes, and the king. According to the *Zāmyād Yašt* (XIX.34–36) and the *Shahnameh*, the *X'arənah* departed from the mythical primal king Yima when he 'found delight in words of falsehood and untruth' in the form of an eagle.[234] And, according to the same *Yašt*, §§ 11–12, 19–20, 23–24, 89–90, it is the *Amәša Spәntas* and their *X'arənah* which will renew the world by ending decay and death.[235] Indeed, the *Zāmyād Yašt* strongly links *X'arənah* to the *Saošiiant*, the eschatological savior or 'overcomer,'[236] who will inaugurate the final age when evil is no more. It is tempting to speculate that Darius chose this symbol to allude to this victory of Ahura Mazda's *fraša* world—as he describes his reign in his incriptions—but, Hintze denies that *fraša* has the eschatological connotation in Old Persian that it has in Avestan.[237] The rule of Iran cannot be held without the Iranian *X'arenah*, and it can only be given, not seized,[238] certainly a convenient idea for a monarch. It

---

[229] Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol I," pp. 141–144.

[230] A. Shapur Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol: II Farnah (God Given) Fortune Symbolised," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 13 (1980): pp. 119–147.

[231] Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 299–301, prefers to understand the symbol as the king's *x'arənah* as does Boyce (Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 102–105).

[232] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 17.

[233] Scholars translate the term variously:
'(God given) Fortune': Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," p. 121.
'the desired thing, fortune': Bailey, *Zoroastrian Problems*, pp. 2–75.
'Dignity': R. C. Zaehner, *The Teachings of the Magi: A Compendium of Zoroastrian Beliefs* (London: 1956), p. 26.
'Glücksglanz' (with a review of scholarly positions): Almut Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 28–32.
John Creppin, "The Xvarənah as a Transfunctional Figure," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 1.2 (1973): pp. 232–242 discusses it in the context of Dumezil's theory, but never decides on a proper translation, while considering Bailey's too restrictive.

[234] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 191–202; *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 293; In the later *Shahnameh* IV.1, this is described simply as 'G-d's Grace,' rather than an eagle. Firdausī, *Shāhnāmeh, The Shāhnāma of Firdausī*, eds. Arthur George Warner and Edmond Warner (London: Routledge, 2000), 9 vols., vol. 1, p. 135.

[235] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 109–128, 148–149, 365–368.

[236] See XIX.88–97 (Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 364–400); Hintze suggests the translation of 'overcomer' (Überwinder) for *Saošiiant* to avoid the Christian connotations of 'savior' (p. 157).

[237] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 107.

[238] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 26–27, 32.

also echoes Darius's frequent pronouncements of Ahura Mazda's aid (e.g. the remarkably religious and political Bisitun inscription).[239] If the winged disk was intended to depict the royal *X'arənah*, it is difficult to know how much of its resonances would have been known to the average Persian subject, whether devotees of Ahura Mazda or not. Yet, that the idea was certainly known in the empire is demonstrated by its appearance as a theophoric element in names.[240] It certainly would have been easily recognizable as a royal symbol, but the array of ideas associated with *X'arənah* would only be suggested to those who knew the intended referent. Shahbazi suggests that veneration of *X'arənah* can be seen in Isa 65:11, but this is unlikely: even if the Achaemenid cult of *X'arənah* was assimilated with the Greek τυχη and the Aramaean גדה in places, it seems more likely that Third Isaiah simply intended the old Aramaean cult.[241] Still, if the connection is correct, it is evidence of both the dating of the eschatological ideas and of their importance at least in the royal cult.

The case of the winged disk, then, illustrates both the remaining work to be done on the ideological matrices of the Achaemenid period, as well as the necessity to expand the discussion beyond 'Zoroastrian' texts *per se* without excluding them. Political ideology—with its inherently religious coloring—is not to be excluded from the remit of potential Iranian influences. Much more work towards these ends remains to be explored, with the traditions surrounding (and promoted by?) Cyrus perhaps the most outstanding.[242]

Summary

The scholar looking for sources on Iranian religion during the Achaemenid period has plenty to investigate, even if the evidence requires significant reconstruction and complex case-building. Achaemenid texts and artifacts, Greek authors, and the Avesta provide reliable sources of information on the period before Alexander and can be used together to reconstruct some of the ideas which were current at that time. Even though the extant Iranian manuscripts are very late, they can provide invaluable perspectives on ideas which

---

[239] Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 116–134; see also Schmitt, *The Bisitun Inscription.*

[240] For a convenient list, see Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," p. 146. One (פרנדת) is also listed by Bezalel Porten, "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), p. 186.

[241] Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," p. 129; Joseph Blenkinsopp, *Isaiah 56–66: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*, The Anchor Bible 19B (New York: Doubleday, 2003), p. 274, 278–279.

[242] Cf. Andreas Anföldi, "Königsweihe und Männerbund bei dem Achämeniden," *Archives Suisses des Traditions Populaires* 47 (1951): p. 12, 14, who sees ritual and ancient mythic associations around Cyrus in Persia; Amélie Kuhrt, "Making History: Sargon of Agade and Cyrus the Great of Persia," *A Persian Perspective: Essays in Memory of Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg*, eds. Wouter Henkelman and Amélie Kuhrt, Achaemenid History XIII (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 2003), pp. 347–361. There is potentially a large fount of material to be mined here, especially when one considers the Elamite-Persian tension that may be connected with both Cyrus's rise and Darius's coup (see Excursus in Chapter II). See also D. T. Potts, "Cyrus the Great and the Kingdom of Anshan," *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I*, eds. Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart (London: I. B. Tauris, 2005), pp. 7–28; Matt Waters, "Cyrus and the Achaemenids," *Iran* 42 (2004): pp. 91–102.

most likely circulated in the Achaemenid Empire when investigated in conjunction with the other sources. Linguistic considerations show that the Avesta can be securely dated to the Achaemenid period at the latest; various Classical texts and Old Persian and Elamite texts attest to contemporary practice. The late, Pahlavi sources can be useful when attesting lost Avestan texts, or when explaining otherwise enigmatic classical sources. The investigation is greatly aided if not confined to a search for a monolithic, 'orthodox' tradition, but is willing to see the variety which inevitably presents itself. This brief overview noted that the Iranian religion had multiple traditions, much of which is related in some form to the tradition known as 'Zoroastrian.' The cult of Ahura Mazda had related traditions of dualism and eschatology. The Magi appeared as important but elusive agents, and tantalizing hints of royal ideology appeared. Not all of the relevant issues were examined here; rather, an overview of the situation as it pertains to the question of potential interaction and influence between Iran and emerging Judaism was given. It remains to see how much of the Iranian cultural matrix Persian subjects could be reasonably expected to discover, and the situations in which this could be expected or posited. The following chapter deals with the issues of the potential settings for interaction.

II

The Achaemenid Context

There were many opportunities for Judaeans and other Yahwists to come in contact with Persians and other Iranian peoples,[1] within Israel and in the diaspora. The exact location where Jews were influenced by Persian ideas cannot be proved—indeed they were probably absorbed over time and in a variety of locations—but the opportunity for such absorption can be amply demonstrated. As the entirety of the Yahwistic world lived under Achaemenid rule for roughly 200 years, there are too many scenarios to discuss each in detail;[2] the following chooses five broad geographical areas (Babylonia, Media and Iranian lands, Asia Minor, Egypt and Palestine) to mention situations where likely Iranian presence and Judaean/Israelite presence can be surmised. Historians and biblical scholars have sometimes contented themselves with exploiting the relatively sparse archaeological record of the Persian period as evidence of Persian *laissez-faire* and/or non-presence;[3] however, the vagaries of retrieval well-known to archaeology warn of this 'arguing from silence.' Below will attempt to point to some of the positive evidence available, suggesting the likelihood of multiple Iranian-Jewish contacts throughout the Achaemenid period and even into the Hellenistic and Roman (aka Parthian) periods. Given the number of potential historical contexts in which Judaean-Iranian interaction was possible, complete segregation of the two peoples would require remarkable proof.[4] For concision and clarity, this study focuses on and emphasizes the Achaemenid Empire, although other empires and periods (Median, Parthian) are also potentially relevant.[5]

---

[1] There were a variety of Iranian peoples in the Achaemenid Empire, the Persians being only one of them. The term *Iran* derives from the word *Arya*, and was already recognized in antiquity to include the Persians, the Medes, the Caspians, the Bactrians, Scythians and others speaking Iranian languages. For an overview see Fortson, *Indo-European Language*, chapter 11.

[2] This fact is put well in Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, p. 465: "In the case of the Jews, the whole oriental world, throughout which they were even now so widely scattered, recognized a common master. The importance of this factor in the religious evolution of the Jews cannot be overestimated."

[3] This is strongly argued by Sancisi-Weerdenburg. See Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, "The Fifth Oriental Monarchy and Hellenocentrism," *Achaemenid History II: The Greek Sources*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1987), pp. 117–131; Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, "Achaemenid History: From Hellenocentrism to Iranocentrism," *Proceedings of the First European Conference of Iranian Studies (Turin, September 7–11, 1987)*, eds. Gherardo Gnoli and Antonio Panaino, vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies (Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990), pp. 253–259; (particularly in reference to Asia Minor) Root, "From the Heart," pp. 1–29.

[4] Historical decisions on the likelihood of any of the discrete hints discussed here are not necessary for the overall purpose of this study; the goal is merely to demonstrate that historical interactions between the two populations is highly likely within the Achaemenid Empire, fulfilling the historical criterion for influence set forth above.

[5] For Media, see Diakonoff, "Media," pp. 35–148; David Stronach, "Tepe Nūsh-i Jān: the Median Settlement," *Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. 2: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), pp. 832–836; Peter Calmeyer, "Art in Iran II: Median Art and Architecture," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1986): pp. 565–569; W. J. Vogelsang, *The Rise and Organization of the Achaemenid Empire: The Eastern Iranian Evidence* (Leiden: Brill, 1992), who makes much of the role of Media for the rise of the Achaemenids; Geoffrey D. Summers, "The Median Empire Reconsidered: A View from Kerkenes Dağ," *Anatolian Studies* 50 (2000): pp. 55–73; Bruno Genito, "The Archaeology of the Median Period: An Outline and a Research Perspective," *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): pp. 315–340.
For Parthia, see Boyce, "The Parthian *gōsān* and Iranian Minstrel Tradition," pp. 10–45; Geo Widengren, *Iranisch-semitische Kulturbegegnung in parthischer Zeit*, Arbeitsgemeinschaft für Forschung des Landes Nordrhein-

Babylonia[6]

Nebuchadnezzar deported Judaean exiles to the region of Nippur, on the Chebar River/Canal (Tel Abib; Ezek 1:1, 3; 3:15; 10:15, 20, 22). From the conquest of Cyrus, or at the latest, Darius I, Nippur also housed estates of Persian nobles and Iranian colonies. These estates included the lands of Prince Achaemenes, his son Phradates, and the Egyptian satrap Aršam, who held a manor near Nippur.[7] Indeed, Dandamaev suggests that entire districts around Nippur were held by Persian nobles.[8] Beyond official colonies, the Neo-Babylonian and Achaemenid periods saw increasing immigration into Babylonia from the Iranian Plateau.[9] This could partially be explained by Dandamaev's suggestion that Nippur's importance increased under the Achaemenids, particularly following Xerxes's supposed suppression of the city of Babylon.[10] Further studies on Achaemenid Babylonia are likely to illuminate more adequately the details of Iranian presence within the region.[11]

Westfalen 70 (Cologne: Westdeutscher Verlag, 1960); Geo Widengren, "Iran and Israel in Parthian Times with Special Regard to the Ethiopic Book of Enoch," *Temenos* 2 (1966): pp. 139–177; Ehsan Yarshater, ed., *The Cambridge History of Iran, Volume 3: The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods*, 2 vols. (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983); Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis, et al., eds., *The Art and Archaeology of Ancient Persia: New Light on the Parthian and Sasanian Empires* (London: I. B. Tauris, 1998).

[6] For a more thorough analysis, see B. Oded, "The Settlements of the Israelite and Judean exiles in Meopotamia in the 8th-6th Centuries BCE," *Studies in Historical Geography and Biblical Historiography: Presented to Zecharia Kallai*, eds. Gershon Galil and Moshe Weinfeld, VTSupp 81 (Leiden: Brill, 2000), pp. 91–103.

[7] On Achaemenes see Muhammad A. Dandamaev, "The Domain-Lands of Achaemenes in Babylonia," *Schriften zur Geschichte und Kultur des Alten Orients* 11 (1974): pp. 123–127. For Aršam, Ran Zadok, *On West Semites in Babylonia During the Chaldean and Achaemenian Periods: An Onomastic Study (revised)* (Jerusalem: H. J. & Z. Wanaarta, 1978), p. 13. See also Elias J. Bickerman, "The Babylonian Captivity," *Cambridge History of Judaism*, eds. W. D. Davies and Louis Finkelstein, vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984), pp. 344–45

[8] Dandamaev, "Domain-Lands," see esp. p. 127. Cf. Muhammad A. Dandamaev, "Babylonia I: History of Babylonia in the Median and Achaemenid Periods," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 331. He also posits a nearby paradise, based on the Murašu archive. Muhammad A. Dandamaev, "Royal Paradeisoi in Babylonia," in *Orientalia J. Duchesne-Guillemin Emerito Oblata*, Acta Iranica 23 (Leiden: Brill, 1984), pp. 113–117. A. Leo Oppenheim, "The Babylonian Evidence of Achaemenian Rule in Mesopotamia," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), p. 579 includes a settlement of Magi, citing BEI X.88.4. Cf. Ran Zadok, "Iranians and Individuals Bearing Iranian Names in Achaemenid Babylonia," *Israel Oriental Studies* 7 (1977): pp. 100–106, 126.

[9] Ran Zadok, "On the Connections between Iran and Babylonia in the Sixth Century B.C.," *Iran* XIV (1976): pp. 66–67. Muhammad A. Dandamaev, "Data of the Babylonian Documents from the 6th to the 5th Centuries B.C. on the Sakas," *Prolegomena to the Sources on the History of Pre-Islamic Central Asia*, ed. J. Harmatta (Budapest: 1979), p. 107, even claims a Saka colony was established at Nippur; he also claims that Median refugees were in Babylon from Nebuchadnezzar's time, Dandamaev, "History of Babylonia," p. 327.

[10] See Muhammad A. Dandamaev, *A Political History of the Achaemenid Empire*, trans. W. J. Vogelsang (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1989), p. 186. Modern research, however has debated the idea that Xerxes harshly treated Babylon after its revolt. See Amélie Kuhrt and Susan Sherwin-White, "Xerxes' Destruction of Babylonian Temples," *Achaemenid History II: Greek Sources*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt, Proceedings of the Groningen 1984 Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1987), pp. 69–78.

[11] A project is underway by F. Rachel Magdalene and several Assyriologist colleagues on this question.

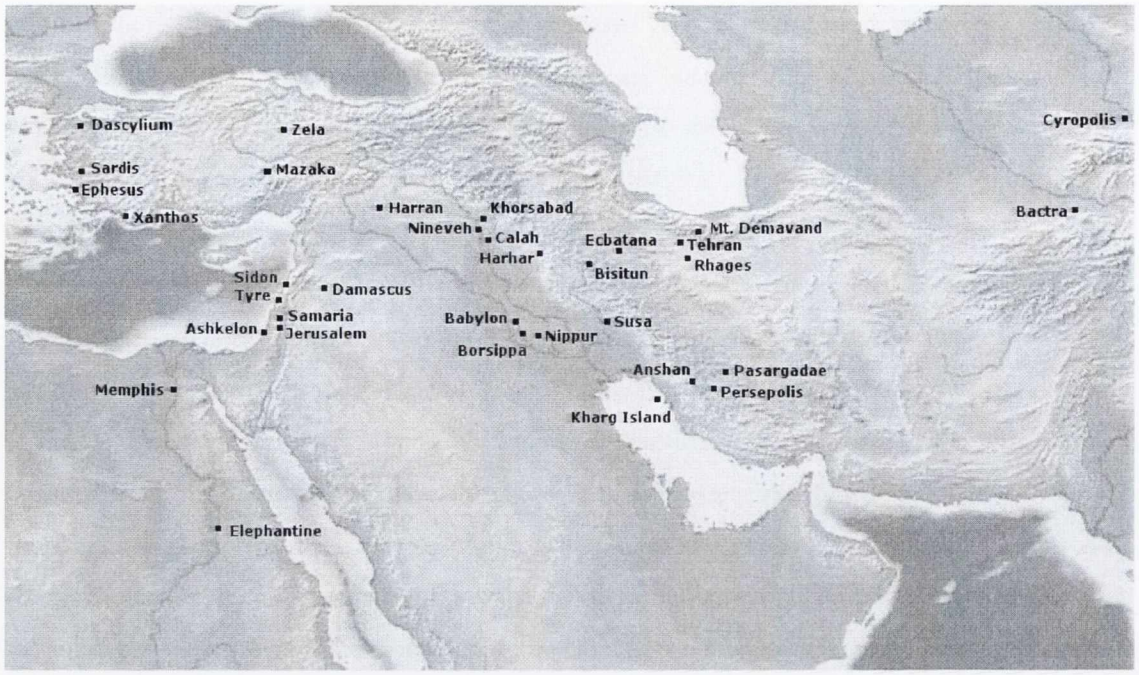


Figure 11: Map of Locations within Achaemenid Empire
Author's Own.

The Jewish community at Nippur is partially illuminated by the Murašu Archive. While making ethnic or religious identifications based solely on names is problematic, onomastics can be used as a source for some general probabilities. Zadok opines that the scribes of the Murašu Archive were more familiar with *YHW* as a deity than other Babylonian scribes, obliquely indicating the important presence of YHWH-ists in the region.[12] According to Daiches, at least 70 Jews can be identified in the records, two of whom had Persian names;[13] Zadok counts 64 with YHWH-istic names, but allows for up to 100 persons represented in the archive in total.[14] Some of these Yahwists served as servants to Persians, some as royal officials, including one who was 'over the birds of the king.'[15] One Judaean, with the Persian name Gu-uk-ka-,' was a servant of a Persian and son of an interpreter-scribe.[16] There is also evidence that Jews owned horse- and bow-fiefs.[17] The Jewish community quite naturally represented all social strata, many of which required interaction with the local Persian officials.

---

[12] Ran Zadok, *The Jews in Babylonia During the Chaldean and Achaemenian Periods*, Studies in the History of the Jewish People and the Land of Israel III (Haifa: Univ of Haifa, 1979), p. 9; Michael David Coogan, *West Semitic Personal Names in the Murašu Documents*, Harvard Semitic Monographs 7 (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1976), pp. 49–53.

[13] Samuel Daiches, *The Jews in Babylon in the Time of Ezra and Nehemiah according to Babylonian Inscriptions*, Jew's College Publication 2 (London: Jew's College, 1910), pp. 27–70. Cf. Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, pp. 33–34.

[14] Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, p. 14, 79.

[15] Daiches, *The Jews in Babylon*, p. 29; Oppenheim, "Babylonian Evidence," p. 580.

[16] Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, p. 65.

[17] Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, pp. 66–68.

Several names in the archive indicate at least the beginnings of Persian borrowing: Judaeans borrowed the Persian word *tiri* for the formation of several non-Iranian names.[18] Since the Persian language was largely spoken only among Persians,[19] this is evidence of some co-mingling. Indeed, the occupation of interpreter-scribe for the Persian authorities was held by at least three or four Judaeans in the Nippur region.[20] The position of interpreter-scribe is ideally positioned for exposure to Persian ideas and ideologies; they were essential for the functioning of the Persian administration and present at all official communications. Old Persian was primarily a spoken language, Aramaic (and Elamite) the languages of the administration, and local languages still used locally; interpreter-scribes received oral commands in Persian and wrote them in Aramaic, or received written communications and read them out in Persian or the local language.[21] Hence one can expect familiarity with the system of administration, at least, among the interpreter-scribes, perhaps even knowledge of Old Persian and the traditions shared thereby.

New tablets (so-called 'TAYN' tablets) have recently been discovered which reveal the presence of other Judaean communities in Babylon—at ālu ša Našar and al-Yahudu, both probably near Borsippa.[22] Pearce considers that these new tablets provide evidence of what she refers to as an 'administrative fiscal district' composed largely of Jews.[23] If this is true, such a community would likely have had at least periodic contact with Persian officials, even if the tablets so far only evidence two Persian names.[24] At the very least, it would be reasonable to expect a familiarity with the mechanisms and ideologies of the administration which they served.

Smith argues that familiarity with Persian ideology is particularly evident in Second Isaiah.[25] Indeed, he posits the presence of pro-Cyrus propagandists in Babylonia prior to its fall. Regardless of the presence of Persian agents or the ideology of Second Isaiah, it is clear

---

[18] Daiches, *The Jews in Babylon*, pp. 16–17; cf. a different name using *tiri* in 1 Chron. 4:16 (תיריא); Coogan, *West Semitic*, p. 86. Daiches cites *tiri* as meaning 'power,' but that does not appear to be correct—rather it is a name of a deity. The word does not seem to appear in either Avestan or Old Persian (Cf. Kent, *Old Persian*, and Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch*, neither of which list *tiri*), except as the name of an obscure deity who received a day name in the Zoroastrian Calendar.

[19] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 77.

[20] Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, p. 69.

[21] Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, p. 177. See also Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 507–510; Ilya Gershevitch, "Old Iranian Literature," *Iranistik: Literatur*, Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1 (Leiden: Brill, 1968), p. 5. David M. Lewis, "The Persepolis Tablets: Speech, Seal and Script," *Literacy and Power in the Ancient World*, eds. A.K. Bowman and Greg Woolf (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1994), p. 18, although his claim that Old Persian was never used outside the inscriptions must be revised; new evidence that Old Persian was not just an inscriptional script is now available in the form of an Old Persian administrative docket. See Matthew W. Stolper and Jan Tavernier, "An Old Persian Administrative Tablet from the Persepolis Fortification," *Achemenet: Arta* 5.1 (2007): pp. 1–28.

[22] Laurie E. Pearce, "New Evidence for Judeans in Babylonia," *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*, eds. Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming (Winona Lake, IN: Eerdmans, 2006), p. 403.

[23] Pearce, "New Evidence," p. 405.

[24] Pearce, "New Evidence," p. 404.

[25] Morton Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 83 (1963): pp. 415–21.

that Cyrus (II) was known before his advance in 539 B.C.E. Much has been written on the (un-)historicity of the Nabonidus Chronicle and the Cyrus Cylinder,[26] but it is reasonably clear that Cyrus was known (and perhaps anticipated) in Babylon from his battles with Astyages, king of Media (550 B.C.E.).[27] The prophecy in Jer 51 seems to confirm some form of this expectation.[28]

Perhaps the enigma of 'Darius the Mede' in Dan 5:31 also reflects this situation in an oblique manner. While the use of any Daniel passage for Neo-Babylonian or Achaemenid period history is problematic, the use of Iranian terms within it evidences some form of interaction by the time Daniel was written.[29] To the non-Iranian world, Cyrus's defeat of Astyages was viewed more as an internal coup than the rise of a new empire—Greeks continued long afterwards to confuse the distinction between 'Mede' and 'Persian.'[30] Darius I appears to be the first to declare himself specially Persian rather than Median, making Daniel's epithet ironic. While the final redactional reason for the designation 'Mede' in the book of Daniel was likely to fit the four empire scheme, the historical confusion between Media and Persia certainly did not hinder such use, and it may be part of the reason it was later found unproblematic by commentators.[31] Further, Zadok has argued that the new names given to Daniel's friends Hananiah and Mishael—Shadrach and Meshach—are also Iranian names, placing the Danielic traditions into some form of relationship with Iran.[32] In any case, the possibility for knowledge of Persian ideas among the Babylonian exiles exists from at least the fall of Babylon, if not before.

---

[26] While Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, pp. 36–55 largely accepts the documents as historical, Amélie Kuhrt, "Nabonidus and the Babylonian Priesthood," *Pagan Priests: Religion and Power in the Ancient World*, eds. Mary Beard and John North (London: Duckworth, 1990), pp. 117–156, discounts their validity. Cf. the discussion in David Vanderhooft, "Cyrus II, Liberator or Conqueror? Ancient Historiography concerning Cyrus in Babylon," *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*, eds. Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006), pp. 351–372.

[27] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 31ff. Cf: Jean-Jacques Glassner, *Mesopotamian Chronicles*, SBL Writings from the Ancient World 19 (Leiden: Brill, 2005), p. 235.

[28] Cf. Vanderhooft, "Cyrus II, Liberator or Conqueror?," p. 365; Holladay considers the Jeremiah references to be glosses, but glosses which predate the Cyrus's invasion. See William L. Holladay, *Jeremiah 2: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Jeremiah Chapters 26–52*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989), pp. 397, 398, 405, 407, 427; Cf. Louis D. Levine, "Prelude to Monarchy: Iran and the Neo-Assyrian Empire," *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the Persian Empire*, ed. Charles J. Adams (Montreal: McGill, 1972), p. 43; George G. Cameron, *History of Early Iran* (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1936), p. 222.

[29] Cf. the discussion in Chapter IVa.

[30] On Greek confusion, see David F. Graf, "Medism: The Origin and Significance of the Term," *Journal of Hellenic Studies* 104 (1984): pp. 15–30; Dandamaev, *A Political History of the Achaemenid Empire*, p. 19. Cf. Diakonoff, "Media," p. 147.

[31] See the comments in John J. Collins, *Daniel*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1993), pp. 30–31.

[32] Ran Zadok, "Die nichthebräischen Namen der Israeliten vor dem Hellenistischen Zeitalter," *Ugarit-Forschungen* 17 (1986): p 396. He derives Meshach from **Maiša-ka-*, 'little lamb' and Shadrach from **Čiθra-ka-*, 'light, glowing,' both oddly apropos for the story. Cited by Aaron Demsky, "Double Names in the Babylonian Exile and the Identitiy of Sheshbazzar," *These are the Names: Studies in Jewish Onomastics*, ed. Aaron Demsky, vol. 2 (Ramat-Gan, Israel: Bar Ilan Univ Press, 1999), p. 30.

Ezra 8:15–20 records that Ezra was able to identify distinct communities of Levites and temple servants still intact at Casiphia, an unknown location presumably different from the communities around Nippur.[33] Even without further information, it, along with the new 'TAYN' tablets, indicate that the Yahwistic exiles were not exclusive to Nippur. They could have come into contact with Persians throughout the Satrapy of Babylonia, where there were many Persian confiscated lands.[34]

Media and Iranian Lands

There is also evidence of Judaeans and Israelites living in Iranian lands during the Achaemenid period. According to 2 Kngs 17:6, Assyria exiled Israelites to unnamed cities in Media (721 B.C.E.); these cities may have been Harhar and Kišessu, in the former Kingdom of Ellipi.[35] The Book of Tobit, if it reflects its setting at all historically,[36] seems to indicate that some of the Northern exiles kept their identity and religion, implying an Israelite community around the Median cities of Ecbatana and Rages, both of which feature in the narrative (Ecbatana is about 50 miles from Harhar). As Bauckham notes,[37] more Northern Israelites were exiled than Judaeans, so their continuance as a community is not impossible. Indeed, he would argue that Tobit was written to convert the deportees' descendants to a Jerusalem-centered faith.[38] It is not out of bounds to suggest, therefore, the possibility that these former exiles were in contact with their Judaean counterparts. Zadok even suggests that several of the clans which are recorded in Ezra-Nehemiah are descendants of the deportees to Media.[39] Judaeans from Lachish were settled in the region of Nineveh (701 B.C.E.), which was conquered by the Medes (612 B.C.E.), and these also could have been in

---

[33] There is an interesting suggestion that the use of המקום (as well as the reference to Levites) in Ezra 8:17 indicates the presence of a temple or sanctuary here, but there seems to be no evidence for it. See the suggestion in L. H. Brockington, *Ezra, Nehemiah and Esther*, The Century Bible (London: Nelson, 1969), p. 100. Cf. Joseph Blenkinsopp, "Temple and Society in Achaemenid Judah," *Second Temple Studies I: The Persian Period*, ed. Philip R. Davies, JSOTSS 117 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991), pp. 52–53.

[34] Cf. Dandamaev, "Domain-Lands," p. 123.

[35] See Diakonoff, "Media," p. 82; K. Lawson Younger, Jr., "The Deportations of the Israelites," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 117.2 (1998): p. 223.

[36] On Tobit as written for Iranian Jews: Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 414; Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 246–253.
On the dubiousness of historical information in Tobit, see Lester L. Grabbe, "Israel's Historical Reality After the Exile," *The Crisis of Israelite Religion: Transformation of Religious Tradition in Exilic and Post-Exilic Times.*, eds. Bob Becking and Marjo C. A. Korpel (Leiden: Brill, 1999), p. 13.

[37] Richard Bauckham, "Tobit as Parable for the Exiles of Northern Israel," *Studies in the Book of Tobit: a Multidisciplinary Approach*, ed. Mark Bredin, Library of Second Temple Studies 55 (London: T & T Clark, 2006), p. 156. For a useful discussion, see K. Lawson Younger, Jr., "The Deportations of the Israelites," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 117.2 (1998): pp. 201–227; p. 215 he suggests that the biblical text has conflated multiple deportations.

[38] Bauckham, "Tobit as Parable for the Exiles of Northern Israel," p. 159.

[39] See Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, pp. 41–44. Bickerman, "Babylonian Captivity," pp. 342–358 makes no mention of these.

contact with other exiles either in Media or Babylonia.[40] The relationship between Judaeans, Israelites and emerging Judaism is difficult to elucidate, but these hints suggest that the groups related to the biblical traditions were broadly dispersed and in contact with each other, even in the sixth century. The mention of Rages (Raga) may be significant: Raga played an important role for Zoroastrianism in the west.[41] Indeed, the appearance of 'Asmodeus' in Tobit as a demon (from *Aēšma-Daēuua*, the only demon in the *Gāthās*) is one of the few generally agreed Iranian borrowings.[42]

The book of Nehemiah (1:11) preserves the tradition of Nehemiah serving as a cup-bearer to the king in Susa. The position of cup-bearer was extremely high and important, as it represented the king at his most vulnerable.[43] Even if the accuracy of this title is doubted, Nehemiah's position must have been sufficiently high to merit two appointments to govern Yehud. Such a high position of a Judaean in Susa, one of the imperial capitals, could indicate the presence at least of a small community in the area; indeed, Nehemiah's memoir (1:2) records the presence of his brother, Hanani (חנני), and 'certain men from Judah.' Briant suggests that Hanani may even be the same official as the Hanni (sic) (חנניה) mentioned in correspondence of the Elephantine community.[44] If this connection can be made, it suggests a tradition of at least one family serving in the Persian civil service, but this is uncertain. The Book of Esther also implies a Jewish community around Susa, possibly the clan known as *'Elam*;[45] Dandamaev seems to think there was a large Jewish community in Susa,[46] and

---

[40] Judaeans are represented by Sennacherib in Lachish and in Nineveh in his palace reliefs. See figure 117 and figure 180 in Dominique Collon, *Ancient Near Eastern Art* (London: British Museum, 1995), pp. 142–144 and p. 215, respectively.

[41] See Boyce, "Persian Religion," p. 281. Cf. Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 7–8; Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 247. Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight*, p. 33, places Zarathuštra himself in Rhages (sic), although this is impossible from a linguistic perspective. Gherardo Gnoli, "Avestan Geography," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 44, claims there is no basis for this identification; Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Avesta as Source for the Early History of the Iranians," *The Indo-Aryans of Ancient South Asia*, ed. G. Erdosy, Indian Philology and South Asian Studies 1 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995), p. 165, claims it is tenuous.

[42] Schwarz, "Religion of Achaemenian Iran," p. 682; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 414; Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 250; cf. Ehsan Yarshater, "Iranian Common Beliefs and Worldview," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater, vol. 3 (1) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), p. 348. However, Louis Ginzberg, *Legends of the Jews*, trans. Henrietta Szold, 7 vols. (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 1998), Vol. 6, p. 299 (nn. 83–85), rejects this for an Aramaic origin. Gregor Ahn, "Dualismen in Kontext von Gegenweltvorstellungen. Die rituelle Abwehr der Dämonen im altiranischen Zoroastrismus," *Die Dämonen/Demons: Die Dämonologie der israelitisch-jüdischen und frühchristlichen Literatur im Kontext ihrer Umwelt*, eds. Armin Lange and Hermann Lichtenberger (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003), pp. 131–132 accepts the parallel, but only as an example of how selective it is.

[43] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 264.

[44] Referring to the 'Passover Papyri,' Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 586; the reconconstructed Aramaic text may be found in Bezalel Porten, *Archives from Elephantine: The Life of an Ancient Jewish Military Colony* (Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1968), p. 311, and in English reconstruction (with discussion on the identification of Hananiah), pp. 128–133, as well as in Bezalel Porten, *The Elephantine Papyri in English: Three Millennia of Cross-Cultural Continuity and Change* (Leiden: Brill, 1996), pp. 125–126. Hanani also appears in A. Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri of the Fifth Century B.C.* (Osnabrück: Otto Zeller, 1967), Papyrus no. 38 (pp. 135–136). It should be noted, however, that a similar name (חננה) appears on bullae found in Yehud. See Avigad, *Bullae and Seals*, pp. 4–5.

[45] Zadok, *Jews in Babylonia*, p. 43.

Kessler also intimates Elam to be a 'major center' of a Yahwistic population.[47] While neither Dandamaev nor Kessler mention any evidence, Neo-Babylonian inscriptions on alabastra and an oblique reference in the Talmud imply that Susa long held a Yahwistic community.[48] In any case, if no one else, Nehemiah himself had frequent and intimate contact with his Persian lords. Boyce argues that this contact would have not only familiarized Nehemiah with Zoroastrian purity laws, but have required his observance of them;[49] she points out in this connection that one of the major themes in his memoirs is the observation of religious purity. Whether or not it is wise to go that far, one would expect that Nehemiah's position would expose him to Persian ideas at some level.

Lipinski argues that there is some evidence from the Persepolis tablets of Judaeans working in the Persian heartland itself, although this is limited to a few potentially Yahwistic names.[50] As the Persians utilized a wide variety of ethnicities to work on the extensive building projects of the kings, it is hardly surprising to find evidence of at least a few Jewish workers among them.[51] The existence or non-existence of a full community is impossible to ascertain from the evidence available here, however.

The sources presented so far evidence at least a minimal presence of Judaeans in three major centres of Achaemenid Iran: Ecbatana, Susa, and Persepolis. This is significant for the question of Judaean-Persian interaction, even if the size of these groups was relatively small. It should be remembered in this context that the authors of the received text of the traditions were also probably a relatively small group. But whatever the size of the groups in this period, some Jews did remain in Iranian lands into the Roman period and beyond (Cf. Acts 2:9)—perhaps partly descended from the communities hinted at here.[52]

---

[46] Muhammad A. Dandamaev and Vladimir Lukonin, *The Culture and Social Institutions of Ancient Iran*, trans. Philip L. Kohl (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1989), p. 298.

[47] Kessler, John "Persia's Loyal Yahwists: Power Identity and Ethnicity in Achaemenid Yehud," pp. 91–122 in Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming, eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period* (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006), p. 95. He cites no evidence, however.

[48] For the inscriptions, see Mark Lidzbarski, *Ephemeris für Semitische Epigraphik*, vol. 3 (Giessen: Töpelmann, 1915), pp. 47–48; For the Talmud, see Babylonian Talmud, Tractate Sanhedrin 94a (available in I. Epstein, ed., *Tractate Sanhedrin*, New ed. Sanhedrin. Hebrew-English Edition of the Babylonian Talmud [London: Soncino, 1969], Tractate Sanhedrin XI, n.p.).

[49] See Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 189.

[50] E. Lipinski, "Western Semites in Persepolis," *Acta Antiqua Academiae Scientiarum Hungaricae* 25 (1977): pp. 101–12.

[51] On the use of multi-ethnic workers, see the Susa foundation tablets (DSaa, DSz); a brief translation is available in Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 172. Cf. Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 142–144.

[52] For a popular but wide-ranging overview of these communities, see Houman Sarshar, ed., *Esther's Children: a Portrait of Iranian Jews* (Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 2002). See also H. Z. J. W. Hirschberg, "The Oriental Jewish Communities," *Religion in the Middle East: Three Religions in Concord and Conflict*, vol. 1 (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1969), pp. 193–196; Michael Zand, "Bukhara VII: Bukharan Jews," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): pp. 531–532.

The large area of Asia Minor, with its many imperial and cultural traditions, is too large to deal with in detail here. Rather, it will suffice to point to the Persian presence in the various areas and their relative proximity to known Jewish communities. In general, the Persian presence in Asia Minor, both in terms of ethnic Iranians and cultural influences, was significant well into the Hellenistic era and even into the Roman.[53] The evidence available indicates significant Iranian populations in various regions, although the exact details are difficult to reconstruct. Perhaps most significant from the perspective of this study is the continued presence of an Iranian 'diaspora' in Asia Minor long after the fall of the Achaemenid Empire. As late as 562 C.E. the Sassanian emperor felt it necessary to negotiate with the Byzantine emperor to prevent the persecution of Zoroastrians in Asia Minor.[54] These must be largely descendants of Iranian colonists who moved to Asia Minor as early as Cyrus's campaign[55]—Persian landholders were part of the defense structure of the empire.[56] Xenophon even regarded colonists to be essential to Cyrus's organization of the empire.[57] Thus any Jews in Anatolia had many centuries to come into contact with Persians and their ideas. Jones even thinks that Iranian influence was most likely in the Hellenistic Period, when both diasporas spoke Greek.[58]

Josephus claims that Antiochus the Great moved 2000 Jewish families from Babylon to Lydia and Phrygia (*Ant* XII.147–153), and later he records that some participated in the Senate of Sardis (*Ant* XIV.259–261). While it is not known if this was the first arrival of the Jews in Asia Minor, they seem to have been a fairly populous and prosperous minority, particularly in Sardis, where a large synagogue with at least 30 donors has been discovered.[59] This building is quite late, but some suggest that Obad 20 indicates Jews in Sardis in the

---

[53] The evidence for the extent of Persian influence has sometimes been obscured by Western pro-Greek bias. This bias can be noted perusing the public explanations of the Lycian displays at the British Museum—nowhere is it indicated that these monuments were produced in the Persian Empire or that any of the motifs could have any relation at all to the Persians. Cf the comment in Root, "From the Heart," p. 14 and the article in general. This effect is apparently not limited to Anatolia, however. A similar downplaying of Iranian connections was observed by Farmanfarmaian in several exhibitions of Georgian artifacts. See Fatema S. Farmanfarmaian, "Georgia and Iran: Three Millennia of Cultural Relations, an Overview," *Journal of Persianate Studies* 2.1 (2009): p. 5, n. 5.

[54] Apparently Sassanian emperors twice interceded on the behalf of co-religionists, in 464 and 562. See Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 239 and 257.

[55] See Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 66, 704.

[56] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 501.

[57] VIII.6.10–12 (Xenophon, *Cyr. V–VIII*, pp. 413–15). See also N. Sekunda, "Achaemenid Settlement in Caria, Lycia and Greater Phrygia," *Achaemenid History VI*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt, Proceedings of the Groningen 1988 Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991), p. 83.

[58] Elaine Marie Jones, "An Examination of the Influence of Zoroastrianism on the Development of Belief in Resurrection of the Dead in Judaism," (MA Diss., University of Wales, 1989), pp. 54–60. Also favored by Peter R. Ackroyd, *Israel under Babylon and Persia*, New Clarendon Bible (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1970), p. 344.

[59] Louis H. Feldman, *Jew and Gentile in the Ancient World: Attitudes and Interactions From Alexander to Justinian* (Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1993), p. 73; on the synagogue, with references, see Lee I. Levine, *The Ancient Synagogue: The First Thousand Years* (New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 2000), p. 85; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 224.

Persian period.[60] Trebilco thinks that the Jewish community dates to at least 200 B.C.E., even though the synagogue itself is much newer.[61]

Lydia generally and Sardis in particular was likely home to large numbers of Iranians.[62] Sardis was the seat of the Satrap Tissaphernes and his successors;[63] Persian influence can be seen in Sardis's pottery from shortly after Cyrus's conquest.[64] According to Strabo (XIII.4.13),[65] the Hyrcanian Plain to the west of Sardis was named after Iranian colonists from Hyrcania. He also mentions a 'Plain of Cyrus,' but does not indicate where this location is. An inscription to 'Zeus Baradates' or 'law-giving Zeus' found in Sardis has been interpreted as referring to Ahura Mazda,[66] and has been compared to an inscription to 'Zeus of the Persians.'[67] Pausanias, *Description of Greece* V.27, lists Persians and Persian cults in the Lydian cities of Hierocaesarea and Hypaipa, and the cult of Anaitis existed until at least the reign of Augustus in Sardis.[68] Tralles seems to have been the site of the *oikos* of Tissaphernes as well as a garrison.[69] Josephus mentions Jews in Halicarnassus (*Ant* XIV.258), also a place of Persian settlement.[70] Daskyleion was a satrapal seat, and may have housed a Jewish community in the early fifth century B.C.E.[71] If the early Christian communities in Asia Minor reflect Jewish communities as Feldman suggests, then a large percentage of these (Ephesus, Tralles, Laodicea, Colossae, Miletus) had Persian colonists during and following

---

[60] Obad 20 mentions Jews from Sepharad (ספרד). The Persian name in Aramaic for Sardis was also ספרד .E. Lipinski, "Obadiah 20," *Vetus Testamentum* 23 (1973): 368–70; Cf. A. Seager, "The Synagogue at Sardis," *Ancient Synagogues Revealed*, ed. Lee I. Levine (Jerusalem: Israel Exploration Society, 1981), p. 178; John D. W. Watts, *The Books of Joel, Obadiah, Jonah, Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah*, The Cambridge Bible Commentary (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1975), p. 68 considers Sepharad to be Hesperides in North Africa; Ran Zadok, "The Ethno-Linguistic Character of Northwestern Iran and Kurdistan in the Neo-Assyrian Period," *Iran* 40 (2002): p. 126 lists a 'Sparda' in Western Media, as well (Šá-pár-da); Paul R. Raabe, *Obadiah: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*, The Anchor Bible (New York: Doubleday, 1996), pp. 266–8 considers either a location near Harhar or Sardis to be the most likely identifications. On this community's inscriptions, see Walter Ameling, ed., *Inscriptiones Judaicae Orientis II: Kleinasiens*. Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004), pp. 209–297.

[61] Paul R. Trebilco, *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1991), p. 57.

[62] For a more thorough analysis of Iranians and Iranicization, see Deniz Kaptan, "A Glance at Northwestern Asia Minor During the Achaemenid Period," *A Persian Perspective: Essays in Memory of Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg*, eds. Wouter Henkelman and Amélie Kuhrt, Achaemenid History XIII (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 2003), pp. 189–202.

[63] Cf. Xenophon, *Anabasis*, trans. Carleton L. Brownson and John Dillery, *Anabasis*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006), p. 49 (I.1.6–7).

[64] Elspeth R. M. Dusinberre, "Satrapal Sardis: Achaemenid Bowls in an Achaemenid Capital," *American Journal of Archaeology* 103.1 (1999): pp. 100–101.

[65] Strabo, *Geography*, trans. Horace Leonard Jones, *The Geography of Strabo VI*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1929), p. 185.

[66] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 205; A. R. Burns, "Persia and the Greeks," in Gershevitch, ed., *CHI 2*, p. 341.

[67] N. Sekunda, "Achaemenid Settlement in Caria, Lycia and Greater Phrygia," *Achaemenid History VI*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt, Proceedings of the Groningen 1988 Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991), p. 131.

[68] Pausanias, *Description of Greece*, trans. W. H. S. Jones and H. A. Ormerod, *Description of Greece, Books III–V*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1977), p. 547; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 224, 235–236.

[69] Sekunda, "Settlement," p. 92, 96–7.

[70] Sekunda, "Settlement," p. 96.

[71] Lipinski, "Obadiah 20," pp. 368–369.

the Achaemenid period; Ephesus, and Lydia in general, were accused by Greeks of being too heavily Persianized.[72]

As an example of the potential for Persian presence and influence within Asia Minor during the Achaemenid Period, it is worth noting Lycia. Lycia, and its capital Xanthos, exhibit the presence of significant 'Persianizing' and Persian presence. Shahbazi refers to Lycia as a "hardcore Achaemenid colony,"[73] although Sekunda thinks it is more likely the local dynasts remained in power underneath the satrap until Artaxerxes III.[74] Shahbazi identifies clears signs of Persian influence on the famous 'Harpy Tomb,' 'Xanthos Stele,' and 'Nereid Monument,' even suggesting that the Nereids are actually representing the Ahuranis, consorts of Ahuramazda.[75] In 545 Xanthos was apparently rebuilt with colonists, including Iranians.[76] Burials in the region attest both embalming and exposure, being examples of Persian noble and Magian practice respectively.[77] Even if much acculturation in the region is due to intermarriage, as Sekunda suggests, this implies the presence of individual Persians for the locals to intermarry with.[78] In any case, heavy Iranian influence existed in this region at least throughout the Achaemenid Period.[79] How long this influence remained is uncertain, however, and it may have faded by the time a Jewish community arrived in the area.[80]

Perhaps the strongest presence of Persians outside of Iran is attested in Cappadocia, which was under Median control from the time of Cyaxares.[81] Darius III's ability to use troops raised from Phrygia and Cappadocia at the Battle of Gaugamela implies that those troops were from Iranian colonies there.[82] Further, former Persian satraps and their descendants managed to establish independent kingdoms in Pontus and Cappadocia, quite often successfully resisting Macedonian and Roman rule, and this implies significantly sized

---

[72] E.g., Plutarch, *Lysander*, trans. Bernadotte Perrin, *Plutarch's Lives IV*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1986), p. 239 (III.2); Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 701.
[73] Shahbazi, "Monuments," p. 2.
[74] Sekunda, "Settlement," p. 87.
[75] Shahbazi, "Monuments," p. 156. On the Harpy Tomb see pp. 21–71; on the Xanthos Stele, pp. 72–103; on the Nereid Monument, pp. 104–132.
[76] Shahbazi, "Monuments," p. 60.
[77] Shahbazi, "Monuments," pp. 174–189.
[78] Sekunda, "Settlement," p. 105; cf. p. 100.
[79] Jan Zahle, "Achaemenid Influences in Lycia (Coinage, Sculpture, Archetecture). Evidence for Poltical Changes during the 5th Cent. B.C.," *Achaemenid History VI: Asia Minor and Egypt*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt, Proceedings of the Groningen 1988 Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991), particularly p. 153. See also Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 503–505.
[80] Appealing to 1 Macc 15:16–23, Lycia is listed as containing a Jewish community by 138 B.C.E. See Trebilco, *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor*, pp. 6–7. Cf. Ameling, ed., *Inscriptiones: Kleinasiens*, pp. 470–481. Anthony G. Keen, *Dynastic Lycia: a Political History of the Lycians and their Relations with Foreign Powers, c. 545–362 BC* (Leiden: Brill, 1998) apparently devotes much attention to Lycia and the Persians, but it was not accessible for this study.
[81] Diakonoff, "Media," pp. 125–126; It has even been suggested that there was a Median imperial capital in Cappadocia: see Summers, "The Median Empire Reconsidered," pp. 55–73. Cf. Herodotus I.72 (Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 86–89.)
[82] Sekunda, "Settlement," pp. 110–111.

colonies to support these polities.[83] And unlike the evidence of Persian presence in other areas, direct evidence of their worship is available: a sanctuary with an altar to 'Omanus' (*Vohu Manah*) has been found in Zela, and an altar with a man in 'Median' dress with a *barəsman* was found near Bünyan.[84] Strabo (XI.8.4; XII.3.37) also describes a temple to Anaitis, Omanus and Anadatus in Zela, which was 'governed as a sacred precinct of the Persian gods' (ὡς ἱερὸν διῴκουν τῶν Περσικῶν θεῶν).[85] In XV.3.15 he claims that Magi known as 'fire-kindlers' (Πύραιθοι) have several fire temples (Πυραιθεῖα) in this region.[86] Inscriptions found at Arebsun, which could be as early as the fifth century B.C.E., refer to the 'Mazda-worshipping religion' (דינמזדיענש), which Boyce considers to be a name for Zoroastrianism.[87] If this reading is correct, this would be highly significant; however, Lidzbarski has retracted this interpretation.[88] Bishop Basil of Cappadocia, in a letter dated to 377 C.E., claims that 'Magusaeans' (Μαγοθσαίων ἔθνος) are found throughout the region, whom Boyce interprets as Zoroastrians.[89] When the Magus Kirder passed through Cappadocia he claimed to find many Zoroastrians living there.[90] Indeed, it is claimed that the cult of St. George is partially derivative of worship to Miθra.[91] These latter, later references again point to descendants of Achaemenid colonists, as Asia Minor lay outside Parthian and Sassanian control.[92] As mentioned above, Trebilco believes that 1 Macc 15:16–23 and Acts 2 imply that Jews lived in Cappadocia (as well as Caria and Lycia) by 139–8 B.C.E.[93] Interestingly, Trebilco posits the possibility of a Jewish-Persian syncretistic cult in

---

[83] Cynthia M. Harrison, "Persian Names on Coins of Northern Anatolia," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 41.3 (1982): pp. 181–194 links a number of coins to a variety of Iranian groups resisting Macedon in Asia Minor after Alexander's attack; Michael Weiskopf, "Cappadocia," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): p. 782. He sees these colonists as largely rurally based (p. 781).

[84] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 264–5.

[85] Strabo, *Geography V*, p. 263, 441.

[86] Strabo, *Geography VII*, p. 177.

[87] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 274–275.

[88] For this inscription Boyce cites Mark Lidzbarski, *Ephemeris für Semitische Epigraphik*, vol. 1 (Giessen: Töpelmann, 1902), pp. 59–74. She does not notice, however, that on pp. 319–326 he presents a revised edition, in which he retracts his reading of *mazdayasna* (p. 324).

[89] Saint Basil, *The Letters*, trans. Roy J. Deferrari, *The Letters, IV*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1934), pp. 44–47 (Letter 258); although the note in the Loeb edition considers these to be imports from Magusa in Arabia, Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 277, consider them to be Zoroastrian Magi.

[90] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 277.

[91] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 274; Franz Cumont, "St. George and Mithra the Cattle Thief," *Journal of Roman Studies* 27.1 (1937): pp. 63–71.

[92] On Achaemenid descendents, see Leo Raditsa, "Iranians in Asia Minor," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater, vol. 3 (1) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 100–115; on the extent of empires, cf. Christopher J. Brunner, "Geographical and Administrative Divisions: Settlements and Economy," *Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater, vol. 3(2) The Seleucid, Parthian, and Sasanian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 747–777.

[93] Trebilco, *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor*, pp. 6–7, p. 25.

Cappadocia in the fourth century C.E.[94] If this is correct, it certainly points to interaction between Jews and Persians in this area, even if it occurred well after the Achaemenid period.

Further possibilities for interactions include the other Anatolian regions of Phrygia, Caria, and Ionia, which were mentioned in passing above.[95] Levine notes an inscription from Acmonia in Phrygia, which indicates a significant synagogue near the Persian Royal Road.[96] Trebilco thinks the Jews were there from 205 B.C.E.[97]

It can be seen from the diverse, albeit fragmentary, evidence mentioned above, the presence of Persians outside of Iran proper was certainly not an insignificant phenomenon.[98] Any community in these regions had ample opportunity for contact with Iranians and their culture and ideas. As Boyce notes, the Magi went where Persians went, so evidence of Persian religion in Asia Minor is hardly surprising.[99] It seems several areas for which Jewish presence is probable, at the least in the Hellenistic Period, also show evidence of some Iranian colonization. While the evidence is thin for the Persian period proper, the information is interesting in the overall context of interaction and suggests a longer incubation period than the 200 years of direct Persian rule; it also broadens the options for potential loci for interaction.

Egypt

The Jewish military colony at Elephantine has drawn considerable attention due to the archives found there.[100] The colonists served the Persians, but claimed to pre-date Cambyses's invasion.[101] The papyri show a remarkable level of governmental intervention in the affairs of the garrison, including religious affairs. It is likely that direct contact between the two was common. As Porten notes, Bagavahya's endorsement of the reconstruction of the Elephantine temple only addresses Persian officials;[102] Porten even claims that all the leading positions around Elephantine were held by Persians.[103] The Jews of Elephantine wrote to the Governors of Judah and Samaria, assuming they had jurisdiction or influence regarding their affairs,[104] thus, not only does it seem that the various groups were in contact with the Persian administration, but that they were in contact with each other. Indeed, an

---

[94] Trebilco, *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor*, p. 164.
[95] Ameling, ed., *Inscriptiones: Kleinasiens*, lists Jewish inscriptions from Amastris and Apamea (314–317, 380–384).
[96] Levine, *Ancient Synagogue*, p. 111.
[97] Trebilco, *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor*, p. 83.
[98] For a fuller discussion of the evidence in Asia Minor, see Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 197–308.
[99] Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices*, p. 76.
[100] See in particular the history of the colony in Porten, *Archives from Elephantine*, pp. 278–298.
[101] Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri*, no. 30–32 (pp. 107–124); cf. Porten, *Papyri*, pp. 139–149.
[102] Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri*, no. 32 (pp. 122–124); cf. Porten, *Papyri*, pp. 148–149.
[103] Bezalel Porten, "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), p. 175.
[104] Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri*, no. 30–32 (pp. 107–124); cf. Porten, *Papyri*, pp. 139–149.

apparent Jew was sent by the government to regulate Passover.[105] Thus, while the Persians were intimately involved with the religious affairs, they recognized the importance of the religious establishment for the particular community, in this case Yehud and/or Samaria. The political complexities of the empire are nicely demonstrated by the correspondence over the destruction of the colonist's temple in 410 B.C.E.; several levels of local, Persian, and kinsmen authorities (Judaean, Samaritan) are involved in the decisions and petitions. It is worth noting as well that the island of Elephantine is across the Nile from Syene, a town which housed the *fratarak* (פרתרך) of Upper Egypt.[106] Persian officials are frequently referred to in many capacities in the papyri, which is consonant with being near an administrative center. One of the papyri confirms that the Persians brought their religion with them by mentioning the presence of a 'Mazdayasna (מזדיזן),'[107] whatever that term implies.[108] The satrapy, particularly around Elephantine, seems to have hosted a large mix of Iranians of various descriptions besides Persians proper as well.[109] It is clear from these papyri that this particular community had ample contact with various Iranians as well as other Yahwistic communities.

Besides the Jewish colony at Elephantine, the Hebrew Bible indicates the presence of Judaeans in Egypt in a variety of places, from several times and for varying reasons. Isaiah 11:11 expects a recall of Jews from Egypt, Pathros, and Nubia (מצרים, פתרוס, כוש), and Jeremiah prophesies to the Jews in Migdol, Tahpanhes, Noph and Pathros (מגדל, תחפנחס, נף ארץ פתרוס). These passages imply at least nominal Jewish groups throughout Egypt. Jeremiah curses the Jews of Egypt (24:8; 44), but was himself taken to Egypt with fleeing Judaeans (43).[110] At least one of these locations definitely had a Persian presence—Memphis, the seat of the Egyptian satrapy.

Even during rebellions, the Persian presence in Egypt was not entirely eliminated. In one of the extant papyri, Aršam commands his servants to protect his holdings from the insurgents.[111] The presence of ethnic Iranians therefore cannot be excluded during the

---

[105] See discussion above on Hananiah.

[106] Edda Bresciani, "Egypt, Persian Satrapy" in W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein, eds., *The Cambridge History of Judaism I: The Persian Persiod* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984), pp. 364–5. Cf. Cowley's papyri nos. 20, 27, 30.

[107] Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri*, no. 37 (pp. 132–135); cf. Porten, *Papyri*, pp. 127–128. That this is a proper name rather than a title is confirmed by a newly published seal inscription, Mark B. Garrison and Paul E. Dion, "The Seal of Ariyāramna in the Royal Ontario Museum, Toronto," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 58.1 (1999): 4–5, 17.

[108] *Mazdayasna* means 'worshipper of Mazda' which is consonant with Zoroastrianism, but does not necessarily require it. Christian Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch* (Strassburg: Trübner, 1904), pp. 1160–1161. See Emile Benveniste, "Le terme iranien *mazdayasna*," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 33.1 (1970): pp. 5–9, who views it as a personal name rather than an office.
However, Russell mentions a Stele from Syene commemorating the construction of a **brazmandāna*. Sadly the publication is in Russian. Russell, "Zoroastrian Notes," pp. 4–5.

[109] Bezalel Porten, "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), pp. 176–177.

[110] Bezalel Porten, "The Jews in Egypt," in Davies and Finkelstein, eds., *CHJ I*, p. 375.

[111] G. R. Driver, *Aramaic Documents of the Fifth Century B.C.* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1954), Doc. 7 (pp. 23–25).

interruptions of Persian rule. It is also possible that Persians remained behind in Egypt after Alexander, just as they did in Asia Minor; the term *Mtj* (either Mede or Persian), at any rate, remained in use in Egypt into the third century B.C.E.[112] The fate of the Jews at Elephantine is unknown, although the community probably did not survive the Persian Empire given the local hostility towards it in the papyri. However, Jewish communities remained in Egypt in other locations up through at least the Roman Period, notably at Alexandria. Thus Egypt offered another location for Yahwists to interact with Persians on various levels in the Achaemenid Period, and possibly into the Ptolemaic.

PALESTINE

Within the land of Palestine there were several opportunities for contact with Iranians. The coast was heavily fortified and provisioned.[113] Gaza had a garrison large and loyal enough to thoroughly resist Alexander (although Arrian attributes the resistance to Arab mercenaries: *Anabasis* II.25.4–26.7).[114] Even in the technically unadministered areas of Sinai and the Negev, permanent Persian garrisons are attested.[115] Briant notes that remains in Idumea attest a "very thorough mingling" of populations, including Persians and Judaeans,[116] and Amiran posits the "significant role" of Achaemenid elements in the culture of Palestine and the empire as a whole.[117] If Nehemiah turned Jerusalem into a fortified garrison town (בירה), this implies a direct Persian presence.[118] In this respect, it may be significant that the governor of Judah to whom the Elephantine colonists wrote had the Persian name Bagavahya (בגוהי), perhaps a Persian or Jewish official with a Persian name.[119] Even during the periods of Egyptian independence, Persian control reached into the Negev.[120] Indeed,

---

[112] Bresciani, "Egypt, Persian Satrapy," p. 372.

[113] Ephraim Stern, "New Evidence on the Administrative Division of Palestine in the Persian Period," *Achaemenid History IV: Centre and Periphery*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990), p. 222.

[114] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 716; Arrian, *Anabasis Alexandri, Books I–IV*, trans. P. A. Brunt, *Arrian I* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1976), pp. 213–219.

[115] Stern, "Admin. Palestine," p. 223; Cf. Oded Lipschits, "Achaemenid Imperial Policy, Settlement Processes in Palestine, and the Status of Jerusalem in the Middle of the Fifth Century B.C.E.," *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*, eds. Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006), p. 26.

[116] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 717.

[117] Ruth Amiran, "The Persian-Achaemenid Impact on Palestine," *A Survey of Persian Art*, ed. Arthur Upham Pope, vol. XIV (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1967), pp. 3017–3023.

[118] Many commentators see such a military purpose behind Nehemiah's mission. For present purposes, the presence of a garrison is more pertinent than the strategic-administrative details. See Charles E. Carter, *The Emergence of Yehud in the Persian Period: A Social and Demographic Study*, JSOTSupp 294 (Sheffield: Scheffield Academic Press, 1999), pp. 44–45; Kenneth G. Hoglund, *Achaemenid Imperial Administration in Syra-Palestine and the Missions of Ezra and Nehemiah*, Society of Biblical Literature Dissertation Series, ed. David L. Peterson (Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992), pp. 200–210; Lipschits, "Achaemenid Imperial Policy," p. 26; Edelman, *The Origins of the 'Second' Temple*, pp. 340–351.

[119] Cowley, *Aramaic Papyri*, no. 30 (pp. 108–119); Porten, *Papyri*, p. 139.

[120] David F. Graf, "The Persian Royal Road System," *Achaemenid History VIII: Continuity and Change*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, et al., Proceedings of the Last Achaemenid History Workshop, Ann Arbor, Michigan (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1994), pp. 183–184.

Lipschits considers the Egyptian revolt to be the impetus for increased Persian interest in Yehud in Nehemiah's time.[121] (For present purposes, questions regarding the details of Persian administration of Yehud are irrelevant.)[122] In addition to military installations, the Persian king likely held crown lands in Yehud (as in other provinces), perhaps what was previously held by the Davidic monarchy. Ackroyd thinks the 'king's forest' (literally 'paradise'—הפרדס אשר למלך) in Neh 2:8 refers to these lands.[123]

Excavations at Ashkelon have revealed an extraordinary number of dog burials, the vast majority from the Persian period; of the sites at Ashkelon which attest Persian presence, all also attest dog burials.[124] Dog burials have also been found in several other sites in Persian-period Palestine, albeit not in such spectacular numbers.[125] These finds are provocative, especially as regional attitudes towards the dog were generally negative or, at best, ambivalent; the biblical text generally supports a culturally negative view (Deut 23:19; Prov 26:11, 17; Qoh 9:4; Matt 7:6). The exceptions were Egypt and Persia, where dogs were esteemed.[126] Due to Egypt's long history in the coastal region, one would suppose the likelihood of Egyptian influence, especially as dog burials and mummification are found there. However, no such burials are attested in Ashkelon for any of the periods of Egyptian control.[127] It seems significant that of all the parallel Palestinian dog burials listed by Wapnish and Hesse, all are in the Persian period. While they acknowledge a solitary dog burial in Achaemenid Iran in what may be a fire temple, they dismiss the relevance of Zoroastrian veneration for dogs due to Sassanian period scruples over the burial of bodies.[128] However, according to Boyce, the Zoroastrian veneration of dogs did sometimes include burials.[129] As

---

[121] Lipschits, "Achaemenid Imperial Policy," p. 38; Cf. Hoglund, *Achaemenid Imperial Administration*, p. 210, 243–244.

[122] Some various opinions are available in Jon L. Berquist, *Judaism in Persia's Shadow* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1995), particularly pp. 233–237; Kenneth G. Hoglund, "The Achaemenid Context," *Second Temple Studies I*, ed. Philip R. Davies, JSOTSS 117 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991), pp. 54–72; Hoglund, *Achaemenid Imperial Administration*, p. 244; Grabbe, *Yehud*, pp. 132–155; Lisbeth S. Fried, *The Priest and the Great King: Temple-Palace Relations in the Persian Empire*, Biblical and Judaic Studies from the University of California 10 (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2004); Edelman, *Origins of the "Second" Temple*; Lipschits, "Achaemenid Imperial Policy," pp. 19–52.

[123] Peter R. Ackroyd, "The Written Evidence for Palestine," *Achaemenid History IV: Centre and Periphery*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt, Proceedings of the Groningen 1986 Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990), p. 215.

[124] Paula Wapnish and Brian Hesse, "Pampered Pooches or Plain Pariahs? The Ashkelon Dog Burials," *Biblical Archaeologist* 56.2 (1993): p. 60.

[125] Wapnish and Hesse, "Ashkelon Dogs," pp. 67–69. One of the other sites includes Arad, a location known to have been a site of a station of the Royal Road (on the Royal Road, see below.) See Israel Eph'al, "Changes in Palestine During the Persian Period in Light of Epigraphic Sources," *Israel Exploration Journal* 48.1-2 (1998): p. 177.

[126] Billie Jean Collins, ed., *A History of the Animal World in the Ancient Near East*. Handbuch der Orientalistik I.64 (Leiden: Brill, 2002), p. 292, 301–303. She also mentions the Ashkelon burials pp. 419–420; Wapnish and Hesse, "Ashkelon Dogs," pp. 71–73.

[127] Wapnish and Hesse, "Ashkelon Dogs," p. 71.

[128] Wapnish and Hesse, "Ashkelon Dogs," for the Iranian burial, p. 70; for Zoroastrian custom, p. 72.

[129] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 302–303.

Ashkelon possibly housed the Persian governor of the Ashdod province,[130] it is possible that the dog burials evidence either significant Persian residency or high acculturation during the Persian period. However, dog burials are also attested in earlier Crete, Greece, and Sardis, which may be significant for the Levantine coast.[131]

In the province of Samaria there is some evidence of Iranian presence. According to Stern, the Persian period strata of the city of Samaria was nearly obliterated, so not much evidence has been found in the city itself.[132] However, the finds at Wâdī ed-Dâliyeh have produced some Persian seals similar to those in other areas of the empire.[133] The papyri also revealed an interesting name—יהובגה.[134] This is another example of the use of a Persian word to create a new, Yahwistic name (Using Old Persian *baga*, 'god'). Although the cultural significance of material culture is difficult to assess, Samaria evidences some finds typical of Achaemenid style. An imported Achaemenid vase and a bronze throne leg in clear Achaemenid style have been found in the area.[135] Although he denies evidence of colonization, Stern mentions the presence of "Irano-Scythian" arrowheads which appear in the Persian period, but without mentioning the find-sites.[136] Three clearly Achaemenid objects have also been found north of Samaria; Amiran even claims to see echos of the winged disk motif on one.[137] Although meagre, this confirms that the Province of Samaria was not isolated from the rest of the empire. Stern claims that the mountainous region of Palestine shows higher 'eastern' affinities than others in the Persian period,[138] even suggesting that tombs near Shechem indicate the possibility of Iranian colonists (despite his contrary

---

[130] Stern, "New Evidence," p. 222.

[131] Leslie Preston Day, "Dog Burials in the Greek World," *American Journal of Archaeology* 88.1 (1984): pp. 21–32.

[132] Stern, *Material Culture*, p. 29.

[133] Available in Mary Joan Winn Leith, *Wadi Daliyeh I: The Wadi Daliyeh Seal Impressions*, Discoveries in the Judean Desert XXIV (Oxford: Clarendon, 1997), particularly see pp. 191, 193, 199, 204, and 209–231 and associated plates. Cf. Frank Moore Cross, Jr, "The Papyri and Their Historical Implications," pp. 17–29 in Paul W. Lapp and Nancy L. Lapp, eds., *Discoveries in the Wâdī Ed-Dâliyeh*. Annual of the American Schools of Oriental Research XLI (Cambridge, MA: ASOR, 1974), as well as the plates 62 and 63.

[134] WDSP 7,7 and 7, 10 of Douglas M. Gropp, et al., *Wadi Daliyeh II: The Samaria Papyri from Wadi Daliyeh and Qumran Cave 4 XXVIII*, Discoveries in the Judaean Desert XXVIII (Oxford: Clarendon, 2001), pp. 80–81; Cf. Knoppers, Gary N. "Revisiting the Samarian Question in the Persian Period," in Lipschits and Oeming, eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*, p. 276.

[135] Stern, *Material Culture*, p. 142 (vase—although he denies the significance); pp. 143–144 (bronze throne leg). Cf. mention in Lipschits, "Achaemenid Imperial Policy," p. 31. Orig. pub. Miryam Tadmor, "Fragments from an Achaemenid Throne From Samaria," *Israel Exploration Journal* 24.1 (1974): pp. 37–43.

[136] Stern, *Material Culture*, pp. 154–6.

[137] Ruth Amiran, "Achaemenian Bronze Objects from a Tomb at Kh. Ibsan in Lower Galilee," *Levant* 4 (1972): pp. 135–138.

[138] Ephraim Stern, "Between Persia and Greece: Trade, Administration and Warfare in the Persian and Hellenistic Periods," *The Archaeology of Society in the Holy Land*, ed. Thomas E. Levy (London: Leicester Univ Press, 1995), p. 444.

claim noted above).[139] Uehlinger also suggests the possible presence of Persian colonists in Samaria, based on 'powerful Persianisms' on Samarian coins.[140]

If there were Iranians or Iranian influences in Samaria, it is likely they reached Yehud as well. Whatever the details of the ethnicities of the Shechem tomb-builders, Knoppers argues convincingly that the break between Samaritans and Jews was not decisive until well after the Persian period, despite the attitude of Nehemiah, and that their mutual contacts may have been significant. He considers the separation between them a matter more of administration/politics than religion or culture.[141] In fact, Ezra-Nehemiah seems to confirm close relations between the two communities, despite attempts to prevent them (particularly Neh 6:17–19; 13:1–9. See Also Neh 2:19; 3:33–35; 4; 10:31 and Ezra 4:1–5; 9:1–10:44). Yehud clearly was not exempt from interactions with its northern *medinah* and that *medinah*'s influences.

It is often noted that Palestine lies in a strategic location between Mesopotamia and Egypt. Any group traveling between the two of necessity would pass through the land. The history of the Achaemenid Empire contains several large-scale operations which brought armies and baggage trains through Palestine.[142] Cambyses conquered Egypt in 525, and it is likely preparations for the invasion began in the reign of Cyrus.[143] Revolts and reconquests required repeated military incursions into Egypt (486–484, 460–454; revolt in 405 which was followed by unsuccessful attacks in 373, 350, and reconquest in 342). Prior, during, and after these campaigns, the various *medinahs* along the route to Egypt must have often hosted Persian officials and troops. Indeed, the Great King himself sometimes participated in the campaigns (Cambyses, ca. 525; Xerxes I, ca. 484; Artaxerxes III, ca. 345–342).[144] Wherever the king went, including into battle, the entirety of his court—with the associated pomp,

---

[139] Ephraim Stern, "Achaemenian Tombs from Shechem," *Levant* 12 (1980): pp. 90–111; Gösta W. Ahlström, *The History of Ancient Palestine* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1994), p. 827.

[140] C. Uehlinger, "'Powerful Persianisms' in Glyptic Iconography of Persian Period Palestine," *The Crisis of Israelite Religion*, eds. Bob Becking and Marjo C. A. Korpel (Leiden: Brill, 1999), particularly pp. 178–179.

[141] Knoppers, "Revisiting the Samarian Question," pp. 278–279. Cf. Frank Moore Cross, Jr., "Aspects of Samaritan and Jewish History in Late Persian and Hellenistic Times," *Harvard Theological Review* 59.3 (1966): pp. 201–211; he put forth similar arguments in his article in *Discoveries*, cited above.

[142] In addition to military excursions to Egypt, scholars have often appealed to Yehud's participation in various revolts, although the significance (or reality) of the impact on Palestine is debated. D. Barag, "The Effects of the Tennes Rebellion on Palestine," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 183 (1966): pp. 6–12; Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes III," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): pp. 658–659; John W. Betlyon, "Archaeological Evidence of Military Operations in Southern Judah during the Early Hellenistic Period," *Biblical Archaeologist* 54.1 (1991): p. 39; Michael Weiskopf, *The So-called "Great Satraps' Revolt", 366–360 B.C.: concerning local instability in the Achaemenid far west*, Historia 63 (Stuttgart: Steiner, 1989): pp. 9–14; Eph'al, "Changes in Palestine," p. 109, sees little in ostraca.

[143] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 49.

[144] Ahlström, *The History of Ancient Palestine*, p. 852, would add Darius I to this list, before his reconquest of Egypt (519), and removing Zerubbabel.

courtiers, and Magi—followed.[145] This appears to be a significant point which is often overlooked in the discussion. At the very least, such royal caravans would have been ideal situations for the dissemination of royal ideology and for the locals to demonstrate their loyalty. Even if there were no permanent Iranian residents within Palestine (and there clearly were), traveling Iranians were no novelty in the region. Jews had ample opportunity to come into contact with Persians and their ideas within Israel.

The Royal Road and Royal Mail

One final point remains for discussion of potential locations for Persian contact, one which properly involves all the regions so far discussed. Herodotus describes a complex network known as the Royal Road from Sardis to Susa (V.52–3; V.35; VIII.98).[146] He describes this massive distance as stationed with fortresses, hostelries, and riding-posts (ἀγγαρήιον) at a day's journey distance. This system included rapid royal couriers (ἀγγέλοι or *pirradazi*š), escorts for travels on official business,[147] paved sections,[148] and even fire-signals.[149] Yet the royal road and mail were not limited to the route between the central capital and the Greek-inhabited lands of primary interest to Herodotus; the entire empire was connected by it. Indeed, one part of it ran through Palestine to Memphis. Use of this road required a 'passport' or *miyatukkaš*, just as in Neh 2:7.[150] A papyrus from 'Aršam, Satrap of Egypt, records an order for the precise provisioning of one on official business, indicating the duty of the local provincial leaders for the upkeep of the stations within their jurisdiction.[151] The local administrators, be they local dynasts or Persian appointees, would thus be required to maintain regular contact with the couriers, escorts, and officials passing through on official

---

[145] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 186–189. G. G. Aperghis, "Storehouses and Systems at Persepolis: Evidence from the Persepolis Fortification Tablets," *Journal of the Economic and Social History of the Orient* 42.2 (1999): p. 158, suggests that the 'J' Persepolis texts relate to the kings' movements.

[146] Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, pp. 57–61, 39; Herodotus, *The Persian Wars*, trans. A. D. Godley, *The Persian Wars, Books VIII–IX*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001), p. 97.

[147] Max Mallowan, "Cyrus the Great (558–529 BC)," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, Ilya Gershevitch, ed. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), pp. 402–403. Cf. Ezra 8:21–23; Neh 1:9.

[148] M. T. Mustafavi, "The Achaemenid Royal Road: Post-Stations between Susa and Persepolis," *A Survey of Persian Art*, eds. Arthur Upham Pope and Phyllis Ackerman, vol. XIV (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1967), p. 3008.

[149] Graf, "The Persian Royal Road System," p. 168.

[150] Apparently an Elamite word, see Richard T. Hallock, "New Light From Persepolis," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 9.4 (1950): p. 248; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 357–370. On 'passport,' p. 364; Cf. Graf, "The Persian Royal Road System," pp. 168–169.
For the *miyatukkaš/halmi* in the Persepolis Fortification Tablets, see Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, p. 40, and his list of relevant tablets, pp. 733–734.
On the relevance of the Persepolis Tablets to Ezra-Nehemiah generally, see H. G. M. Williamson, *Studies in Persian Period History and Historiography*, Forshungen zum Alten Testament 38 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004), pp. 212–231. Mark B. Garrison, "A Persepolis Fortification Seal on the Tablet MDP 11 308 (Louvre Sb 13078)," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 55.1 (1996): pp. 15–35 confirms the wide-ranging travellers of the royal road based on ration documents (p. 33).

[151] Driver, *Aramaic Documents*, Document 6 (pp. 20–23).

business. Such a complex system, able to provision various qualities of grain, wine, beer, and sheep, as well as provisions for the horses (presumably including blacksmiths), implies a substantial local involvement in the provisioning of these hostels and ἀγγαρήιον.[152] It is likely that many of the officials using this system were Iranians, and that both Ezra and Nehemiah also used it while traveling. Thus this network provides one more locus where populations and groups could interact, including Judaeans, Israelites, and Iranians. A similar sort of scenario is (broadly) sketched for the later Silk Road.[153]

SUMMARY

The above evidence shows nothing conclusive; it does, however, show how possible it was for Judaeans/Yahwists and Persians/Iranians to come physically into contact with each other throughout the Achaemenid Empire during the reign of the Achaemenids and even well into the Hellenistic period. This chapter focused on instances and situations where actual, physical interactions were likely or possible. In addition to these practical factors, the scholar must also consider the less-physical dynamics of *zeitgeist* and word-of-mouth transmission of ideas. Since religious and cultural influences are more often a matter of prolonged contact and of unconscious absorption and/or reaction, it is highly probable that any instances of influence happened gradually and differently in various Judaean and Israelite communities. As debate grew and continued on what it meant to be Jewish, with various communities holding their own interpretations of their traditions, it behooves the scholar to ask which is more likely—that this process was in dialogue with the Persian elements in the cultural and religious context, or that it was completely segregated from them?

In the context of cultural-religious interaction and influences, it is not necessary to find a single, definitive location. When one considers the complexities of the diaspora and the 'Yahwism to Judaism' question, such an answer is unlikely and unconvincing, except for isolated textual cases. The evidence put forward above indicates that any interactions would have necessarily been gradual, widespread, and sporadic. This context implies multiple locations for a variety of levels of interaction, from superficial to extensive. This needs to be taken into account when discussing textual questions in Biblical Studies and the overall import of discrete analyses.

---

[152] Cf. Graf, "The Persian Royal Road System," p. 188. Aperghis, "Storehouses and Systems at Persepolis," argues that there were two overlapping systems, a 'regional' one and one for work groups.
[153] Richard Foltz, "Judaism and the Silk Route," *The History Teacher* 32.1 (1998): pp. 9–16.

EXCURSUS: ELAMITES AND IRANIANS IN ANŠAN AND DARIUS'S COUP

Although not directly related to the juxtaposition of Yahwists and Iranians, the ethnic situation of the region today called Fars (Greek Περσις, Elamite *Anšan*, Old Persian *Parsa*) may be relevant when considering the import of Eastern Iran and its traditions for the Achaemenids generally, and for Second Temple Judaism specifically. If one analyzes the implications of Darius I's rise, one can posit a context for understanding both the ambiguity and plurality of the evidence for religious practice in Fars. Following several recent studies,[154] it can be argued that Darius represents a Persian Coup over the indigenous Elamite elements in the region.

The question of the arrival of the Persians into Southwest Iran is long-debated and uncertain.[155] Without digressing into all the complications, several pieces of evidence combine to suggest the dynamics which were operating in the region at the dawn of the empire. First, Cyrus (II) the Great always referred to himself as 'King of Anšan,' and the Babylonians typically followed suit.[156] 'Anšan' is the old Elamite name for the region, which once functioned as part of the typical Elamite titulature, 'King of Anšan and Susa'; no other Persian king uses this title.[157] Cyrus appears to have decended from a line which had ruled Anšan from at least 646 BCE, in the context of a fragmented Elamite polity.[158] Second, Cyrus and his father, Cambyses, seem to have deliberately made ties with leaders of the Iranian elements within and around their kingdom. According to Herodotus, Cyrus was the both the son of the Median King Astyages's daughter and also had married the daughter of a noble from the Achaemenids, whom Herodotus calls a clan.[159] Third, Cyrus's name (*Kuruš*), is not

---

[154] In particular, following Matt Waters, "The Earliest Persians in Southwestern Iran: The Textual Evidence," *Iranian Studies* 32.1 (1999): pp. 99–107; Matt Waters, "Cyrus and the Achaemenids," *Iran* 42 (2004): pp. 91–102; Potts, "Cyrus the Great and the Kingdom of Anshan," pp. 7–28; W. J. Vogelsang, *The Rise and Organization of the Achaemenid Empire: The Eastern Iranian Evidence* (Leiden: Brill, 1992); cf. David Stronach, "Anshan and Parsa: Early Achaemenid History, Art and Architecture on the Iranian Plateau," *Mesopotamia and Iran in the Persian Period: Conquest and Imperialism 539-331 BC. Proceedings of a Seminar in memory of Vladimir G. Lukonin.*, ed. John E. Curtis (London: British Museum, 1997), pp. 35–53.

[155] Cf. George G. Cameron, *History of Early Iran* (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1936), chapters 9–11; Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, pp. 22–33 (very synthetic); Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 13–28; Waters, "The Earliest Persians," pp. 99–107.

[156] For the inscriptions, see C. J. Gadd and L. Legrain, *Ur Excavations: Texts*, vol. I: Royal Inscriptions, 8 vols. (London: British Museum, 1928), p. xix, 58; Roland Grubb Kent, "The Oldest of the Old Persian Inscriptions," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 66.3 (1946): p. 210; The relevant sections of the Nabonidus Chronicle and Sippar Cylinder are given in Amélie Kuhrt, *The Persian Empire: a Corpus of Sources from the Achaemenid Period* (London: Routledge, 2009), p. 50, 56; Cf. M. A. Dandamaev, "Cyrus: iii. Cyrus II the Great," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 6 (1993): online; A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Cyrus: ii. Cyrus I," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 6 (1993): online.

[157] Waters, "Cyrus and the Achaemenids," p. 94.

[158] Waters, "The Earliest Persians," p. 104, 102; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 17.

[159] On Mandane, Cyrus's mother, I.107–108 (Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 138–139).
On Cyrus's wife (and Cambyses's mother), Cassandane, as an Achaemenid, III.2 (Herodotus, *Wars III–IV*, pp. 4–5).
On the Achaemenids as a noble tribe, I.125 (Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 165).

an Iranian name.[160] Thus, it would seem best to understand Cyrus as the scion of an Elamite dynasty which had nevertheless 'persianized."[161]

In contrast to Cyrus, Darius I emphasized his Iranian ethnicity in his inscriptions.[162] It is telling that Darius claims Cambyses—but not Cyrus—as his 'family' (*taumā*), as Cambyses was the son of an Achaemenid noble.[163] From these indications one may posit that the Achaemenids were a traditionally noble clan of the Persians, that Cyrus had politically benefited from intermarrying with them, and that when Bardiya (Cyrus's, but presumably not Cassandane's, son) rebelled, the Achaemenid clan took steps to ensure their continued centrality. Once in power, Darius proceeded to write Cyrus into the Achaemenid clan (and to promote his ancestors to kings). Cyrus and Darius therefore represent the two main groupings within first millennium Southwest Iran, the Elamites and the Persians.

When one recalls that the names of Darius, his father, his son, and Cyrus's daughter, Atossa,[164] have names which are Iranian and have potentially Avestan resonances, an eastern origin for his 'family' is not impossible. If one posits an Elamite derivation for Cyrus's family and an Eastern one for Darius and his clan, this could help explain the mixture and ambivalence between the two in the Persepolis tablets. Vogelsang has argued that familial ties between the Medians and Scythians enabled Median control over the vast areas of the east;[165] if this is accurate, an eastern origin (with remaining familial ties) for the Achaemenids would help explain the strong support Darius I received from the eastern satrapies during his coup.[166] If the story behind the Behistun inscription is thus understood as a 'Persian coup,'[167] some of the complexity in Parsa evidenced on the ground can be contextualized. More significant for this study, however, such an understanding brings the so geographically distant eastern satrapies (and their traditions) much closer to the imperial center, both geographically and for imperial ideology.[168]

---

[160] Kuhrt, *The Persian Empire*, p. 48, 55, thinks the name Elamite; however, Rüdiger Schmitt, "Cyrus: i. The Name," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 6 (1993): online, thinks that it is Old Persian.

[161] Stronach, "Anshan and Parsa," p. 39.

[162] Most notably, on his tomb DNa §2, 'a Persian, son of a Persian, an Aryan, of Aryan lineage' (*Pārsa Pārsahyā puça, Ariya Ariya ciça*); available Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 138; Kuhrt, *The Persian Empire*, p. 502. Cf. DPe §3 and DZc §3 (Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 136, 147, respectively).

[163] DB I §10 (Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 119); Cf. Waters, "Cyrus and the Achaemenids," p. 97.

[164] For Hystaspes, see Kent, "The Name of Hystaspes," pp. 55–58.
Darius: Rüdiger Schmitt, "Darius i. The Name," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 7 (1996): online.
Atossa: Waters, "The Earliest Persians," p. 99, n. 57.
Xerxes: Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): p. 654.

[165] Vogelsang, *Rise and Organization*, p. 311.

[166] Vogelsang, *Rise and Organization*, p. 306.

[167] Potts, "Cyrus the Great and the Kingdom of Anshan," p. 23.

[168] From the preceding discussion, it is apparent that—in the opinion of the author—Darius's Behistun inscription's description of the downfall of Bardiya is dubious at best, most likely being a complete fabrication to cover the coup. This has been a much debated matter. For various studies, see Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, pp. 108–118; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 107–127; Christopher Tuplin, "Darius' Accession in (the) Media," *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society*, eds. Piotr Bienkowski, et al. (London: T & T Clark, 2005),

The dynamic argued above implies a strong Eastern affinity for the dynasty post-Darius, but still leaves the Anšanite dynasty in a murky, 'persianizing' status. Two of the points argued in Chapter I are, however, strengthened by it: first, the relevance of the Eastern traditions (i.e., the Avesta and heroic sagas) and, second, the diversity of traditions which one ought to expect within the empire.

General Theological and Sociological Affinities between Jews and Persians

So far this chapter has discussed some basic historical considerations for Persian influence on Judaism. Yet, even with centuries of potential contact, there is no guarantee or requirement for the Jews to be receptive to foreign ideas. If there were no similarities or potentials for rapprochement, interaction could have remained solely superficial or only have occurred in negative ways. What is more important, there are several categories of theological and sociological affinities between the Judaeans and the Persians which increase the likelihood that Persian ideas could be seen in a favorable light or viewed as latent within Judaism itself. While such parallels do not require influence to occur, they ought to serve as points of orientation, helping to dissolve an overly dichotomistic view of interaction and to identify potential 'hooks' for borrowings. A brief discussion of these will help highlight trends in preparation for textual analyses.

Post-exilic Judaism was partially characterized by a struggle between strict monotheism and varying forms of 'syncretism.' This is well-illustrated by the colony at Elephantine and the supposed Jewish inscription which swears by Bel and Nabu in Asia Minor.[169] It is impossible to know the details of the struggle, but it is beyond doubt that strict monotheistic and other less-monistic forms of YHWH-ism co-existed and competed, perhaps for many centuries. The religious situation in Iran apparently was not so different; followers of the teachings of Zarathuštra had so many competing interpretations of his vision that scholars still cannot decide whether the teaching was monotheistic, dualistic, or polytheistic. If Xerxes's *Daēuua* Inscription (XPh) is any indication, the controversy ran well into the Achaemenid period, and certainly could not have gone unnoticed to interested observers. Partisans on either side of the divide could thus have found within the Persian traditions useful arguments to use in their own polemics. Commentators frequently suggest

---

pp. 217–244; Jack M. Balcer, *Herodotus and Bisitun: Problems in Ancient Persian Historiography*, Historia Einzelschriften 49 (Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 1987).
Besides the version in Kent, the incription itself is available in three critical editions (for the Old Persian, Akkadian, and Aramaic): Rüdiger Schmitt, *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text*, Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum (London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991); Jonas C. Greenfield, et al., *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Aramaic Version*, Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum (London: Lund Humphries, 1982); Elizabeth N. von Voigtlander, *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great, Babylonian Version*, Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicum II.1 (London: Lund Humphries, 1978).
[169] Lipinski, "Obadiah 20," pp. 368–370.

that Second Isaiah utilized Persian traditions to argue for his Creation-theology;[170] unrecorded debates lost to history quite probably did the same. Forms of rhetoric as much as ideas can be borrowed. For a Judaism still struggling with this question, a tradition with unknown centuries of debating a similar question was available for comparison and perhaps emulation. The potential for analagous rhetoric to be used within internecine debate should therefore be considered.

In a similar vein, the religious tradition in Iran was undergoing a prolonged and difficult process of demoting a category of gods into false gods and then into demons, a process which is broadly attested regardless of the role of Zarathuštra. Jeremiah and Second Isaiah's mockeries of the foreign idols[171] share in purpose and tone what the opponents of the *Daēuuas* must have used in their polemics. For those advocating a stricter monotheism and separation from foreign cults, the polemics against the *Daēuuas*—the ideology of denying them the very category of divinity—must have been very useful and appealing. Many Yahwists were surrounded by the Babylonian and Assyrian beliefs in gods and maleficent demons, whose cults threatened to subsume the Judaeans' and to deny the uniqueness of YHWH. An ideology which neutralized the threat of these cults by denying them the status of divinity while admitting their existence, albeit as mere demons, seems perfectly well-suited to their situation.

The purposefulness of history in the Hebrew prophets is oft noted.[172] History is the field in which YHWH exercises his will and power, and ensures that not only can he punish his people with exile, but can effect their return. The essential purposefulness of history is also central to the traditions of Iran, although in a much more radical way than in pre-exilic Judaism. Physical creation itself is described as being for the purpose of defeating Angra Mainyu;[173] history is the field where the cumulative ethics of man will overcome the evil one, and where Ahura Mazda will be proven to be the only god. History, or 'limited time,' is the method whereby 'unlimited time' is perfected. The similarities and differences between these two views, different as they are from the other conceptions current in the Ancient Near East, are subtle yet profoundly important.[174] Inherent in the Iranian view of history is the *eschaton*

---

[170] Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," pp. 415–421; Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, p. 55; Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 221; Mills, *Zarathuštra, Philo, the Achaemenids, and Israel*, pp. 276–277; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 43–65.

[171] For example, Isa 40:18–20; 41:6–7; 44:9–20; Jer 10:1–16; 51:15–19.

[172] Abraham J. Heschel, *The Prophets*, Perennial Classics (New York: HarperCollins, 2001), pp. 214–217 and references there; James Muilenburg, "The Biblical View of Time," *Harvard Theological Review* 54.4 (1961): pp. 225–252 seems to take a more 'canonical' view and conflates the ideas of the Hebrew Bible and the New Testament.

[173] *Greater Bundahishn* I.24–28 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, p. 9), available in Mary Boyce, *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism*, Textual Sources for the Study of Religion (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984), pp. 45–46.

[174] See the overview of contemporary worldviews in the first part of Norman Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith*, 2nd ed. (New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1995), pp. 1–115.

of history—history's very *telos* is to destroy evil and thus expire its use. History is known as *zurvan dərəgo.x'adāta*, 'limited time', a term implying its end. Nowhere in the pre-exilic prophets can this end to history be intimated; it certainly is *not* latent or inherent.[175] Yet, the importance of history, the divine purpose in history, is the same in both traditions, and this is so similar in the two traditions that the logic of the end in Iranian traditions could over time have appeared to various Jews as also inherent in their own tradition.[176]

Beyond these more purely theological affinities lay some more purely sociological factors to consider, in particular, the implications of Persian administration (both in Yehud and more broadly). A more complete study of this aspect is reserved for the future; for present purposes only a few minor comments must suffice.[177] An important yet elusive occurrence in Persian Period Palestine is the rise of the High Priest as ruler—by the arrival of Alexander, Jerusalem was firmly in the control of the High Priest. The book of Ezra-Nehemiah claims that the re-installation of the priesthood and rebuilt temple was due to royal decree and favor; as historical study of the Achaemenid administration shows, this could have happened no other way. While Persian 'toleration' was certainly not the modern enlightened toleration of earlier scholarship, diversity within the empire was not only merely tolerated, it was encouraged as long as the beneficiaries were loyal to the person of the king.[178] An example of the relationship between the Great King and religious specialists in the empire can be illustrated by the well-known letter of Darius I to Gadatas, although the authenticity of this is questioned.[179] If this is paralleled to the famous story of the pro-Cyrus Delphic oracle, it may indicate the kinds of relations religious foundations could expect to enjoy *vis-à-vis* the Persians,[180] provided they offered services to the Great King.

It is clear that no priesthood within the empire could be or remain established without royal support, and more importantly, loyalty to the person of the king.[181] While in

---

[175] On the question of a/the 'Day of YHWH,' see Chapter V.

[176] This is, of course, the main thrust of Cohn's argument, Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos*.

[177] For a variety of views on this contentious topic, see Fried, *The Priest and the Great King*; Edelman, *Origins of the "Second" Temple*; Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming, eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period* (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006); John W. Betlyon, "A People Transformed Palestine in the Persian Period," *Near Eastern Archaeology* 68.1/2 (2005): pp. 4–58; Lipschits, et al., eds., *Judah and the Judeans in the Fourth Century B.C.E.*.

[178] Root, "From the Heart," pp. 5–6.

[179] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 491, 583–587, accepts it, however, in the introduction he retracts this view; the text of the inscription can be found in Michael H. Crawford and David Whitehead, *Archaic and Classical Greece: A Selection of Ancient Sources in Translation* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 197–8 (No. 95b); and in Russell Meiggs and David Lewis, *A Selection of Greek Historical Inscriptions to the End of the Fifth Century B.C*, Revised ed. (Oxford: Clarendon, 1989), pp. 20–22.

[180] Although the story in Herodotus I.53, 90–91 is legendary, it is likely Cyrus would have rewarded an oracle which had been favourable to him.

[181] The view that the Persians are normally remembered favorably may relate to this. However, for alternate views see Peter R. Ackroyd, "The Biblical Portrayal of Achaemenid Rulers," *Achaemenid History V: The Roots of the European Tradition*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and J. W. Drijvers, Proceedings of the 1987 Gronigen Achaemenid History Workshop (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990), pp. 1–16 and Erich S. Gruen, "Persia through the Jewish Looking-Glass," *Cultural Borrowings and Ethnic Appropriations in*

some other areas of the Persian Empire peoples were ruled by local dynasts underneath a satrap (at least for a while—i.e. Lycia, the Phoenician city-states, Samaria), Yehud eventually came to be ruled solely by a 'theocracy.'[182] When the governorship ended is unknown, but it is certain the priesthood owed its position solely to the Persian overlord, and held this position on condition of loyalty. Beyond the hierarchic benefit the priestly classes received, one should consider the patronization and authorization of their law. Much has been written on the supposed Persian authorization of the Torah, and no real scholarly consensus on this point exists.[183] Without going into a detailed analysis on this point, it is pertinent to note that the government implemented local law as well as imperial law (cf. Egypt),[184] and that Darius I seems to have had an interest in its codification (if not to the extent advocated by Olmstead).[185] No law could operate in Yehud without (implicit) royal permission. Dozeman even argues that in Ezra-Nehemiah the former role of the monarch in YHWH-ism is replaced by Persian law.[186]

As noted by Boyce, purity laws play a significant role in Zoroastrianism.[187] Overtime, what probably originally related only to the ritual precinct and priesthood became applied to the believers as a whole. A similar development can be seen in Second Temple Judaism. The gradual extension of purity laws from the priesthood to the people possibly underlies some of the conflict in Ezra-Nehemiah[188] and between the so-called 'Hellenizers' and 'Hasids' in the Maccabean period.[189] While these are most likely parallel developments, they create situational affinities which could be useful for polemical use on either side. Priests or scribes attempting to impose stricter purity laws on the populace ('people of the land'?) had a source to plunder for inspiration.

Earlier the importance and role of Ahura Mazda as 'the Wise Lord' was mentioned. Ever since von Rad suggested the roots of apocalyptic lay in the sapiential tradition,

---

Antiquity, ed. Erich S. Gruen, Oriens et Occidens 8 (Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 2005), pp. 90–104; Douglas J. E. Nykolaishen, "The Sway of the Persian Sceptre: The Narrative Characterisation of the Persian Kings in Ezra-Nehemiah." (PhD Diss. Edinburgh, 2007).

[182] For a discussion of this term as it relates to Yehud, see Jeremiah W. Cataldo, *A Theocratic Yehud? Issues of Government in a Persian Period* (London: T & T Clark, 2009).

[183] James W. Watts, ed., *Persia and Torah: The Theory of Imperial Authorization of the Pentateuch* (Atlanta: SBL, 2001) contains debates on this theory.

[184] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 474, 510–511.

[185] Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, pp. 119–128;

[186] Thomas B. Dozeman, "Geography and History in Herodotus and in Ezra-Nehemiah," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 122.3 (2003): pp. 449–466.

[187] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 294–324; Cf. A. V. Williams, "Zoroastrian and Judaic Purity Laws. Reflections on the Viability of a Sociological Interpretation," *Irano-Judaica III*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1994), pp. 72–89.

[188] See Saul M. Olyan, "Purity Ideology in Ezra-Nehemiah as a Tool to Reconsitute the Community," *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 35.1 (2004): pp. 1–16.

[189] Joseph Hellerman, "Purity and Nationalism in Second Temple Literature: 1–2 Maccabees and Jubilees," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 46.3 (2003): pp. 401–421; For the nature of the Hasids, though without reference to purity *per se*, see Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 67–69.

scholarship has debated how much the influence of prophetic or sapiential literature can be seen in apocalyptic literature.[190] For those interested in wisdom literature, the idea of god as primarily a god due to his wisdom could be quite compelling. Perhaps the personification of wisdom would even be less threatening than a more overtly naturalistic or anthropomorphic god. One may wonder about the extent of Persian scribal activities (at least among non-noble Iranians), but surely aspects of a god of wisdom would appeal to scribal schools.

There are two more possible but extremely speculative similarities between Second Temple Judaism and Iranian religion. Both were supposedly aniconic, but experienced tension between the rule and the reality. While various stories and myths are clearly depicted in Jewish structures (such as the later synagogue at Dura Europas),[191] YHWH was not; similarly, while Artaxerxes II instituted a cult statue for Anāhitā, Ahura Mazda was not represented,[192] and the aniconism of Persian religion was a feature noteworthy to Greek observers.

Recent scholarship has posited that the impetus behind some of the visions in prophetic, apocalyptic, and merkabah literature were real visionary experiences.[193] Artificially induced (or encouraged) mystical experiences are common throughout the world, and the possibility of this type of mysticism lying behind at least some of these visions cannot be excluded out of hand. Iranian tradition knows of a stimulant used by poet-priests, *haoma*. The use of this in the Achaemenid Empire is indicated by the mortar and pestles found at Persepolis and is characteristic of the Iranian religion both before and after Zarathuštra. Could the Jews have learned of its use from the Persians, or perhaps could they have emulated the idea of a mystical journey from it? Even without such a connection, a mutually similar approach in both could have increased a sense of affinity between adepts of each.

In all these examples, the nature of religious influence must be kept in mind. Influence is not a matter of wholesale adoption of strange ideas, but of how the continual process of reinterpretation occurred in dialogue with foreign ideas which became to be perceived as latent within the Jewish tradition itself, whether conciously or subconsciously.[194]

---

[190] For a recent debate see Wright and Wills, eds., *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*.

[191] For discussions on this synagogue with illustrations of the murals, see Joseph Gutmann, ed., *The Dura-Europos Synagogue: A Re-evaluation (1932–1992)*. South Florida Studies in the History of Judaism 25 (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1992).

[192] See the convincing argument rejecting the identification of the winged disk as representing Ahura Mazda and positing instead the *X'arənah*, or Royal Glory/Fortune: A. Shapur Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol I: A Farewell to Fravahr and Ahuramazda," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 7 (1974): pp. 135–144 and A. Shapur Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol: II Farnah (God Given) Fortune Symbolised," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 13 (1980): pp. 119–147.

[193] Michael E. Stone, "A Reconsideration of Apocalyptic Visions," *Harvard Theological Review* 96.2 (2003): pp. 167–180.

[194] Cf the discussion of influence in the Prolegomena, which is indebted to the excellent comments on this issue by Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition," pp. 9–12 and Shaul Shaked, "Iranian Influence on Judaism: first century B.C.E to second century C.E.," *The Cambridge History of Judaism*, eds. W. D.

When evaluating this issue, care must be taken not to force everything into an Iranian mold, but rather examine carefully the nature and extent of Persian borrowings, and how they were used on their own terms within their new Jewish context. Before moving on to textual evidence, the communicative contexts of the emergence of apocalyptic and of the Achaemenid Empire much be considered.

Davies and L. Finkelstein, vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2000), p. 309.

III

The Media of Influence:
Orality, Literacy, and Cultural Interaction

The issue of orality[1] and literacy in the Ancient Near East during the periods of prophetic and apocalyptic literature is a vexed one. Scholars have varied widely in their opinions and appropriations of the understanding of orality, to the point that one may wish to eschew the quagmire altogether.[2] A full exploration of the issues involved would demand a monograph; this chapter merely argues that understanding the roles of orality and literacy is essential not only to understanding the context of the emergence of the apocalypse, but to the very nature of cultural interaction, and thus to the methodology needed for investigating Iranian influence. The issues of the interplay and natures of orality and literacy are issues of basic and largely subconscious *Weltanshauung*, and thus must be understood prior to tackling questions of more explicit dynamics such as socio-economics, colonialism, or theology. Orality and literacy affect how one understands the social situation, the formation of texts, the transmission and alteration of traditions, and the nature of religious authority. Ultimately, it is an issue of hermeneutics, of how 'religious specialists'[3] interpret received tradition in light of contemporary circumstances. While at first glance such a topic may appear to be a diversion from the issue of Iranian influence, it is an essential component of the methodology needed to investigate tradition histories at all. If the way in which people communicated in the relevant historical period is not understood properly, then the way in which they communicated ideas cannot be either.

Past attempts at delimiting the oral layers and traditions from the various sections of the Hebrew Bible have been criticized significantly and are characteristic of an older scholarly paradigm.[4] The work on the so-called oral 'Überlieferungsgeschichte,' by such scholars as Herman Gunkel and Martin Noth was largely based on extensions of Julius Wellhausen's 'Documentary Hypothesis';[5] similar work has been done on 'Q' in the New Testament as well. However, the incessant search for 'source documents,' whether it be J, E, D and P, Q,

---

[1] As Walter J. Ong has pointed out (Walter J. Ong, *Orality and Literacy* [London: Routledge, 2004], pp. 10–15), the term '(oral) literature' is inappropriate for works originating in an oral medium. Barry B. Powell, *Writing and the Origins of Greek Literature* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2002), p. 16, also wants to abandon the term, albeit without reference to Ong.

[2] For a recent overview, see Werner H. Kelber. "Orality and Biblical Studies: a Review Essay." *Review of Biblical Literature* 12 (2007): np, http://www.bookreviews.org/pdf/2107_6748.pdf.

[3] To borrow the catch-all phrase used by Grabbe, *Priests, Prophets, Diviners, Sages.*

[4] Susan Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word: Ancient Israelite Literature* (Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1996), pp. 8–9, 110–114; R.N. Whybray, *The Making of the Pentateuch: A Methodological Study*, JSOT Supp 53 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1987), pp. 133–185, particularly 138–139; Eduard Nielsen, *Oral Tradition: A Modern Problem in Old Testament Introduction*, Studies in Biblical Theology 11 (London: SCM, 1954), pp. 12–17, 94–103; David H. Aaron, *Etched in Stone: The Emergence of the Decalogue* (London: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 28–40. The author is grateful to Prof. Philip Davies for the last reference.

[5] E.g., Hermann Gunkel, *What Remains of the Old Testament and other essays* (London: G. Allen & Unwin, 1928), pp. 13–56; Hermann Gunkel, *Genesis*, trans. Mark E. Biddle, Mercer Library of Biblical Studies (Macon, GA: Mercer Univ Press, 1997), in particular pp. xlviii–lxix; Martin Noth, *A History of Pentateuchal Traditions* (Englewood Cliffs, NJ: 1972); Wellhausen, *Grundrisse zum alten Testament*; G.W. Ahlström, "Oral and Written Transmission. Some Considerations," *Harvard Theological Review* 59 (1966): pp. 69–81.

or רז נהיה,[6] itself betrays a modern, post-print literate misunderstanding of the dynamics of orality. At issue is not the detailed microanalysis of hypothetical documents, but of traditional oral milieu. Now, after an apparent decline, issues of orality and literacy are again on the scholarly agenda.[7] This chapter does not call for a return to the efforts of scholars like Gunkel, but it argues three main points: 1) The cultural and cognitional difference between the modern, scholarly milieu and the world dominated by orality and emerging literacy; 2) the importance of the increasing 'interiorization' of writing on the scribal elite and culture in general and for the rise of the apocalypse in particular; and 3) the importance of these considerations for understanding prophecy, apocalyptic, and Persian interactions. This Oral Theory will be applied to the phenomena of the apocalypses and the various forces which influenced relevant trajectories in Second Temple Judaism. Given the limited resources extant for Ancient Judaism (and, indeed, for all ancient societies), it is not possible to reconstruct a history of oral traditions, as some scholars have previously attempted; such an endeavor could only be possible through an extended anthropological study of the given oral tradition of a kind which is rarely, if ever, produced (and, in any case, impossible with an extinct society). Scholars must be content with working with the textual indices extant, while understanding the dynamics which make it different from later, more thoroughly literate (interiorized—see below), contexts. First, an overview of relevant Oral Theory and its relation to influence is discussed. Afterwards, one aspect of Oral Theory (interiorization) is applied to the emergence of the apocalypses. Finally, the last section problematizes the traditional literary methodology utilized in Biblical Studies for questioning influence by raising questions begged by Oral Theory. These problems in themselves deserve a full study and can only be mentioned here by way of better contextualizing the discussion of Iranian influence.

---

[6] Daniel J. Harrington, *Wisdom Texts from Qumran* (London: Routledge, 1996), p. 49; Rejected by Matthew J. Goff, "Wisdom, Apocalypticism, and the Pedagogical Ethos of 4QInstruction," *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, eds. Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills, Symposium (Atlanta: SBL, 2005), p. 61, n. 19; Daniel J. Harrington, "The Raz Nihyeh in a Qumran Wisdom Text," *Revue Qumran* 17.1-4 (1996): pp. 549–553.

[7] Cf. the recent studies, Jonathan A. Draper, ed., *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity*. S.B.L. Semeia Studies (SBL, 2004); Catherine Hezser, *Jewish Literacy in Roman Palestine* (Tuebingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2001); Ehud Ben Zvi and Michael H. Floyd, eds., *Writings and Speech in Israelite and Ancient Near Eastern Prophecy*. Symposium (Atlanta: SBL, 2000); William M. Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book: the Textualization of Ancient Israel* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004); Piotr Bienkowski, et al., eds., *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society: Papers in Honour of Alan R. Millard* (London: T&T Clark, 2005); William Doan and Terry Giles, *Prophets, Performance, and Power: Performance Criticism of the Hebrew Bible* (New York: T&T Clark, 2005); David Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart: Origins of Scripture and Literature* (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2005); Cf. the new SBL seminar "Orality, Textuality, and the Form of the Hebrew Bible."

Oral Theory

The modern birth of Oral Theory belongs to Classics and Comparative Literature, particularly the studies of Parry and Lord in Homeric Studies.[8] However, the following overview takes its departure from the field of Communication and Media Studies.[9] The focus is on the effects of the media themselves, rather than poetry or formulicity *per se*, as has so occupied some earlier biblical scholarship.[10] Before proceeding, the terms which appear in this overview are defined; they will be further discussed subsequently. A *medium* is the format in which communication proceeds (E.g., speech, writing, television, etc.). *Orality* is the technology of speech-listening. This has three main forms: *Primary Orality*, the condition of peoples in which verbal communication only occurs oral-aurally, which prevails before the invention of writing and in various isolated communities today; *Residual Orality*, the form of orality that persists subsequent to writing; and *Secondary Orality*, the resurgence of aspects of primary orality post-electronics. *Literacy* is the technology of writing-reading. There are various levels of literacy, and it consists of several independent but related skills: reading, writing, and composition. *Interiorization* is the process whereby a technology becomes integrated into individual and societal psychological processes and becomes part of the cognitional and functional norm. Finally, *Amplification* is the phenomenon whereby aspects of a previous technology are at first increased by the advent of a new technology.

Marshall McLuhan demonstrates the life- and consciousness-shaping aspects of communicative technology.[11] His famous dictum "the medium is the message" declares the fundamental shifts created by media technologies in society and psychology. He shows that it

---

[8] See Milman Parry, *The Making of Homeric Verse: The Collected Papers of Milman Parry*, ed. Adam Parry (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1971); Albert B. Lord, *The Singer of Tales*, Second ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000); Eric A. Havelock, *The Greek Concept of Justice: From Its Shadow in Homer to Its Subtance in Plato* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1978); Eric A. Havelock, "The Coming of Literate Communication to Western Civilization," *Journal of Communication* 30 (1980): pp. 90–98; Berkley Peabody, *The Winged Word: A Study in the Technique of Ancient Greek Oral Composition as Seen Principally through Hesiod's Works and Days* (Albany, NY: State Univ. of New York Press, 1975); Øivind Anderson, "The Significance of Writing in Early Greece —a critical appraisal," *Literacy and Society*, eds. Karin Schousboe and Mogens Trolle Larsen (Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1989), pp. 73–90; Powell, *Origins of Greek Literature*; cf. the overview in Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, pp. 5–7, 16–30.

[9] The extended treatment of the theory here given is due to its unfamiliarity in Biblical Studies. The present author is only aware of one biblical scholar noting McLuhan's work (Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*, p. 2).

[10] E.g. the majority of articles in Robert C. Culley, ed., *Oral Tradition and Old Testament Studies: Semeia.* 5 (1976); for a discussion in the context of the Gospels, see Lou H. Silberman, ed., *Orality, Aurality and Biblical Narrative: Semeia* 39 (1987); Cf. Wilfred G. E. Watson, *Classical Hebrew Poetry: A Guide to its Techniques*, JSOTSS 26 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1984), pp. 136–137; Franz Bäuml, "Medieval texts and the Two Theories of Oral-Formulaic Composition: A Proposal for a Third Theory," *New Literary History* 16.1 (1984): pp. 237–265. For a newer take on the formula, see John Miles Foley, "Tradition and the Collective Talent: Oral Epic, Textual Meaning, and Receptionalist Theory," *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): pp. 203–222.

[11] Marshall McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, Routledge Classics (London: Routledge, 2001). For the link of modernity with print technology, see Marshall McLuhan, *The Gutenberg Galaxy* (Toronto: Univ of Toronto Press, 2002).

is not just the *context* or *content* of a message which gives meaning, but that the very *medium* in which it is given carries an implicit message, regardless of the intentions of the user. This message is one of change in social organization and patterns of thought—after all, communication is in many senses synonymous with society and thought. Because of the structural ramifications in both society and thought of communicative technology, "the message of any medium or technology is the change of scale or pace or pattern that it introduces into human affairs."[12] It is this effect—of the medium independent of its content—which is too often ignored by biblical scholarship, intent on the ideology or historicity of the content as it is. The very fact that *texts* are gaining religious authority in the period in which the investigation of Iranian influence is concerned must be as significant as the texts themselves. McLuhan puts this point forcibly:

> It is the medium that shapes and controls the scale and form of human association and action. The content or uses of such media are as diverse as they are ineffectual in shaping the form of human association. Indeed, it is only too typical that the 'content' of any medium blinds us to the character of the medium.[13]

McLuhan uses the light bulb to illustrate his point,[14] as it contains no verbal message to cloud the issue, unlike other media. The light bulb transforms society and the manner of human associations by eliminating the difference between day and night—no longer must practical limitations of daylight or candle wax determine lifestyles. This effect is independent of whether the light bulb is used for Midnight Mass or a sporting event[15]—the patterns of daily life are just as altered. It is important to note that, while the light bulb appears to be a frivolous example, this "technological change alters not only habits of life, but patterns of thought and valuation."[16] To stay with the example of the light bulb, this little device increases the hours available for work and recreation, reduces the need for candles, and increases the demand for ophthalmology. Even peoples who reject the new technology must adjust to the changes around them.[17] Even with media that carry explicit contents, such as television or print, the effect of the media themselves—in the formation of new patterns of association, valuation, and thought—parallels the effect of the light bulb. Effectively, a paradigm shift[18] occurs with each new technology—a shift which alters both those accepting of and those resistant to the new medium. The new technology does not so much create

---

[12] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 8.
[13] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 9.
[14] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 57.
[15] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 9.
[16] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 69.
[17] E.g., the Amish, who do not themselves use lightbulbs, must still use reflectors on their buggies and roadside barns to defend against the lightbulb-using cars.
[18] Cf. the famous study of Thomas S. Kuhn, *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, 3rd ed. (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1996).

thought *ex nihilo* as it changes *how* people think, and how they *relate* to one another. These principles also apply to two of the greatest revolutions in human society—the phonetic alphabet and print.

The phonetic alphabet transforms the word from sound to sight, but it does this in a way more revolutionary than the way in which ideograms or hieroglyphs do—it completely separates sound from meaning, and the individual from the group.[19] The principles of the phonetic alphabet are fragmentation and decontextualization. It does this by reducing speech to visualized sounds which are meaningless on their own, which is unlike cuneiform, hieroglyphs, or ideograms, all of which retain residual pictorial qualities. McLuhan illustrates the type of transformation implicit in the advent of the written word by comparing the American flag with the words 'American flag' written on a piece of cloth:

> To translate the rich visual mosaic of the Stars and Stripes into written form would deprive it of most its qualities of corporate image and of experience, yet the abstract literal bond would remain much of the same. Perhaps this illustration will serve to suggest the change tribal man experiences when he becomes literate. Nearly all the emotional and corporate family feeling is eliminated from his relationship with his social group. He is emotionally free to separate from the tribe and to become a civilized individual, a man of visual organization who has uniform attitudes, habits, and rights with all other civilized individuals.[20]

This illustration helps to demonstrate the effects of differing media on the same abstract content; while the written words 'American flag' and the actual item technically contain the same *content*, the media they use and the likely reactions they provoke differ. The violent, emotional debates over flag-burnings are hard to imagine for a piece of cloth with the words printed upon it. The latter invites a decontextualized, non-participatory, analytical reponse.

It is the creation of a visually uniform conception of rationality that so shockingly changes society. The alphabet creates patterns of linearity, uniformity, increased specialization and individuation. "It is in its power to extend patterns of visual uniformity and continuity that the 'message' of the alphabet is felt by cultures."[21] This pattern of thought creates new expectations and new types of relationships with previous traditions. The link of writing with bureaucracy is here telling.[22] Writing aids the increased complexity and uniformity on which bureaucracy and empire depend. It is no accident that the spread of

---

[19] Cf. Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 46, 73.
[20] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 89. This is exactly the personal experience described by F. Niyi Akinnaso, "Literacy and Individual Conciousness," *Literate Systems and Individual Lives*, eds. Edward M. Jennings and Alan C. Purves (New York: SUNY Press, 1991), pp. 73–94, even though he explicitly denies this.
[21] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 91.
[22] Cf. Schaper, "Death of the Prophet," pp. 63–79.

the alphabet in the Near East coincided with the largest empire the Near East had yet seen, or that the advent of literacy in Greece preceded Alexander and Rome.[23]

The situation of contemporary technology places the scholar in a position in which it is both easier and more difficult than earlier generations to relate to the change created by the transition from orality to literacy as mediated by the phonetic alphabet. The radical message of fragmentation and repeatability propagated by print technology has dominated Western tradition for centuries.[24] Print fosters the identification of logic with the linear, and amplifies the effect of the alphabet. The Western scholarly paradigm is formed with a print mentality. Academic standards of consistency and logical reasoning are entirely based upon a print-centered mentality. McLuhan notes, "We have confused reason with literacy, and rationalism with a single technology."[25] Literacy does not *create* logic; it does, however, promote a link between logic and *linearity* and a focus on closed, context-less systems. It fosters individuality and specialization, enabling detailed analysis to the detriment of situational context, creating the phenomenon whereby "the specialist is the one who never makes small mistakes while moving toward the grand fallacy."[26] In other words, the close analysis enabled by writing makes it easier to miss the forest for the trees. This dissertation itself, by its very printedness, is testimony to the power print technology has in modern scholarship. Yet, the advent of electronic media has to some degree broken the hegemony of the printed word and reinstated a type of 'secondary orality.' The phenomenon of 'postmodernity' as compared to 'modernity' is more linked to the advent of electronic media against print than often realized. Radio, television, film, and the Internet reinstate a kind of immediacy and 'tribal interconnectivity' which threatens the linear, visualist orientation of print. But this 'secondary orality' is one which is subsequent to, and dependent upon, print literacy;[27] therefore the comparison with 'primary orality' is limited.[28]

---

[23] Cf. Walter J. Ong, "Orality, Literacy and Medieval Textualization," *New Literary History* 16.1 (1984): p. 6; Paul J. Achtemeier, "Omne verbum sonat: The New Testament and the Oral Environment of Late Western Antiquity," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 109.1 (1990): p. 11; C. Jan Swearingen, "Oral Hermeneutics during the Transition to Literacy: The Contemporary Debate," *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): p. 142; and discussion below.

[24] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 173. Cf. McLuhan, *The Gutenberg Galaxy*.

[25] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 16.

[26] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 135.

[27] See discussion below on the overlap and amplification during the early stages of a new technology.

[28] On 'secondary orality' and electronic (post-)modernity, see Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 137; Cf. M. Jimmie Killingsworth, "Product and Process, Literacy and Orality: An Essay on Composition and Culture," *College Composition and Communication* 44.1 (1993): p. 30; Stephen A. Tyler, "On Being Out of Words," *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): p. 133, 136. Modern sceptics of orality theory betray a misunderstanding of the nature of contemporary scholarship; while it is indeed true that 'postmodernism' is in vogue in many parts of academia, it is little recognized that this postmodernism occurs within the radically print-literate milieu of scholarship. While modern (print) paradigms are shifting, academia is more inherently print-oriented than society at large, and therefore the influence of print is more fundamental. As Ong notes, "Unlike members of a primary oral culture, who are turned outward because they have had little occasion to turn inward, we are turned outward because we have turned inward." Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 134.

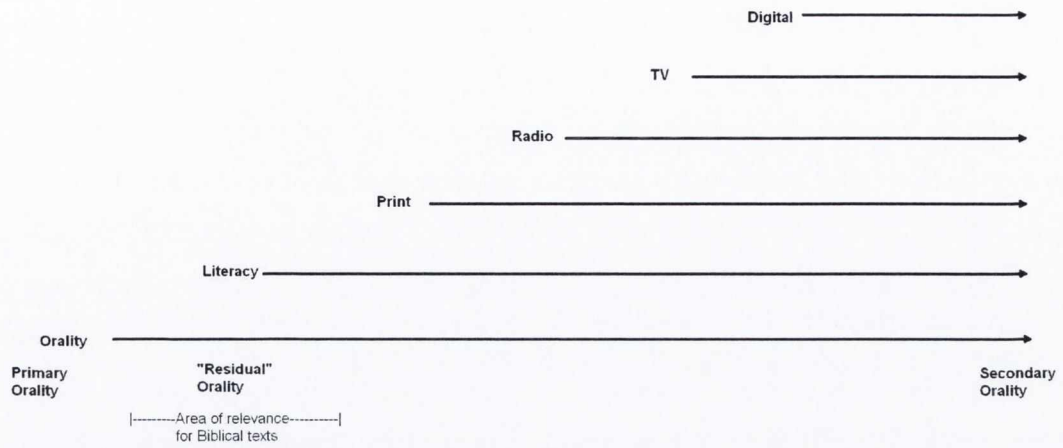


Figure 12: Media and Their Overlaps
Author's Own.

The importance of the printing press for human history is often acknowledged. The implications of that technology on social structures and patterns of thought is less so. Modern academia takes the typed word for granted; it operates using carefully indexed,[29] labelled, sorted, and classified typographic information.[30] All of this information is neatly ordered, both on the page in neat textual rows and on the bookshelves in neat physical rows; it all invites careful visual comparison and analysis. The drive towards standardization can be seen in the print-fostered birth of dictionaries, standardized spellings, and national languages.[31] The Enlightenment-era (modernist) patterns of thought associated with many of these features are often challenged by post-modernist critiques, but the extent of their support in the medium of print receives much less attention.

The print paradigm is currently shifting with the advent of electronic media such as the Internet and email. These media encourage immediate access to and dissemination of bits of information. Information can be hyperlinked to other information and it can be instantly saved or passed on; it offers an ever-expanding horizon of information. This instantaneousness, however, has the effect of eliminating both depth and context; it is the medium of the 'sound-byte' (itself a phrase originally referring to another electronic medium) *par excellence*. New types of social interaction based on hyperlinks rather than proximity (or necessarily even of personal choice) are also created. The changes in society and the

[29] 'Index' as in lists of items with pre-determined page numbers.
[30] Walter J. Ong, "Orality, Literacy and Medieval Textualization," *New Literary History* 16.1 (1984): pp. 1–2; Walter J. Ong, *The Presence of the Word: Some Prolegomena for Cultural and Religious History* (London: Yale University Press, 1967), pp. 85–86; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 128.
[31] McLuhan, *The Gutenberg Galaxy*, pp. 229–231; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 128.

possibilities and tensions created thereby should be recognizable to the contemporary scholar.[32] As a model of the societal and mental shifts of technological revolution it is revealing; as technology which is still dependent upon print, it is misleading.

Walter J. Ong has taken the lead of McLuhan and further explored the implications of the technology of the alphabet on society and modes of thought. Perhaps the primary consequence of writing is 'objectivity' and 'distance,' or to use other terminology, 'alienation.' Word as speech is of necessity tied to the existential;[33] it indicates the current present-ness of the speaker. Indeed, it more directly indicates the presence of the speaker than any other sense: "Sound is more real or existential than other sense objects, despite the fact that it is also more evanescent."[34] Before the advent of literacy, humankind related to each other and to reality primarily through speech–sound. Speech necessitates the presence and direct interaction of the other; one cannot communicate with another without being in their presence. Writing changes this. "Writing introduces a whole new set of structures within the psyche: communication which lacks the normal social aspect of communication, encounter with one who is not present, participation in the thought of others without commitment or involvement."[35] This contrasts with the original (in historical and personal terms) method of communication. "The paradigm of communication is dialogue, a two-way transaction in a world of sound, which is the world of response, of echo. Vision by contrast is of itself a one-way operation."[36] It was this non-existential aspect of writing which Ong notes was a major cause of the resistance to Sophism in Greece.[37]

Awareness of the changes implicit in the new medium of the alphabet was partially apprehended already in the Achaemenid period. Plato's dialogue between Phaedrus and Socrates is very intriguing for its comment on the effects of literacy.[38] Socrates cites an Egyptian myth to indict writing for causing loss of memorizing-skills, true instruction, and creating the appearance of false wisdom. He claims that written words are inferior to spoken as they can neither be questioned nor can explain nor defend themselves. He further claims that the serious philosopher will not waste his time with writing, bar providing for the "forgetfulness of old age"; writings are, therefore, never to be taken seriously. This passage presumes that written works are still considered somewhat of a novelty and disruptive of

---

[32] Cf. Killingsworth, "Product and Process," p. 31.

[33] The term 'existential' (lower case) here simply refers to 'in relation to the moment' rather than the body of (although related) philosophy known as 'Existential' or 'Existentialism.' For a concise explication of this difference set within a history of Western philosophy and theology see Paul Tillich, *A History of Christian Thought* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1968), pp. 539–541.

[34] Ong, *Presence of the Word*, p. 111.

[35] Ong, *Presence of the Word*, p. 126.

[36] Ong, *Presence of the Word*, p. 167.

[37] Ong, *Presence of the Word*, p. 57.

[38] Plato, *Phaedrus*, trans. Harold North Fowler, *Plato I: Euthyphro, Apology, Crito, Phaedo, Phaedrus*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1982), pp. 561–575 (274B–278C).

traditional methods of education and learning. Socrates cites loss of context and proper instruction, and (implicitly) potential loss of traditions (due to lack of true memory). Of course this appears ironic, as the rejection is itself written. Yet, it is instructive to see how this critique of literacy parallels critiques of the computer upon its introduction.[39] Just as the computer and other electronic media threatened the print paradigm, so literacy threatens the oral paradigm.

A further implication of writing is the process of education. The manner and function of pedagogy is radically altered by the introduction of writing. Without writing all learning by necessity must come from a master or sage, who personally imparts the relevant wisdom, skill, or knowledge to (chosen) pupils. While the skills of writing and reading must be taught, they impart to the pupil the ability to study the thoughts and works of others independently of a pedagogical relationship with them. This was a major reservation of Plato's Socrates noted above.[40] It also adds a dimension of artisanship to the position of sage—writing requires training amanuenses as much as it requires 'philosophers.' Over time, writing shifts authority and gravity away from the wise *person* to the wise person's *text*, and from wisdom as situated in a tradition to individual interpretation and appropriation of a text. This tension between holy keepers of tradition and holy texts is paralleled with various developments of the Protestant Reformation. Eventually writing gives birth to the 'author' as an isolated genius rather than a shaper and transmitter of tradition.[41]

The advent of the letter has further effects. After separating words from immediate context and participation, the linearity and visual nature encourages the dissection and comparison of the content in a manner not encouraged orally. As Ong states, "Abstractly sequential, classificatory, explanatory examination of phenomena or of stated truths is impossible without writing and reading."[42] Two oral stories quite simply cannot be compared in the same manner as two textual variants can be. A visualist orientation transforms ideas of logic, time, and persuasion. It is not that writing creates logic, it changes it to a new form or pattern. This fostering of new types of abstraction leads on from the decontextualization of language from existential concerns. A field study by Luria nicely demonstrates the difference between contextual-existential and decontextualized-abstract logics. Both literates and oral peoples were given cards with four items (an axe, a saw, a hammer, and a log) and asked to separate them into two groups. Literates separated out the log; oral people refused to remove

---

[39] Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, pp. 79–83; Cf. Swearingen, "Oral Hermeneutics," p. 144.
[40] Cf. similar reservations in his letters; see Plato, *Seventh Letter*, trans. R. G. Bury, *Plato IX: Timaeus, Critias, Cleitophon, Menexenus, Epistles* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1975), pp. 531–532, 535, 541 (341c–d, 344c); also *the Second Letter* (pp. 415–417, in the same volume).
[41] Cf. Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 22; Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*, pp. 7–8; Karel van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture and the Making of the Hebrew Bible* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2007), p. 23, 47–48.
[42] Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 8.

the log from the list of items the literates classed as 'tools.'[43] The existential perspective quite naturally links the axe, saw, and hammer with that with which they are used (the log); the 'detached' view links the axe with other 'useful' items in general. Neither association is 'illogical,' they simply operate on different assumptions and in different contexts. This principle must be seriously considered when approaching texts which likely come from a residually oral background: the logic may be less abstractly systematic than a modern interpreter may desire.

The movement towards comparison and analysis flows from the nature of writing. By placing words visually before a person in sequential order—but frozen in that order—writing enables the comparison of passages repeatedly and in non-sequential order. Two speeches heard back-to-back can be compared in content, style, and theme; but it is much easier to analyze detailed differences with the transcriptions of those same speeches placed visually side-by-side. The eye is able to separate and reconnect any segment of each speech as it wills; the ear can only hear the words in the flow of context. The element of time creates a paradox—while orality is linear (i.e., sequential and evanescent), by its nature it is relational and fosters relational thought; writing, by removing the sequential element of time, allows the stable information to be dissected (i.e., analyzed and decontextualized) and reassembled into logical rows.[44]

This difference between writing and speaking can still be observed on some level today. One has different expectations for consistency in a spoken, narrated story than from a novel. If the (oral) narrator makes a mistake and corrects it later, the audience is more likely to either miss it or accept it in passing than if it is written on paper. Tannen discusses interesting differences in this regard in reference to a scholarly conference. She makes interesting and perceptive comments on interaction between oral and literate modes and the modern expectations of each; however, her critique of Oral Theory fails to understand the concept of 'primary orality' (see below) or that academic thought has a literacy which is highly interiorized, such that scholars' use of orality is therefore highly influenced by literate modes.[45] Indeed, the concept of an academic paper presupposes a pre-prepared text, itself based on the reading of other texts. It is important to note with her that orality never vanishes; new media change the relation to, rather than replace, predecessors.

---

[43] Aleksandr R. Luria, *Cognitive Development: Its Cultural and Social Foundations*, trans. Martin Lopez-Morillas and Lynn Solotaroff (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1976), pp. 45–79. Luria found a similar phenomenon with the naming and classification of colours; the oral subjects consistently named them according to objects in their life-world, see pp. 26–28; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, pp. 49–55; Cf: the discussion of classification and lists in Jack Goody, *The Domestication of the Savage Mind* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press, 1977), chapter 5 (pp. 74–111).

[44] Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 9, 103; McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 218; cf. 135.

[45] Deborah Tannen, "The Commingling of Orality and Literacy in Giving a Paper at a Scholarly Conference," *American Speech* 63.1 (1988): pp. 34–43.

Ong discusses orality in three different modes: what he calls 'primary orality,' 'residual orality,' and 'secondary orality.'[46] 'Primary orality' is the use of language before the appearance of writing; 'residual orality' is the use of oral modes after the introduction of literacy; 'secondary orality' is the reoccurrence of elements of primary orality within a mindset structured by print following the advent of electronic media. To compare secondary orality, which is based upon the previous 'interiorizing' of literacy, with primary orality is to completely ignore or misunderstand how writing (and in particular, print) reshapes thought. Tannen's critique (and others like hers) therefore miss much of this point.[47] Indeed, much of the criticism stems from literacy's tendency to analyze and dichotomize dialectics (relationships).[48] The work of communications theorists such as McLuhan, Ong, and Goody emphasize the necessity to understand the relation between the emerging technology (in this case literacy) and the previous 'technology' (in this case speech) and how complex that situation truly is.[49] This relationship varies in contexts, but has certain similar and recognizable features: it amplifies or *intensifies* certain aspects of the previous technology to a degree higher then they were before; and it creates a tension between the new modes of thought/technology and the older one.[50]

In noting the changes literacy effects, there are three basic categories to understand: orality, literacy, and the interaction between the two. It is of course the latter which is pertinent to most investigation (and the one of most relevance to Iranian influence) and the most difficult to elucidate. Both McLuhan and Ong point to a paradoxical relationship between a new technology and the previous form: the new technology does not replace the previous one, but *changes the way in which a society relates to it.*[51] Indeed, a new technology tends to increase certain tendencies of the previous technology before its own hegemony sets in.[52] To understand this, one only need recall how the personal computer was initially expected to

---

[46] Farrell appears to confuse the categories of 'residual' and 'primary' orality, though his overview is otherwise useful; Thomas J. Farrell, "Kelber's Breakthrough," *Semeia* 39 (1987): pp. 27–46.

[47] Cf. Tyler, "On Being Out of Words," p. 132; Killingsworth, "Product and Process," p. 30; Linda Woodbridge, "Add Context and Stir, or, the Sadness of Grendel: Thoughts on Early Modern Orality and Literacy," *Yearbook of English Studies* 25 (1995): pp. 23–24.

[48] Tyler, "On Being Out of Words," pp. 32–33. Cf. Kierkegaard's critiques of Hegelian dialectic; this permeates his works, but may perhaps be glimpsed in short in Søren Kierkegaard, *Philosophical Fragments; Johannes Climacus*, Kierkegaard's Writings VII, eds. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong (Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1985), pp. 108–109, or writ large in his Søren Kierkegaard, *Either/Or*, trans. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong, vol. I, Kierkegaard's Writings III (Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1987), Søren Kierkegaard, *Either/Or*, trans. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong, vol. II, Kierkegaard's Writings IV (Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1990).

[49] Cf. his own defense along these lines in Walter J. Ong, "A Comment on 'Arguing about Literacy'," *College English* 50.6 (1988): pp. 700–701.

[50] Cf. McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 8, 28, 71; Ong, "Orality, Literacy and Medieval Textualization," pp. 1–12.

[51] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 28; Goody, *The Domestication of the Savage Mind*, p. 15; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 79.

[52] Cf: Ong, *Presence of the Word*, pp. 53–87.

eliminate the use of paper, but instead at first grossly increased its usage. Thus, particularly as literacy begins to be interiorized in a society, it *both transforms the nature of orality while extending its patterns.*[53] This principle is very important, but often neglected by scholars. Many of the criticisms of Oral Theory in the work of Ong, McLuhan, and Goody seem to ignore this dynamic; when scholars critique Oral Theory by claiming that a mixture of oral and literate is more typical than pure orality, they miss both this phenomenon of intensification as well as the fact that in order for orality and literacy to interact, literacy must already be present.[54]

Some scholars dismiss or minimize the validity or usefulness of an understanding of orality along the lines of Ong, usually citing anti-colonialist critique, claiming inadequate anthropological proof, or linking the two.[55] Oral Theory, however, does not equate literacy with intelligence or logic—it, rather, points out how the *literate, scholarly world* has equated logic with literacy. Orality is not illogical, it has a *different type* of logic, one which is suited to its medium.[56] Print (and modernity) associated logic with the linear and the analytic; orality has a situational and relational logic. Indeed, in many aspects, Ong and McLuhan's work can be seen as a critique of literacy as much as, if not more than, one of orality. This is explicitly stated by Ong as reason for his use of *orality* instead of *preliterate* or another term which would presuppose literacy.[57] However, even if Oral Theory has been used in racist or colonialist terms by some scholars, the validity of a theory is independent of its potential uses or misuses. Indeed, the anthropological data seem to confirm it,[58] and it must be remembered that the description of difference is a separate matter from valuating that difference.

---

[53] Cf. Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 80, 150.

[54] Cf. critiques of Goody: Hezser, *Jewish Literacy in Roman Palestine*, p. 10; Ruth Finnegan, "What is Orality—If Anything?," *Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies* 14 (1990): pp. 130–149. Perhaps the strongest critic of Oral Theory in Biblical Studies is Millard, who tends to see a wide modern-style literacy in Palestine, typically appealing to the vagarities of archaeological preservation; e.g., Alan R. Millard, "The Practice of Writing in Ancient Israel," *Biblical Archaeologist* 35.4 (1972): pp. 97–111; Alan R. Millard, "The Knowledge of writing in Late Bronze Age Palestine," *Languages and Cultures in Contact: At the Crossroads of Civilizations in the Syro-Mesopotamian Realm. Proceedings of the 42nd RAI*, eds. K. van Lerberghe and G. Voet, Orientalia Lovaniensia Analecta 96 (Leuven: Peeters, 1999), pp. 317–326; Alan R. Millard, "Oral Proclamation and Written Record: spreading and preserving information in Ancient Israel," *Michael: Historical, Epigraphical and Biblical Studies in Honor of Prof. Michael Heltzer*, eds. Yitzhak Avishur and Robert Deutsch (Tel Aviv: Archaeological Center Publications, 1999), pp. 237–241; his most recent discussion, Alan R. Millard, *Reading and Writing in the Time of Jesus*, The Biblical Seminar 69 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000), does not even mention any oral theorists when discussing the evidence (chapter 7), nor does Ong appear in the bibliography.

[55] See in particular Pieter J. J. Botha, "Cognition, Orality-Literacy, and Approaches to First-Century Writings," pp. 37–63; J. A. "Bobby" Loubser, "Moving Beyond Colonialist Discourse: Understanding Oral Theory and Cultural Difference in the Context of Media Analysis," pp. 65–82, and the response, Claudia V. Camp, "Oralities, Literacies, and Colonialism in Antiquity and Contemporary Scholarship," pp. 193–217, all in Draper, ed., *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity*.

[56] Powell, *Origins of Greek Literature*, pp. 22–23, seems to miss this point.

[57] Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 13.

[58] Scriber and Cole claim the effect is due to schooling rather than to literacy, *per se*; but they fail to note how literacy demands schooling, and schooling, in their sense, demands literacy. See Sylvia Scribner and Michael Cole, *The Psychology of Literacy* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1981). Cf the following anthropological studies: Goody, *The Domestication of the Savage Mind*; Jack Goody, *The Interface between the Written and the Oral* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1987); Luria, *Cognitive Development*; Jack Goody, *The Power of the Written*

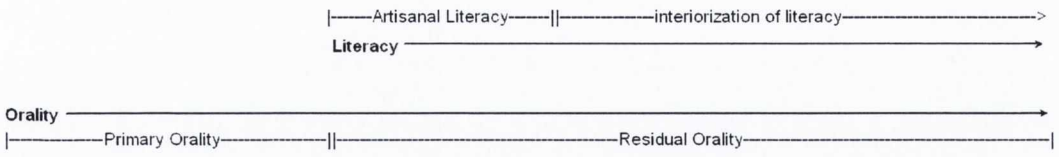


Figure 13: Orality and Literacy
Author's Own.

In his work Ong notes a variety of characteristics of primary Orality.[59] For the present purposes only a few of these characters are discussed. Particular emphasis will be placed on the 'existential' versus detached dynamics, holistic understanding versus analysis, and the idea of visual uniformity. These issues are particularly relevant in connection with the questions of sources and traditional redaction criticism. These characteristics are carried into the early stages of literacy and are amplified before their dialectically opposite tendencies begin to take hold among the literate classes.

Susan Niditch applies orality-literacy considerations to approaching the biblical texts in her *Oral World and Written Word*. In an attempt to better understand the context of the Hebrew Bible, Niditch proposes an 'oral-literate continuum' under which it is possible to analyze orality and literacy in a more nuanced manner.[60] Instead of arguing along the lines of Gunkel—treating oral traditions as textual chunks of a distant past—or of Millard—treating Israelites as modern literates—she explores how orality is evidenced well into the biblical period. She notes that writing has various functions, many of which operate within an 'oral register' where the written word contains religio-numinous implications.[61] She shows that the archeological evidence towards the use of writing reveals how supposed evidence of literacy is better understood as highlighting typically oral thought-patterns,[62] and that the basic

---

Tradition, Smithsonian Series in Ethnographic Inquiry (Washington, DC: Smithsonian, 2000). Interestingly, Akinnaso, "Literacy and Individual Conciousness," pp. 73–94, while explicitly challenging the theories of Goody (p. 75, 92), his own personal experiences are classic examples of decontextualization and linear analysis (particularly p. 90). From the perspective of folklore, see Bengt Holbek, "What the Illiterate Think of Writing," *Literacy and Society*, eds. Karen Schousboe and Mogens Trolle Larsen (Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1989), pp. 183–196.

[59] In *Interfaces of the Word*, Ong notes seven general characteristics of oral thought and expression. These are a) stereotyped or formulaic expression; b) standardization of themes; c) epithetic identification for disambiguation of classes or individuals; d) 'heavy' or ceremonial characters; e) formulary, ceremonial appropriation of history; f) praise and vituperation; g) copiousness. (Ong, *Interfaces of the Word*, p. 102); In addition, in *Orality and Literacy*, he offered nine characteristics, phrased slightly differently: a) additive rather than subordinative; b) aggregative rather than analytic; c) redundant or copious (g above); d) conservative or traditionalist; e) close to the human life world; f) agonistically toned (f above); g) empathetic and participatory; h) homeostatic; i) situational rather than abstract (Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, pp. 36–57).

[60] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 3–7.

[61] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 58–59; cf. Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*, pp. 24–34; Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart*, p. 121.

[62] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, ch. 3.

supposition of an original source text is problematic.[63] Her analysis leads her to reject the documentary hypothesis on the grounds that it too heavily represents literate thinking.[64]

Niditch's work is an excellent starting point and heralds a more fruitful use of Oral Theory in Biblical Studies. In exploring the sources of apocalyptic, it is important to note the interaction and natures of communicative media, and to see how the radical changes in society and thought-patterns are influenced, and perhaps even partially determined, by the changes in media. These changes would have affected all of society, not just the few who were literate. The structure of authority, the nature of education, and the division of labour are all affected by the advent of literacy, just as the transmission, alteration, and preservation of traditions is altered.

To summarize this lengthy discussion of Oral Theory/ Media Theory, a few methodological principles can be distilled. The first is that oral and written modes vary in their relationship to previous traditions; orality is contextual and aggregative, while writing is more critical and distant. All oral performance is in a shared context; writing decontextualizes previous traditions. It is therefore important to analyze the logic inherent in a text before deciding that it is 'illogical' or poorly redacted: it could be the record of an oral performance. Second, the concept of verbatim quotation is a very literate idea and largely anachronistic for a largely residually oral culture. This is due to the evanescent nature of orality itself as well as the physical difficulty of consulting passages in rare, unwieldy, and expensive scrolls or tablets. Third, the introduction of writing alters social structures and patterns of thought; this is most easily recognizable in the development of bureaucracy and new types of education. This is a dialectical process, however, and proceeds through interiorization and amplification.

Implications for Methodology

The type of scholarship commonly known as text-critical, as exemplified by Michael Fishbane's *magnum opus*, *Biblical Interpretation in Ancient Israel*, potentially misunderstands the dynamics of the oral and literate media. Fishbane extensively documents cases of scribal alterations and textual quotations in the received biblical text. However, the type of analysis which he uses presupposes an entirely (modern) literate mindset. While he acknowledges that oral transmission must have occurred,[65] he continues his analysis as if the written tradition which is extant originated, was transmitted, and was altered solely as a written tradition. The legal materials of the Hebrew Bible serve as an apt example. It is commonly recognized that

---

[63] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 75–76.
[64] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 110–114. See also Whybray, *Making of the Pentateuch*, pp. 110–113; Nielsen, *Oral Tradition*, pp. 91–103; Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*, p. 10.
[65] Michael Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation in Ancient Israel* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1985), p. 23

"frequent lacunae or ambiguities"[66] in the text make it inoperable as a law code; indeed, Fishbane admits it is "but an expression of a much more comprehensive oral law."[67] In the context of the limited literacy of the Ancient Near East, it is dubious to analyze the text solely in reference to itself, and to read it is as if the scribes who wrote it did the same. It is much more plausible that the legal materials were written in reference to an (common knowledge) oral tradition which, over time, was lost. It is immaterial whether or not the laws were written as innovations, clarifications, or examples of justice; what may be more important to the understanding of the texts is the change in the attitudes of the scribes towards various texts as their surrounding oral traditions and imperial contexts either alter, fade, or disappear—in other words, when the scribes begin to treat the texts as self-sufficient.[68]

There is no doubt that scribes altered texts. Nor is the complexity of textual transmission to be understated. There is a serious question, however, as to whether every 'deviance' or 'variation' is due to exegetical or scribal written innovation—it could simply reflect an oral tradition or traditions (now lost), the typical vagaries of human memory, or, more significantly, the original author/editor might not have recognized a difficulty or contradiction at all. To cite just one example, Fishbane claims that Jer 17:21–2 is an exegetical innovation upon Deut 5:12–14.[69] He claims the similarities and differences between the wordings of the two passages on the Sabbath reveal a need by Ancient Israel "to camouflage and legitimate its exegetical innovations."[70] The differences between the two, however, are more *visual* than *aural*, specific rather than general. In the prophetic passage Jeremiah takes a general principle (not to do work on the Sabbath) and in good hortatory fashion applies it to a specific ('existential') situation: the carrying of burdens into the city on the Sabbath. In the context of the extant book of Jeremiah, the presentation of this critique to the people at the city gates presages the entry of the city by foreign invaders as punishment for such violations. So, rather than being a scribal innovation disguised as an ancient quotation, the passage might be better understood as the typical work of a religious orator—applying principles to the here-and-now of the audience. This understanding is underscored when the two passages are read aloud, rather than viewed side by side (as Fishbane indeed presents them): as heard, the passages appear to be more parallel than they

---

[66] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 92

[67] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 95

[68] Cf. F.R. Kraus, "Ein centrales Problem des altmesopotamisehen Rechtes: Was ist der Codex Hammu-Rabi?," *Genava* 8 (1960): pp. 283–296; Anne Fitzpatrick-McKinley, *The Transformation of Torah from Scribal Advice to Law*, JSOTSS 287 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1999), pp. 146–182; Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, chapter 8.

[69] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, pp. 131–134.

[70] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 134.

appear to be contradictory. Even if the passage in Jeremiah is intended to allude to Deut 5:12–14, it is likely the variations are due to the nature of memory rather than calculated variance.[71] The attempt to treat them in so exacting, verbatim manner is more likely to be misleading than illuminating.[72]

The above example demonstrates that to think that all 'quotations' must refer to a previous *text* is to think like a modern literate scholar, not like an inhabitant of a largely residually oral culture.[73] As the Hebrew Bible increasingly became a recognized canon, the likelihood increased that teachers and preachers, be they priest, prophet, or scribe, would directly quote the authoritative text. But even here, it is important to note that before print the notion of quotation itself is much more fluid and closer to modern concepts of paraphrase than verbatim quotation. Even after the 'canonization' of texts, quotation on most occasions would be from memory rather than direct visual copying.[74] Scrolls were expensive and rare, and it was likely even the most literate and papyrus-laden of scribes more often drew on memory than on actual visual reference to a text.[75] In addition, phrases taken from a scriptural milieu can simply be used as part of a communal vocabulary without direct, intended reference to the original passage, e.g. the career of the phrase 'hewers of wood.'[76] The usage of stock phrases and epithets is here cautionary.[77]

In discussing biblical material where texts appear to have similar language, content, or form, a literary dependency, in one direction or another, is generally assumed. While direct literary dependency is *possible*, it is not always *necessary* when dealing with 'traditional' materials. It is fairly clear that an Exodus tradition existed in pre-exilic Israel. At various times this tradition and its motifs were used and appropriated in the Hebrew Bible, something which must have been a common occurrence. When approaching a text which appears to utilize Exodus motifs, it is appropriate to ask whether the use is a literary quotation, or whether it is simply another use of the general tradition. Was the text in question performed orally or was it originally written? If performed orally, would the audience have viewed it as a quotation of *x*, or merely have understood it within the 'Exodus'

---

[71] Robert K. McIver and Marie Carroll, "Experiments to Develop Criteria for Determining the Existence of Written Sources and Their Potential Implications for the Synoptic Problem," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 121.4 (2002): pp. 667–687.

[72] Cf. Walter J. Ong, "Maranatha: Death and Life in the Text of the Book," *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 45.4 (1977): p. 433, "To think of memory as essentially verbatim is to resort to an unreal model for memory fostered by literacy and its practice of transcibing texts." Aaron, *Etched in Stone*, p. 36, also sees this as too "narrow," although he still sees Oral Theory as "hopelessly circular" (pp. 170–172).

[73] Similar concerns are expressed by Schultz, *Search for Quotation*, in particular pp. 109–112.

[74] Cf. Achtemeier, "Omne verbum sonat," pp. 26–27.

[75] van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture*, p. 23; cf. Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, p. 41; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 93; Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart*, p. 4, 40.

[76] Marianne Elliott, *The Catholics of Ulster: a History* (London: Penguin, 2000), p. 343; a search on Google Scholar reveals a large number of contexts for the phrase's usage.

[77] Cf. Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 10–20.

tradition? In any given society traditional stories, motifs, proverbs, etc., will be used, reused, and refashioned by various members of that society for various purposes. All of these adaptations of the traditions may occur independently or in tandem, but they all operate within a milieu which is understood on a broader scale than any single given representation of the tradition. In other words, an individual textual occurrence of a story, motif, or phrase is not necessarily the wellspring or touchstone of its constituent tradition.

Further, an oral tradition does not cease to exist orally once it is written down, nor does the writing of the tradition need to have an immediate impact on the oral form of a tradition (indeed, it is likely not to). The same tradition can be written more than once, each time recording the same strand of tradition in various oral forms, without any knowledge or dependency on previous or simultaneous written forms. It is therefore problematic to declare or assume *literary* dependency between texts dealing with traditional motifs without clear reasons to do so. Linking the date of a text to the date of a tradition (or form of a tradition) is equally problematic.

The influence of a literate 'scribality' should be understood in concert with the above considerations. The scribes were operating within an oral tradition; they were also operating in a new milieu—the increased use and hegemony of writing both for the creation and preservation of tradition. As written traditions become more normative, more of the overall culture will refer to them—developing the phenomena of re-oralized texts, the ideal of verbatim memorization, and textual hermeneutics—which seems to be the situation of the Persian and Hellenistic periods. "It is the mechanism of writing and its virtually immediate effect of decontextualization that over time opens these texts (unlike speech) to reformulation, critical attention, reflection and commentary."[78]

The scribal situation—in the context of the oral world—was a relatively new one. Niditch's work demonstrates how much of the Hebrew Bible still evidences oral-monumental and 'magical' uses of writing.[79] Yet, the collection of texts created a new situation, one which had to alter the ways in which the scribes thought (even while their thought processes were closer to primary orality then post-print mentality). As both Fishbane and Fitzpatrick-McKinley noted above, the situation of writing—to which these scribes most likely dedicated their lives—offered these scribes a new window to evaluate, reflect upon, and edit their religious and cultural traditions. Perhaps they even discovered traditions that had been generally forgotten. It has long been noted that the apocalyptic literature is scribal

[78] Fitzpatrick-McKinley, *The Transformation of Torah*, pp. 15–16. While this was written in regards to legal texts and codes, it can be applied to the traditional religious material in general.
[79] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 54–57, 70–71, 104–105.

in character,[80] and it has been postulated that one of the differences between prophetic and apocalyptic literatures is their original orality and literacy, respectively.[81] Grabbe has recently challenged this distinction, however, by claiming that both literatures and phenomena evidence orality and literacy.[82] To what extent does the increasing interiorization in the Ancient Near East generally and in the scribal class in particular play a role in the difference between prophetic and apocalyptic literatures, if any?

It is clear from both the Hebrew Bible and Ancient Near Eastern parallels that prophets operated primarily orally, even when their oracles were written.[83] These written oracles served more as monuments to the gods or reports in lieu of presence than records in the modern sense.[84] But to what extent do the prophetic books reflect original oral oracles, and how much later scribal redaction? That question, indeed, has been a project of biblical scholarship for many years. This question cannot be addressed here. Suffice it to say that the increasing authority of the text evident in Judaean religion had an impact not only on the genres and forms of religious expression, but on the social structures and thought patterns: it is in this context that prophetic literature 'died' and the apocalypse was born.[85]

Two examples will illustrate the relevance of Oral Theory to the present study. The first, Jer 36, demonstrates the complex relationship the extant text has with literacy; the second, Second Isaiah, introduces how media analysis should inform questions of sources and foreign influence. It is not necessary or possible here to analyze each fully,[86] rather these examples merely serve to demonstrate the usefulness of oral awareness.

---

[80] E.g., Jonathan Z. Smith, "Wisdom and Apocalyptic," *Religious Syncretism in Antiquity*, ed. Berger A. Pearson (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975), pp. 140, 149.

[81] Cf: the last two articles in Martti Nissinen, ed., *Prophecy in its Ancient Near Eastern Context*. Symposium (Atlanta: SBL, 2000); Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, pp. 484–487.

[82] See his various articles in Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak, eds., *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship*. JSPSS 46 (London: T & T Clark, 2003), p. 11, 30–31, 109, 116, 119–124.

[83] See Karel van der Toorn "Mesopotamian Prophecy between Immanence and Transcendence: a Comparison of Old Babylonian and Neo-Assyrian Prophecy" and Martti Nissinen "The Socioreligious Role of the Neo-Assyrian Prophets" both in Martti Nissinen, ed., *Prophecy in its Ancient Near Eastern Context*. Symposium (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2000), pp. 71–114; Cf. the primary sources edited in Nissinen, *Prophets and Prophecy in the Ancient Near East*. In this context it is interesting to consider Davis's theory that Ezekiel was the first *writing* prophet. See Ellen F. Davis, *Swallowing the Scroll: Textuality and the Dynamics of Discourse in Ezekiel's Prophecy*, JSOTSS 78 (Sheffield: Almond, 1989). However, Margaret S. Odell, "'You Are What You Eat': Ezekiel and the Scroll," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 117.2 (1998): p. 242, 244, denies that the scroll Ezekiel eats stands for writing *per se*, but rather the symbolic permanence of judgment (and thus squarely in the 'oral mode.')

[84] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 104–105.

[85] Martti Nissinen, "The Dubious Image of Prophecy," *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*, eds. Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 26–41. It is to be wished that these considerations would have been included in Michael H. Floyd, "The Production of Prophetic Books in the Early Second Temple Period," *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*, eds. Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 276–297.

[86] The author intends in the future to pursue such studies elsewhere.

Jeremiah 36

A famous crux for the development of Prophetic Literature and the question of orality and literacy is a passage found in Jeremiah (MT 36 = LXX 43). In this passage Jeremiah dictates all of his oracles to Baruch the scribe, who then reads them to the people in the temple during a fast. Another scribe present for this recitation reports the event to the officials. Upon hearing this, they have Baruch read the scroll again to them. The officials store the scroll, tell Baruch and Jeremiah to hide, and report it to the king. The king has the scroll read in his presence, cutting off and burning four columns as it is read. In response, Jeremiah again dictates the oracle collection to Baruch, adding a further oracle of condemnation and more similar things (ועוד נוסף עליהם דברים רבים כהמה).

Van der Toorn sees in this passage a scribal obfuscation of the growth in prophetic collections.[87] Niditch sees evidence of a still largely oral setting in the late monarchy.[88] Whatever the relationship between the historical formation of the Jeremiah corpus and this passage, it is still revealing in its attitudes towards writing.[89] The narrative assumes that while people can read, the standard paradigm is still the spoken word: even the group of scribe-officials have Baruch *read out* the scroll to them, rather than reading it themselves. After this reading they store the scroll and verbally report the contents to the king. Only upon royal request do they actually read the text themselves. While the passage clearly takes the existence of the written word for granted, it utilizes texts in two very residually oral manners. First, the scroll functions primarily as an aide to oral pronouncement in the absence of Jeremiah, and, secondly, the scroll itself functions as a witness against the king's intransigence.[90] The scroll's physical destruction and recreation doubly guarantee the efficacy of the threat.

It is further worth noting the pericope's lack of concern for verbatim repetition. Indeed, while Jeremiah is able to recreate his oracle collection at will—presumably with no prior writing of his oracles—he is able to expand and add to it without violating the essential continuity of the second version with the first. This mindset is reminiscent of oral singers observed by Lord, who are able to note differences between separate performances while seeing no real significance in the fact.[91] Again, verbatim replication is a literate concern.

---

[87] van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture*, pp. 186–188.
[88] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 104–105; cf. Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart*, pp. 146–147, who makes points similar to the ones below.
[89] Or, in Barstad's parlance, "phenomenologically true." Hans M. Barstad, "No Prophets? Recent Developments in Biblical Prophetic Research and Ancient Near Eastern Prophecy," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 57 (1993): p. 59, cf. 46.
[90] Cf. Nielsen, *Oral Tradition*, p. 71.
[91] Lord, *The Singer of Tales*, pp. 27–29.

Second Isaiah

In a well-known article, Morton Smith proposes influence of an Iranian prophecy upon the first half of Second Isaiah (44–48).[92] Without going into the proposition in detail, this passage still offers a valuable example of the ways in which Oral Theory can inform the weighing up of potential influences.

In the context of the Servant Texts,[93] the anonymous prophet proclaims Cyrus as the coming agent of Babylon's deserved destruction (44:24–45:13; 46:11; 48:14–16). Cyrus is depicted as YHWH's anointed (משיח), servant (עבד), and shepherd (רעה),[94] and the prophet expects Cyrus to destroy the city of Babylon and to return the Judaeans home. These expectations are placed within a greater theological construct of monotheism, creation theology, punishment and restoration.[95] These passages are unmistakably related to several Neo-Babylonian texts, the *Cyrus Cylinder*, *The Verse Prophecy of Nabonidus*, and the *Nabonidus Chronicle*.[96] The coincidences between these texts have led several scholars to conclude that Isaiah's prophecies are in fact dependent on either the *Cyrus Cylinder* itself or on the Pro-Cyrus propaganda which lay behind it.[97] In addition to the Neo-Babylonian political parallels, Smith finds a parallel to Second Isaiah's creation theology and rhetorical questions in one of the *Gāthās*, *Yasna* 44.[98] He therefore concludes that behind *Yasna* 44, the *Cyrus Cylinder*, and Second Isaiah lays an oral, pro-Cyrus oracle. Rather than discuss the historical probability of this suggestion itself, for the present purposes only the media-related aspects of the proposal are explored.

---

[92] Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," pp. 415–421.

[93] 'Servant Texts' rather than 'Servant Songs' is used following the discussion of Charles Conroy presented in Dublin, Charles Conroy, "Recent Studies of the Enigmatic Servant Texts in Isaiah" (paper presented at Irish Biblical Association Annual Meeting, 24–24 April 2009, Dublin).

[94] The MT has רעי, which could be understood as 'my friend' or 'my shepherd,' depending on pointing. The Mesopotamian parallels to 'shepherd' as a royal designation prompt many commentators to prefer 'shepherd.' Cf. Joseph Blenkinsopp, *Isaiah 40–55: a New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*, Anchor Bible 19 (New York: Doubleday, 2000), p. 244; John Goldingay, *The Message of Isaiah 40–55: a Literary-Theological Commentary* (London: T & T Clark, 2005), p. 259.

[95] Cf. Klaus Baltzer, *Deutero-Isaiah: a Commentary on Isaiah 40–55*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001), pp. 33–44.

[96] All three are translated in Pritchard, ed., *ANET*, pp. 305–307, 312–316. A translation including an additional fragment of the *Cyrus Cylinder* is available in William W. Hallo, ed., *The Context of Scripture*. vol. II: Monumental Inscriptions from the Biblical World (Leiden: Brill, 2000), pp. 314–316. Also translated in Kuhrt, *The Persian Empire*, pp. 70–80.

[97] Blenkinsopp, *Isaiah 40–55*, p. 249; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 43–65. A remarkably implausible pro-Cyrus source is posited by Carroll E. Simcox, "The Role of Cyrus in Deutero-Isaiah," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 57.2 (1937): pp. 158–171.

[98] Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," p. 419. Smith's retention of the oracular genres is certainly perferable to Parpola's attempt to see them as extispicy queries. See Simo Parpola, "The Originality of the Teachings of Zarathustra in the Light of Yasna 44," *Sefer Moshe: The Moshe Weinfeld Jubilee Volume*, eds. Chaim Cohen, et al. (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2004), pp. 373–383.

The first question involves the nature of Second Isaiah itself: is it a literary text, the record of oral performance(s), or a combination of the two?[99] For whom was it initially created: a circle of followers, fellow scribes, inhabitants of a particular settlement, or was it meant for a wider, oral dissemination? The Servant Texts are a long-standing puzzle, but the presence of residual orality must be considered; this bears heavily on the question of the redaction-history of the section, a question by necessity bypassed here.

As noted by Niditch, the use of standard epithets or phrases does not necessarily indicate textual dependence.[100] That both the *Cyrus Cylinder* and Second Isaiah use the same terms and even phrases to depict Cyrus as a legitimate king does not require a literary explanation on its own.[101] The use of rhetorical questions or a dialogical format, like *Yasna* 44, points towards a more oral setting as well. The common time frame and referent for the two texts, however, may still justify Smith's search for a shared background in Persian propaganda.

Secondly, the same question must be posited of the sources behind the text. If one wishes to see Persian psychological warfare as a source, one must confront the forms this would have taken. It is *prima facie* unlikely that such propaganda would or could have been disseminated in writing unless carried by messengers: how would they get into Babylonia, in what language, and to whom would such texts be given?[102] One rather thinks of a scenario similar to the one in 2 Kgs 18, where the officials of Shalmaneser yell propaganda to the populace in their own language. If such an occurrence could inspire the Cyrus texts, one would expect the original utterances to be formulaic, diplomatic speeches rather than prophetic oracles. It would also seem to require Judaean presence in a besieged city. Of course, different questions would need to be posed if one wished to follow Albertz in seeing the intended monarch as Darius I.[103]

It is clear from the *Nabonidus Chronicle* and the *Sippar Cylinder of Nabonidus*[104] that Cyrus was known in Babylonia prior to his assault on said kingdom. Interestingly, Nabonidus even claimed to have had a dream in which Marduk promised to raise Cyrus to defeat Astyages (550 B.C.E.), enabling the reconstruction of the temple in Harran.[105] Although Nabonidus initially seems to have favoured Cyrus as weakening his main rival Astyages, this

---

[99] Discussed by Yehoshua Gitay, "Deutero-Isaiah: Oral or Written?," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 99.2 (1980): pp. 185–197, although he ultimately discounts the import of the question (p. 197).
[100] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 10–20.
[101] Contra Smith's assertion, Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," p. 417.
[102] Cf. Greene, *Messenger and Message*, pp. 8–43.
[103] Rainer Albertz, "Darius in Place of Cyrus: the First Edition of Deutero-Isaiah (Isaiah 40.1–52.12) in 521 BCE," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 27 (2003): pp. 371–383. Also argued in Albertz, *Israel in Exile*, pp. 399–404.
[104] Translated in Hallo, ed., *Context II*, pp. 310–313.
[105] In the *Sippar Cylinder*.

attitude may not have long survived; as Briant notes, the extant textual indices appear to compress the period of hostilities between the kings.[106] Residents of the Neo-Babylonian Empires had plenty of advance notice of the ascendancy of Cyrus, and it is not inconceivable that Second Isaiah's prophecy draws the Judaean conclusion simply from the political situation of the day. Although evidence for *avant-garde* propagandists is lacking for Cyrus's campaign,[107] it is likely that the King of Anšan engaged in war propaganda of the time-venerable kind: he appears to have brutally sacked the city of Opis in a manner which prompted the subsequent surrender of Sippar (and then Babylon?).[108] If such actions had come before, the prophet's vindictive hopes for Babylon are easily understandable without recourse to more verbal propaganda. In any case, the prophecies must pre-date 539, since Cyrus did not destroy Babylon, and one must consider the media a minority would have used in a besieged empire.[109]

Smith's thesis still deserves a fuller examination in light of all the relevant historical information; the short discussion here, however, hopefully illustrates the importance of considering the media in examining proposed instances of influence.

Cultural Interactions in the Light of Orality and Literacy

The question of Persian influences on Judaism must be considered in the context of the primarily oral milieu discussed above as well as the increasingly important role of literacy. The import of orality affects the analysis by broadening the manner in which texts and ideas are compared and borrowings considered. Judaeans who came into contact with Persian ideas most likely came into contact with them in an oral setting: in *discussion* with other Judaeans, with Persians, with other peoples, rather than by *reading* Persian sacred texts (whether these were available for reading or not). Perhaps they heard the *Gāthās* or Herodotus's θεογονίην chanted and explained or translated; perhaps they observed Persian officials practice or discuss their religion; perhaps they heard a minstrel perform songs of Iranian mythology; perhaps it was part of the general *zeitgeist*. Because even the scribes were more orally-oriented than today, the discussion of influence and its manifestations in

---

[106] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 41–43.

[107] Amélie Kuhrt, "The Cyrus Cylinder and Achaemenid Imperial Policy," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 25 (1983): pp. 83–97 would understand the cylinder as an after-the-fact piece of propoganda modelled on Assurbanipal's inscriptions. Thomas Kelly, "Persian Propaganda: a Neglected Factor in Xerxes' Invasion of Greece and Herodotus," *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): pp. 173–219 argues that the Persians did indeed utilize advance propoganda, but not until Xerxes's campaign in 480.

[108] *Nabonidus Chronicle* 7.iii.12–13 (Pritchard, ed., *ANET*, p. 306, although the translation supplies a misleading parenthesis implying Nabonidus did the massacring; see the relevant snippet in Hallo, ed., *The Context of Scripture I*, p. 468; This translation issue has also been noted by Kuhrt, "Nabonidus and the Babylonian Priesthood," p. 133; Cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 41.)

[109] For a perspective based on Udjahorresnet, see Lisbeth S. Fried, "Cyrus the Messiah? The Historical Background to Isaiah 45:1," *Harvard Theological Review* 95.4 (2002): pp. 373–393.

literature needs to be alert for this subtle media-context. In any case, the likelihood is that exposure to ideas was more often by hearing rather than by sight.

Importance of Interiorization for the Context of the Apocalypses

Most important to understanding the shift in communication media is the concept mentioned above, the 'interiorizing' of a technology. The shifts created by a new technology do not happen immediately, but have a cumulative effect as more and more of a society's thought and social patterns are assimilated to it. New technologies become, over time, accepted as parts of/extensions of the human body itself: writing extends the eye, telephone extends the ear, etc. Because the media are extensions of the human body they alter the ratios of use between the senses.[110] These extensions to the body create new psychological ratios between mental faculties, just as people with physical impairments (e.g., blindness, deafness) cope through the increased reliance on the other senses. Some scholars have posited psychosis as a result.[111] The systemic and psychological stress occasioned by the internalization of new media rather recalls the distress often associated with the advent of apocalyptic or millenarian groups.[112]

Perhaps the Hebrew language itself gives a hint of the gradual interiorization of literacy, in the culture in general and among scribes in particular. The word קרא means both 'to call' and 'to meet.' It seems likely that its use to mean 'to read' is related to an analogue with the obviously oral-personal meanings of 'calling' and 'meeting.' As late as Augustine written works were read by being pronounced aloud, in private and in public.[113] A person, then, who קרא was calling the words out of the text. Similarly, ספר offers an interesting hint. סָפַר is to count and סֹפֵר is a scribe. This seems to pick up the historical situation that writing originated as accounting and administrative dockets.[114] The use, then, of סֵפֶר, 'book,' evolved from dockets to literary works. These are only speculative considerations, but they are suggestive of the progress of the interiorization of the new medium.

The overlap, or *intensification*, between the appearance of writing and its complete interiorization is perhaps what Niditch intended to convey with her concept of the 'oral-literate continuum.'[115] By this overlap Ong points to the curious effect whereby tendencies of

---

[110] See the introduction for a description of how technology extends the human body, McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, pp. 3–6; cf. Ong, *Presence of the Word*, pp. 131–135.
[111] McLuhan, *Understanding Media*, p. 5, 35, 45–52; Ong, *Presence of the Word*, pp. 133–138, 211; Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 68.
[112] E.g., Yonina Talmon, "Millenarian Movements," *The Sociology of Religion. Vol. V: Religious Movements*, ed. Malcolm Hamilton (London: Routledge, 2007), pp. 28–29; Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, pp. 408–409.
[113] Achtemeier, "Omne verbum sonat," pp. 15–17; Cf. Ong, *Orality and Literacy*, p. 113.
[114] Stephen Roger Fischer, *A History of Writing* (London: Reaktion, 2001), pp. 1–11; Goody, *The Domestication of the Savage Mind*, pp. 79–82.
[115] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, p. 4.

a previous technology are initially intensified before being altered or eliminated by the new technology. This can be illustrated through two examples. Mnemonic lists are characteristic of oral societies; early literature is characterized by often excessively long and detailed lists (e.g., *the Táin*, Numbers).[116] The word has numinous connotations in oral society; in early writing this numinousness even gets projected onto script, making the individual letter a powerful talisman.[117] To give a modern analogue, the Internet first functioned as an expansion of print media before it took on its present multimedia form.

In the context of the above discussion of McLuhan and Ong, what Niditch labels the 'oral-literate continuum' could perhaps be nuanced in terms of the increasing internalization of literacy. The use of the alphabet transforms thought and social patterns, but it does so gradually and cumulatively; the more the written word is used, the more it becomes the dominant paradigm in its users' thought. Hence, the overlap of oral and literate use and mentality which Niditch so carefully notes as well as the increased tendency towards the literate end of the continuum in the later texts are interrelated.[118] This means that the effects of literacy would have been varied both synchronically and diachronically, as well as hierarchically (i.e., levels of education). Niditch notes several times the sense of the numinous, quasi-magical or efficacious nature which the use of the written word implies in the Hebrew Bible; this point has significant ramifications for this study, although only two examples are cited here: 1) The possibility of oracles being written down as 'sign acts' (mostly oral mindset) and then later collected and viewed as if intended as archives (more literate mindset); 2) the transfer and concomitant interiorization of the texts' numinousness and efficaciousness by scribes as literacy becomes increasingly interiorized by them. The scribes' sense of authority increased as they appropriated the growing authority (rather than numinousness) of the texts.

Perhaps a better word to describe this overlap or interaction than 'continuum'—which may imply an ease and smoothness of transition, as well as completeness—is 'dialectic.' Dialectic—in the Kierkegaardian sense rather than in the Hegelian—implies the co-existence of two related, but distinct, entities which are in perpetual tension. Orality and literacy are related, of course, because literacy comes out of and transforms oral modes. They are in tension because oral modes in some form *always remain* and have certain tendencies which contradict literate tendencies. Since all human beings are born into orality and only

---

[116] Cf. Frances A. Yates, *The Art of Memory* (Chicago: Univ. of Chicago Press, 1966), pp. 6–8.

[117] E.g., the Aramaic incantation bowls and later Kabbalistic letter-mysticism. Noted in Hezser, *Jewish Literacy in Roman Palestine*, pp. 220–222.

[118] Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, mentions that the reference to divine record books increases in later literature (p. 81); increased importance of written sources in general (p. 98); earlier prophetic texts seem to cite visions, later ones letters (p. 91).

subsequently can enter into literacy, an individual's psychology will have various levels of tension between literate and oral modes, varying on the level of the interiorization of literacy.

When discussing the interiorization of literacy, it is important to note that there are shades and levels of literacy, from rudimentary ability to scratch out one's signature to the ability to compose *The Lord of the Rings*. Although modern literates expect one to be able to read and write, these two skills are strictly speaking separate; the western ideal of universal ability to read anything is highly idiosyncratic in historical and numerical terms.[119] The gradations of literacy (from 'artisanal' to complete) must be kept in mind when considering the variable of residual orality. Thus, the mere cataloguing of archaeological finds with writing on them fails to grapple with the distinction in types between highly interiorized (print) literacy and less complete (minimal) forms.[120] This can easily be seen (though often unappreciated) by Paul's use of his signature.[121]

Consequently, in the periods when prophetic literature was surrendering to the apocalypse, many changes may not be so much in the *content* of the text as in the *authority* of *written* texts themselves.[122] Important in this respect is the formation of a scribal class—working with traditional materials which are at the same time given an independent (textual) existence from oral tradition—which was beginning to codify, assimilate, and question a textual tradition. It was in a situation where "prophetic words are no longer predominantly living speech, but rather inscribed and inscrutable data whose true meanings are an esoteric mystery revealed by God to a special adept and his pious circle"[123] that literate mentalities among a scribal elite began to notice *literate* tensions between the canonized traditions. This increasing tension was an important factor which "served to open an abyss in the religious imagination whose ultimate expression was apocalyptic imagination."[124] This is a situational dynamic beyond the class and sociological implications of scribal authorship. It implies a different origin and literary quality to texts where created *qua* text from texts which were redacted into texts. It is a context where hermeneutes gain a new speciality—no longer do adepts of traditions have to merely interpret the signs of the times (as did an Amos, Isaiah, or Jeremiah), but they had to interpret the meaning of *texts* in the light of the current situation. While one could adequately function as a priest or prophet in a wholly oral context, one

---

[119] See the useful overviews by M. C. A. MacDonald, "Literacy in an Oral Environment," *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society: Papers in Honour of Alan R. Millard*, eds. Piotr Bienkowski, et al. (London: T & T Clark, 2005), pp. 49–118.

[120] E.g., approaches like Millard, *Reading and Writing in the Time of Jesus*.

[121] Chris Keith, "'In My Own Hand': Grapho-Literacy and the Apostle Paul," *Biblica* 89.1 (2008): especially pp. 46–58.

[122] Even acknowledged by Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 128; also noted by Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*, pp. 183–190.

[123] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 484.

[124] Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 485.

cannot exegete texts without advanced scribal training.[125] Whatever the nature of prophetic training, there is no doubt that the training and societal expectations of a scribe were very different.

Enochic Literature[126]

The Enochic Literature offers a good example of the change in mind-set encouraged by the scribal enterprise and the resultant change in cultural-religious attitudes and traditions. In the Enochic Literature a trend towards the linking of scribality with righteousness can be detected. The angels, the righteous dead, and even G-d himself are increasingly depicted as scribes; the heavenly system of justice depends heavily on books which record the deeds of humanity.[127] The effectiveness of G-d's power is evidenced less by his presence and more by his literate bureaucracy; indeed, G-d becomes increasingly distant.

1 Enoch 12:4 explicitly calls Enoch a 'scribe of righteousness'; this identification is repeated in 13:4 and 15:1. Writing is deemed so important for the identity of Enoch that learning to write is listed as one of two momentous life-events, the other being his marriage (83:2).[128] In distinction to Deut 4:9, where the Israelites are admonished to remember and to pass their memory on to their children, *1 Enoch* 81:6 equates the teaching of the law with the *writing* of it. In 103:2 Enoch is justified because he has "seen the heavenly tablets and the holy writings." Knowledge of tradition is no longer sufficient without command of the textual versions of it.

A shift from the admonitory and 'existential' aspects of prophetic material is illustrated in *1 Enoch* 89:62–64, 69. In these verses the sins of the shepherds are written down and recorded for future judgment, but the text explicitly states that the shepherds are not to be admonished for their sins. Rather than the immediate function of oration and the instantaneous demand which it represents, here writing functions as a score-card of sorts, enabling G-d to keep record until the final judgment; the Day of the Lord is coming rather than present. Indeed, the sapiential idea of recompense appears to be wholly suspended until the *eschaton*. Earlier in the current collation of *1 Enoch* this tendency is implicit; Enoch writes a memorial prayer in 13:4, so that the supplicants will be remembered in the future.

---

[125] Over time, the scribal training itself becomes insufficient, requiring supplementation. Cf. Martin S. Jaffee, *Torah in the Mouth: Writing and Oral Tradition in Palestinian Judaism 200 BCE—400 CE* (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2001), who argues that the Rabbis became self-conscious of their oral interpretations, seeing exegesis alone as nothing. The present author is grateful to Professor Niditch for this reference.

[126] The collection of *1 Enoch* is treated synchronically here; for a more diachronic approach see Chapter IVb.

[127] Cf. *1 Enoch* 81:1–82:4; 89:70–71; 90:17; 91:14; 93:2; 97:7; 98:6–8; 104:7; 106:19; 107:1.

[128] This was pointed out at an SBL session of "Orality and the Formation of the Hebrew Bible" section in Philadelphia, but the author cannot recall whose comment it was.

1 Enoch 69:8–10

An apparent aberration in scribal glorification appears in *1 Enoch* 69:8–10. Here the watcher Pinem'e[129] is condemned for teaching people "about writing with ink and papyrus," claiming that "humans were not born for this purpose, to confirm their trustworthiness through pen and ink." On first glance these comments appear to show an oral culture's reservations over the changes created by writing, similar to Plato's comments in *Phaedrus* (see above). However, in the context of the passage and of the collection as a whole, the comments need to be read differently. The following verses claim it is "through this, their knowledge, they are perishing." Clearly it is not knowledge *per se* which condemns, but false knowledge. In the context of scribal traditions, this polemic makes sense in terms of an 'elitist' view towards writing and the written text. It is not writing itself which is wicked (after all Enoch is a scribe and the condemnation is itself written), but the use of writing and reading by non-scribe-sages, and therefore the misunderstanding and misappropriation of the knowledge. Writing makes heresy and falsity more difficult and problematic by *making it permanent.* An idea which might have passed away unnoticed, once written, gains a new authority, an authority inappropriate for those who are not worthy of it. This interpretation is bolstered with reference to 104:9–14; sinners here are indicted for inventing fictitious stories and writing "books in their own names."[130] This strikes a scholar as bizarrely ironic in a pseudepigraphical book, but it shows how residually oral even highly literate scribes could still be; Lord notes that fidelity to a perceived tradition (in this case, the Enochic tradition) is more important than individual authorship among oral tradents.[131] The passage continues by wishing these false scribes would have written faithfully, neither adding nor taking away, and then they would know the joy of the Scriptures. 104:10–13, when read with 69:8–10, clearly links sin with 'false scribality,' which perhaps may be understood as scribal traditions other than the authors'.

This link between false scribality and wickedness is made explicit in 98:15:[132]

---

[129] This passage is not extent in the Aramaic or Greek. The present author has found no recent suggestions towards the possible origin or significance of this name. Is it possible that *'Pinem'e'* is derived from פני indicating the sense of surface, thus being a play on the idea of writing surface? Or perhaps better, it is derived from פנימי 'towards the inside,' indicating the change caused by the false scribality? This is worth exploring. Cf. George A. Barton, "The Origin of the Names of Angels and Demons in the Extra-Canonical Apocalyptic Literature to 100 AD," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 31.4 (1912): p. 165.

[130] Various readings; see George W. E. Nickelsburg and James C. Vanderkam, *1 Enoch: A New Translation Based on the Hermeneia Commentary* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2004), p. 163; however, Loren T. Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, Commentaries on Early Jewish Literature (Berlin: De Gruyter, 2007), p. 582, 591, sees a reference to translation here; Ephraim Isaac, "1 (Ethiopic Apocalypse of) Enoch," *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha I: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments*, ed. James H Charlesworth (New York: Doubleday, 1983), n. p. 85.

[131] Lord, *The Singer of Tales*, pp. 28–29.

[132] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 151; Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, p. 372.

> Woe to those who write lying words and words of error; they write and lead many astray with their lies.

These passages, then, seem to evidence some of the tensions created by the interiorization of writing; while it gives these scribes the access to secret heavenly knowledge, it removes the existential and communal controls on traditions and teaching, opening them up to divergent interpretations. Indeed, the problems associated with the verification of prophecy return,[133] only now writing makes them even more permanent.[134] The Enochic myth of demonic teaching belongs in this tension.

2 Enoch

The scribal tendencies visible in *1 Enoch* are radically extended in the *2 Enoch* materials.[135] Enoch is depicted as the scribe *par excellence*, transcribing 366 books in 30 days and nights, including "everything that is appropriate to learn" (22:11–23:6. cf. 68:2).[136] His work as a scribe ('own handwriting') testifies to G-d (33:5, 8), will bring glory to those who read it (35:2–3), and cannot be contradicted (53:2–3).

The text projects writing back into creation; Adam was the first scribe (33:10). The text echoes the sentiment of Qoh 12:12 in noting the proliferation of texts (since creation), but instead of cynically eschewing them it points to Enoch as the scribal guide to righteousness (47:2). Indeed, the author envisions an almost exclusively text-based righteousness; in 48:6, 8 Enoch is enjoined to pass on his books to future generations, much like Deut 4:9 enjoins the Israelites to pass on Torah. The 'J' text again equates reading with personal instruction (36:1).

Like *1 Enoch*, *2 Enoch* envisions a record-based final judgment.[137] Chapter 65, however, extends this motif in a curious manner. According to this chapter, G-d created time in order to allow man to "think of his sins and so that he might write his own achievement, both good and evil" (65:4). Here, instead of angels or G-d, each person writes the record of his own life. Accountability is linked to one's knowledge of one's achievement, and how it compares to Enoch's writings (65:5). There is a finality in this which seems to forestall the possibility of forgiveness: actions (including sinful ones) are recorded, making them

---

[133] Cf. Carroll, *When Prophecy Failed*, pp. 198–203. Lange, "Literary Prophecy," pp. 259–260, notes the link of "literary prophecy" to the problem of existential verification, but does not note the relevance of Oral Theory to the issue.

[134] Interestingly, this chasm opened by writing was the impetus for the formulation of the Rabbinic concept of the 'Orah Torah' as a method for controling the interpretation of texts. See Jaffee, *Torah in the Mouth*, particularly p. 10.

[135] While the forms of *2 Enoch* available to contemporary scholarship are of a much later period, the text contains older materials and continues the traditions of *1 Enoch*, and so is still useful for the understanding of the argument.

[136] According to the J redaction.

[137] 2 En 44:5 (A); 50:1; 52:15; 53:2–3.

permanent. Salvation is partially dependent on the ability to analyze one's life in regards to Enoch's, a very literate skill.

Further testimony to the increasing hegemony of literate thought within the Enochic strand can be seen in the later *3 Enoch* book as well. Taking up the strands of the earlier Enochic literature, *3 Enoch* transforms *1 Enoch* 69:15–25's account of creation, where everything is created by an oath (illegitimately taught to humans by the Watchers), into an account where everything is created by letters (*3 Enoch* 13:1; 41). The power of letters continues to the end of the world, where the letters of the Torah and of the alphabet testify against Israel (44:9–10). Although the dominant paradigm for these authors is increasingly writing, writing retains an oral aura of numinousity and power.

Daniel

The book of Daniel also has an interesting relationship with writing. The book explicitly begins by claiming that Daniel and his colleagues were taught the literature and the language of the Chaldaeans (1:4). It may be important that the text mentions that the language and literature is of the Chaldaeans, the scribal class, rather than the Babylonians in general.[138] The character Daniel is clearly associated with the written tradition of learning, and the Danielic author with a mysterious scribal group called the משכילים (11:33; 12:3,10). G-d's favor was not the only way in which Daniel was exceptional: Daniel's world as presented in the book is clearly a rarified and literate one. The law is conceived of as a written collection by the time of Daniel; Daniel reads the book of Jeremiah (9:2) and prays on the basis of what is written in the law of Moses (9:13). Additionally, G-d runs heaven like the Persian Empire: deeds are inscribed in the book of truth (10:21), and the righteous are found written in the book (12:1). However, the collection also notes that writing was not universally expected, even for kings. Several aspects of the collection still betray oral presuppositions.

In the story of the writing on the wall (Ch. 5), the text notes that the king was unable to read the writing inscribed on the wall (v. 8). Daniel's interpretation of the enigmatic writing (vv. 25–27) emphasizes both the oral tendency of the word's numinousness as well as Daniel's skills in mastering it.[139] Further, Dan 6:8, 15 considers written decrees permanent, even though the king himself only signs the law (v. 9). This seems to reflect both the increased importance of writing for bureaucracy, as well as the awe in which it continued to be held. In a stimulating study, Polaski analyzes how writing informs the stories in Dan 5 and

[138] Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 137–139.
[139] Cf. Niditch, *Oral World and Written Word*, pp. 80–81.

6 and the ways in which it and its virtuosi are inscribed with power.[140] Indeed, he notes that the text even depicts scribal ability as obviating the need for revelatory vision!

> Daniel simply does his (former) job as a royal official; he needs no help in reading a text. God, via scribal mediation, addresses a recalcitrant king and his bureaucracy, again showing the extent to which notions of power are "textualized" in the thought world of the book of Daniel.[141]

Perhaps this is telling for the oft-commented visionary nature of the apocalypses. Not only can a shift from 'word' to 'vision' be found in Daniel and other apocalypses which is consonant with the shift from oral to written, ear to eye, but a shift in the source of authority over both, i.e., the scribal ability to write, read, and comment upon both utterance and vision. It is not just the ability to receive revelations, but the ability to correctly write, read, and comment upon them that matters.

It seems likely that apocalyptic literature is more thoroughly literate and scribal then prophetic, regardless of the potential reality of visions. In a very stimulating discussion, McInver and Carroll suggest that the apocalyptic passages in the gospels are some of the few text-based sources which appear in the Synoptic Gospels.[142] This seems to have very important implications for apocalyptic literature—it may, in essence, be a wholly literate, scribal phenomenon (the phenomenon of apocalypses, not millenarianism). This link helps situate the relationships between apocalyptic and sapiential literature; wisdom and apocalyptic share a scribal origin rather than a common political or theological tradition *per se*.[143] Perhaps this can be tied to the reduction of directly existential concerns which accompanies writing and is evident to some respects in apocalyptic literature.

Perhaps one 'apocalyptic' community in Second Temple Judaism helps confirm this suspicion. The community at Qumran was a remarkable group in Second Temple Judaism. In particular, the level of literacy appears to have been quite high, especially in contrast to the general population.[144] The intensity of scribal and literate activity was significant for their organization, self-understanding, and daily activities.[145] It certainly had an effect on their theology and relation with the Jewish texts extant in their days. Whatever the situation of libraries or archives prior to this community, its concentration of literates—let alone literate

---

[140] Donald C. Polaski, "Mene, Mene, Tekel, Parsin: Writing and Resistance in Daniel 5 and 6," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 123.4 (2004): pp. 649–669.

[141] Polaski, "Mene, Mene, Tekel, Parsin," p. 659.

[142] Robert K. McIver and Marie Carroll, "Experiments to Develop Criteria for Determining the Existence of Written Sources and Their Potential Implications for the Synoptic Problem," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 121.4 (2002): pp. 682–683.

[143] Cf. Benjamin G. Wright III, "Putting the Puzzle together: Some Suggestions concerning the Social Location of the Wisdom of Ben Sira" and Richard A. Horsley "The Politics of Cultural Production in Second Temple Judea: Historical Context and Political-Religious Relations of the scribes Who Produced 1 Enoch, Sirach, and Daniel," both in Wright Wills, eds., *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*, pp. 89–112 and 123–148, respectively. Cf. the Prolegomena.

[144] Hezser, *Jewish Literacy in Roman Palestine*, pp. 465–466.

[145] Hezser, *Jewish Literacy in Roman Palestine*, p. 47, 465.

'sages'—devoted to textual study was unprecedented in antiquity.[146] Considering the sparsity of Torah texts even into the Rabbinic period, a community with such a library is phenomenal. An investigation of their writings should reveal special ways in which their unusually high interiorization of the alphabet manifested itself in their texts.[147]

When approaching the issues of the emergence of the apocalypse, the worldview which appears therein, and the potential role of external influences, one needs to carefully consider the dynamics of media. First, one must recognize that the role of the scribe is structurally different from the role of a priest or a prophet, and that the scribal role changes as a society becomes increasingly literate. Concomitant with the increased role of literacy and scribes is the rise and importance of *textual* hermeneutics in addition to the hermeneutics of traditions and times; this is supremely important in the fading of prophetic literature and the emergence of new genres. While it is important to recognize the effects of literacy, care needs to be taken to distinguish between oral-like elements and elements of scribal redaction. Even the most profoundly literate scribes in the ancient world were pre-print literates and a minority in their world. This means, lastly, that oral modes of discourse influence all forms of interaction and textual formation in the period.[148] Because of this, analyses for the levels and types of influence must recognize that the subjects operate within a context which is not primarily textual: verbatim, linear, and analytic criteria are likely to misconstrue the data. Once the nature of interaction and scribal creation is recognized, it remains to be seen what evidence of interaction can be discerned in the surviving texts.

Problematics and Desiderata

Since communication touches nearly every aspect of human existence, the above considerations have broad implications within Biblical Studies. A full elaboration of them cannot be here pursued; nevertheless, it is worth asking a few of the questions raised thereby, both to better contextualize the upcoming textual analyses and to suggest potential avenues for further scholarship. No attempt is made to answer the questions posited.

A fundamental query, albeit perhaps unanswerable, is why write at all when few can read? Although the answer to this question needs vary with each text and author, it is an important consideration in an era prior to mass publication. It perhaps matters if a text was

---

[146] The question of archives and libraries is a complex one. For some useful studies, see Olof Pedersen, *Archives and Libraries in the Ancient Near East 1500–300 BC* (Bethesda, MD: CDL, 1998); Maria Brosius, ed., *Ancient Archives and Archival Traditions: Concepts of Record-Keeping in the Ancient World.* Oxford Studies in Ancient Documents (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2003); Grant Frame and Andrew R. George, "The Royal Libraries of Nineveh: New Evidence for King Ashurbanipal's Tablet Collecting," *Nineveh: Papers of the XLIXe Recontre Assyriologique Internationale, London, 7–11 July 2003*, eds. Dominique Collon and Andrew George, vol. 2 (London: British School of Archaeology in Iraq, 2005), pp. 265–284.

[147] This task is not attempted here.

[148] Even well into the formation of the Mishnah. See Jaffee, *Torah in the Mouth*, p. 101.

written to be archival, monumental, for dictation to an audience, for fellow scribes, or as part of a pedagogical exercise.

Related to this is the question of who could write, how these learned to write, and who funded their leisure, teaching, and materials. The skills of writing and reading require education, and education further requires teachers, curriculum, and financing. Unlike traditional forms of apprenticeship, the student does not contribute to production in the beginning stages of training. Who provided all the resources necessary?[149]

In distinction to the literary establishment, did the powers that be sponsor a Judaean oral epic tradition? Israel and Judah must have had a folkloric tradition, and it must have had tradents who were considered virtuosic in it.[150] Who were these tradents, what form did their material take, and what has happened to it?[151] Further, in many societies the king and/or the aristocracy patronize such artists (e.g., Greece, Anglo-Saxon England, Parthian Iran).[152] Did the aristocracy in Yehud do likewise? Did the governors and High Priests express their magnificence through patronage like the Achaemenid Satraps?[153] If so, how, in what forms, and what does this patronage mean for the development of the Hebrew Scriptures and literary traditions?

The above question is more often considered in the context of the proposed Persian imperial authorization of the Torah. Did the Great King authorize a Torah? If so, the

---

[149] For some studies on education, see James L. Crenshaw, *Education in Ancient Israel* (New York: Doubleday, 1998); Andre Lemaire, "The Sage in School and Temple," *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, eds. John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990), pp. 165–184. Carr's study (Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart*) is much concerned with understanding the nature of education.

[150] Cf. the comment by David E. Bynum, *The Daemon in the Wood: A Study of Oral Narrative Patterns* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1978), p. 36: "...every culture has its story-tellers, even though only a minority of any given culture are recognized as competent in story-telling."

[151] For studies of folklore, see Susan Niditch, *Underdogs and Tricksters: a Prelude to Biblical Folklore* (San Fransisco: Harper & Row, 1987); Heda Jason, "Study of Israelite and Jewish Oral and Folk Literature: Problems and Issues," *Asian Folklore Studies* 49.1 (1990): pp. 69–108.

[152] On Anglo-Saxon England: Mark C. Amodio and Katherine O. O'Keeffe, eds., *Unlocking the Wordhord: Anglo-Saxon Studies in Memory of Edward B. Irving, Jr.* (Toronto: Univ of Toronto Press, 2003), particularly the studies by Doane and Foley (pp. 62–75, 76–108, respectively); John Miles Foley, "*Beowulf* and the traditional narrative song: the potential and limits of comparison," *Old English Literature in context: Ten Essays*, ed. John D. Niles (London: Boydell, 1980), pp. 117–136, 173–178.

On Iran, see Mary Boyce, "Some Remarks on the Transmission of the Kayanian Heroic Cycle," *Serta Cantabrigienisa Viris doctissimis clarissimisque qui a die XXI usque ad diem XXVIII mensis Augusti anni MCMLIV congressum internationalem rebus litterisque orientalibus dedicatum Cantabrigiam convenerunt. Donum praebuit Franciscus Steiner, Aquis Mattiacis A.D. MCMLIV* (Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1954), pp. 45–52; Mary Boyce, "Zariadres and Zarēr," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 17.3 (1955): pp. 473–476; Mary Boyce, "The Parthian *gōsān* and Iranian Minstrel Tradition," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (1957): pp. 10–45; P. Huyse, "Noch einmal zu Parallelen zwischen Achaemeniden- und Sāsānideninschriften," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 23 (1990): pp. 177–183; Kumiko Yamamoto, *The Oral Background of Persian Epics: Storytelling and Poetry*, Brill Studies in Middle Eastern Literatures 26 (Leiden: Brill, 2003); Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Importance of Orality for the Study of Old Iranian Literature and Myth," *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 5.1–2 (2005–2006): pp. 9–31. Balcer, *Herodotus and Bisitun* , pp. 62–69 suggests that Darius's Behistun inscription is partly modelled on oral epic.

[153] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 345–347 does not mention patronage directly, but in connection with the evidence of Iranian oral epics and the Parthian minstrels, this seems quite likely. Cf. Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Royalty in Early Iranian Literature," *Proceedings of the Third European Conference of Iranian Studies, Cambridge, 11–15 September 1995*, ed. Nicholas Sims-Williams, vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies, Beiträge zur Iranistik 17 (Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1998), pp. 99–108.

question would remain as to what type of Torah, in what capacity, and what its contents were. One could also wonder if this imperial patronage would have competed with or complemented the culture of the local elites.[154]

The *desideratum par excellence* in Biblical Studies in general is the problem of the literary growth of the biblical text itself. Oral Theory has significant implications for methodology and how to understand the growth of texts. If the culture was in the earlier stages of the interiorization of literacy, how did they receive and pass on traditions? Did they edit texts in a similar manner? Can oral and written sources be distinguished in a text? Did the authors and editors even distinguish between writing and editing?[155]

A particularly important and potentially illuminating desideratum is the analysis of the levels and stages of the interiorization of literacy and the development of a 'book culture' in Second Temple Judaism. When and how did texts become important and for what segments of the Judaean society? What of the diaspora? Could debates over the authority of texts have been significant for the development of religious factions?[156]

Implications for Investigation of Influence

The Persian period (as well as the Greek and Roman periods) represents a very complex interplay between Persians, prophets, (proto-)apocalyptics, scribes, orality and literacy within Judaism. It is an interplay which is not reducible merely to re-interpreted 'failed prophecy' (cognitive dissonance), arguments between insider-outsider groups (deprivation), or of responses to colonialism. In Second Temple Judaism new and old traditions were being written, adapted, and related to each other in the context of the Persian Empire; new forms of religious structure were evolving, and old forms had to be adapted and re-understood in a new context. In this context, a very important and defining difference between people and groups calling themselves Judaeans or Jews was *theology*, or general religious worldview, and the medium which they used to express it. Some Judaeans likely accepted various Persian ideas and integrated them into their understanding of Israel's

---

[154] Watts, ed., *Persia and Torah*.

[155] For justifications, see Botha, "Cognition, Orality-Literacy, and Approaches to First-Century Writings," pp. 37–63; Loubser, "Moving Beyond Colonialist Discourse," pp. 65–82.
For studies addressing the impact of Oral Theory on these questions, see Silberman, ed., *Semeia 39*; Horsley, "The Origins of the Hebrew Scriptures in Imperial Relations," pp. 107–135; Philip R. Davies, *Scribes and Schools: The Canonization of the Hebrew Scriptures* (Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998) discusses the issues obliquely from the persepctive of the development of the canon; Carr, *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart*; Schniedewind, *How the Bible Became a Book*; Katherine M. Stott, *Why Did They Write This Way? Reflections on References to Written Documents in the Hebrew Bible and Ancient Literature*, Library of Hebrew Bible 492 (New York: T & T Clark, 2008); On the scribes themselves, Christine Schams, *Jewish Scribes in the Second-Temple Period*, JSOTSS 291 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998); van der Toorn, *Scribal Culture*.

[156] A greater engagement with the fields of Communication Theory and Social Psychology could possibly prove very fruitful for these questions.

heritage: if so, they would have done so as part of the increasingly important project of interpreting previous Judaean writings.

Conclusions

The question of Iranian influence must be considered within two important communicative contexts. First, the high residual orality of the period and implications thus carried for the creation, reception, and adaptation of ideas and traditions must constantly be weighed. Second, the evident increasing interiorization of literacy among at least certain circles must be considered in the evaluation of the genesis of the apocalypses. The newly important tradition of textual exegesis must be appreciated in this regard. It is with both of these perspectives that a few sample texts can be approached to probe for potential Iranian influences.

IV

Textual Analyses

Part A: Biblical Literature

To begin a preliminary re-investigation of Iranian influence, a sample of texts are here analyzed, each representing important stages in the development of apocalyptic. Three canonical texts (Ezekiel 37:1–4, the Valley of the Bones; Ezekiel 38–39, Gog of Magog; and Daniel 2, the Vision of the Statue//Dan 7) and the collection of texts known as *1 (Ethiopic) Enoch* are analyzed on their own and in their respective positions towards Second Temple Judaism.

The passages and topics here are investigated for ways in which an Iranian context could prove illuminating for the history of Judaean ideas. These selections are in no ways exhaustive, but they are diverse enough to illustrate a variety of types of influence. Several recurrent themes can be discerned, however. The theme of eschatology continually rears its head, as does Achaemenid Royal ideology. Further, certain Iranian concepts also recur, such as the *fraŭašī*. None of these ideas appear in isolation, but in dialogue with other Ancient Near Eastern traditions.

EZEKIEL 37:1–14 (THE VALLEY OF THE BONES)

> [1]The hand of the Lord came upon me, and he brought me out by the spirit of the Lord and set me down in the middle of a valley; it was full of bones. [2]He led me all around them; there were very many lying in the valley, and they were very dry. [3]He said to me, 'Mortal, can these bones live?' I answered, 'O Lord God, you know.' [4]Then he said to me, 'Prophesy to these bones, and say to them: O dry bones, hear the word of the Lord. [5]Thus says the Lord God to these bones: I will cause breath (רוח) to enter you, and you shall live. [6]I will lay sinews on you, and will cause flesh to come upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and you shall live; and you shall know that I am the Lord.'
>
> [7]So I prophesied as I had been commanded; and as I prophesied, suddenly there was a noise (קול), a rattling (רעש), and the bones came together, bone to its bone. [8]I looked, and there were sinews on them, and flesh had come upon them, and skin had covered them; but there was no breath in them. [9]Then he said to me, 'Prophesy to the breath, prophesy, mortal, and say to the breath: Thus says the Lord God: Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain (הרוגים), that they may live.' [10]I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood on their feet, a vast multitude. (חיל גדול מאד מאד)
>
> [11]Then he said to me, 'Mortal, these bones are the whole house of Israel. They say, "Our bones are dried up, and our hope is lost; we are cut off completely." [12]Therefore prophesy, and say to them, Thus says the Lord God: I am going to open your graves, and bring you up from your graves, O my people; and I will bring you back to the land of Israel. [13]And you shall know that I am the Lord, when I open your graves, and bring you up from your graves, O my people. [14]I will put my spirit within you, and you shall live, and I will place you on your own soil; then you shall know that I, the Lord, have spoken and will act, says the Lord.'

This passage presents a good test for Iranian influence, with its vivid imagery of bones reconstituted and re-given רוח חיים, a picture reminiscent of bodily resurrection. In fact, Lang offers an interpretation of this oracle as inspired by the Zoroastrian practice of the exposure of the dead, explaining the references to burial in vv. 12–13 as later interpolations.[1] His most convincing argument for this is the complete lack of purity concern in the passage—while earlier Ezekiel shows clear concern for ritual purity (cf. Ezek 4:12–15), his presence among a field of bones goes unmentioned.[2] Later in the book the defiling aspect of human bones is dwelt upon somewhat at length (39:11–16), but no mention of it is made in this context. Lang rightly notes that according to Zoroastrian law, while dead bodies are defiling, dry bones are not.[3] However, the likelihood of Ezekiel having actually seen exposing grounds of bones, as Lang claims, is low for several reasons: the extent of the use of the rite of exposure among Zoroastrians at that early of a date is questionable; even when left for exposure, the bones were possibly collected into ossuaries, if not kept in structures such as later became known as *daxmas* or 'Towers of Silence'; and any Zoroastrian strict enough to practice exposure certainly would not have left the funeral rites or remains easily accessible to non-co-religionists.[4] In his commentary, Greenberg considers Lang's thesis unlikely, preferring to look to Mesopotamian battle reliefs and annals.[5] Considering the supposed early exilic setting of this oracle, this is a very likely immediate source, if one beyond the cited saying ("Our bones are dried up, and our hope is lost; we are cut off completely") is needed.

As Greenberg and Fox note, vv. 1–14 are a well-structured unity, making Lang's appeal for the redactional addition of the graves unnecessary and unlikely.[6] Both the structure of the passage and its (con)textual setting make it clear that the vision promises a

---

[1] Bernhard Lang, "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead and the Zoroastrian Connection in Ezekiel's Prophecy," *Ezekiel and His Book: Textual and Literary Criticism and their Interrelation*, ed. J. Lust, Bibliotheca Ephemeridum Theologicarium Lovaniensium LXXIV (Leuven: Leuven Univerity Press, 1986), pp. 310–314. Cf. James R. Russell, "Ezekiel and Iran," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), pp. 1–15, who also considers Zoroastrian influence to be likely, although he rejects Lang's appeal to the observation of exposure.

[2] Lang, "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead," p. 310; Cf. Walther Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Ezekiel Chapters 25–48*, trans. James D. Martin, Hermeneia (Philadelphia: Fortress, 1983), p. 260.

[3] See *Vidēvdāt* VIII.33, available in English translation in *The Zend-Avesta I*, p. 103; Cf. Lang, "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead," p. 310.

[4] See Figure 14. Cf. K. A. Inostrantsev, "On the Ancient Iranian Burial Customs and Buildings," *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 3 (1923): pp. 1–28; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 25–26, 54, 168; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 94–95; Shahbazi. "The Irano-Lycian Monuments," pp. 174–189; James R. Russell, "Burial III: In Zoroastrianism," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): p. 562, mentions two burials as far east as Bactria and Sogdia. The antiquity of exposure is a much debated question. Grenet, "Burial II: Remnants of Burial Practices in Ancient Iran," pp. 559–561. A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Astōdān," *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.8 (1987): p. 851 notes that *daxma* means 'to bury.'

[5] Moshe Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, The Anchor Bible 22A (New York: Doubleday, 1997), p. 748.

[6] Michael V. Fox, "The Rhetoric of Ezekiel's Vision of the Valley of the Bones," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 51 (1980): pp. 1–15; Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, pp. 747–748; Cf. Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 257, who rejects interpolations and sees the passage as a unity, without ever quite saying so.

national restoration to the Land of Israel and is not preaching the idea of bodily resurrection; indeed, as Fox rightfully points out, the entire rhetorical force of the passage depends on the assumption that "the audience regards corporeal resurrection as basically absurd."[7] In the final context this passage is clearly about national restoration: 36 is about the desolate hills of Israel and the nations mocking G-d, both of which drive him to return Israel; 37:14–28 describes how both Judah and Israel will be united in the land of Israel.[8] Verses 1–14 clearly, therefore, are a prophecy for the proper internal response to the promise of return to the land. Yet, this poses an interesting dilemma: the early history of interpretation of the passage clearly saw a reference to bodily resurrection in this section.[9] Here, Lang's example of the mural at the synagogue at Dura Europos may be revealing: while the passage clearly speaks of bones (עצמות), the mural on the wall depicts "anatomical fragments."[10] He suggests that the Jews of Dura Europas saw a similarity between Ezek 37 and Zoroastrian religion, and thus attempted to create what he calls "artificial dissimilation." The early interpreters of the vision at Dura saw that the passage could be seen as consonant with other local traditions, and thus changed the bones into body-parts. This may not be as far-fetched as it first sounds; as Birkeland remarks, the 'foreignness' of the idea of bodily resurrection was still felt well past the Persian period; this is evident in Qoheleth, Ben Sirah, and the Sadducees.[11]

In fact, the imagery of this passage does recall various aspects of the Zoroastrian tradition. The wording of Ezek 37 is very precise in the language it uses to describe the scenario: עצמות, רוח חיים. This wording is strikingly different from the language of Gen 2, a passage with which one would expect similarities from a textual-redactional approach. Although some scholars claim a similarity in language, the creation account in Gen 2 uses עפר, נפש, נשמת חיים, none of which occur in this passage.[12] Greenberg suggests a terminological

---

[7] Fox, "The Rhetoric of Ezekiel's Vision," p. 11.

[8] Cf. Walther Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 1: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Ezekiel, Chapters 1–24*, trans. Ronald E. Clements, Hermeneia (Philadelphia: Fortress, 1979), pp. 62–65. The general consensus of modern scholarship views this passage as a reference to restoration and not resurrection. Cf. G. A. Cooke, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Ezekiel*, International Critical Commentaries (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1936), pp. 396–7; Walther Eichrodt, *Ezekiel: A Commentary*, trans. Cosslett Quin, The Old Testament Library (London: SCM, 1970), p. 509; Klaas Spronk, *Beatific Afterlife in Ancient Israel and in the Ancient Near East*, Alter Orient und Altes Testament 219 (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1986), p. 295; John J. Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, Biblical Resource Series, Second ed. (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998), p. 25.

[9] Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, pp. 749–751; As he notes, "Thus the dominant trend of the earliest interpretations of our passage is furthest from its original meaning as we today understand it." (p. 750).

[10] Lang, "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead," pp. 313–314; a drawing of the image is available in Emil G. Kraeling, "The Meaning of the Ezekiel Panel in the Synagogue at Dura," *Bulletin of the American Schools for Oriental Research* 78 (1940): p. 14; See the discussion and images in Gutmann, ed., *Dura-Europos Synagogue*.

[11] Harris Birkeland, "The Belief in the Resurrection of the Dead in the Old Testament," *Studia Theologica* 3 (1949): p. 77.

[12] Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 1*, p. 63 and Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 261, admits dissimilarity of language, but still posits a creation parallel; indeed, there is a distant creation parallel, but it appears as if the closest one is Zoroastrian rather than Jewish.

affinity with the flood account, but this is minimal.[13] The use of *spirit*, *breath*, and *bones*, however, does have a resemblance to some Zoroastrian usage.

Figure 14: Human Burials at Persepolis
Chicago Oriental Institute P-61007. Courtesy of the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago © University of Chicago

One of the *Gāthās*, *Yasna* XXXI.7, remarks that, "Piety gave body and breath,"[14] and in *Yasna* XXXIV.14, another *Gāthā*, a request is made for "the prize desirable for body and breath."[15] This language often appears in the context of immortality and health (*Amərətat* and *Haurvātat*).[16] That at least the Zoroastrian tradition expected bodily resurrection is quite clear. In the *Zāmyād Yašt*, a Young Avestan hymn, the refrain "...when the dead will rise, when life and immortality will come..." appears four times.[17] A later Zoroastrian fragment of a prayer has Ahura Mazda command, "Let the dead arise...let bodily life be sustained in these now lifeless bodies."[18]

In the *Greater Bundahišn* XXXIV.4–8/*Shorter Bundahišn* XXX.4–6, Zoroaster queries Ahura Mazda how bodily resurrection is possible. After relating a list of the feats he performed during creation, Ahura Mazda responds, "Observe that when that which was not was then produced, why is it not possible to produce again that which was? For at that time

---

[13] Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, p. 743, connects רוח חיים with Gen 6:17 and 7:15.
[14] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 35. Cf. XXXI.11, p. 39. (Avestan: *at kəhrpōm utaguitiš dadāt ārmaitiš anmā*).
[15] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 59. (Avestan: *tat zī mazdā vairīm astvaitē uštānāi dātā*).
[16] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, pp. 169–170.
[17] §11, 19, 23, 89. See Almut Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 109, 148, 158, 365; In English, see *The Zend-Avesta II*, p. 290, 291, 292, 307.
[18] *The Zend-Avesta III*, pp. 391–392 (Fragment 4).

one will demand the bone from the spirit of the earth…."[19] This claim is directly followed in the text with a section in which it is the *bones* of the first man and women which are raised first, followed by the remainder of mankind. All people "rouse up from the spot where its life departs…all material living beings assume again their bodies and forms…"[20] It may be significant that in this passage the bones are explicitly raised first and the bodies are recreated in the spot in which the person had died. This description is quite reminiscent of the rhetorical style of Ezekiel's vision, with the bare bones receiving flesh and standing in the spot where they were left. However, the *Bundahišn* itself is late, so any parallels require additional corroboration.[21]

In his discussion of 37:1–14 Russell comments on the role which both the 'good' and 'evil' *Vayu*s (Spirits of the Wind) play in death and resurrection: the evil Vayu overcomes and kills, while the good Vayu revivifies at the resurrection. Russell finds the description of the dead as 'killed' (הרוגים, v. 9) in line with this thinking.[22] Because death is unnatural and unoriginal to Ahura Mazda's creation, in Zoroastrian traditions it is always attributed to the onslaught of the evil powers, often the demon of death, *Astō.vīδātu*.[23] The use of הרג does appear strange in the context of the vision: the simple rhetorical logic of the passage merely requires מתים. However, an understanding of death as unnatural, as is found in Iranian traditions, would render it a logical choice. Note that v. 7 does describe a קול and a רעש as the bones come together. These noises could be related to the coming of the *Vayu* or storm-wind.[24] A play between wind and spirit is evident in v. 9, so the text's repetition of רוח certainly could be seen to echo the Zoroastrian use of the (good) wind imparting life. It can also be seen to fit within a traditional Hebrew understanding of wind/breath/spirit.[25] However, as Greenberg notes, all the truly parallel passages are also post-exilic (Jer 49:36; Zech 6:5; Ezek 42:16–20), perhaps implying the idea entered in the post-exilic period.

Ezekiel 37:10 describes the revivified group as a very vast army (חיל גדול מאד מאד). In the context, neither in 37:1–14 nor in the broader section of 36–37, is there a martial reference to explain the use of 'army.'[26] It clearly cannot be referring to the army in 38–39,

---

[19] *Pahlavi Texts I*, (XXX.4–6), pp. 121–123; Cf. *Greater Bundahišn* XXIV.4–8 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 284–287). This passage is also available in extracted form in Boyce, *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism*, p. 52.

[20] *Pahlavi Texts I*, (§7–8), p. 123.

[21] The *Bundahišn* is a late summary of *Zand* dating ca. ninth century C.E. See Appendix I.

[22] Russell, "Ezekiel and Iran," p. 7; Cf. Stig Wikander, *Vayu: Texte und Untersuchungen zur Indo-Iranischen Religionsgeschichte*, vol. I: Texte, Quastiones Indo-Iranicae 1 (Uppsala: Lundequistska Bokhandeln, 1941), p. 2, 7.

[23] See *Vidēvdāt* V.8–9; Cf. IV.49 and XV.29 (*Zend-Avesta I*, pp. 50–51, 46, and 212, respectively).

[24] Cf. *Vidēvdāt* V.8–9 (*Zend-Avesta I*, pp. 50–51); Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 79–80.

[25] Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, p. 744; Eichrodt, *Ezekiel: A Commentary*, p. 509.

[26] Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 400 sees a battlefield image; Eichrodt, *Ezekiel: A Commentary*, p. 509, sees it as a reference to the 'forces of death'; Greenberg, *Ezekiel 21–37*, p. 748, derives it from the inspiration of Mesopotamian battle reliefs; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 262, however, considers this insignificant.

as the army there is the army of Gog and not of reconstituted Israel. The reference to an army, however, may make more sense in the context of Iranian traditions. The final resurrection of mankind occurs in the context of the defeat of Angra Mainyu and the *Daēuuas*, with mankind having an especial role to play in the victory of Ahura Mazda. In the *Greater Bundahišn* III.23–24/*Shorter* (or *Indian*) *Bundahišn*, II.10–11, Ahura Mazda gives the guardian spirits of men the choice of 'contending in bodily form' and then being resurrected perfected and immortal at the end of the world; they consent.[27] The entire purpose of the embodiment of the human *frauuašī* (or pre-existent spirit) is to contend with, and ultimately defeat, the forces of Angra Mainyu; the final success of this enterprise will be evidenced when men's bodies are reconstituted out of the earth and made immortal.

While Greenberg may be right in pointing to the initial Mesopotamian inspiration for Ezekiel's vision, it cannot be denied that the overall shape of this discourse proves very similar to various Iranian rites and beliefs to which subsequent Judaean audiences/readers would have been exposed; a very good example of this is the mural at Dura Europos, as Lang notes. It is also possible, given the various parallels noted in the text, that Ezekiel intended to borrow Iranian resurrection motifs as part of his rhetorical strategy. The intended message of the passage clearly refers to a national and unified restoration to Israel, but the vision itself may have helped to give a 'canonical' or authoritative springboard which made Iranian ideas of bodily resurrection appear less foreign, even if the initial audience (or indeed the prophet himself) did not see it that way.[28] As Birkeland remarks, "no idea can become an integral part of a religious complex when this complex is not prepared for that idea."[29] Perhaps if 'Ezekiel' is amended to 'Ezekiel's inheritors' Lang's following statement can be useful: "The Iranian connection enabled Ezekiel to transcend the limits of Jewish belief current in his day."[30] While it may be remotely possible to see a negative influence here in Ezek 37, the significance of the Iranian parallels are more in their likely long-term effect among the inheritors of the text. It is worth noting how this pericope was conflated with 38–39 and interpreted eschatologically and concerning resurrection in the *Pseudo-Ezekiel* literature in the Dead Sea Scrolls.[31] Later generations more familiar with the concept of

---

[27] Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, p. 45; *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 14.

[28] One may even be tempted to see a polemic with Zoroastrianism; if Ezekiel was aware of the religion, which is possible but necessarily tenuous, perhaps he purposefully appropriated the language and imagery of the Magi's or other Iranian priests' rhetoric to argue YHWH's strength and ability to restore Israel. Thus the vision could serve two functions—to deny the theology of the Zoroastrians and to affirm the perogatives of YHWH. This, however, is very speculative. However, Daniel I. Block, *The Book of Ezekiel: Chapters 25–48* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998), pp. 384–386, is willing to see a polemic.

[29] Birkeland, "The Belief in the Resurrection of the Dead in the Old Testament," p. 62.

[30] Lang, "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead," p. 313.

[31] Albert L. A. Hogeterp, "Resurrection and Biblical Tradition: Pseudo-Ezekiel Reconsidered," *Biblica* 89.1 (2008): pp. 59–69.

bodily resurrection and hostile, demonic forces could easily see this idea already embedded in Ezekiel's vision and thus more easily assimilate them to their understanding of the text.

Ezekiel 38–39 (Gog of Magog)

Many commentators consider this dramatic and difficult passage as either apocalyptic or proto-apocalyptic; it certainly influenced later apocalyptic texts.[32] For the moment, the question of the authorship of the section is irrelevant: whether attributed to Ezekiel or redactors, if Iranian material can be detected, it is evidence of Iranian influence at some point.[33] The prophet here describes a divinely thwarted invasion of reconstituted Israel by a coalition of armies from the North, led by "Gog of the land of Magog, chief prince of Meshech and Tubal" גוג ארץ המגוג נשיא ראש משך ותבל (v. 2).[34] Gog is often connected with the Assyrian *Gugu* or the *Gagaia* of the Amarna Letters, in either case a reference to Lydia.[35] The meaning or significance of Magog has found little agreement; it has been interpreted as 'Land

---

[32] Calling it apocalyptic: Blenkinsopp, *History of Prophecy*, p. 178; George C. Heider, *The Cult of Molek: A Reassessment* (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1985), p. 356; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 406; David Arthur, *A Smooth Stone: Biblical Prophecy in Historical Perspective* (Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 2001), p. 274.
Proto-apocalyptic: Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, p. 85; Ackroyd, *Israel under Babylon and Persia*, p. 99, compares it to apocalyptic; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 300, 304;
Rejecting label: Daniel I. Block, *The Book of Ezekiel: Chapters 25-48* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998), pp. 427–428.
On the use of this in later texts, see Sverre Bøe, *Gog and Magog: Ezekiel 38–39 as pre-text for Revelation 19,17–21 and 20,7–10*, Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. 2. Reihe 135 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2001), particularly pp. 235–382; Gary T. Manning, Jr., *Echoes of a Prophet: The Use of Ezekiel in the Gospel of John and in the Literature of the Second Temple Period*, JSNTSS 270 (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 34–37.

[33] Whether chapters 38–39 belong to the original prophet or to a later redaction is a contentious issue. For the purposes of Iranian influence, this is a moot point. For various views, cf. Risa Levitt Kohn, "Ezekiel at the Turn of the Century," *Currents in Biblical Research* 2.1 (2003): pp. 9–12.
Henry McKeating, *Ezekiel*, Old Testament Guides (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995), p. 122, sees it as belonging to the prophet himself; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 1*, pp. 65–66, considers parts to be later; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 300, 304; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 407; Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, p. 103 considers 38–39 to be in the "mainstream of the Ezekiel priestly tradition." Albertz, *Israel in Exile*, p. 352, 354, considers it "clearly secondary."
The present author is skeptical of efforts to remove 38–39 too far from the remainder of the book. As with authorship, no stand on the location of the writing is taken here (except that William H. Brownlee, "'Son of Man set your face': Ezekiel the refugee prophet," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 54 (1983): pp. 83–110, must be wrong).

[34] The Greek rendering Ῥως is here considered to be a mistranslation/ misunderstanding of ראש, which is clearly a title (albeit in an unusual formation) rather than a name. Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 305, does not accept the Greek as a name, but also proposes to move the ה from before מגוג and to put it on the end of ארץ, which is not adopted above, but makes little overall difference in meaning. Block's suggestion of a comma between 'prince' and 'chief' would solve this difficulty. See Block, *Ezekiel 25–48*, p. 435. Some scholars do still see ראש as a toponym. E.g., James D. Price, "Rosh: An Ancient Land Known to Ezekiel," *Grace Theological Journal* (1985): pp. 67–89.

[35] Referring to *Gagaia*, Edward Lewis Curtis and Albert Alonzo Madsen, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Books of Chronicles*, International Critical Commentaries (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1910), p. 60; G. Hüsing, "Gūgu (678–643)," *Orientalistische Literaturzeitung* 10 (1915): pp. 299–303. Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 408 views either possible. However, Michael C. Astour, "Ezekiel's Prophecy of Gog and the Cuthean Legend of Naram-Sin," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 95.4 (1976): p. 569–570 rejects this identification; See also Friedrich Delitzsch, *Wo lag das Paradies? Eine biblisch-assyriologische Studie, mit zahlreichen assyriologischen Beiträgen zur biblischen Länder- und Völkerkunde* (Leipzig: Hinrichs'sche, 1881), pp. 246–247; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 301.

of Gog,' an alliteration based on Gog, or a gloss based on Genesis or 1 Chronicles.[36] By the time of the Qumran communities, the two were seen as separate peoples.[37]

It is common to associate Ezekiel's use of 'far north' in 38:6 and 39:2 with an 'Enemy from the North' Tradition, which is also associated with Jeremiah and Isaiah.[38] The passage is therefore read as a reinterpretation and combination of the unfulfilled prophecies of Jeremiah and Isaiah, partially basing this upon 38:17. Block notes that both of the supposed antecedents of the Ezekiel passage were already fulfilled in the minds of the earlier prophets, and probably in the mind of Ezekiel—namely by Assyria and Babylon.[39] In both of these cases, the enemy in question is a real, historical enemy who entered Israel from the geographic north.[40] There seems to be little in common which could be called a 'tradition' beyond the similarities of topic (an army entering from the north). While the north may have had mythic or numinous implications for the Babylonians, there is no need to read this into the passages in Jeremiah, Isaiah, or Ezekiel. In fact, Ezek 38–39 need not be seen as claiming to reinterpret previous prophecy at all. If one follows the Massoretic text in 38:17 (with Block) G-d's statement becomes 'Are you the one of whom I spoke…'—a rhetorical question with an implied 'no.' When read in that manner, this passage ceases to be about reinterpreting a past tradition and posits a wholly new event. There is an inevitable terminological affinity due to the common topos of battle, but there is no real reason to appeal to an 'enemy from the north' tradition in this passage.[41] If Ezekiel is not reinterpreting previous oracles, is there a specific context for this passage outside a general or mythological enemy from the north?

Diakonoff interprets this passage as a reference to the Median-Lydian war of 590–585 B.C.E.[42] He reads the nations in vv. 2, 5–6 as Phrygia and Tabal (משך ותבל), Asiatic

---

[36] As from Akkadian 'Māt Gūgi' see Astour, "Ezekiel's Prophecy of Gog," p. 569; Ralph W. Klein, *1 Chronicles: A Commentary*, Hermeneia, ed. Thomas Krüger (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2006), p. 64; From Assonance with Gog: Curtis and Madsen, *Books of Chronicles*, p. 60; As a gloss, Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 409; Cf. Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, pp. 301–302; C. H. Toy, *The Book of the Prophet Ezekiel*, Sacred Books of the Old Testament 12 (Leipzig: Hinrichs'sche, 1899), p. 99.

[37] 4QpIsa[a] 8:20 and 4Q523 1:5 both reference Gog and Magog as separate peoples. See F. García Martínez and E. J. C. Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, 2 vols. (Leiden: Brill, 1998), p. 317, 1049.

[38] Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 1*, pp. 65–66; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, pp. 299–303; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 406; Brevard S. Childs, "The Enemy from the North and the Chaos Tradition," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 78 (1959): pp. 178–198; Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, pp. 91–94; Daniel I. Block, "Gog in Prophetic Tradition: a new look at Ezekiel XXXVIII:17," *Vetus Testamentum* 42.2 (1992): pp. 165–167; Fishbane, *Biblical Interpretation*, p. 477.

[39] Block, "Gog in Prophetic Tradition," p. 168; Cf. J. Philip Hyatt, "The Peril from the North in Jeremiah," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 59.4 (1940): pp. 507–511.

[40] Cf. Brevard S. Childs, "The Enemy from the North and the Chaos Tradition," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 78 (1959): p. 192, 195.

[41] Block, "Gog in Prophetic Tradition," pp. 170–172.

[42] See Diakonoff, "Media," p. 126; two other works by this author are referred to and translated from the Russian in Astour, "Ezekiel's Prophecy of Gog," pp. 570–571. Julie Galambush, "Necessary Enemies: Nebuchadnezzar, YHWH, and Gog in Ezekiel 38–39," *Israel's Prophets and Israel's Past: Essays on the Relationship of Prophetic Texts and Israelite History in Honor of John H. Hayes*, eds. Brad E. Kelle and Megan Bishop Moore, Library

Thrace (he reads תרס instead of פרס), Nubia (כוש), Pontus (פוט), Cimmerians/Scythians (גמר), and the Melitene dynasty (בית תוגרמה). His textual emendation of the text is unnecessary: most scholars identify פרס with Persia, which was a vassal of Media until 550 B.C.E.[43] The inclusion of Nubia in this list of Anatolian/ Iranian powers is strange; however, כוש may refer to the 'land of the Kaššu' along the Araxes River, which would fit the Anatolian grouping well.[44] 1 Chron 1:8–9 and Hab 3:7 seem to indicate several relatively homonymic 'Cushes' in the Ancient Near East.[45] Astour finds this contextualization problematic for several reasons:[46] firstly, he objects that the Median-Lydian War never threatened Palestine, with Judah's imperial lord, Babylon, even serving to mediate the peace deal in 585; secondly, the Kingdom of Judah was still real in 590; thirdly, that Ezekiel wanted the existing (Judaean) state to be destroyed to make way for the new one. A slightly broader (prophetic?) view of the historical circumstances, however, vitiates these objections. Yamauchi discusses the possibility that Indo-Iranian Scythians (the גמר of Ezekiel is generally identified as the Scythians) may indeed have threatened Palestine, either in independent raids in the seventh century B.C.E. or as mercenaries in the service of the Neo-Babylonian Empire in the sixth.[47] Even if no immediate threat to Palestine is referred to or expected, the Median-Lydian War would likely have threatened Ezekiel's real audience—Israelites and Judaeans living in exile.

---

of Hebrew Bible 446 (New York: T & T Clark, 2006), pp. 254–267, also argues for a contextualization in the Medo-Lydian War, but uses this to argue for an identification of Gog with Nebuchadnezzar (pp. 260–261). Even if one accepts her reading of 'ruler *over* the Prince of Meshech and Tubal,' this does not priviledge an indentification with Nebuchadnezzar, who could not have claimed such status.

[43] Ludwig Koehler and Walter Baumgartner, *The Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament*, trans. M. E. J. Richardson, Study ed., 2 vols. (Leiden: Brill, 2001), p. 969; On Persia's vassalage see Herodotus, *Persian Wars* I.123–130 (Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 160–171); Cf. Glassner, *Mesopotamian Chronicles*, p. 235; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 31.

[44] See Delitzsch, *Wo lag das Paradies?*, pp. 31–32, 53–57, 127–129; Cf. Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 467; E. A. Speiser, "The Rivers of Paradise," *I Studied Inscriptions From Before the Flood*, eds. Richard S. Hess and David T. Tsumura (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1994), p. 177.

[45] Gary N. Knoppers, *1 Chronicles 1–9: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*, The Anchor Bible (New York: Doubleday, 2003), p. 275, suggests two different Cush traditions have been combined here. The 'Cushan' in Habakkuk 3:7 is problematic, cf. Francis I. Andersen, *Habakkuk: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*, The Anchor Bible (New York: Doubleday, 2001), p. 312, but כושן could be emended to כוש. It is interesting to note in this connection the various Kaššu-peoples tentatively associated by Herzfeld, Ernst E. Herzfeld, *Archaeological History of Iran* (Schweich Lectures of the British Academy; London: Oxford Univ Press, 1935), p. 2; cf. Richard N. Frye, *The Heritage of Persia* (London: Weidenfeld and Nicholson, 1962), pp. 63–64; Also note a possible reference to a group of Elamites in the Zagros, Curtis and Madsen, *Books of Chronicles*, p. 63.

[46] Astour, "Ezekiel's Prophecy of Gog," p. 571; this page contains all three of his objections.

[47] Edwin M. Yamauchi, "The Scythians: Invading Hordes from the Russian Steppes," *Biblical Archaeologist* 46.2 (1983): pp. 90–99, particularly p. 95; Cf. E. D. Phillips, "The Scythian Domination in Western Asia: Its Record in History, Scripture and Archaeology," *World Archaeology* 4.2 (1972): pp. 129–138, although he treats Herodotus uncritically. If correct, this would satisfy Galambush, "Necessary Enemies," p. 259, who argues that Gog must be *returning* to Palestine.

Interesting in this regard is Vogelsang's contention that the Scythians/Saka played a major role in the establishment of the Median Empire. See Vogelsang, *The Rise and Organization*, p. 305. He also connects this with the Achaemenids, positing Scythian intermediaries (p. 306, 312).

As was noted earlier,[48] deported Israelites and Judaeans were likely living around the regions of Ecbatana, the Median capital, and Nineveh, the former Assyrian capital; Media conquered Calah and Arrapha in 614 and participated in conquering Nineveh in 612.[49] Thus it is likely that some of the text's intended audience were living under Median rule, and thus very aware of the war. Additionally, awareness of the Medes as a power and potential threat was not limited to Ezekiel—Jer 51:11, 27–28 expects an invasion of the Medes and Anatolian allies to conquer Babylon. While Holladay considers these references to be glosses, he admits that they have to predate 550;[50] in any case, *someone* considered Media a credible force. It may be significant that 51:11 uses שלטים, 'quivers': the Scythians were renowned for their skill as archers.[51] Further, Jer 25:25–26 possibly links the Scythians, Medians, and Elamites together with 'all the kings of the North.'[52] Ezekiel's more defined description of these northern forces suggests, at the very least, a closer and more detailed understanding of the Anatolian political situation. Astour's final objection ignores the preceding context of rehabilitation and restoration in the final book. The prophet has just prophesied that Edom will be destroyed and Israel returned for YHWH's glory (36); that the scattered remains of David's kingdom will be restored and unified (37); now in 38–39 he demonstrates the completeness and inescapability of YHWH's plans to restore Israel. This message has nothing to do with the existing vassal Kingdom of Judah; it has everything to do with the upcoming restoration.[53]

When the geographical terms are read in this manner, Ezekiel's use of 'north' applies as much to the real geographical position of the nations mentioned as it does to a quasi-mythical 'foe from the north.' If the Median-Lydian War can possibly be accepted as a contextual background, what is its significance to reading the passage? Beyond indicating a general context for the author and intended audience, it serves as a hint to look for the use of Iranian-inspired imagery in the pericope.

---

[48] Cf. Chapter II.

[49] Cf. Glassner, *Mesopotamian Chronicles*, pp. 221–223; Levine, "Prelude to Monarchy: Iran and the Neo-Assyrian Empire," pp. 43–44; Frye, *The Heritage of Persia*, p. 73.

[50] Holladay, *Jeremiah 2*, pp. 397, 398, 405, 407, 427.

[51] Holladay, *Jeremiah 2*, pp. 422–423; Yamauchi, "The Scythians: Invading Hordes from the Russian Steppes," p. 94. For an overview of achery in the Ancient Near East, see Christophe Zutterman, "The Bow in the Ancient Near East: a Re-evaluation of Archery from the Late 2nd Millennium to the End of the Achaemenid Empire," *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): pp. 119–165, especially 135, 140–141.

[52] William L. Holladay, *Jeremiah 1: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Jeremiah Chapters 1–25*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1986), p. 671, 675, considers this reference a later gloss, and זמרי to be an 'athbash' for Elam. This makes little sense with Elam mentioned in the next verse. The emendation to גמרי 'Gomer' makes more sense, especially when the ethnicities and alliances are considered. This emendation is suggested, but not discussed, in Felix E. Peiser, "Miscellen," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 17 (1897): p. 350.

[53] Cf. a similar understanding in Daniel I. Block, "Gog and the pouring out of the Spirit: reflections on Ezekiel 39:21-29," *Vetus Testamentum* 37.3 (1987): pp. 266–267.

Irwin argues that Ezek 38–39 paints a picture of Molek sacrifice.[54] While the passage, particularly 39:17–20, clearly invokes the language of sacrifice, the motives for using Molek imagery in this context are unclear. The passage in Isa 30:27–33, to which Irwin compares Ezek 38–39, prophesies the destruction of Assyria in terms of a sacrifice to Molek (in the context of Isa 30–31). This is in the context of Judah's idolatry and predicated on her return to the worship of YHWH; in fact, it seems to be a promise that *if* Judah will cease offering to Molek, YHWH *himself* will offer sacrifice to Molek, with Assyria as the victim.[55] This focus on idolatry with Molek is not in view in 38–39. Further, Molek's cult seems to have been a largely Jerusalem-centered cult,[56] but no mention of Jerusalem, Zion, or the temple appears in 38–39. If the location of Ezekiel's vision is meant to be the Jezreel Valley rather than the Hinnom Valley, as Irwin claims and seems possible,[57] the logic for the prophet's use of the Molek imagery seems slim. Irwin's point on the use of זבח גדול in 39:11 is, however, compelling. He notes that in the two other places where זבח גדול occurs (Judg 16:23; 2 Kgs 10:19) it is used in the context of (human) sacrifice to foreign gods.[58] He fails to note, however, that in each of these cases the foreign imagery is ironic—both times the worshippers of the foreign god are themselves sacrificed to their own god (The Philistines to Dagan and the priests of Ba'al to Ba'al). Even if the Median-Lydian war is not the context of this passage, *Miθra* is more likely to be a deity of the nations listed than is Molek.[59] In this

---

[54] Brian P. Irwin, "Molek Imagery and the Slaughter of Gog in Ezekiel 38 and 39," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 65 (1995): pp. 93–112.

[55] George C. Heider, *The Cult of Molek: A Reassessment* (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1985), p. 322 discusses this passage.

[56] On Molek's association with Jerusalem and its environs (at least in the Bible), see John Day, *Molech: a God of Human Sacrifice in the Old Testament* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1989), p. 55, who sees Molek as a Jubusite cult, and specifically Canaanite (pp. 29–31), although he may have been equated with Nergal (p. 46–49); Cf., however, the extensive study of Heider, *Cult of Molek*, who does sees Molek imagery in Ezek 39:11, pp. 356–358, but on the basis of identification with the Hinnom Valley; also see Charles C. Torrey, "Armageddon," *Harvard Theological Review* 31.3 (1938): pp. 237–248, who links all apocalyptic battles with the Jerusalem environs.

[57] Irwin, "Molek Imagery," pp. 98–103. His argument is based on a parallel with Jer 7:1–34, which is debatable; however, his arguments against the Hinnom Valley are convincing. There is nothing in 38–39 referencing Jerusalem. However, the Plain of Megiddo has often been the scene of battles, real and mythological. These battles are often over the control of Palestine, as Nakhai has remarked, Beth Alpert Nakhai, "Review of *The Battles of Armageddon: Megiddo and the Jezreel Valley from the Bronze Age to the Nuclear Age* by Eric H. Cline," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 327 (2002): pp. 89–90. This suits the content of 38–39 well. Additionally, the Jezreel Valley is a major trade route, much more suiting a reference to blocking travelers than any valley around Jerusalem. However, note that Johannes Simons, *The Geographical and Topographical Texts of the Old Testament* (Leiden: Brill, 1959), pp. 458–459, rejects any definitive identification of the valley.

[58] Irwin, "Molek Imagery," p. 107. The words appear together in Neh 12:43 as well, but there it is in the plural.

[59] Even if one wishes to equate Nergal and Molek as A. D. H. Bivar, "Religious Subjects on Achaemenid Seals," *Mithraic Studies*, ed. John R. Hinnells, vol. 1 (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975), pp. 99–103, does, the evidence for human sacrifice in Mesopotamia is ambiguous at best. Cf. Heider, *Cult of Molek*, pp. 204–210, 378; Day, *Molech*, p. 45, only references Heider. Alberto R. W. Green, *The Role of Human Sacrifice in the Ancient Near East*, American Schools of Oriental Research Dissertation Series 1 (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975), p. 201, however, considers the practice of human sacrifice widespread in the ANE, albeit it in times of crisis.

context, particularly in light of the possibility of the Iranian background to the original oracle, it may be more likely that the intended sacrifice is to *Miθra* rather than Molek.[60]

Before discussing Irwin's suggestion and the language of 38–39, a few relevant details about *Miθra* should be noted. The phenomenon of *Miθra*-worship is a complex one,[61] but there are several things which can be said with relative certainty. First, sidestepping the issue of its relation to 'orthodox' Zoroastrian worship, *Miθra* was a decidedly (Indo-)Iranian deity and his cult comes out of old (pre-Zoroastrian) Iranian tradition. Second, *Miθra*'s primary association was with the contract, perhaps with political and international overtones.[62] Third, his cult was sometimes linked with blood sacrifice, at least at Persepolis. This may have included even human sacrifice among certain Anatolian Scythian groups.[63] In his later western incarnation as Mithras (whatever the precise link with *Miθra*) he was even especially associated with bull-sacrifice.[64] Fourth, *Miθra* was associated with war; this association seems

---

[60] Although, interestingly, Bivar, "Religious Subjects on Achaemenid Seals," pp. 99–103 and A. D. H. Bivar, "Mithra and Mesopotamia," *Mithraic Studies*, ed. John R. Hinnells, vol. 2 (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975), p. 285 claims a relationship between Nergal, Molek and (Roman) Mithras. However, also note that Mit(h)ra was known in the Northern Mesopotamian/Anatolian area for many years: Cf. the famous Mitanni treaties, Thieme, "The 'Aryan' Gods of the Mitanni Treaties," pp. 301–317. Earlier, Scheftelowitz argues that *Miθra*-worship spread throughout the Ancient Near East early and quickly syncretized, which seems incredible. I. Scheftelowitz, "Die Mithra-Religion der Indoskythen und ihre Beziehung zum Saura- und Mithras-Kult," *Acta Orientalia* 11 (1933): pp. 293–333. For evidence of his wide appeal, at least among those with Iranian names, see Rüdiger Schmitt, "Die theophoren Eigennamen mit altiranische Miθra-," *Étude Mithriaques*, ed. J. Duchesne-Guillemin (Leiden: Brill, 1978), pp. 395–456.

[61] For an overview of various aspects of Mithraism see Hinnells, ed., *Mithraic Studies*; Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, ed., *Études Mithriaques*; for *Miθra*'s place in Zoroastrianism see Mary Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 32.1 (1969): pp. 10–34. On the *Mihr Yašt*, see Gershevitch, *The Avestan Hymn to Mithra*, pp. 1–74.

[62] Paul Thieme, "Mithra in the Avesta," *Étude Mithriaques*, ed. J. Duchesne-Guillemin (Leiden: Brill, 1978), pp. 501–511; On his political and international treaty connections: Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, pp. 59–60, 77, 109. It is interesting to note in this regard the suggestion by Kamyar Abdi, "Bes in the Achaemenid Empire," *Ars Orientalis* 29 (1999): p. 121 (following Griziani) that Bes was assimilated to *Miθra* throughout the empire. Sadly, he does not take up this theory further in his subsequent article, Abdi, "Notes on the Iranization of Bes in the Achaemenid Empire," pp. 133–162.

[63] Herodotus IV.62, 71–77, 103 all imply ritual human sacrifice, thought the recipients are unclear. (Herodotus, *Wars III–IV*, p. 261, 209–273, 305). Dhalla appeals to *Yašt* X.119; Maneckji N. Dhalla, *History of Zoroastrianism* (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1938), p. 190, 255. Cf. Yamauchi, "The Scythians: Invading Hordes from the Russian Steppes," p. 98, and T. Sulimirski and T. Taylor, "The Scythians," *Cambridge Ancient History*, Vol. III.2 The Assyrian and Babylonian Empires and other States of the Near East, from the Eighth to the Sixth Centuries B.C., John Boardman, et al, eds., Second ed. (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1991), p. 563, 569 on human sacrifice in funerary contexts. Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 123–124 links *Miθra*-worship to Plutarch's night sacrifices; Cf. Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 128–130; on livestock sacrifice and *Miθra* at Persepolis, see Shahrokh Razmjou, "The *Lan* Ceremony and Other Ritual Ceremonies in the Achaemenid Period: The Persepolis Fortification Tablets," *Iran* 42 (2004): pp. 103–117. However, Eric Pirart, "Le sacrifice humain: Réflections sur la Philosophie Religieuse Indo-Iranienne Ancienne," *Journal Asiatique* 284.1 (1996): pp. 1–36, argues that human sacrifice was only rhetorical or in contexts of capital punishment among the Indo-Iranians.

[64] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 172–3; Cf. Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 17, who suggests that the tauroctony came from Haoma and was absorbed by Mithras (but not *Miθra*); Mary Boyce, "Haoma, priest of the sacrifice," *W. B. Henning Memorial Volume*, eds. Mary Boyce and Ilya Gershevitch (London: Lund Humphries, 1970), p. 80 (cf. 73). Cf. also the classical study of Franz Cumont, *The Mysteries of Mithra*, trans. Thomas J. McCormick, 2nd Rev. ed. (London: Kegan Paul, 1903). A newer interpretation of Mithras can be found in Roger Beck, "The Mysteries of Mithras: A New Account of Their Genesis," *Journal of Roman Studies* 88 (1998): pp. 115–128. A useful overview of the issues involved in the *Miθra*-Mithras connection, see Bruce

to be an early one linked with his defense of the contract. Additionally, both of the *yazatas* most closely associated with him in Zoroastrian tradition, *Sraoša* ('obedience') and *Vərəθragna* ('victory'), were often described in decidedly martial aspects. *Vərəθragna* was sometimes incarnated as an eagle or bird of prey, and *Sraoša* was associated with the rooster.[65] Fourth, even in pre-Zoroastrian traditions, *Miθra* was given the role of judge, largely connected to his role as arbiter of contracts.[66] In Zoroastrianism, this role is highly developed and important, extending even into primeval contract to limit the warfare between Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu. As Boyce has succinctly put it:

> He keeps a daily record of men's sins, and is their impartial judge at the Činvat Bridge. Those who have taken a false oath, or otherwise done wrong, he punishes strictly, both at the individual judgment and also at the end of the world, when he will smite the Evil Spirit. The Evil Spirit will appeal to him to uphold the ancient contract between Ohrmazd and himself, for even the powers of darkness acknowledge Mihr's [(sic), Pahlavi for *Miθra*] unswerving equity; but the divine contract which the great *yazata* guards will by then have run its course.[67]

One of the earliest Avestan sources for *Miθra* even characterizes the relationship between *Miθra* and Ahura Mazda as *pāyūčā θwōrəštārā yazamaidē*, 'the protector and the fashioner' (*Yasna* XLII.2).[68] The antiquity of *Miθra*'s role as judge and his related war-like and warrior attributes are visible in the *Mihr Yašt*, which is one of the oldest of the extant Iranian hymns. The *Yašt* refers to *Miθra* 'with a thousand ears, well-shapen, with ten thousand eyes, high, with full knowledge, strong, sleepless, and ever awake.'[69] He is depicted with implacable wrath towards violators of contracts (§19–21) and as protecting those who

---

Lincoln, "Review: Mitra, Mithra, Mithras: Problems of a Multiform Diety," *History of Religions* 17.2 (1977): pp. 200–208; cf. Kurt Rudolph, "Mitra, Mithra, Mithras," *Orientalistische Literaturzeitung* 74.4 (1979): pp. 309–320.

[65] For his partners and their avian manifestations, see *Vidēvdāt* XVIII.15–16 (*Zend-Avesta I*, p. 193); *Yašt* X.119 (Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 133; *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 150–151); *Greater Bundahišn* XIII.22 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 122–3).

Cf. the various discussions of the topic in Christian Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch* (Strassburg: Trübner, 1904), pp. 458, 259, 1634–1636; Grace Goodell, "Bird Lore in Southwestern Iran," *Asian Folklore Studies* 38.2 (1979): p. 146; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 62; M. Carnoy, "Iranian Mythology," *Mythology of All Races*, ed. Louis H. Gray, vol. VI (Boston: Marshall Jones, 1917), p. 292; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 89–90; John P. Peters, "The Cock," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 33 (1913): pp. 363–396; Kreyenbroek, *Sraoša in the Zoroastrian Tradition*, p. 118, 172; Gherardo Gnoli, "Bahrām I: In Old and Middle Iranian Texts," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): pp. 510–513.

Kreyenbroek, *Sraoša in the Zoroastrian Tradition*, p. 176, believes that *Sraoša*'s position in the Zoroastrian calendar near *Miθra* and *Rašnu* indicates that their association dates at least to the Achaemenid period.

On his links with war: see Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, p. 25. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 251–253, links *Miθra*, the sun, and war to a dance known as the 'Persica.'

[66] See esp. the *Mihr Yašt*, available in *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 119–158. Thieme, pp. 22–23 and Frye, p. 64, both in Hinnells, ed., *Mithraic Studies*, pp. 21–39 and 62–67, respectively; Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 31.

[67] Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 23; the references cited there seem to follow a different numbering than those in the SBE series. She seems to be referring to the following: *Vahman Yašt* (aka *Zand ī Vohuman Yašt*) III.31–36 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 227–229); *Vidēvdāt* XIX.15 (*Zend-Avesta I*, p. 208); *Mēnōg-ī Xrad* II.118 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 18); *Dēnkard* IX, XX.4–5 and IX, XXXIX.9–10 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, p. 210, 277–278).

[68] Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 33; *Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 291; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 54.

[69] X.7 (*Zend-Avesta II*, p. 121; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 76.)

honor them (§22–24).[70] Thus, while *Miθra*'s role in the eschatological judgment seems to have developed in Zoroastrianism with the triplication of eras,[71] even in non- or pre-Zoroastrian Iranian traditions it seems that *Miθra* had deep associations with judging and war. These became deeply enmeshed in Zoroastrian eschatology. The antiquity of these associations may also be implied by the continued association of *Miθra*, through his festival *Mihragan*, with the ancient Iranian heros *Θraētaona* and *Kərəsāspa*.[72]

These various aspects of *Miθra* offer more parallels to understanding the imagery of this passage than Irwin's appeal to עברים in v. 11 as a link to Molek. Irwin claims עברים in 39:11 is a technical term, indicating 'passing through' the fires of sacrifice and thus to Molek.[73] Verse 11 is highly problematic, with the meaning (and proper pointing) of the word in dispute. BHS recommends the emendation of the Massoretic הָעֹבְרִים to הָעֲבָרִים, as does Eichrodt and Cooke.[74] Zimmerli rejects the emendation's implied location in Moab, but otherwise makes no clear choice.[75] The word העברים occurs 25 times in the Hebrew Bible; of those not indicating 'Hebrew' or the name of a mountain, it indicates a form of 'transgression' as well as a form of 'passing through' or 'traveling.'[76] In light of the context, it seems more likely that the use of העברים in Ezek 38–39 is play on these two meanings, as it is in Jer 34:18–19, rather than a technical use indicating child sacrifice to Molek. A play on 'passing through' and 'transgression' would fit the context, and need not be a secondary addition.[77] Any argument based on the use of העברים seems dangerous, however, since the LXX drops the first reference to the valley.[78] If one insisted on a reference to 'passing through' in העברים, the idea of 'passing through' fire is at least as applicable to *Miθra* as it is

---

[70] *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 124–125; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, pp. 84–86.

[71] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 242–243; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 232–233. Cf. Mary Boyce, "Apocalyptic (that which has been revealed) i. In Zoroastrianism," *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.2 (1986): pp. 155–156; Mary Boyce, "Astvat.ərəta," *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.8 (1987): p. 872.

[72] Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 26, n. 82. The stories of Θraētaona (Feradun) and Kərəsāspa (Sam/ Garshasp) can also be found in the *Shahnameh*. (Firdausī, *Shāhnāmeh*, *The Shāhnāma of Firdausī*, eds. Arthur George Warner and Edmond Warner [London: Routledge, 2000], 9 vols.); Volume I contains the stories of Feridun and Garshasp. Cf. George Morrison, "Persian Literature (Belles-Lettres) from the Earliest Times to the Time of Jāmī," *History of Persian Literature from the Beginning of the Islamic Period to the Present Day*, ed. George Morrison, Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.2 (Leiden: Brill, 1981), p. 23, 39–40. The origins of the festival are obscure, however. See Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 371–377; Frye, "Mithra in Iranian History," pp. 64–65.

[73] Irwin, "Molek Imagery," pp. 104–105, 110.

[74] Eichrodt, *Ezekiel: A Commentary*, p. 517, 528; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 419.

[75] Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 317.

[76] Cf. Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 779 (§7); Francis Brown, et al., *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament, Based on the Lexicon of William Gesenius as Translated by Edward Robinson* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1966), pp. 716–720, makes no reference either to 'transgression' or to possible emendation in 37:11 to 'Abarim'. Although it has not yet been suggested, it could it also be repointed to mean 'Valley of the Hebrews' as well.

[77] Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 318

[78] In v. 11a the Greek reads: τόπον ὀνομαστόν μνημεῖον ἐν Ισραηλ τὸ πολυανδρεῖον τῶν ἐπελθόντων πρὸς τῇ θαλάσσῃ; but later in the verse it does refer to a revine (θάραγγος) for the MT's גיא המון גוג. However, the Targum Pseudo-Jonathan reads the valley as 'the Valley of the Pass' (חילת־מגזת), which seems to fit the idea of the Jezreel Valley and the Hebrew meaning, even though the verse as a whole is quite glossed.

Molek, perhaps even more so in the context of judgment. Boyce notes that ordeal by molten metal was a method for testing the innocence of the accused in Iranian lands,[79] and was a standard component of the final judgment/purification.[80] As guardian of the contract and a judge, *Miθra* was associated with this event;[81] it was believed that the innocent would be protected and the guilty consumed. An allusion in this section could imply that Gog and his allies were forced to 'pass through' the ordeal, and failed the test.

It is worth quoting the explicitly sacrificial section (39:17–20):

> [17]As for you, mortal, thus says the Lord GOD: Speak to the birds of every kind and to all the wild animals (צפור כל כנף ולכל חית השדה): Assemble (הקבצו) and come, gather from all around to the sacrificial feast that I am preparing for you (זבח לכם), a great sacrificial feast (זבח גדול) on the mountains of Israel, and you shall eat flesh and drink blood. [18]You shall eat the flesh of the mighty, and drink the blood of the princes of the earth—of rams, of lambs, and of goats, of bulls, all of them fatlings of Bashan. [19]You shall eat fat (חלב) until you are filled, and drink blood until you are drunk, at the sacrificial feast I am preparing for you (אשר זבחתי לכם). [20]And you shall be filled at my table (על שלחני) with horses and charioteers, with warriors and all kinds of soldiers, says the Lord GOD.

Irwin parallels the use of birds and beasts feasting in Jer 7 and Ezek 39, but it appears that the phrases used in each place are quite different. Jer 7:30–33 uses the terms עוף השמים and בהמת הארץ, but Ezekiel (vv. 4, 17) uses צפור כל כנף and חית השדה. Jeremiah's use is much more stereotypical poetic/parallelistic speech; Ezekiel's usage, however, appears to be singular in this particular combination.[82] The 'birds of every wing' (צפור כל כנף), is odd in parallel to 'beasts of the field'; is it possible that the variety of flesh-eating birds is intended to be emphasized? Geyer suggests that there may be mythological overtones to the term, but given his large enumeration of obscure creatures, one might expect more to appear in 39 if that were the intention in the passage.[83] As noted above, *Miθra* has associations with a variety of birds, mythical and real, largely through his association with *Sraoša* and *Vərəθragna*. *Miθra* is also associated with cattle, the open field, and cosmological origins.[84] Further, in the

---

[79] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 35–36, 242; Bruce Lincoln, "'The Earth Becomes Flat'—A Study of Apocalyptic Imagery," *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 25.1 (1983): pp. 136–153.

[80] See *Yasna* XXX.7, XXXII.7, L.9 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 35, 47, 105, respectively). See also *Bundahišn* XXX.17–20 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 125–126).

[81] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 35–36.

[82] It is more of a stock phrase to use 'beasts of the field and birds of the air,' Cf. Hos 2:20, 4:3 which parallels חית השדה and עוף השמים; Gen 1:30, חית הארץ and כל עוף השמים. A parallelism between עוף השמים and חית השדה occurs in Ezek 31:6, 13, in the context of Egypt as the World-Tree, where it also uses המון. Cook considers צפור כל כנף to be an Ezekielian phrase, citing 17:23, but does not mention חית השדה .Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, p. 102 (§33). This particular phrase seems to be unique in the Hebrew Bible.

[83] John B. Geyer, "Desolation and Cosmos," *Vetus Testamentum* 49.1 (1999): pp. 49–64, pp. 61–62 on Ezekiel 39.

[84] Two tangential but interesting notes: Lydia's (Gog?) dynasty was named after the hawk, which was also linked with their patron deity; it was also common in Mesopotamia to offer representatives of a person to animals or

Mihr Yašt 119 the small and large cattle, together with the birds and fowls that fly on wings are described as worshipping *Miθra*.[85] Is this choice of vocabulary significant? The term 'wild animals' is חית השדה. While this seems to be a general meaning of this phrase, Koehler and Baumgartner note that חיה can refer to 'beast-like' creatures,[86] and that שדה can refer to pastures, open fields, meadows or hills.[87] Both Job 40:20 and Ezek 31:6, 13 use חית השדה in mythical contexts. Considering the liminal and dangerous quality of the field/wilderness in the Ancient Near East,[88] this choice could be significant. The standing epithet of *Miθra* is 'of wide pastures,'[89] and in a context of battle-imagery, the *Mihr Yašt* praises *Miθra* for turning "plains and vales to pasture grounds."[90] If mythical allusions are indeed intended by these phrases, then it is certainly consonant with Mithraic content.

The translation in vv. 17 and 19 has 'preparing for you' for זבחתי לכם/זבח לכם. Koehler and Baumgartner note, however, that the use of ל with זבח generally indicates the god to whom the sacrifice is made.[91] Thus the wording has YHWH sacrificing *to* the birds and beasts in this section. Indeed, they are described as consuming the fat and blood, which were traditionally YHWH's portion of the sacrifice.[92] As noted above, *Miθra* was associated with a bird-like deity, *Vərəthragna*, as well as with cattle; if there is any validity to the reading of the birds and beasts, then this has YHWH offering Gog to the representatives of *Miθra*. The possibility of this nuancing may also be visible in v. 20; there the rare word translated 'my table,' שלחני, could also refer to a grass mat spread out for sacrifice and meals.[93] The traditional method of offering sacrifice in Iranian tradition, including to *Miθra*, was to spread a grass or twig mat on the ground to lay the victim upon.[94]

---

birds to destroy them. Collins, ed., *A History of the Animal World in the Ancient Near East*, p. 332 and p. 371, respectively.

[85] Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 133.

[86] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 310; Brown, et al., *BDB*, however reads 'unclean beasts' for Ezek 39, see p. 312.

[87] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, pp. 1307–1308; Brown, et al., *BDB*, p. 961.

[88] E.g., Matthias Henze, *The Madness of King Nebuchadnezzar: The Ancient Near Eastern Origins and Early History of Interpretation of Daniel 4*, SJSJ 61 (Leiden: Brill, 1999), pp. 90–99.

[89] Gershevitch translates this in the idiosyncratic manner of 'cattle-magnet.' Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, from p. 74. See esp. the *Mihr Yašt*, dedication, 3, 60, etc, in *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 119, 120, 134, etc. Emile Benveniste, "Mithra aux vastes patûrages," *Journal Asiatique* 248.4 (1960): pp. 421–429, argues that this epithet reveres *Miθra* as one who makes these open spaces safe for humans and their cattle (p. 429: "De là est née l'invocation typique *mithro vouru.gaoyaoitiš* « Mithra à la vaste gavyuti », ce qui fait de Mithra non le dieu « aux vastes pâturages », mais celui qui offre un vaste asile aux hommes et aux troupeaux." [Thus arose the typical invocation *mithro vouru.gaoyaoitiš* ...this makes Mithra not a god of 'wide pastures' but one that offers a wide asylum to men and herds]).

[90] X.112 (*Zend-Avesta II*, p. 148; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 130.)

[91] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 261; Cf. Brown, et al., *BDB*, p. 257 (§3). Zimmerli makes no note of this.

[92] Lev 3:11, 17; Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 309; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 421.

[93] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 1520. This word only occurs here and in Ezek 44:16, Mal 1:7, 12. Cf. Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 309.

[94] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 167.

Within the logic of the passage, *Miθra* would be within his rights to claim retribution from Gog as the protector of the covenant. As noted above, Block argues that 38:17 does *not* claim to redefine previously unfulfilled prophecy.[95] He takes the ה to indicate a rhetorical question with an implied 'No!' While Gog and his allies may think they are functioning in YHWH's service like others before, they are merely misusing prophecy for financial gain. The exile to Babylonia has already fulfilled the covenant curses; once restored, Israel has again a covenant of peace—the covenant of punishment is over. Gog may attempt to justify his attack by claiming to be a fulfillment of foretold punishment, but this is hubris.[96] Because Gog has violated G-d's new covenant, rather than fulfilled an already fulfilled one, he comes under *Miθra*'s wrath, the protector of covenants *par excellence*.[97] Ezekiel 38–39, then, paints the image of *Miθra* as the recipient of the זבח גדול protecting YHWH's covenant of peace with restored Israel and which was promised in 37:15–23. Gog and his allies are offending the covenant of peace (contract, *miθra*) and thus fully within the wrath of *Miθra*. The judgment which Gog deserves is indicated by the usage of קבץ, 'to assemble' in v. 17; Koehler and Baumgartner claim the word can have connotations of judgment.[98] Gog and his allies, by attacking G-d's covenanted people are violating G-d's covenant and thus liable to fall under *Miθra*'s judgment. This connection with the fulfillment of the previous covenant and the institution of a new one is made explicit in vv. 22–28. Such an understanding better parallels the other ironic uses of זבח גדול than if Molek were the recipient.

Irwin claims that the use of מקום in 39:11 alludes to Jer 7:32, implying the need to shift the location from the Hinnom Valley to the Jezreel Valley for sufficient room.[99] The phrase מקום־שם קבר בישראל has occasioned debate, as it is often considered strange or bad Hebrew syntax.[100] In the context of *Miθra* sacrifice, however, the phrase 'a place of graves in Israel' could be an ironic punishment on an Army which considers it a sin to be buried.[101] Although the *Vidēvdāt* clearly makes it a sin to be buried, it is unclear how early this development is; however, many scholars see it as a Median or 'Magian' introduction, which

---

[95] Block, "Gog in Prophetic Tradition," 154–172; Contra: Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 297; Eichrodt, *Ezekiel: A Commentary*, p. 516, 524–5.

[96] In this respect Gog's pride parallels the pride of the King of Tyre in Ezek 28:1–19.

[97] In the Zoroastrian cosmology, *Miθra* even guards the primeval contract between Ahura Mazda and Angra Mainyu (See the cosmic contract in the *Bundahišn* I.17–18, *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 7.); once the contract expires, however, he participates in *Angra Mainyu*'s destruction (See Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 23); indeed, the expelling of evil-doers seems to be associated with *Miθra* as late as the Islamic period. (p. 25); In the context of a discussion of 'Mihrajan' (sic), Al-Biruni mentions appeals to an angel to descend and dispel demons, but the angel is not specified. See Muhammad ibn Ahmad Al-Biruni, *Athar-ul-bakiya*, trans. C. Edward Sachau, *The Chronology of Ancient Nations: An English version of the Arabic Text of the Athâr-ul-Bâkiya of Albîrûnî or 'Vestiges of the Past'* (London: Allen, 1879), p. 208.

[98] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 1063.

[99] Irwin, "Molek Imagery," pp. 96–98.

[100] Zimmerli, *Ezekiel 2*, p. 291; Cooke, *Ezekiel*, p. 419; BHS notes that the Gk replaces שֵׁם for שָׁם.

[101] See *Vidēvdāt* I.13; III.8, 12, 36–39 (*Zend-Avesta I*, pp. 8, 15–16, 25, 31–32).

would be consonant with the peoples listed by Ezekiel.[102] These connections are all very speculative, however, and hinge on the understanding of זבח גדול situated in a reference to the Median-Lydian War.

Bøe advances an interesting parallel to this interpretation for *1 Enoch* 56:5–8's use of Ezek 38–39.[103] Against the common assertion that the Enochic author intends to allude to the Parthian invasion (40 B.C.E.), he argues that instead the writer understood the passage as a final, eschatological attack, with the terms 'Parthians and Medes' representing a more current terminology than 'Gog and Magog' for the same kind of assault.[104] The Enochic author adds many features consonant with the *Similitude*'s interests,[105] but the overall method of interpretation is quite similar. Just like the author of Ezek 38–39, the author of the *Parables* uses historical, political configurations to depict a future (eschatological?) attack on Jerusalem. Not only does this parallel the methods used in Ezekiel and help make the above interpretation more plausible, it suggests how the text itself was re-used later by hearers and readers.[106]

The Gog pericope was very significant for the later development of apocalyptic imagery and literature.[107] It possibly served as a template or inspiration for Joel and Revelation. But it is also significant, at least in its current placement in the text, for positing a 'Day of the Lord' (although that phrase is not actually used) which is in many respects larger than those posited in previous oracles. This day occurs after Israel is restored; it is not imminent but set in the distant future (38:8, 16). It links this action with earthquakes, the tumbling of mountains, pestilence, hail, and sulfur (38:19–23). These phenomena all become stock elements in later apocalyptic literature.[108] Childs has seen in the use of רעש a

---

[102] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 94–95; Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 113–114; Shahbazi, "Monuments," pp. 174–189; For an idiosyncratic view of autochthonous Magi, see Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 182–253.

[103] Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, pp. 178–184.

[104] Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, p. 180.

[105] See the list, Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, p. 182.

[106] See now Ted M. Erho, "The Ahistorical Nature of *1 Enoch* 56:5–8 and Its Ramifications upon the *Opinio Communis* on the Dating of the *Similitudes of Enoch*," *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 40.1 (2009): 23–54, who also sees a "remarkable affinity" (p. 33) between the two passages and similarly posits an ahistorical reference to the Parthians.

[107] See Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, pp. 16–18, 178–183, 388; however, on the surprisingly meagre representation of Ezekiel in Second Temple Jewish references and at Qumran, see Devorah Dimant, "The Apocalyptic Interpretation of Ezekiel at Qumran," *Messiah and Christos: Studies in the Jewish Origins of Christianity*, eds. Ithamar Gruenwald, et al., Texte und Studen zum antiken Judentum 32 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1992), pp. 31–52. Ben Z. Wacholder, "Ezekiel and Ezekielianism as Progenitors of Essenianism," *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Forty Years of Research*, eds. Devorah Dimant and Uriel Rappaport (Leiden: Brill, 1992), pp. 186–196 tries to trace the influence of Ezekiel on "sectarians," but focuses very little on 37:1–14 or 38–39.

[108] Cf. Cook, *Prophecy and Apocalypticism*, p. 94. Ezekiel 38:19–23 contains a list of signs which do not appear combined elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible, but do become standard in later apocalyptic literature. These are internecine fighting, earthquakes (רעש), blood (דם), pestilence (דבר), inundating rain (גשם שוטף), hail (אלגביש), fire (אש), and brimstone (גפרית). These verses appear to take a term generally used in (later?) contexts of judgment (גפרית) and expand it to a degree which becomes standard in apocalyptic literature. This combination of terrors, unique for its time, can be seen in Iranian sources.

development of the chaos motif in the post-exilic period,[109] but the usages of this term in the Hebrew Bible appear to be more connected with theophanies and battles than with chaos.[110] It is important to note that they all appear together here in a passage which may show Iranian influence.[111]

The passage does not yet show apocalyptic theology or genre: there is no narrative framework, no *angelus interpres* (indeed, even missing common concerns like general judgment, afterlife). However the expectation of G-d's action is pushed into the distant future, and the judgment of G-d is expanded towards cataclysmic proportions.[112] It *is* certainly significant that 38–39, when read together with 37, leaves a larger impression of both Iranian ideas and ideas to become standard in apocalyptic literature. The lack of a call towards repentance is notable in 38–39 as well. The hint of a deterministic or unwitting use of a powerful leader by G-d reminds one both of the hardening of pharaoh before the exodus and of the *Animal Apocalypse* in *1 Enoch*. If negative Median influence can be seen in this passage, then the beginnings of influence are much earlier than the Hellenistic period. Such an influence also highlights the potential importance of negative influence.

Daniel

As the only canonical Jewish apocalypse, Daniel has long been a center of discussion for scholars of apocalyptic. Although not the earliest extant apocalypse, Daniel is extremely important for subsequent developments. The book presents a number of complex problems. The extant book contains both Hebrew (1–2:3; 8–12) and Aramaic (2:4–7:28) sections, which while in discrete sections do not coincide with a visible generic divide (tales, chapters 1–6, revelatory visions, 7–12). Further, the Greek versions of the book contain significant additions to the text. The complex tradition history of the present book also offers the potential of materials which significantly predate the final compilation of the work. For the present purposes, only the motif of four successive empires will be discussed here.

Daniel 2 and 7 contain visions which present an overview of history using a scheme of four progressively inferior empires. This trope has long been identified as deriving from Iran, although the scheme itself is a scholarly flashpoint.[113] The present section seeks to

---

[109] Childs, "Enemy from the North," pp. 187–198.

[110] In theophanies: Kgs 19:11; Isa 29:6; Ezek 3:12–13; In battles: Jer 10:22, 47:3; Nah 3:2; Amos and Zech each use it for a historical earthquake.

[111] Daniel Bodi, *The Book of Ezekiel and the Poem of Erra*, Orbis Biblicus et Orientalis 104 (Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1991), p. 116, would rather appeal to the *Poem of Erra*.

[112] To the point that some scholars still consider it just that. E.g., Bodi, *The Book of Ezekiel and the Poem of Erra*, p. 223: "It [38–39] is an apocalyptic vision of the final, miraculous defeat of the forces of evil in the land of Israel."

[113] For an overview of the early twentieth century, see H. H. Rowley, *Darius the Mede and the Four World Empires in the Book of Daniel* (Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2006), pp. 67–184; for more recent studies, see J. W. Swain,

evaluate the level (if any) and likelihood of Iranian influence on the current form of the scheme as it appears in Daniel, as well as to assess the relative import of such influence.

The visions themselves appear in 2:28–45 and 7:2–27, both of which are in the Aramaic section.[114] Although the imagery and narrative setting for the two visions are quite divergent, both recount a series of four kingdoms which are ultimately destroyed, and scholarship has tended to see the same concept as underlying both.

The Vision of the Statue (2:28–45)

> [31]You were looking, O king, and lo! there was a great statue. This statue was huge, its brilliance extraordinary; it was standing before you and its appearance was frightening. [32]The head of that statue was of fine gold (דהב), its chest and arms of silver (כסף), its middle and thighs of bronze (נחש), [33]its legs of iron (פרזל), its feet partly of iron and partly of clay. [34]As you looked on, a stone was cut out, not by human hands (די־לא בידין), and it struck the statue on its feet of iron and clay and broke them in pieces. [35]Then the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold, were all broken in pieces and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, so that not a trace of them could be found. But the stone that struck the statue became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.

Daniel recounts a dream of Nebuchadnezzar in which he saw a statue with a head of gold, breast and arms of silver, loins and thighs of bronze, and legs of mixed clay and iron. A stone strikes the statue and destroys it, itself then growing into a mountain and filling the earth. Daniel subsequently interprets this dream as a succession of kingdoms, beginning with the reign of Nebuchadnezzar. Two basic aspects of this vision are noteworthy: the use of a series of metals ordered in decreasing value and a scheme of history based on the transition of power between four empires. A further aspect which requires attention is the appearance of 'the end of days' (אחרית יומיא) in the interpretation (v. 28) and whether or not this implies an eschatological interpretation.

The image utilizes some traditional prophetic tropes. The description of judgment/destruction in terms of chaff, threshing floors, and/or wind appears often in the

---

"The Theory of the Four Monarchies," *Classical Philology* 35.1 (1940): pp. 1–21; Samuel K. Eddy, *The King is Dead: Studies in the Near Eastern Resistance to Hellenism, 334–31 B.C.* (London: University Microfilms Intl, 1980), p. 16; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 162–164, 166–170; Ludwig Koenen, "Greece, the Near East, and Egypt: Cyclic Destruction in Hesiod and the Catalogue of Women," *Transactions of the American Philogical Association* 124 (1994): pp. 1–34; David Flusser, "The Four Empires in the Fourth Sibyl and in the Book of Daniel," *Israel Oriental Studies* 2 (1972): pp. 148–175; Bryan, *Kosher Mentality*, pp. 59–61; Paul Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine in History: Herodotus and the Book of Daniel*, JSOTSS 396 (London: T & T Clark, 2004), Chapter 2. The most comprehensive discussion known to the author can be found in Klaus Koch, *Daniel 1. Teilband Dan 1–4*, Biblischer Kommentar Altes Testament 22.1 (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 2005), pp. 126–138, 203–207.

[114] For a comprehensive discussion of the language and versional issues, see Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 12–24.

Hebrew Bible.[115] The use of these images recalls the judgment oracles of the prophets, even though the subsequent interpretation focuses more on succession than judgment. Additionally, the mountain which ultimately replaces all four kingdoms echoes the motif of the 'mountain of the LORD' found throughout the Hebrew Bible, be it Sinai or Zion.[116] A Judaean audience would no doubt connect such language with promises of the restoration of Jerusalem. Neither of these aspects are particularly dwelt upon in text's own interpretation, however, and certainly do not exhaust the pericope's imagery.

Prominent is the use of a series of precious metals ordered by descending value: gold, silver, bronze, iron mixed with clay (דהב, כסף, נחש, פרזל). Similar series of metals ordered by decreasing value do appear in earlier biblical texts in a variety of contexts,[117] and one even appears in a context of judgment (Ezek 22:20).[118] Nevertheless, these antecedents do not apply the series to history, let alone to a succession of earthly kingdoms.[119] Using the relative values of metals as a method of arrangement is logical and likely universal, yet this has no necessary connection with historical processes and is—since it places Nebuchadnezzar at the pinnacle—rather surprising in a Judaean story.[120] A tempting interpretation is to understand the original referents to be kings rather than kingdoms, thus belonging to a (Persian?) anti-Nabonidus polemic,[121] which was altered to kingdoms at a later stage of the tradition. However, since five kings reigned from Nebuchadnezzar until Cyrus, this still demands an explanation for the shift to a fourfold scheme.[122]

Further, a scheme of four eras or kingdoms which precede a final, everlasting kingdom appears to have no biblical precedent. This concept is intimately intertwined with the apocalyptic quagmires of determinism and eschatology.[123] The pericope's use of the term באחרית יומיא draws the fourfold scheme linguistically into the 'Day of YHWH' tradition and its relation to the development of eschatology in Second Temple Judaism. Collins's reading of the eschatology in this chapter is very judicious: while an eschatology must be considered integral to the chapter, it is not an eschatology of the same type as in the second half of the

---

[115] For example, using chaff (מץ), cf. Ps 1:4, 35:5; Isa 17:13, 29:5; also using the image of the threshing floor (גרן), cf. Hos 13:3; Isa 41:15; cf. 2 Kgs 13:7.

[116] For example, Ex 3:1, 15:17; Ps 48:1, 68:16; Isa 2:2, 25:6.

[117] Lists of the same metals occur in 1 Chr 22:16, 29:2 and 2 Chr 2:6, 13 in the context of building the temple; Num 31:22 has a list which adds tin and lead; Josh 6:19,24; 22:8 list all four, but in different orders. Isa 60:17 also uses them all, but in a very different context.

[118] Although the list starts with silver and adds tin and lead.

[119] Contra Ida Fröhlich, *'Time and Times and Half a Time': Historical Consciousness in the Jewish Literature of the Persian and Hellenistic Periods*, JSPS 19 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996), p. 28.

[120] Cf. Collins, *Daniel*, p. 169, in the context of a suggestion of a Babylonian anti-Seleucid origin.

[121] As argued by Elias J. Bickerman, *Four Strange Books of the Bible* (New York: Schocken, 1967), pp. 61–65; Fröhlich, *Time and Times*, pp. 28–34.

[122] Cf. Rowley, *Darius the Mede*, pp. 166–173.

[123] Note the discussion of theology in Chapter V and the references given there.

book.[124] It is therefore necessary to consider whether this eschatology was adopted with the four-kingdom motif or whether it was added by the tale's Danielic creator. This will be further dealt with below.

The identification of the four kingdoms has occasioned much discussion, although most modern scholarship accepts the intended series (both here and in 7) as Babylon, Media, Persia, and Greece.[125] Several considerations make this fairly certain. The text identifies the first kingdom clearly as Babylonia (v. 38), and the reference to marriage in v. 43 is generally understood as a reference to the competing Greek kingdoms of the Ptolemies and Seleucids. The reference to the 'world dominion' of the third is consonant with the Persian Empire. Finally, the scheme Babylon-Media-Persia-Greece is an important structural motif for the current book.[126]

Several scholars note the chapter contains a number of Iranian loanwords (as well as Greek words).[127] Two of these are well-known and uncontested: רז ('mystery') and דת ('law'). Koch also identifies the words אזדא, הדמין, זמן, and the name אריוך as Iranian.[128] Further, the title 'King of Kings' (v. 37) belongs to an Achaemenid milieu despite the supposed Neo-Babylonian setting.

The Vision of the 'Mischwesen' (7:2–27)

The vision of Chapter 7 is considerably different from that in Chapter 2, although it is clearly related to it. In this 'night vision'[129] the metallic imagery is replaced by four fantastic 'beasts from the sea' (v. 3),[130] adding a throne vision and the controversial 'Son of Man' (v. 13). A succession of four kingdoms followed by an eternal kingdom remains, although the idea of serial inferiority is lost.[131] A few of the details of the Chapter 2's visions are recalled

---

[124] Collins, *Daniel*, p. 174.

[125] Rowley, *Darius the Mede*, pp. 61–184; James A. Montgomery, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Daniel*, ICC (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1927), pp. 174–177, 185; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 166–170; Koch, *Daniel 1*, pp. 198–202.

[126] Rowley, *Darius the Mede*, pp. 146, 176–178; Collins, *Daniel*, p. 32; also implied by Grabbe's conclusion, Lester L. Grabbe, "Another Look at the *Gestalt* of Darius the Mede," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 50 (1988): pp. 212–213; cf. the convenient table given by Klaus Koch, "Dareios, der Meder," *The Word of the Lord Shall Go Forth: Essays in Honor of David Noel Freedman in Celebration of His Sixtieth Birthday*, eds. Carol L. Meyers and M. O'Connor (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1983), p. 296.

[127] Klaus Koch, *Daniel 1*, p. 124; John P Brown, *Israel and Hellas III: The Legacy of Iranian Imperialism and the Individual*, Beihefte zur Zeitscrift für die altestamentliche Wissenschaft 299 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 2001), p. 234, 238; On Aramaic loanwords generally, see Jonas C. Greenfield, "Aramaic II: Iranian Loanwords in Early Aramaic," *Encyclopaedia Iranica* 2.3 (1986): pp. 256–259. Cf. Ran Zadok, "On Five Iranian Names in the Old Testament," *Vetus Testamentum* 26.2 (1976): pp. 246–247.

[128] Koch, *Daniel 1*, p. 124.

[129] Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 159–160.

[130] For overviews of suggestions on souces for the *Mischwesen*, see Bryan, *Kosher Mentality*, pp. 218–234; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 280–294.

[131] Note, however, Bryan's opinion that they represent increasingly unkosher creatures, Bryan, *Kosher Mentality*, pp. 234–239.

in 7: the dominion given to the leopard recalls the dominion of the third kingdom (2:39),[132] the iron composition of the fourth beast's horns (the only remaining metal),[133] and perhaps even the toes of statue.[134]

The concepts and sources which underlie the *Mischwesen* and the Son of Man are highly contested and are not taken up here;[135] it is for the present purpose simply worth noting that the series of Babylon, Media, Persia, and Greece is retained from Chapter 2. Additionally, the vision's main concern is evidently with the last empire, the other three barely receiving censure;[136] the mention seems more to conform with a fourfold scheme than with a serious critique of the previous three *per se*.

Four Period Schemes in the Ancient Near East

The sudden appearance of the four kingdoms and four metals tradition in Daniel has long caused scholars to seek a parallel elsewhere. A variety of allegedly relevant schemes have been adduced; before discussing their relative merits and potential lines of transmission, the various passages are presented below.

Hesiod

One of the more oft-cited parallels occurs in Hesiod's *Works and Days*, lines 109–201.[137] Here the poet describes a succession of five generations or races of men: a golden race, a silver generation, a brazen race 'sprung of ash trees,' a fourth race of semi-divine heroes, and a fifth generation of iron, to which the poet claims to belong. Two features immediately strike the casual reader: the strong moral characterizations of each race or generation (in a declining succession) and what appears to be an interruption of a fourfold metallic scheme with a generation of heroes. It seems likely that the poet has adapted an older fourfold scheme to accommodate Greek epic heroes.[138] Besides the interruption of the metallic sequence, the additional detail ascribed to the bronze race that they were 'sprung of ash trees' likely dates the concept to Indo-European times; the Norse epic poem the *Vǫluspå*

---

[132] Also noted by Collins, *Daniel*, p. 298.
[133] Cf. Collins, *Daniel*, p. 299.
[134] Bryan, *Kosher Mentality*, p. 218.
[135] Note, however, the interesting suggestion that Dan 7 is dependent on *the Book of Watchers*, Helge S. Kvanvig, "Throne Visions and Monsters: The Encounter Between Danielic and Enochic Traditions," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 117.2 (2005): pp. 248–272.
[136] Collins, *Daniel*, p. 304.
[137] Hugh G. Evelyn-White, ed., *Hesiod, Homeric Hymns, Epic Cycle, Homerica*, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998), pp. 11–17.
[138] Cf: Collins, *Daniel*, p. 162.

§§ 17–18 also describes the creation of mankind from driftwood of ash.[139] The passage here is concerned with ritual and ethical decline, and the author is unconcerned with the passing of empires.

Ovid

A passage similar to Hesiod appears in the *Metamorphoses*.[140] He describes a fourfold series of metallic races of increasing wickedness. To this series he appends a race of blood, whose violence prompts a deluge for their destruction. Finally, Ovid identifies the current human race with a race created from stone by the two lone flood survivors. The large number of mythic motifs and stories which are interwoven here leaves the impression that the second two races (of blood and stone) are creations of the poet and do not reflect an older tradition of six races.[141]

Herodotus

In his account of the rise of Cyrus, Herodotus claims obliquely that the rule of Asia was passed from Assyria to Media and thence to Persia.[142] It is important to note, however, that he did not make a clear distinction between the Assyrians and the Babylonians (e.g., I.178, 193; though he seems aware of a distinctness in I.102).[143] For authority Herodotus explicitly claims as his source Persians who "desire not to make a fine tale of the story of Cyrus but to tell the truth" (I.95).[144] He claims that the Assyrians ruled for 520 years, the Medes for 128 years, and then the Persians up to his time (I.95, 130). While it is true a

---

[139] Ursula Dronke, *The Poetic Edda II: Mythological Poems* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1997), p. 11 (text), 122–123 (commentary, including noting the parallel to Hesiod). Cf. Widengren's opinion that both the four-empire and metallic schemes are Indo-European, Geo Widengren, "Leitende Ideen und Quellen des Iranischen Apokalyptic," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12-17, 1979*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1983), p. 131; however, note the opinion of Mallory that there was an original Indo-European threefold scheme of white-red-black, James P. Mallory, "Cosmology," *Encyclopedia of Indo-European Culture*, eds. James Mallory and D. Q. Adams (London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1997), pp. 130–131. Thomas V. Gamkrelidze and Vjačeslav V. Ivanov, *Indo-European and the Indo-Europeans: a Reconstruction and Historical Analysis of a Proto-Language and a Proto-Culture, Part 1:The Text*, trans. Johanna Nichols, Trends in Linguistics: Studies and Monographs 80 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995), pp. 615–619 has a triad of yellow/gold, white/silver, and red/copper.

[140] I.89–162, 396–416 (Publius Ovid, *Metamorphoses*, trans. Frank J. Miller, *Ovid III: Metamorphoses I*, LCL. Third, rev. ed. [Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1977], pp. 9–13, 31).

[141] According to Anderson, the race of blood is unparallelled elsewhere, and the creation of men from stones after the flood is a traditional Greek idea. William S. Anderson, *Ovid's Metamorphoses Books 1–5 Edited, with Introduction and Commentary* (Norman, OK: Univ of Oklahoma Press, 1997), pp. 166–167, 180–181. It is perhaps worth noting that Virgil's *Fourth Eclogue*, lines 4–10, describes the beginning of a golden age which follows upon an iron race, seeming to imply a cyclical overturning of the scheme noted above in Hesiod, although Virgil appeals to a 'Cumaean song.' However, the two intermediate ages are not mentioned. See Virgil, *Eclogues*, trans. H. Rushton Fairclough, *Virgil I: Eclogues, Georgics, Aeneid I–VI*, ed. G. P. Goold, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1999), p. 49.

[142] *Persian Wars* I.95, 130 (Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, pp. 125–127, 169).

[143] Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, p. 221, 243; p. 133.

[144] (μετεξέ τεροι λέγοθσι, οί μή βουλόμενοι σεμνοῦν τα περί κῦρον ἀλλά τόν ἐόντα λέγειν λόγον).

historical sequence with Media before Persia appears here, Herodotus takes no significance from the number, succession, or order of the empires; rather, he simply includes it as part of his tale of Cyrus's rise. However, the two passages are still significant in that they attest to an Iranian view of history which imparted world rule to the Medians. Further, since Herodotus was well known in the Hellenistic world, it is quite reasonable to infer that the later presence of Assyria-Media-Persia in historical lists is due to his history.

Oracle of Hystaspes and Zand-ī Vahman Yašn

Both the *Oracle of Hystaspes* and the *Vahman Yašt* are highly problematic as both currently exist only in citations and commentaries, largely in Lactantius for the former and the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* for the latter. Not enough of *Hystaspes* has survived to ascertain the majority of its contents or whether it also contained a fourfold scheme; although Lactantius mentions a scheme of empires in contexts in which he also quotes *Hystaspes*, it appears to be taken from the *Sibylline Oracles*.[145] This text can thus offer no parallels.

The text *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* is more readily accessible, though the relevant tradition history is problematic.[146] This text is normally understood to be a précis and commentary (*zand*) on a lost hymn to *Vohu Manah* (*Vahman Yašt*), one of the important divine figures in Zoroastrianism.[147] Since it cites *zand*[148] it is already at two steps remove from the original. Most scholars, however, accept that the text comments on real texts, even though they are not extant.[149] In the extant text, two metallic sequences are presented. In the first version, Zoroaster is shown a tree with four branches of gold, silver, steel, and one of iron mixed

---

[145] Book XV.13 (Caeculius Lactantius, *Divine Institutes*, trans. Anthony Bowen and Peter Garnsey, *The Divine Institutes of Lactantius* [Liverpool: Liverpool Univ Press, 2003], p. 423). Justin Martyr, *First Apology* 44, merely mentions the name of the work approvingly (incidentally, also in conjunction with the Sibyl). Justin Martyr, *The First Apology*, *The Apostolic Fathers with Justin Martyr and Irenæus*, ed. A. Cleveland Coxe, Reprint, American ed. (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1996), vol. I of the *Ante-Nicene Fathers*, p. 178.

[146] Currently available in English in three translations; see Behramgore T. Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn and Two Pahlavi Fragments: Text, Transliteration, and Translation* (Bombay: Mrs. B. T. Anklesaria, 1957), *Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 189–236, and Carlo G. Cereti, *The Zand-ī Wahman Yasn: a Zoroastrian Apocalypse*, SOR 75 (Rome: 1995).

[147] For various discussions of this see, Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," pp. 105–119; Anders Hultgård, "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse," *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocaylptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium*, eds. John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1991), pp. 114–134; Philippe Gignoux, "Bahman II: In the Pahlavi Texts," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 488; Werner Sundermann, "Bahman Yašt," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): pp. 492–493; Anders Hultgård, "Zoroastrian Myth in Bahman Yasht," *The Middle East Viewed from the North. Papers from the First Nordic Conference on Middle Eastern Studies, Uppsala 26–29 January 1989*, eds. B. Utas and K. Vikør (Bergen: 1992), pp. 15–27; Eddy, *The King is Dead*, pp. 26–32; Collins, "The Persian Apocalypses," pp. 207–217.

[148] II.1, III.1 (Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn*, p. 102)=I.6, II.1 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 193–194). On *Zand*, see Mary Boyce, "Middle Persian Literature," *Iranistik: Literatur*, Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1 (Leiden: Brill, 1968), pp. 35–36.

[149] Widengren, "Leitende Ideen," pp. 77–162; Sundermann, "Bahman Yašt," pp. 492–492; Hultgård, "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse," pp. 114–134; Hultgård, "Zoroastrian Myth in Bahman Yasht," pp. 19–20. The main opponent is Phillippe Gignoux, who normally writes in French. Cf. his views in Gignoux, "Bahman II: In the Pahlavi Texts," p. 488.

with dust.[150] The interpretation given is of four periods, the first identified with the period of Zoroaster and his royal patron *Vištāspa*, the next two with legendary reigns of kings (Ardaxšīr, Husraw), and the last with "the evil sovereignty of the demons with dishevelled hair of the race of Wrath."[151] In the second version Zoroaster sees a tree with seven branches of gold, silver, bronze, copper, tin, steel, and iron mixed with dust. These are again interpreted as ages of the world, all of which are identified with reigns, from that of *Vištāspa* to that of the badly coiffed, angry demons.[152] The doubling of the metallic progression, its expansion from four to seven, and the changes in the interpretation clearly evince a later updating of a fourfold prophecy to fit subsequent history. The interpretation of the second vision clearly understands the final demons to refer to the Arab invasion of Iran at the end of the Sassanian Empire, and this is clearly a reinterpretation of a previous prophecy. While the dating of this interpretation (and thus the current text) is clearly very late, the question remains as to how ancient the original fourfold metallic vision is. Hultgård adduces five reasons why a supposed *Vahman Yašt* existed behind the current text: 1) the other three cited sources are real; 2) at the time of the compilation, extensive materials were available, so forging would be difficult; 3) There are hints of liturgical formulas, suggesting a *Yašt*-like *Vorlage*; 4) the literary character suggests an underlying *zand* like the *Vidēvdāt*; 5) it also preserves epic fragments of other lost Avestan sources.[153] Eddy suggests that the original prophecy intended the dishevelled hair to refer to the Greeks—or more specifically, depictions of Alexander—which would likely date the idea to the Hellenistic period.[154] Since the Achaemenid Empire was the last Iranian empire destroyed by a foreign invasion, this identification is plausible. Besides questions of dating, however, important to note is that the text explicitly applies a fourfold metallic scheme to successive reigns. Interestingly, while the succession appears to agree with version of Dan 2 in mixing the last element, it also differs in the use of steel for bronze.

The Sibylline Oracles

A variety of historical schemes organized by world empires appear in several of the extant Sibylline Oracles, a Byzantine collection of miscellaneous texts which contains a

---

[150] See Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, p. 172; Mary Boyce, "The Poems of the Persian Sibyl and the Zand i Vahman Yasht," *Etudes irano-aryennes offertes a Gilbert Lazard*, eds. Philippe Gignoux and Charles-Henri de Fouchécour, Studia Iranica Cahiers 7 (Paris: Association pour l'avancement des études irannienes, 1989), p. 73; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 386.

[151] Chapter I.6–11 (Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn*, pp. 101–102)= I.3–5 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 192–193).

[152] II.14–22 in West's translation (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 198–201); III.19–29 in Anklesaria's (Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn*, pp. 104–106).

[153] Hultgård, "Zoroastrian Myth in Bahman Yasht," pp. 19–20.

[154] Eddy, *The King is Dead*, p. 19 and plate 1 (between pp. 21–22).

variety of older oracles.[155] The closest parallel to the version in Daniel appears in Book IV, lines 49–114, which likely dates to the early Hellenistic period.[156] In this text a series of empires rule the world from the flood until the sibyl's time for decreasing lengths of times: the Assyrians rule for six generations, the Medes for two, the Persians for 'one generation of prosperous rule,' the Macedonians (for an unspecified period of time), and the Romans. Rather than a subsequent heavenly kingdom, the text predicts a world-destroying conflagration (160–161, 171–178). Several characteristics are here worth noticing. The text posits a five-fold division of decreasing length (at least until the Persians), but there is no explicit condemnation of these empires; each receives judgment through conquest, but they are not directly accused of evil. The text focuses on the horrors of war and other disasters rather than on the relative moral qualities of the empires. Finally, a scheme of Assyria-Media-Persia-Macedonia-Rome is evidenced, which could logically be an update for an older fourfold scheme. Flusser adduces that this is the case since the addition of Rome interrupts the ten generations interwoven into the description of the first four.[157]

Several other Sibyllines also break history into succeeding empires, although they are much more varied and removed from any relation to history. *Sibylline Oracles* III.159–161 gives a list of eight empires in the order Egypt, Persia, Media, Ethiopia, 'Assyrian Babylon,' Macedonia, Egypt, and Rome.[158] This list is notable for three things: its Egyptocentrism, the flipping of Persia and Media, and the equation of Assyria with Babylon.[159] *Sibylline Oracles* VIII.5–9 gives a very similar list of Egypt, Persia, Media, Ethiopia, 'Assyrian Babylon,' Macedonia, and Rome.[160] Finally, the eleventh Sibylline offers a list of Egypt, Persia, Media, Ethiopia, Assyria, Macedonia, Egypt, and Rome, although equating Assyria with the Jews.[161]

---

[155] The most convenient edition of these texts (with introductions) is by John J. Collins, "The Sibylline Oracles," *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, ed. James H Charlesworth, vol. I: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments (New York: Doubleday, 1983), pp. 317–472. For an introduction to the Sibyl see Christine Walde, "Sibylle (Σίβυλλα), lat. *Sibylla*)," pp. 499–501 and Markus Sehlmeyer, "Sibyllini libri, Sibyllina oracula," pp. 501–502, both in Hubert Cancik and Helmuth Schneider, eds., *Der Neue Pauly Enzyklopädie der Antike*. vol. 11 Sam-Tal (Stuttgart: Metzler, 2001); John J. Collins, "The Jewish Transformation of Sibylline Oracles," *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages in Hellenistic-Roman Judaism* (Leiden: Brill, 1997), pp. 181–197.

[156] Collins, "The Sibylline Oracles," pp. 385–387; dating, p. 381. Cf. John R. Bartlett, *Jews in the Hellenistic World: Josephus, Aristeas, the Sibylline Oracles, Eupolemus*, Cambridge Commentaries on the Writings of the Jewish and Christian World (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), p. 38.

[157] Flusser, "The Four Empires," pp. 150–151.

[158] Collins, "The Sibylline Oracles," p. 365; note, however, the argument that this also represents a fourfold scheme, if the text intends the second empire to be the combined empire of Persia-Media-Ethiopia-Assyrian Babylon. See, Flusser, "The Four Empires," p. 160, n. 49.

[159] Cf. III.268 where the Assyrians are said to conquer Jerusalem and III.300–304 where it refers to 'Babylon and the race of Assyrian men.' (p. 368; cf. n. e2).

[160] Collins, "The Sibylline Oracles," p. 418.

[161] XI.19–314; Collins, "The Sibylline Oracles," pp. 434–442.

Qumran Fragments

While several documents discovered at Qumran have clear relationships with the canonical Daniel, none of the extant sections preserve either a scheme of kingdoms or metals.[162] However, the *Animal Apocalypse* in *1 Enoch* 89–90 contains a fourfold periodization within its era of seventy shepherds,[163] and this text is likely roughly contemporary with Dan 7. Unlike the Danielic texts, however, *1 Enoch* simply uses the fourfold division as a structural device, placing no emphasis on the number four nor giving clear indications to the significance of the eras. While it is possible that they represent a sequence of empires, Nickelsburg would deny this.[164]

The Origin of the Four Empire Scheme

Scholars have often considered an Iranian milieu for the origin of the Four Empire motif, though positions vary widely. Swain claims the source was an anti-Seleucid Iranian diaspora in Anatolia.[165] Lambert refuses to decide on an origin;[166] Day is similarly agnostic although leans towards a Babylonian source.[167] Kvanvig understands the idea to be a mixing of Persian and Babylonian traditions.[168] While allowing for some influence from Hesiod, Flusser argues for an Iranian reaction against Macedon as the primary source of the metallic, four empire trope.[169] However, West rejects any Hesiodic influence upon Daniel, seeking an Urartian or Babylonian source for the four metals.[170] Winston unabashedly supports an

---

[162] See John J. Collins, "Prayer of Nabonidus," *Qumran Cave 4 XVII Parabiblical Texts 3*, ed. James C. VanderKam, DJD XXII (Oxford: Clarendon, 1996), pp. 83–94 and John J. Collins and Peter W. Flint, "Pseudo-Daniel," *Qumran Cave 4 XVII Parabiblical Texts 3*, ed. James C. VanderKam, DJD XXII (Oxford: Clarendon, 1996), pp. 95–164.

[163] For discussion, see George W. E. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001), pp. 391–392; Patrick A. Tiller, *A Commentary on the Animal Apocalypse of 1 Enoch*, Early Judaism and Its Literature 4 (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1993), pp. 54–60 mentions the fourfold scheme, but is more concerned with the seventy shepherds; cf. the general commentary, pp. 324–355. However, in his review of Nickelburg's commentary, Tiller asserts the likely relevance of the four-period trope, Patrick A. Tiller, "Review: *1 Enoch 1*," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 122.3 (2003): p. 577. Although fragments of the *Animal Apocalypse* were found (4QEn^{c} 4), they do not correspond to the section of the seventy shepherds. See Józef T. Milik, *The Books of Enoch: Aramaic Fragments of Qumran Cave 4* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1976), pp. 204–206.

[164] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 392.

[165] Swain, "The Theory of the Four Monarchies," in particular pp. 3–11.

[166] W. G. Lambert, *The Background of Jewish Apocalyptic*, Ethel M. Wood Lectures (London: Athlone, 1978), p. 9.

[167] John Day, *God's Conflict with the Dragon and the Sea: Echoes of a Canaanite Myth in the Old Testament* (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), p. 153, n. 26.

[168] Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 490–491.

[169] Flusser, "The Four Empires," pp. 148–175. Cf. Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 384–386, 402–404, especially n. 190. She posits that while the Persians borrowed the metals from the Greeks, Daniel borrowed the idea from Persia. See Mary Boyce, "On the Antiquity of the Zoroastrian Apocalyptic," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* XLVII.1 (1984): pp. 70–72; Boyce, "Persian Sibyl," pp. 73–74. Of a similar opinion (Persian source for reigns, Greek for metals) is André LaCocque, *The Book of Daniel*, trans. David Pellauer (London: SPCK, 1979), pp. 48–49.

[170] M. L. West, *The East Face of Helicon: West Asiatic Elements in Greek Poetry and Myth* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1997), pp. 312–319; Brown also seems to posit a vague 'oriental' source; John P Brown, *Israel and Hellas*, Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft 231 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995), pp. 301–202; Brown, *Legacy of Iranian Imperialism*, pp. 74–75, where it is given an implied Persian imperial setting.

Iranian derivation;[171] Koch supports an Iranian derivation for the four metals and a Seleucid source for the four kingdoms.[172] Collins is cautiously willing to entertain a Persian source yet considers a common Near Eastern source as also possible.[173] Wiesehöfer prefers to see an ultimately Herodotean source for the four-empire sequence in Dan 2, although he does not discuss the metallic symbolism.[174] Fröhlich derives the metals from Judaean traditions and the four kingdoms from a Babylonian fourfold dynastic oracle.[175]

The variety and disparate provenances for the various fourfold motifs make it likely that it was a widespread one, and none of the extant parallels are an exact match. Yet, it is worth pursuing the possible sources and contexts, to better understand both the passage itself and its influence on subsequent Judaean traditions. There are three aspects of the motif as it appears in Daniel which need to be kept in mind and considered both independently and in combination: the four empire scheme alone and as understood in the form Babylon-Media-Persia-Greece, the four metallic eras, and the implied eschatology.

Four Kingdoms or Kings

A motif of four significant periods was known in the Ancient Near East well before Daniel. Its appearance in Hesiod presents a *terminus ante quem* in the eighth century; Koch even suggests a similar idea can be found in earlier Hurrian/Hittite mythology.[176] Indeed, it seems likely that a similar idea was held by Proto-Indo-Europeans.[177] A possibility, therefore, that the idea was widely disseminated in the Ancient Near East cannot be wholly discounted. Nevertheless, four generations or eras and four world empires are not necessarily parallel

---

[171] Winston, "The Iranian Component in the Bible, Apocrypha, and Qumran: a Review of the Evidence," pp. 189–190; Cf. Sven S. Hartman, "Datierung der junavestischen Apokalyptik," *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12–17, 1979*, ed. David Hellholm (Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983), pp. 61–64.

[172] Koch, *Daniel 1*, pp. 137–138, 206–207.

[173] Collins, *Daniel*, p. 164; however, he was earlier more positive towards a Persian origin, John J. Collins, "Jewish Apocalyptic Against Its Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 220 (1975): p. 29; Yet, even earlier, he seems to posit an original Babylonian oracle, John J. Collins, *The Apocalyptic Vision of the Book of Daniel*, Harvard Semitic Monographs 16 (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1977), pp. 37–42; an idea which he again entertains in Collins, *Daniel*, p. 169.

[174] Josef Wiesehöfer, "The Medes and the Idea of the Succession of Empires in Antiquity," *Continuity of Empire (?): Assyria, Media, Persia*, eds. Giovanni B. Lanfranchi, et al. (Padova: S.a.r.g.o.n. Editrice e Libreria, 2003), pp. 391–396, who sees a common source and independent development in Daniel.

[175] Fröhlich, *Time and Times*, pp. 26–36. Cf. Bickerman, *Four Strange Books of the Bible*, pp. 61–65; Ernest C. Lucas, "The Origin of Daniel's Four Empire Scheme Re-examined," *Tyndale Bulletin* 40.2 (1989): pp. 185–202.

[176] Koch, *Daniel 1*, pp. 186–187.

[177] The Greeks, Iranians, and Hittites were all Indo-European peoples. To reinforce the idea of a pan-Indo-European idea, the Norse *Voluspa* §44 mentions a variant which identifies these four ages: an Axe-age, a Sword-age, a Wind-age, and a Wolf-age. These are, however, eschatological. See Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, pp. 18–19. In this regard, it is interesting to note that the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* describes the final age as the passing of the wolf-age into the lamb-age (VIII.3, Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn*, p. 125; III.40, *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 230). Cf. J. Gwyn Griffiths, "Archaeology and Hesiod's Five Ages," *Journal of the History of Ideas* 17.1 (1956): p. 116 and Mallory, "Cosmology," pp. 130–131 for four color-periods in India.

ideas, and one could wonder whether the latter is not a separate or at least subsequent tradition to the former.

There can be no doubt that a historical sequence of empires presented as Assyria, Media, Persia, Greece originally represents an Iranian perspective or perhaps an Eastern Anatolian one. Two points indicate this: only Iranian lands experienced such a sequence, and Herodotus's presentation of the said sequence explicitly names Persian sources. Although Herodotus is probably to be credited with its dissemination in Greek-speaking lands, the concept must have been borne among either Medes or Persians. However, the sequence attested in Daniel replaces Babylon for Assyria. While from a Mesopotamian point of view this is problematic, it is less so from two of the likely sources for the Danielic author, viz., Iran or Greece. The Greek authors appear to have had no clear conception of a differentiation between Assyria and Babylon; for the Persians, Babylon was combined with *Aθurā* in a single satrapy.[178]

Contra commentators who see a problem in the shift from king to kingdoms in Dan 2, the ambiguity is no basis for insisting on an adaptation of an older, dynastic prophecy. Kings can easily represent their domain just as their jurisdiction can symbolize their own power.[179] A rule of a dynasty is not easily separated from the rule of one of its members. This is particularly true in an era before the modern nation-state when the idea of borders was more fluid and a kingdom more directly tied into the person of the monarch.[180] In this context, the 'you' of Dan 2:38 could simply be understood as rhetorical flattery before a king, rather than the remnant of a previous Babylonian dynastic prophecy.[181] In theory, therefore, the inspiration for Daniel's vision could have been either a sequence of empires or individual kings representative of them.

Wiesehöfer comments that a sequence of Asian empires of increasing inferiority would be peculiar as Achaemenid ideology, but fits well within Herodotus's concept of

---

[178] For Greece: note the references in Herodotus and the Sibylline Literature above; for Persia and the relevant satrapy, see Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 544, 719; Muhammad A. Dandamayev, "Assyria II: Achaemenid Aθurā," *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.8 (1987): p. 816; Josette Elayi and Jean Sapin, *Beyond the River: New Perspectives on Transeuphratene*, trans. J. Edward Crowley, JSOTSS 250 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998), pp. 15–18. For the Old Persian nomenclature, cf. DNa §3 and DSe §26 where *Aθurā* (the country) is used and DSf § 32 and the minor DN inscriptions, where *Aθuriya* (the people) is used (Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 137–138, 141–142 and 142–144, 140, respectively).

[179] In any case, the difference between the two in Aramaic is only a matter of pointing (both מלכיא), and the same Old Persian words covers both concepts 'reign' and 'empire' (*xšaça-*); Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr und Verwandte," *Incontri Linguistici* 5 (1979): p. 62; Cf. Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 181; Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch*, p. 542, 551.

[180] Cf: John W. Wright, "Remapping Yehud: The Borders of Yehud and the Geneologies of Chronicles," *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*, eds. Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006), pp. 67–90.

[181] Contra Brian E. Colless, "Cyrus the Persian as Darius the Mede in the Book of Daniel," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 56 (1992): p. 120, who asserts that the phrasing limits Babylon's rule to the reign of Nebuchadnezzar.

spiralling decadence.[182] If the concept of increasing inferiority were sustained in Daniel as in Herodotus or in Hesiod, this argument would be compelling; however, the passage as it stands in Chapter 2 is clearly only concerned with the fourth empire and its divided nature. Verse 39 briefly mentions that the second is inferior to the first, but then quickly moves on. If a post-Achaemenid Persian reaction is posited, the paradox implied by the inferiority becomes less acute: the focus is on the last empire, which is itself going to be replaced.

Four Metallic Eras

The two most relevant metallic parallels to Dan 2 are striking both in their similarities and their differences. Daniel shares the four metals with Hesiod, while altering the last metal, iron, by having it mixed with clay. This addition breaks with the metallic imagery and must in itself be significant. One could wish to see this change as an innovation of the Danielic author to suit the *pešer*, but this simple solution is complicated by the evidence of the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*. This text also has iron mixed with dust/clay last. While such a parallel might indicate a relationship between these two, the *Zand*'s use of steel instead of bronze as the third metal and the problematic dating complicates whatever relation may exist.

Boyce believes that the metallic sequence was adapted in Iran from Greece during the wars of the *Diadochi* and from thence was adapted by Daniel.[183] She originally argued that the 'mixed iron' of the *Yašt* refers to iron ore still containing dross, which better fits the idea of decline as well as parallels the traditional Iranian conception of the current era as a mixture of good and evil.[184] The author of Dan 2 would have then misunderstood the meaning of 'mixed iron' and understood it as clay. In this she has been followed by Koenen, who further believes the sequence to have been a Greek innovation (though prior to Hesiod).[185] However, she has since modified her position according to a suggestion by Gignoux and sees the Pahlavi phrase to mean 'iron mixed with dust/clay,'[186] making the phrases nearly identical and requiring some kind of explanation for the coincidence. Boyce's solution accounts for the 'mixed iron' but fails to explain (a then doubled) switch between bronze and steel.

---

[182] Wiesehöfer, "Idea of the Succession," p. 393.

[183] Boyce, "On the Antiquity," pp. 71–72; cf. Boyce, "The Poems of the Persian Sibyl," pp. 73–74; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 386, 402.

[184] Also followed by Jeanne Van der Merwe. "Investigating Apparent Commonalities Between the Apocalyptic Traditions from Iran and Second-Temple Judaism." (M.A. Diss., University of Stellenbosch, 2008), p. 107.

[185] Koenen, "Greece, the Near East, and Egypt," pp. 12–13, 24–25.

[186] Boyce, "The Poems of the Persian Sibyl," p. 73; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 386; cf. Carlo G. Cereti, *The Zand-ī Wahman Yasn: a Zoroastrian Apocalypse*, SOR 75 (Rome: 1995), p. 172.

Both the Greeks and Iranians are Indo-European peoples, so one could wish to argue that a four period scheme was a mutual inheritance; indeed the use of 'ash' by Hesiod would seem to indicate that possibility. However, the four metal scheme could not have been developed before the separation of the Indo-Europeans, as that likely occurred before the Iron Age.[187] The metallic version most likely predates Hesiod, although perhaps not by much.[188] The evidence available is insufficient to decide, but either a borrowing of the metal sequence from Greece to Persia, parallel developments (each adding a fourth metal to an inherited three-metal scheme), or of both from a third, unknown source is possible. A switch between reigns and kingdoms is unproblematic since they represent similar concepts.[189] A change from races to kingdoms might be more so, although if the kingdoms are understood as belonging to different nations, then again this idea is analogous. The form of either the Greek or Iranian versions is therefore not a hurdle. This does not solve the question of Daniel's sources, however.

Niskanen strenuously objects to an Iranian explanation,[190] preferring a Herodotean source. Niskanen's arguments are highly suggestive and helpful—not because they are persuasive—but because they prompt a more thorough investigation of the potential Iranian sources.[191] Therefore, his arguments will be used as a foil in an attempt to reconstruct what traditions may underlie the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* and thus what may or not be comparable to Daniel.

Daniel 2 combines two separable concepts: a sequence of four empires and a series of four metals, yet only the former receives much interpretation in the text. Niskanen argues that their combination here is misleading, since it is likely that Daniel combined two separate sources.[192] However, the very fact which he notices—that Daniel seems to ignore the implications of the four metals—argues rather that he is adapting a sequence of empires *which already utilized the metallic imagery.* If Dan 2 were drawing directly on a Herodotean tradition, one would expect the vision to eliminate the metallic imagery, or, if the author were combining sources, for the metals to take a more prominent place in the *pešer.* This impression is reinforced if one considers that the second half of the book (Chapters 7 and

---

[187] Cf. the comments by Fortson, *Indo-European Language and Culture*, p. 39, and the references p. 44; Gamkrelidze and Ivanov, *Indo-European*, pp. 614–615, 761.

[188] Ludwig Koenen, "Greece, the Near East, and Egypt: Cyclic Destruction in Hesiod and the Catalogue of Women," *Transactions of the American Philogical Association* 124 (1994): p. 25, n. 59.

[189] Indeed, as noted above, the same Old Persian word (*xšaça-*) means both.

[190] Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, pp. 31–34.

[191] The present study is much indebted to Niskanen's study; until reading it, the present author was on the verge of concluding the impossibility of deciding a source, although leaning towards a Greek source. Ironically, it was his argument for Greek influence which consolidated thoughts about the supposed Persian source and lead to the argument set forth below.

[192] Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, p. 31.

11) dispenses with the metallic imagery. Niskanen's appeal to these later visions to reinforce a Herodotean derivation for Chapter 2 ignores the likelihood that the source and authorship of these two is quite probably divergent from Chapter 2; if Chapter 11 derives the idea of four Persian kings from the Greeks, that does not have any necessary bearing on the vision in 2.[193] The background of Chapter 2 is a different one from the second half of the book and is probably one which already combined the two fourfold motifs. This consideration, then, justifies the examination of the only other extant source which combines the two fourfold ideas, the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*.

Niskanen is correct to note that the extant text of the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* is late; however, he appears to miss the fact that the text is clearly composite, containing two distinct metallic sequences, the second of which is clearly a later updating of the former. He appeals to details consonant with the Turkish invasion in the second version (the sevenfold version) to discredit Eddy's arguments based on the 'tousled hair' as selective;[194] however, these details are clearly updating of earlier Arab invasion, which is likely an update of one based on the Greek invasion. The impression that the original core of the vision was based on the Macedonian conquests is actually reinforced by deeper consideration of two of his objections to this thesis: that the kings listed are all Iranian and that a reference to Greece is unlikely in a Persian text.[195] The first objection forgets a few relevant points. The sequence Assyria-Media-Persia-Greece already contains two Iranian empires (Media and Persia), and Assyria was viewed by the Achaemenids as a legitimate ruler of Iran.[196] Further, the *Zand* first uses *Vīštāspa* as the representative, who was sometimes considered a foreign king.[197] Thus, the Iranian list better fits the Macedonian situation than the post-Macedonian one. The latter objection ignores two points. First, if the Persian scheme was originally a reaction to the Macedonian invasion, then it would be expected to contain a reference to the Macedonians; second, the later portions of the text do contain what appear to be vague memories of Alexander.[198] The two notices of Alexander appear in the text in the second

---

[193] Contra Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, pp. 41–42.
[194] Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, pp. 32–33.
[195] Objections are in Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, p. 32, 34, and p. 41, n. 59.
[196] Cf. the comments in David Stronach, "Anshan and Parsa: Early Achaemenid History, Art and Architecture on the Iranian Plateau," *Mesopotamia and Iran in the Persian Period: Conquest and Imperialism 539–331 BC. Proceedings of a Seminar in memory of Vladimir G. Lukonin.*, ed. John E. Curtis (London: British Museum, 1997), p. 45. This opinion is echoed by the editor in the introduction, pp. 12–14. In addition, Cyrus appeals to Assurbanipal as a precursor in the *Cyrus Cylinder* (Hallo, ed., *Context II*, pp. 314–316.) Stronach's discussion of Cyrus's iconography appeals to a deliberate modification of Assyrian precedent. See David Stronach, "Icons of Dominion: Review Scenes at Til Barip and Persepolis," *Iranica Antiqua* 37 (2002): p. 380, 382, 384, 386.
[197] Cf. H. Humbach, et al., *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra and Other Old Avestan Texts*, Indogermanische Bibliothek: Reihe 1, Lehr- und Handbücher, 2 vols. (Heidelberg: Carl Winter, 1991), pp. 47–49; Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 186–188.
[198] This last point is actually noted by Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, p. 34, especially n. 31.

metallic sequence and in the subsequent elaboration of eschatology.[199] Specifically, the last reinterpretation of the sequence places '*Aleksandar-ī Kilīsāyīg*' in the fourth (copper) era. This would imply that this reinterpretation was based on a text which mentioned Alexander as part of the fourth empire. If these objections can be dispensed with, then the task remains of reconstructing as much as possible the vision which finds its *zand*s in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*.

Reconstructing the Ur-form of an Iranian Vohu Manah Yašt

The following attempt is necessarily hypothetical; however, the lateness and layers of reinterpretation which are clearly evident in the extant *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* require that an effort be made, if an Iranian prophecy is to be compared with Daniel at all. Only once a version which can be reasonably understood to be roughly contemporaneous or prior to Dan 2 is reconstructed can a consideration of its relevance be undertaken. If this task fails, then the investigation must conclude that further evidence is required.

The primary starting point ought to be the fourfold vision, as that is likely to be closer to the original version of the vision. It is pertinent to note that the *Zand* gives a series of three reigns followed by a race.[200] The names given are *Vīštāspa* (the legendary patron of Zoroaster), *Ardaxšīr* 'the Kayan King,' Husraw son of Kevād, and the Race of *Xēšm* 'with disheveled hair' (*dēvān ī wizārd-wars ī xēšm-tōhmag*). These names deserve investigation.

The name of the second king (*Ardaxšīr*) is the Pahlavi form of the most common Achaemenid throne name, Artaxerxes (*Artaxšacā* in Old Persian).[201] Boyce argues that Ardašīr, the founder of the Sassanian dynasty, deliberately chose his name to claim continuity with the previous empire ruled from Fars, in particular with Artaxerxes II;[202] two other sources (Syncellus and several inscriptions from Nisa) support this.[203] Even if this is incorrect and the Sassanians had no knowledge of the Achaemenids except through Greek materials as

---

[199] The two most commonly cited publications of the texts are numbered differently; the two relevant verses are in IV.4 and VII.32 in Anklesaria's (Anklesaria, *Zand-î Vohûman Yasn*, p. 105, 124) and II.24 and III.34 in West's (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 200, 228). More recently Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, follows Anklesaria's numbering.

[200] I.8–11 (Anklesaria, *Zand-î Vohûman Yasn*, pp. 101–102; Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, p. 133, 149)= I.3–5 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 192–3). West translates *tōhmag* as 'race'; Anklesaria as 'seed.'

[201] Schmitt, "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr und Verwandte," pp. 61–72; Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): pp. 654–655. On being a throne name, see Rüdiger Schmitt, "Thronnamen bei den achaimeniden," *Beiträge zur Namenforschung* 12.4 (1977): pp. 422–425. There were five Artaxerxeses, if one includes Bessus.

[202] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 263.

[203] Rüdiger Schmitt, "Artaxerxes II," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): p. 658. He cites Syncellus 1.539.16f D, and Pahlavi inscriptions, listed by Philippe Gignoux, *Glossaire des inscriptions Pehlevies et Parthes*, Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum Supp Series 1 (London: Lund Humphries, 1972), p. 46, as 'Artaštāvanak,' from eight inscriptions at Nisa.

Yarshater argues,[204] the linguistic coincidence of the names is striking. More recently, Arjomand has argued further that the names which appear as 'Ardaxšīr the Kay who will be called Vahman ī Spandyādān' in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* and 'Ardaxšīr who is called Vahuman' in the *Bundahišn* are both actually Artaxerxes II Mnemnon.[205] This is based on understanding the Greek surname which was attached to Artaxerxes II, 'Mnemon' ('having good memory'), as a translation of a Persian surname '*Vohu Manah*' ('Good Thought'), which is *Vahman* in Pahlavi. Thus, the Ardaxšīr-Vahman of the epic cycles is really Artaxerxes II.[206] Ardašīr's claim of descent would also correspond with other, previous dynasts claiming descent from Artaxerxes II (e.g., Antiochus I and the Arsacids).[207] The appearance, then, of 'Artaxšīr the Kayan King' in the current *zand* would appear to be a conflation of a historical name and an epic tradition, facilitated by the identity of the names. Indeed, if Artaxerxes II was completely forgotten and morphed into the Kayanid epic cycle, a Sassanian understanding of the name as Ardašīr is even more understandable.

It has long been noted that the name of Zoroaster's patron is identical to Darius I's father's.[208] It is also the pseudepigraphal author of the elusive *Oracles of Hystaspes*, which purportedly contained apocalyptic material.[209] Additionally, it is a name which was held by a number of Achaemenid nobles.[210] While there can be no historical connection between Darius's father and Zoroaster's patron, it is certainly significant that a text which is generally considered to be a reaction against foreign imperialism takes as its pseudepigraphal author a significant king in the religious traditions which also happens to coincide with a name from

---

[204] Ehsan Yarshater, "Were the Sasanians Heirs to the Achaemenids?," *Atti Del Convegno internazionale sul tempa La Persia nel Medioevo* (Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1971), pp. 520–531.

[205] Saïd Amir Arjomand, "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr, and Bahman," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 118.2 (1998): pp. 245–248.

[206] Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, p. 173, however, prefers to identify him with Artaxerxes I.

[207] Arjomand, "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr, and Bahman," p. 245; Nina G. Garsoïan, *The Epic Histories Attributed to P'awstos Buzand (Buzandaran Patmut'iwnk')* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1989), pp. 356–357.

[208] Cf. Herzfeld, *Archaeological History*, p. 43 and Olmstead, *History of the Persian Empire*, pp. 102–103, who both even identified the two people. For a discussion of the name (without an indentification of these characters), see Kent, "The Name of Hystaspes," pp. 55–58; Koch, *Daniel 1*, p. 135.

[209] For an attempt at reconstructing an *Oracle of Hystaspes*, see David Flusser, "Hystaspes and John of Patmos," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 12–75. See also Collins, "The Persian Apocalypses," p. 210; John R. Hinnells, "The Zoroastrian Doctrine of Salvation in the Roman World: A Study of the Oracle of Hystaspes," *Man and his Salvation: Studies in Memory of S. G. F. Brandon*, eds. Eric J. Sharpe and John R. Hinnells (Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1973), pp. 125–148.

[210] Jack M. Balcer, *A Prosopographical Study of the Ancient Persians Royal and Noble c. 550-450 B.C.* (Lewiston, NY: Edwin Mellon, 1993), p. 105, 149, cf. 269, 67–69, gives two occurrences of the name *Vištāspa* besides Darius I's father: one a son of Darius I and the other a son of Xerxes I. He cites Herodotus VII.64.2 (Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 379), Thucydides I.115.4 (Thucydides, *History of the Peloponnesian War*, trans. C. Forster Smith, *Thucydides I*, LCL ed. [Cambridge: Harvard Univ Press, 1980], p. 191), and Diodorus Sicculus II.69.2 (Diodorus Sicculus, *Library of History*, trans. C. H. Oldfather, *Diodorus of Sicily IV, Books IX–XII 40*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1946], p. 305). Xerxes's son also appears in Ctesias (Photius, *The Bibliotheca*, trans. N. G. Wilson, *Photius: The Bibliotheca* [London: Duckworth, 1994], p. 59). However, it appears that the *Vištāspa*, father of Sardis's satrap, in Thucydides could be another person. Cf. Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 41.

Achaemenid history. This point will need further consideration. It is also worth noting that while the *Zand* places Vīštāspa first, the *Dēnkard* places his reign second.[211]

It is often noted that the third name the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* gives, Husraw son of Kevād, is the name of a Sassanian king.[212] However, both 'the son of Kevād' (Kai Kaus) and Kai Husraw are mythical characters from the Iranian epic tradition with many attached stories.[213] The antiquity of both of these characters is confirmed by their appearance in the Avesta and in India.[214] It appears that the Sassanian King Husraw deliberately modelled himself on these legendary characters and/or modelled the epic traditions on himself.[215] This adaptation seems to have effected two things: the transformation of the priestly term *kavi* into a dynastic term, and the inclusion of King Husraw in the list of the *Saošiiant*'s companions.[216]

The last reign given is a race born of the demon *Xēšm* (Avestan *Aešma*), who are famously described as having wild hair.[217] *Aešma* is an important demon in Zoroastrian tradition, the personification of Wrath, and related to destructive warfare.[218] Indeed, he is the only demon to appear in the *Gāthās*.[219] In later Iranian, Alexander is also associated with

---

[211] *Denkard* IX.8.1–6 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, pp. 180–181).

[212] Reigned 531–579 C.E. Cf. *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 193, 199; Niskanen, *The Human and the Divine*, p. 32; Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, pp. 173–174; for a political overview of his reign, see Richard N. Frye, "The Political History of Iran Under the Sasanians," *The Cambridge History of Iran, Volume 3 (1): The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 151, 153–162.

[213] The first has many stories associated with him under the name 'Kai Kaus' in the *Shahnameh*. See Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, vol 2, pp. 29–43, 82–106, 336–412. It is in his version, however, combined with the Rustam cycle. Interestingly, Firdausī's story of Kai Kaus's attempt to fly to heaven is paralleled in Medieval European traditions. See Eleanor B. Sachs, "Further Notes on a Twelfth-Century Bishop's Mitre in the Metropolitan Museum," *Bulletin of Needle and Bobbin Club* 1/2 (1979): pp. 45–66.

For Husraw: Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, vol. 2, pp. 336–end. He also appears in a variety of Pahlavi texts. See *Dēnkard* VII.1.39 (*Pahlavi Texts V*, p. 14); IX.23.1–7; IX.58.10 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, pp. 223–226, 355); *Menog-ī Xrat* II.95; XXVII.59–63 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 15, 64).

For an overview of the Iranian epic traditions see Ehsan Yarshater, "Iranian National History," *The Cambridge History of Iran, Volume 3 (1): The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods*, ed. Ehsan Yarshater, (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983), pp. 359–416 and pp. 436–440, 444–453 (on Husraw and the Kayanids). Cf. comments in Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 105.

[214] *Yašt* V.45, 49; IX.18, 21; XIII.121, 132; XIV.39; XIX.71; XXIII.2 (*The Zend-Avesta II*, p. 65, 114–115, 216, 222, 241, 303, 328); Yarshater, "Iranian National History," pp. 436–440.

[215] This is argued by Wikander in his 1967 Haskell lectures. Available in transcription in Mihaela Timus, "Stig Wikander: Les «Haskell Lectures» University of Chicago, 1967," *Archaeus* 8.1–4 (2004): pp. 297–298, 311. Note also the opinion of Jamzadeh that the stories are reflexes of Xerxes I, Parivash Jamzadeh, "A Shahnama Passage in an Achaemenid Context," *Iranica Antiqua* 39 (2004): pp. 383–388.

[216] Timus, "Les «Haskell Lectures»," p. 316.

[217] Eddy makes much of this detail, comparing it to depictions of Alexander on coins. See Eddy, *The King is Dead*, p. 19, plates between pp. 21 and 22.

[218] On importance, see: Jes P. Asmussen, "Aešma," *Encyclopædia Iranica* I (1985): pp. 479–480; Cf. Shlomo Pines, "Wrath and Creature of Wrath in Pahlavi, Jewish and New Testament Sources," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 76–82; on relation to warefare, Bruce Lincoln, *Priests, Warriors, and Cattle: a Study in the Ecology of Religions* (Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1981), p. 127; cf. Mary Boyce, "Priests, Cattle and Men," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 50.3 (1987): p. 524.

[219] *Yasna* 29:2; 30:6; 48:12 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 29, 33, 93); Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 87, 201

him.[220] It is certain that this detail, both in the first version and its subsequent reinterpretations, refers to a foreign military invasion. While the text of the *Zand* as it now stands regards these invaders as the Turks and/or the Arabs, it is likely that earlier interpreters understood the demonic race as the foreign invaders of their respective days, the Arabs and the Greeks. Indeed, most commentators accept the Macedonians as the original referent, since they were the first army to remove Iranian sovereignty.[221] The text as it stands seems to confirm that this was an ancient interpretation: the fourth reign of the second vision includes that of '*Aleksandar-ī Kilīsāyīg*,' generally understood to be Alexander the Great.[222]

With the exception of the third, each one of the above referents appears to combine several levels: a political level suitable to a post-Achaemenid period, legendary religious references, and Sassanian references. Given likely Sassanian re-interpretation, the text as it now stands would appear to combine two fourfold schemes: a political and a religious, a combination which was updated in the Sassanian period. That religious fourfold schemes existed is demonstrated by the *Dēnkard*'s précis of four religious eras.[223] Further, the religious connotations of the Achaemenid names and their re-use by the Sassanian dynasts would appear to facilitate their conflation. If the conflated schemes of the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* are separated, the two schemes as understood by the Sassanian commentators were:

'Religious':

Zoroaster—Vīštāspa—Aturpad son of Maraspend—Period of Apostasy

'Political':

Zoroaster and Vīštāspa—King Ardašir—King Husraw—The Arabs

The first one is attested independently in the *Dēnkard*, and it is clearly influenced by the developments of the Sassanian and post-Sassanian era. If the Sassanian identifications are removed from the two series, the following two schemes immediately present themselves:

'Religious':

Zoroaster—Vīštāspa—Saošiiant—Final Battle

'Political':

---

[220] The *Dēnkard* passage (679.14) is transliterated and transliated in H. W. Bailey, *Zoroastrian Problems in the Ninth-Century Books*, Ratanbai Katrak Lectures, Rev. ed. (Oxford: Clarendon, 1971), p. 154; Pines, "Wrath and Creature of Wrath in Pahlavi, Jewish and New Testament Sources," p. 76; *Marvels*, p. 83 (labelled VII.7).

[221] Cf. Anders Hultgård, "Zoroastrian Myth in Bahman Yasht," *The Middle East Viewed from the North. Papers from the First Nordic Conference on Middle Eastern Studies, Uppsala 26–29 January 1989*, eds. B. Utas and K. Vikør (Bergen: 1992), p. 16 and the references cited there.

[222] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 384; *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 200, n. 1.

[223] *Dēnkard* IX.8.1–7 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, pp. 180–181, 451–452); Cereti, *Zand-ī Wahman Yasn*, p. 171.

The first of these is a simple sequence which can easily be derived from the *Gāthās* before the triplication of millennia under Babylonian influence.[224] The second presents itself once the Old Persian forms are used instead of the extant Pahlavi forms.[225] Important to note in this respect is the Sassanian tradition of the occultation of Husraw, an idea which appears in the epic tradition, but for which widespread Indo-European parallels are attested.[226] It would appear likely that the tradition of Husraw's occultation in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* is a replacement for the previous (Achaemenid) dynast, who perhaps was also understood to have been 'occulted.' The immediate candidate would, of course, be Darius III, but could in theory be any of the later kings.[227] If this theory is accepted, the root political concept behind the first chapter of the *Zand* is a threefold Achaemenid dynasty supplanted by Alexander. Since the concept of reign and empire are easily compatible, this series would have been easy to combine with the concept of world empires once the Achaemenid Empire had fallen. Further, the negative attitude taken to the Macedonians facilitated a religious interpretation of the significance of their victory over the Iranians, seeing it as a sign of the end of Zoroaster's millennium.

It was already noted that the succession of empires attested from Assyria to Greece is an Iranian perspective and would suit a reaction to the fall of the Persian Empire. It can be objected, however, that this could not have been combined with the metal scheme by the Persians, since it would reflect negatively on the Achaemenid dynasty.[228] However, the idea of inferiority appears not to be the primary intention of the imagery, either in the Iranian context or in Daniel. First, in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* the first three kings receive no censure; indeed, they are all positive. Only the last is negative—which is characterized as evil and demonic. Within the context of traditional Zoroastrian imagery, the metals utilized bear this out: metals were part of the good creation, belonging to the *Amәša Spәnta Xšaθra* ('Dominion'), particularly appropriate for a symbol of successive reigns.[229] Only the last, the 'mixed' iron, carries a negative connotation. As Boyce has commented, the idea of mixed

---

[224] Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 284–287, 291–292; Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 371.
[225] Boyce argues that rather than Darius, Cyrus was assimilated to the character of Hystaspes, as he ruled prior to Darius and Darius's father was known to be Hystaspes, explaining Cyrus's eclipse in later Iranian tradition. See Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 68–69. Either understanding little effects the gist of the argument.
[226] Timus, "Les «Haskell Lectures»," pp. 316–318.
[227] An older theory understood Cyrus as the original background behind the Kaus-Husraw legends. (Yarshater, "Iranian National History," pp. 447–448) If this Cyrus is understood as Cyrus the Younger, then perhaps one would wish to see the disappointed supporters of Cyrus occulting him, and their Anatolian descendants using it as part of their anti-Seleucid propoganda. This is, of course, nothing but pure speculation.
[228] Cf. Wiesehöfer, "Idea of the Succession," p. 393.
[229] Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 204.

iron is an appropriate image for a period of the mixing of good and evil.[230] In this context, the choice to use metals to represent the eras fits perfectly a religious-political reflection on the fall of Darius's dynasty.[231]

In light of the above considerations, it is probable that the extant *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* combines Sassanian reflections on combined religious and political fourfold schemes. The political version could have contained either dynasts, empires, or dynasts as representative of empires. It would have used the four metals, with only the last one carrying a negative connotation. The tree may or may not be original, but this does not affect the overall form of the concept. It is this version which must be compared to Dan 2.

Although hypothetical, the above reconstruction makes sense in the overall context of Iranian developments. It also very closely parallels the vision in Daniel. It shares a fourfold political scheme, four metals in declining order while only stressing the inferiority of the last, and an eschatological and theological overall interpretation of the significance. It even shares a fictive chronological setting *vis-à-vis* the vision, i.e., occurring in the first era of the vision. It shares the detail of iron mixed with dust/clay and finds significance in this. Finally, both likely share a revelatory context. A difference between bronze and steel, remains, however. This may be less of a problem than it appears now. The sevenfold version of the *Zand*'s vision lists the metals as gold–silver–bronze–copper–lead–steel–mixed iron, with bronze in the third position. All that differs from the more well-known fourfold scheme is the insertion of copper–lead–steel. It seems probable that the underlying Persian scheme was, therefore, gold–silver–bronze–iron mixed with dust, and that, after it was expanded into a sevenfold system, the last metal of the longer version (steel) was retroactively placed into the first one by a scribe more familiar with the longer version. In other words, the second version simply inserted copper–lead–steel to reach seven rather than bronze–copper–lead.[232]

If the above reconstruction is valid, then it must be admitted that the Iranian vision is extremely similar to the dream in Dan 2, a connection between these two visions is probable, and, since the 'mixed' detail finds support in an Iranian context, that the direction

---

[230] Suggested in Boyce, "On the Antiquity," pp. 71–72; Boyce, "Persian Sibyl," p. 73.

[231] Perhaps understood as Hystaspes/Assyria, Artaxerxes/Media, Darius?/Persia, Alexander/Macedon. In this context it is interesting to note that several fake inscriptions purporting to be by Arsames and Ariaramnes but assigned to an Artaxerxes have been found in the region of Ecbatana. Listed as AmH and AsH in Kent, *Old Persian* , p. 116; Cf. the comments in Rüdiger Schmitt, "Old Persian," *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas*, ed. Roger D. Woodard (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008), p. 77, where he assigns it to Artaxerxes III.

[232] Hartman, "Datierung der junavestischen Apokalyptik," pp. 62–63, seems to imply a similar understanding (albeit without discussion) in his listing of the *Zand*'s scheme as gold, silver, copper, iron.

must be from Iran to Yehud.[233] This borrowing would have to fall into a relatively short time span, long enough after Alexander's conquest for the Iranian scheme to be developed but before either the marriage of Berenice and Antochus II or of Cleopatra and Antiochus III (from post-330 and before either 252 or 193).

Eschatology

A further element which must be considered is the appearance of eschatology in Dan 2. Several phrases within the passage can imply or carry an eschatology: v. 28, 'what will happen at the end of days' (מה די להוא באחרית יומיא); vv. 29, 44, 45 'what would be hereafter' (מה די להוא אחרי דנה); v. 44, 'it shall stand forever' (והיא תקום לעלמיא). However, the presence of eschatology in the passage is not solely dependent on these phrases as it is implied in the form of the vision itself. Collins is right to note that the eschatology should not be excised from the passage, making it likely part of the pericope even before it was combined into the current book.[234] In this respect, there are several pertinent aspects to consider. First, the passage reuses the prophetic term 'in the latter days' (באחרית הימים). Second, the eschatology would seem to be imported with the vision itself, as it appears to be of little interest to the Danielic author.[235] Third, the eschatology is a 'deferred eschatology,' quite distinct from the 'imminent eschatology' of chapters 7–12.[236] Fourth, this passage plays an important role in the Book of Daniel as a whole.

The use of the term באחרית יומיא and cognate terms deliberately recalls its use in the writing prophets. This term and the related יום יהוה are exegetical flash points, and can only be briefly discussed here.[237] However, the distinction argued earlier—between future expectation and eschatology—is important for understanding the relation of the passage with previous Judaean traditions and with the subsequent Danielic (and other Judaean) tradition.[238] The passage's imagery does appear to imply an event outside normal historical processes. The four metallic empires all hold in common the fact that they are metals, part

---

[233] Perhaps it is pertinent to note in this respect that Moses of Khoren (*History of Armenia* I.26) relates a fourfold vision very similar to the ones in Dan 2 and 7, supposedly received by the Median king Astyages who he assimilates to *Aži Dahāka*. While the vision clearly alludes to both Daniel and Revelation, it seems to contain an older, pre-Christian core which the author was biblicizing. Cf. Moses Khorenats'i, *History of the Armenians*, trans. Robert W. Thomson, *History of the Armenians: Translation and Commentary* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1978), pp. 114–121. Cf. Gamkrelidze and Ivanov, *Indo-European*, pp. 420–423; James R. Russell, "Early Armenian Civilization," *The Armenians: Past and Present in the Making of National Identity*, eds. Edmund Herzig and Marina Kurkchiyan, Caucasus World: Peoples of the Caucasus (London: Routledge, 2005), pp. 34–36, cf. p. 28.

[234] Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 174–175.

[235] Cf. John J. Collins, "The Court-Tales in Daniel and the Development of Apocalyptic," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 94.2 (1975): pp. 220–221.

[236] For more discussion of the importance of a distinction between 'deferred' and 'imminent' eschatology, see Chapter V. Cf. John J. Collins, *Encounters with Biblical Theology* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2005), pp. 134–136.

[237] See Chapter V for futher discussion.

[238] See the Prolegomena.

of the same statue, and presumably made by man. This contrasts with the fifth empire, which is stone rather than metal, and 'not by (human) hands' (v. 34, די־לא בידין). Using language of judgment, the stone destroys and then supplants the four. The historical sequence is not to be repeated.

The eschatology is implicit in the form of the vision itself; yet, since the overall context of the chapter entirely ignores the eschatology to focus on G-d's revelatory powers, it is most probable that the eschatology was inherited from the borrowed vision. The language of the Hebrew prophets was used by the author, but he (perhaps unwittingly) placed a new interpretation onto them.

According to the logic of the chapter, Nebuchadnezzar's dream depicts an *eschaton* which can be no less than three hundred years distant (since the length of the last kingdom is left unspecified). The fall of Babylon and three more kingdoms must first pass by. From the perspective of the author of the chapter, however, the *eschaton* is much closer, although it is still not urgent. He is living in the last kingdom, but sees no sign of the end. The end is to be expected, but more as the result of wisdom than urgency. For the later tradents, however, the scheme takes on utmost importance since they believe that the end is nigh. The shift between Dan 2 and Dan 7 is less the content of the eschatology, but the author's perceived proximity to the *eschaton.* The later authors fully accept the accuracy and import of the eschatology in Dan 2 which, for that author, was incidental to his interests.

From the above considerations, it becomes clear that borrowed ideas can have an impact beyond their borrower's intention and even their own time. If it can be accepted that the author of Dan 2 borrowed an Iranian vision to make a point about the revelatory power of YHWH, it also becomes apparent that an eschatological reinterpretation of traditions also 'piggy-backed' its way in. This had major ramifications for the development of subsequent Judaean traditions and played a role in the appearance of the apocalypse.

Four metallic Kingdoms with an Eschatology

The presence of relatively ignored features in Dan 2—the metals and the eschatology—make it probable that Daniel's source had already combined the ideas of the succession of empires, four metallic ages, and eschatology. Otherwise, one would have expected the author to have utilized them more in his interpretation. The only parallel adduced which combines all three of these ideas is the likely Hellenistic source of the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* (the presumed *Vahman Yašt*). There is no firm evidence for this source. That 'apocalyptic' traditions and even documents existed seems to be confirmed by the references

to the *Oracles of Hystaspes* (which must have had an Iranian element).[239] Beyond *Hystaspes*, it is possible that there existed a Persian Sibyl (which may have fragments preserved in *Sibylline Oracles* III). Taking her starting point from the Roman author Varro's identification of the oldest Sibyl as Persian,[240] Boyce discusses the purported existence of a 'Persian Sibyl,'[241] and she sees this as a likely source for a combination of Zoroastrian eschatology with a four-empire scheme. A number of texts attributed to sibyls were circulated in the Ancient Near East, and there is no real reason why the Iranian diaspora could not have produced their own. They may even have produced several such propagandistic texts. As Boyce pertinently notes, the Persians were the only people who lost sovereignty due to the Macedonian invasion.[242] Iranian aristocracy had reason to begrudge the Greeks; to them they lost not only independence, but suzerainty. All other peoples in the Ancient Near East merely switched their overlords, which, at first, would probably have been relatively insignificant to them. However, it must be noted that the evidence for a Persian Sibyl is slim—in fact restricted to Lactantius's citation—and therefore cannot be the basis for a wide-ranging theory.[243] However, the possibility remains suggestive, perhaps indicating that the presumed Hellenistic period source behind the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* need not be a *Yašt* at all, but could conceivably be another form of oracular or revelatory literature. While Boyce's suggestion of a Sibylline source is unlikely, it helps to broaden understanding of the genres available to the disaffected Iranian diaspora.

Conclusion

Although the unfortunate state of the Iranian evidence makes a definitive conclusion impossible, an Iranian source for the four empire scheme in Daniel best accounts for the available evidence. Not only does it supply the details of the vision, it helps to explain the development of the Danielic worldview itself, one which evidently began well before the historical appearance of the genre apocalypse. Perhaps it can be suggested that the four empire scheme, understood as Babylon–Media–Persia–Greece, could have appealed to the author of Dan 2 through offering a way of reconciling previous prophecy with historical

---

[239] Cf. David Flusser, "Hystaspes and John of Patmos," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 12–75, who understands the work to be a Judaean one, but which was based on a previous Persian one.

[240] Quoted by Lactanitus, *Divine Institutes*, I.6.7–17 (Caeculius Lactantius, *Divine Institutes*, trans. Anthony Bowen and Peter Garnsey, *The Divine Institutes of Lactantius* [Liverpool: Liverpool Univ Press, 2003], pp. 70–72).

[241] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 371–377; Boyce, "Persian Sibyl," pp. 59–77. The primary argument for a Persian Sibyl comes from Lactantius I.6.7–17 (Lactantius, *Divine Institutes*, pp. 70–72).

[242] Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 374, see also n. 48.

[243] Cf. H. W. Parke, *Sibyls and Sibylline Prophecy in Classical Antiquity*, Croom Helm Classical Studies, Brian C. McGing ed. (London: Routledge, 1988), pp. 32–33, 38; John J. Collins, "The Jewish Transformation of Sibylline Oracles," *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages in Hellenistic-Roman Judaism* (Leiden: Brill, 1997), pp. 184–185, 193.

outcomes. Colless argues that the reference to 'Darius the Mede' is intended to show fulfillment of Jer 51:11.[244] However, in the context of a borrowed oracle in chapter 2, it can instead be suggested that the sequence offered the redactor with a convenient method for reconciling these traditions—thus explaining its use as a structural device for the present book[245]—as well as encouraging the adoption (of the validated) eschatology.

Excursus: On the Watchers

In his paper in the Warfare in Ancient Israel session of SBL, Smith-Christopher proposed to speak of 'an Imperial Gaze' which affects communities (and texts) in an exilic context.[246] By this phrase he wishes to denote the effects of imperial observation upon displaced and subject peoples in a parallel manner to the concept of the 'male gaze.' He further notes the language of 'eyes' and 'watching' in several of the exilic books, considering such language in the context of modern studies of refugees and of prisons. By extension, this insight offers a plausible context for the appearance of the term 'Watcher' (עיר, ἐγρήγορος) in Second Temple Judaism.

The term 'Watcher' first appears in *The Book of Watchers* and Daniel, the origin and associations of which are obscure.[247] The early contexts of the term make clear that the עירין were understood as a class of angels which functioned in heaven, even if the *Book of Watchers*'s interest is largely on a group of them which fell. This can be seen, for example, in *1 Enoch* 20:1 and 22:6, where the term 'Watcher' or the similar phrase 'who watch' is used of the seven archangels in general and Raphael in particular,[248] as well as in the Danielic usage where it is consistently used in conjunction with קדיש (4:10, 14, 20). The unfallen Watchers in both traditions appear in contexts of the pronouncement of judgment due to hubris: in Dan 4 the Watcher proclaims the decreed humbling of Nebuchadnezzar and in *1 Enoch* 9:1–10:15, cf. 20:1–8, the archangels are in charge of executing punishment upon the Watchers,

---

[244] Colless, "Cyrus the Persian as Darius the Mede in the Book of Daniel," p. 118, 121.

[245] For the structural use of the trope, see Collins, "Court-Tales in Daniel," p. 229; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 31–32.

[246] Daniel L. Smith-Christopher, "Can We Speak of the Socio-Psychology of Exile in the Bible?" (paper presented at annual meeting of the Society of Biblical Literature, Boston, 24 November 2008), pp. 6–10. The author is deeply grateful to Professor Smith-Christopher for sending him a copy of his presentation for consultation.

[247] Cf. the various suggestions in Joseph A. Fitzmyer, *The Genesis Apocryphon of Qumran cave 1: a commentary*, 2nd rev. ed. (Rome: Biblical Institute Press, 1971), p. 80; Matthew Black, *The Book of Enoch or 1 Enoch: A New English Edition*, Studia in Veteris Testamenti Pseudepigrapha 7 (Leiden: Brill, 1985), pp. 106–107; Montgomery, *Book of Daniel*, p. 232; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 224–226; Maxwell J. Davidson, *Angels at Qumran: A Comparative Study of 1 Enoch 1–36, 72–108 and Sectarian Writings from Qumran*, JSPSS 11 (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1992), pp. 38–39, who notes their appearance, but does not give an origin; George W. E. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, Hermeneia (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001), pp. 140–141. James Barr, "Aramaic-Greek Notes on the Book of Enoch (I)," *Journal of Semitic Studies* 23.2 (1978): p. 190, suggests that the term was already obscure to the translators of the LXX.

[248] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 40, 42.

although the proclamation of the judgment is given to Enoch. The duties of a Watcher, then, appear to be to survey the heavenly domain and to prosecute deliquents. Such a remit explains the Enochic tradition's choice of the Watcher-class for its fallen supernatural beings: it provides punch to the ironic twist (cf. *1 Enoch* 15:2),[249] perhaps even playing on the theme of theodicy so important to the tradition.[250] Such a motif can again be seen in both the Enochic and Danielic traditions in the series of seventy shepherds in the *Animal Apocalypse* (*1 Enoch* 89:59–90:25)[251] and in the four hubristic empires (Dan 2, 7), respectively. To this function the *Book of Watchers* adds an intercessory role on behalf of the righteous. The four 'archangels' in *1 Enoch* 9 appeal, at least partially, for the sake of suffering mankind and the intercessory role is explicitly charged to the Watchers in Enoch's judgment oracle against them (15:2).[252] The overall impression given of the Watchers, then, is of beings charged with monitoring both praiseworthy and damnable actions and relaying such information above.

A similar concept of 'watchful' and prosecutorial heavenly beings appears in Zech 4, albeit without using the word 'Watcher.' In a somewhat obscure passage, Zechariah sees a seven-lamp lampstand, which the text identifies as "the eyes of the Lord, which range through the whole earth" (אלה עיני יהוה המה משוטטים בכל־הארץ, v. 10b). In the previous chapter, the Davidic scion is described as "a single stone with seven eyes" (על־אבן אחת שבעה עינים, v. 9), possibly giving the concept a royal context.[253] The setting of these chapters is in the Persian period, and it is plausible to understand such a vision of surveillance as based upon contemporary structures.[254] From there, the apocalyptic literature lifts the idea into an angelic category. It is here suggested, then, that this term is an Aramaic reflex of the Achaemenid 'eye of the king' and is a part of *1 Enoch*'s assimilation of YHWH's administration to that of the Great King.[255]

---

[249] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 36.

[250] I.e., YHWH himself is not unjust, just his corrupted, delegated enforcers make it appear so.

[251] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, pp. 129–134; cf. Tiller, *Animal Apocalypse*, pp. 57–8, where he sees the Watchers as one of the backgrounds to the Shepherds.

[252] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 36.

[253] On the chapter as a whole, see Eibert J. C. Tigchelaar, *The Prophets of Old and the Day of the End: Zechariah, the Book of Watchers, and Apocalyptic* (Leiden: Brill, 1996), pp. 16–46; note that on p. 31 he finds a reference to royal surveillance probable in v. 10b.

[254] Cf. 2 Chr 16: 9, where King Asa is told that the Eyes of the Lord range over the whole earth (כי יהוה עיניו משטטות בכל־הארץ), ensuring his reward or punishment.

[255] This connection was already put forward, albeit without discussion, by Javier Teixidor, "Review of *The Genesis Apocryphon of Qumran Cave I. A Commentary* by Joseph A. Fitzmyer," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 87.4 (1967): p. 634. Along less period-specific lines, it is also discussed by A. Leo Oppenheim, "The Eyes of the Lord," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 88.1 (1968): pp. 173–180.

Both Herodotus and Aeschylus briefly mention the existence of a royal Persian appointment to which they refer as '(the king's) eye.'[256] Although both of these mentions are in literary rather than historical contexts *per se*, the manner in which they are mentioned seem to imply an office with which the expected audience was already familiar. Although they provide no historical information on the office, they arguably demonstrate its existence. Plutarch also mentions an office holder by name.[257] In his depiction of Cyrus *cum* philosopher-king, however, Xenophon denies the existence of such a singular informant.[258] The importance of this denial is questionable as its basis appears not to be direct knowledge of the lack of such a system but is rather based on four postulates: 1) the benevolence of Cyrus; 2) subjects acting as if they are continually being watched; 3) people would avoid the company of a spy; and 4) a proverb "the king has many eyes and ears" (δή πολλά μὲν βασιλευς ὦτα, πολλοὶ δ' ὀφθαλμοὶ). Instead, Xenophon claims that a wide, voluntary system of informing was supported by the Great King's bestowal of gifts and honors. While Xenophon must be right in stressing the importance of gift-exchange,[259] this does not exclude the possibility of a formal position. Indeed, later in the same book Xenophon claims that the kings operated a regular system of satrapal oversight using commissioners, among whom he includes the king's brother, son, and eye.[260] The overseers, however, are charged not only with rooting out malfeasance but also with the reporting of excellence. Tuplin opines that there was an official 'eye' who worked alongside an informal network of informants, combining the above Greek information.[261] If one recalls that such modern spying organizations as the CIA operate covertly while utilizing a variety of intelligence sources with appointed, known directors, then this scenario seems plausible. Although there

---

[256] Aeschylus, *Suppliant Maidens, The Persians, Prometheus Bound, and Seven Against Thebes*, trans. Herbert W. Smyth, *Aeschylus I: Plays*, LCL ed. (London: Heinemann, 1922), line 980 (p. 193); Herodotus, *Wars I–II*, I.114.2 (pp. 148–149).

[257] XII.1; Plutarch, *Artaxerxes*, p. 153.

[258] Xenophon, *Cyr. V–VIII*, p. 337 (VIII.2.10–12).

[259] Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 302–304; this pattern has been argued to be important in Indo-Iranian traditions in general as well. See also Almut Hintze, "'Do ut des': Patterns of Exchange in Zoroastrianism," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 14.1 (2004): pp. 27–45. Nevertheless, it must be remembered that it is difficult to distinguish between gifts, tributes, and taxes. Cf. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, "Bāji," *Studies in Persian History: Essays in Memory of David M. Lewis*, eds. Maria Brosius and Amélie Kuhrt, Achaemenid History XI (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1998), pp. 23–34.

[260] Xenophon, *Cyr. V–VIII*, pp. 417–419 (VIII.6.16).

[261] Christopher Tuplin, "The Administration of the Achaemenid Empire," *Coinage and Administration in the Athenian and Persian Empires: the ninth Oxford Symposium on Coinage and Monetary History [held St. Hilda's College in April 1986]*, ed. Ian Carradice, BAR International Series 343 (Oxford: BAR, 1987), p. 120. Oppenheim, "The Eyes of the Lord," p. 173 views Xenophon similarly.

are no certain Iranian sources for this system,[262] the testimony of the Greek sources and logic argue for its existence, importance, and (in)famy.

Most commentators derive the term 'Watcher' itself from the Aramaic root עור 'to awake, to be watchful, to rouse,' even if they express some dissatisfaction with it.[263] It seems, however, that the potential range of associations in the Hebrew and Aramaic cognate terms is slightly more broad, including protection, guarding, and going 'hither and thither.'[264] If one is willing to accept the root as Hebrew rather than Aramaic, it may be interesting to note that Ps 35:23 uses the verb form of עיר to ask for vindication for wrongs done.[265] This is the same role imputed to the Watchers in their first literary appearances. Even if the etymology of עיר cannot be directly related to a Persian or Greek word,[266] the implied nuances as well as the context of its appearance in the early apocalyptic literature certainly recall the Greek authors' discussion of the 'King's Eye.'

If Smith-Christopher's musings on refugees and prisoners are brought into conjunction with this thought, the choice of the word עיר appears to be a logical development. Just as the temporal imperial power has those who watch out for its interests and vindicate wrongs, so the divine imperium has its own mechanism for vindication. This mechanism would, of course, be understood as largely to the benefit of Israel and one which ought to strike fear into G-d's enemies. The importance of the oversight function also perhaps illuminates the paranoia and purity concerns of certain Judaean circles in the Second Temple Period. If this interpretation is acceptable, it represents an instance of influence without linguistic borrowing. A Hebrew term was chosen to represent a heavenly form of Persian, earthly administration, once again melding the 'political' and the 'religious.'

---

[262] Cf. the brief discussion in Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 343–344. For an argument that this institution was borrowed by the Athenian Empire, see Jack M. Balcer, "The Athenian Episkopos and the Achaemenid 'King's Eye'," *American Journal of Philology* 98.3 (1977): pp. 252–263.

[263] Cf. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 140; Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, vol. 2, p. 1946; Michael Sokoloff, *A Dictionary of Jewish Babylonian Aramaic of the Talmudic and Geonic Periods*, Dictionaries of Talmud, Midrash and Targum III (Ramat-Gan, Israel: Bar Ilan Univ Press, 2002), p. 860; Brown, et al., *BDB*, p. 1105; D. Wilhelm Gesenius, *Gesenius's Hebrew and Chaldee Lexicon to the Old Testament Scriptures*, trans. Samuel P. Tregelles (London: Bagster & Sons, 1846), p. 615, 625; Black, *Book of Enoch*, p. 106.

[264] See references above. This is in connection with references to the wild ass; note, however the similar application to the 'Eyes of the Lord' in 2 Chr 16:9, as noted above.

[265] Noted by Gesenius, *Hebrew and Chaldee Lexicon*, p. 615.

[266] However, note the various attempts listed by Richard N. Frye, *The History of Ancient Iran*, Handbuch der Altertumswissenschaft (München: C. H. Beck'sche, 1984), pp. 108–109, n. 79. Shaked suggests that the Greek term 'King's Eye' could be a corruption of an Old Persian form for *wēnān-pad-tan šābistān*/רואי פני המלך, '(the one) who sees the king.' See Shaul Shaked, "Two Judaeo-Iranian Contributions," *Irano-Judaica*, ed. Shaul Shaked, vol. I (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982), pp. 301–303.

IV

Textual Analyses

Part B: Enochic Literature

ENOCHIC LITERATURE

For the sake of convenience, the Enochic materials found in the Ethiopic book will be dealt with together in this section, even though they originally derive from disparate documents. The other extant works known under the name of Enoch—*2 (Slavonic) Enoch*, *3 (Hebrew) Enoch* and *the Book of Giants*—are reserved for future study.

Interest in the *Ethiopic Book of Enoch* (or *1 Enoch*) has exploded since the discovery of Aramaic fragments at Qumran, which included Aramaic fragments of most Enochic books. Some scholars make much of the tradition's import for Qumran and Second Temple Judaism.[267] Ever since Charles, scholars have agreed that the extant Ethiopic text is composite, consisting of five major divisions.[268] Nickelsburg marks the divisions as *Book of Watchers* (1–36), *Book of Parables/Similitudes of Enoch* (37–71), *Book of Luminaries/ Astronomical Book* (72–82), *Dream Visions* (83–90), *Epistle of Enoch* (92–105), *Birth of Noah* (106–107), and Another Book of Enoch (108).[269] The oldest sections of the book are the *Book of Watchers* and the *Astronomical Book*, and both are usually considered on paleographical grounds to be older than the Book of Daniel.[270] Thus, the Enochic corpus contains some of the oldest extant fully apocalyptic Jewish works. Even though the work is ultimately composite, the Ethiopic compilation still shows signs of unity, whether one wishes to see the unifying theme as a 'biography' or a 'testament' of Enoch,[271] although Dix's and Milik's suggestion of an 'Enochic Pentateuch' takes the unity too far.[272]

The Enochic material contains a wide variety of genres, theologies, concerns, and myths. Some are demonstrably based on the Tanakh; others, however, are more enigmatic. Some of the enigmatic details may be explained as either borrowed or inspired by Persian ideas. The following proceeds according to the order of the books in the Ethiopic rather than by their relative dating. Viewed in relative chronology, however, it appears that the number of Iranian details within the Enochic tradition seem to increase over time.

---

[267] E.g., David R. Jackson, *Enochic Judaism: Three Defining Paradigm Exemplars* (London: T & T Clark, 2004).

[268] See the revised explanation of his ideas in R. H. Charles, *The Book of Enoch, or, 1 Enoch* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1912), §12 (pp. xlvi–lii).

[269] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 7–8; Cf. Philip S. Alexander, "The Enochic Literature and the Bible: Intertextuality and its Implications," *The Bible as Book: The Hebrew Bible and the Judaean Desert Discoveries*, eds. Edward D. Herbert and Emmanuel Tov (London: British Library, 2002), p. 57.

[270] James H Charlesworth, "A Rare Consensus Among Enoch Specialists: The Date of the Earliest Enoch Books," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001* (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), pp. 225–234.

[271] Devorah Dimant, "The Biography of Enoch and the Books of Enoch," *Vetus Testamentum* 33.1 (1983): p. 29; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 23; Jonas C. Greenfield and Michael E. Stone, "The Enochic Pentateuch and the Date of the Similitudes," *Harvard Theological Review* 70 (1977): pp. 51–65; Annette Yoshiko Reed, *Fallen Angels and the History of Judaism and Christianity: The Reception of Enochic Literature* (New York: Cambridge Univ Press, 2005), pp. 19–20. Michael A. Knibb, "Interpreting the Book of Enoch: Reflections on a Recently Published Commentary," *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 33.4 (2002): p. 442, however, is only willing to see a 'loose collection.'

[272] G. H. Dix, "The Enochic Pentateuch," *Journal of Theological Studies* 27 (1926): pp. 29–42; Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 4.

The Book of Watchers (1–36)

The Book of Watchers incorporates a diverse variety of material. While it clearly has links with the Torah, Gen 6 in particular, it also contains motifs and ideas for which Gen 6 cannot account. One of the more significant strands is the material collected around the character of the Watcher Asael. A myth of forbidden knowledge which explains the existence of culture (*Kulturentstehungsmythos*) and a motif of binding until the eschaton are largely linked with Asael in the book. Both of these strands have parallels in Iranian materials. The character of Asael—even if not 'original' to the Enochic tradition—gradually assumed greater notoriety until he became the paradigm of the rebellious angel (54:5; 55:4). The eschatology connected with the idea of a temporary binding is also foundational for much in the work as a whole; indeed, Nickelsburg has argued it is one of the unifying themes of the Ethiopic corpus.[273] Finding sources behind the character of Asael, therefore, will help illuminate the formation of the watcher tradition in both the *Book of Watchers* and in the later Enochic tradition. As Reed notes, the instruction motif is quite central to the form of the *Book of Watchers* as it is now known.[274]

Motif of Forbidden Knowledge as a Kulturentstehungsmythos

In both the *Book of Watchers* (8:1–3, 10:7–8; Cf. 7:1, 9:6; 13:1–3) and the *Parables* (69:6–8; Cf. 52:8) appears a myth of the human acquisition of forbidden, arcane knowledge, more or less linked with a Watcher called Asael or Azazel (עשאל),[275] which explains in some manner the state or existence of culture/civilization as it is known (*Kulturenstehungsmythos*).[276] Both instances will be dealt with together here. Hanson argues that the Asael narrative arose from the comparison of the Šemihazah narrative in the *Book of Watchers* with the scapegoat given over to the demon Azazel in Lev 16,[277] but this explanation has not been accepted by all scholars.[278] Hanson's point of departure is the appearance of the name 'Azazel' in some

---

[273] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 37.

[274] Reed, *Fallen Angels*, pp. 30–34.

[275] According to 4Q202, Col. II and 4Q204, Col II (Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, pp. 405, 413). 4Q201 (Col III), though, gives the homophonic variant עסאל (p. 403).

[276] Siam Bhayro, *The Shemihazah and Asael Narrative of 1 Enoch 6–11: Introduction, Text, Translation and Commentary with Reference to Ancient Near Eastern and Biblical Antecedents*, Alter Orient und Altes Testament 322 (Münster: Ugarit-Verlag, 2005), p. 11, tries to argue that the "Asael Narrative" and the "Angelic Instruction Motif" were from two separate sources. It is unclear to the present author, however, what remains 'Asaelic' after the removal of the instruction motif. Additionally, it seems anachronistic to base the division on comparisons with Daniel and Manichaeism (pp. 26–27).

[277] Paul D. Hanson, "Rebellion in Heaven, Azazel, and Euhemeristic Heroes in 1 Enoch 6-11," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 96.2 (1977): p. 222.

[278] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 191–193, instead posits a borrowing from the Prometheus myth, a source which Hanson in the cited article mentions favourably, but ignores; see also Corrie Molenberg, "A Study of the Roles of Shemihaza and Asael in 1 Enoch 6–11," *Journal of Jewish Studies* 35.2 (1984): pp. 136–146; Carol A. Newsom,

of the versions and later parts of *1 Enoch*. Since Lev 16 does not involve any form of rumination on the origins of culture, it is more plausible that the name 'Asael' in *Enoch* was later assimilated to the Levitical form, rather than Lev 16 having served as the initial inspiration for the motif as a whole.[279] Indeed, while the Greek versions read 'Azazel' here, the extant Aramaic clearly reads 'Asael.'[280] While Davies cites Milik in defense of seeing Azazel as simply a variant of Asael, the comment he cites is in the context of the later *3 Enoch*, not *1 Enoch* itself.[281] This does not defend an origin of the character from the Levitical ritual in *1 Enoch*. Neither does an appeal to עזזאל in 4QEnGiants[a]; according to Milik 4QEnGiants was part of a scroll which contained *1 Enoch* 1–36, 83–90, and 91–107,[282] a manuscript which he dates to 50–51 B.C.E.,[283] considerably later than the original writing of the *Book of Watchers*. Since the name עשאל is more or less homophonic with עזזאל, it is easy to see how the latter variant could be assimilated to עזאזל.[284] If Pinker is correct in claiming that the 'scapegoat' in Lev 16 was simply a memory of YHWH's desert origins (as in the Song of Deborah),[285] then it seems most likely the Asael *cum* Azazel tradition evident in *1 Enoch* is the source of the later demonic interpretation of Lev 16 than the other way around. Without the name 'Azazel' Lev 16 becomes unlinkable to the pericope, and the question of the primary source of inspiration for the Asael myth remains. It seems, then, another explanation is needed.

Scholars generally agree on separate provenances for the Šemihazah and Asael stories in the *Book of Watchers*.[286] It is also generally agreed that the Šemihazah motif is the older and the Asael material was interpolated later, even if the details of how this happened vary

---

"The Development of *1 Enoch* 6–19: Cosmology and Judgment," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 42.3 (1980): pp. 310–329. Cf. Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, pp. 38–39, who does not directly mention Hanson's thesis, but his description seems to discount it; Archie T. Wright, *The Origin of Evil Spirits: The Reception of Gen 6.1–4 in Early Jewish Literature* (Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe, 198; Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2005), pp. 109–114.

[279] Cf. Matthew Black, "The Twenty Angel Dekadarchs at 1 Enoch 6.7 and 69.2," *Journal of Jewish Studies* 1–2 (1982): pp. 231–232; Matthew Black, *The Book of Enoch*, p. 121; Molenberg, "Shemihaza and Asael," p. 143, n. 34. A convenient overview of various position on the character of Azazel (in the context of Lev 16) is available in Aron Pinker. "A Goat to Go to Azazel." *Journal of Hebrew Scriptures* 7 (2007): pp. 1–23, http://www.arts.ualberta.ca/JHS/Articles/article_69.pdf.

[280] 4Q202, 4Q204.

[281] Philip R. Davies, "And Enoch was Not, For Genesis Took Him," *Biblical Traditions in Transmission*, eds. Charlotte Hempel and Judith M. Lieu (Leiden: Brill, 2006), p. 99, n. 9. He cites Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 131.

[282] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 310.

[283] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 300.

[284] This is also the opinion of Devorah Dimant, "The 'Pesher on the Periods' (4Q180) and 4Q181," *Israel Oriental Studies* 9 (1979): p. 94, n. 19. Cf: 4Q203 and the comment on the form 'Azazel' in Loren T. Stuckenbruck, *The Book of Giants from Qumran*, TSAJ 63 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1997), pp. 77–79.

[285] Aron Pinker, "A Goat to Go to Azazel," p. 22, 24–25.

[286] John J. Collins, "The Apocalyptic Technique: Setting and Function in the Book of Watchers," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 44.1 (1982): p. 97; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 165–172; Argall, *1 Enoch and Sirach: a Comparative Literary and Conceptual Analysis of the Themes of Revelation, Creation, and Judgment*, pp. 24–25; Tiller, *Animal Apocalypse*, p. 90.

significantly.[287] This sequence is usually interpreted to indicate the relatively younger age of the Asael tradition, but there is no solid reason for this to be the case. Even if the Asael material was worked into a pre-existing version of the *Book of Watchers* (which itself is not wholly certain) there is no need to assume that the negative *Kulturenstehungsmythos* (of which Asael is the primary Enochic representative) had not been previously circulating in Second Temple Judaism or among scholarly circles; it merely shows that the author/redactor found it useful for his purposes at a later point in his writing.[288] The original inspiration for the motif could well be much older than the text of the *Book of Watchers* itself.[289] The priority of Šemihazah or Asael in the writing of the extant book, then, tells little about its original dating or provenance. Since the story in Gen 6:1–4 contains neither motif here considered related to Asael (neither *kulturentstehungsmythos* nor binding), it is understood here to have been at least partially inspired by a secondary source.

The idea of a divine source for the arts of civilization (*Kulturenstehungsmythos*) is widespread in folklore.[290] Sometimes this impartation of knowledge to humanity has a positive connotation, sometimes a more negative one. Often, these accounts are inherently ambivalent; the information can be beneficial to humanity but against the will of the gods, or the information could itself be detrimental.[291] Indeed, the Watcher myth itself appears to have been ambivalent in Judeo-Christian tradition as well.[292] Various aspects of the story extant in *1 Enoch* parallel several sources, so determining primary influence is difficult. Several versions of the myth known in the Ancient Near East are analyzed below for resemblances to the *Book of Watcher*'s scenario.

---

[287] Cf. Newsom, "Development of *1 Enoch* 6–19," pp. 320–321; Hanson, "Rebellion in Heaven," pp. 220–225; VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, p. 124; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 190–191. However, Molenberg, "Shemihaza and Asael," p. 146 argues that there are no separate traditions behind the strands. Margaret Barker, *The Older Testamant: the Survival of Themes from the Ancient Royal Cult in Sectarian Judaism and Early Christianity* (London: SPCK, 1987), pp. 21–22, tries to argue that the Asael material is older, royal cultic mythology that was replaced by the later formulation of Adam and Eve.

[288] Cf. the interesting reading offered by Annette Yoshiko Reed, "Heavenly Ascent, Angelic Descent, and the Transmission of Knowledge in 1 Enoch 6–16," *Heavenly Realms and Earthly Realities in Late Antique Religions*, eds. Ra'anan S. Boustan and Annette Yoshiko Reed (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004), pp. 47–66; John J. Collins, "Methodological Issues in the Study of 1 Enoch: Reflections on the Articles of P. D. Hanson and G. W. Nickelsburg," *Society of Biblical Literature 1978 Seminar Papers*, ed. Paul J. Achtemeier, vol. 1, SBLSP 18 (Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1978), p. 316, is also cautious about assuming separate documents for each strand.

[289] Cf. Dimant, "Biography of Enoch," p. 25, who suggests the myth is an "ancient midrash." This hesitation, however, is not intended to agree with Barker and Davies, who argue that it is older than Genesis. On this issue, see the contributions of Hendel and Stuckenbruck in Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck, eds., *The Fall of the Angels*. Themes in Biblical Narrative 6 (Leiden: Brill, 2004), pp. 11–34 and 87–118, respectively, especially 11, 88.

[290] Cf. Stith Thompson, *Motif-Index of Folk-Literature*, Rev. ed., 6 vols. (Bloomington, IN: Indiana Univ Press, 1955-1958), vol. 1, p. 123 (A541); Reed, "Heavenly Ascent," p. 49.

[291] See Figure 15.

[292] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 196.

Perhaps most familiar in the Occident is the Prometheus myth.[293] This myth is available in two primary versions, by Hesiod and by Aeschylus. Beyond a basic motif of forbidden, divinely sourced knowledge, Aeschylus's version offers more details for parallels then Hesiod's.[294] According to Aeschylus, Prometheus taught men not only the use of fire, but also astronomy, writing, pastoralism, horse-riding, sea-faring, medicine, astrology, dream interpretation, augury, extispicy, and metallurgy.[295] This patronage was an affront to Zeus, who had Prometheus bound to a rock as punishment. Rather than being a curse, the knowledge which Prometheus imparts humanity is described as raising them up from a beast-like condition to civilization.[296] This version of the myth parallels the accounts given in *1 Enoch* in certain arts (astronomy, astrology, various magic arts, writing, and metallurgy), but the context and significance are quite different. The various references in *1 Enoch* either imply or state that the Watchers' knowledge is the cause of humanity's miserable and sinful state, or at least contributes to it; in the Greek versions of the story, man's difficulty comes not from Prometheus's teachings, but Zeus's attempts to neutralize their benefit. Indeed, Aeschylus's Prometheus suffers wrongly due to the arbitrary authority of Zeus. This indictment of arbitrary authority is totally foreign to the theology of the *Book of Watchers*; *1 Enoch* focuses on the Watchers' failure to fulfill their necessary and proper roles *vis-à-vis* humanity. The problem in view is the fallen angels, not G-d's rule; G-d's judgment is consistently presented as a sign of his justice, not of his arbitrariness. Thus, in both intention and focus, the Prometheus myth shows little resemblance to the Asael myth.[297] In light of West's suggestion that the Greek versions of the myth are themselves dependent on an 'oriental' prototype,[298] perhaps it is better to look farther East for parallels.

---

[293] This appears to be the parallel favoured by Tiller, *Animal Apocalypse*, p. 89; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 191–193; VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, p. 127; Hengel, *Judaism and Hellenism*, p. 190, parallels both the Titans and Prometheus; Jan N. Bremmer, "Remember the Titans!," *The Fall of the Angels*, eds. Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck, Themes in Biblical Narrative 6 (Leiden: Brill, 2004), pp. 58–60; Wright, *Origin of Evil Spirits*, pp. 115–118, finds the parallel "attractive" (p. 117); Hanson, "Rebellion in Heaven," pp. 226–7 is sympathetic to such a parallel, but ultimately prefers a 'Semitic' prototype; Annette Yoshiko Reed, "Heavenly Ascent, Angelic Descent, and the Transmission of Knowledge in 1 Enoch 6–16," *Heavenly Realms and Earthly Realities in Late Antique Religions*, eds. Ra'anan S. Boustan and Annette Yoshiko Reed (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004), pp. 49–50, notes the parallel, but does not discuss it, but in Reed, *Fallen Angels*, pp. 39–40, she favours a 'pan-Greco-Roman' inspiration. Fritz Graf, "Mythical Production: Aspects of Myth and Technology in Antiquity," *From Myth to Reason? Studies in the Development of Greek Thought*, ed. Richard Buxton (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1999), p. 322, sees too many Greco-Roman parallels to choose a single source.

[294] Hesiod only mentions Prometheus's stealing of fire and the (better) sacrificial portion and Zeus's reaction. See *Works and Days*, §§ 42–59 and *Theogony*, §§ 507–616 (Evelyn-White, ed., *Hesiod*, pp. 5–7 and pp. 117–125, respectively.)

[295] *Prometheus Bound*, lines 436–506 (Aeschylus, *Plays*, pp. 255–259.)

[296] Cf. West, *The East Face*, pp. 581–582.

[297] See a similar appraisal of the Prometheus parallel in Molenberg, "Shemihaza and Asael," p. 144.

[298] West, *The East Face*, p. 295, 310–312, 579–585.

There are several Babylonian variations on the *Kulturentstehungsmythos*. According to Berossus, a fish-man named Oannes (or Adapa) imparted all the knowledge of civilization to men.[299] In this version, the knowledge is wholly beneficial—indeed necessary—for mankind and contains no overtones of being illicit. The version of the Adapa story Dalley offers could perhaps be read as slightly more ambiguous. While there is no condemnation of the knowledge *per se*, Adapa offends the gods with its improper use, and Ea must give further knowledge to protect Adapa before them. The story is quite fragmentary, and the final extant episode is notoriously ambiguous. It is unclear whether Ea means to protect or punish Adapa with the information which causes him to lose out on eternal life. As Dalley comments, the ambiguity may be intentional "and a crucial *double entendre* may attribute man's folly to a simple misunderstanding."[300] On a whole, however, there appears to be no condemnation of Ea or Adapa in this version. The fragments presented by Pritchard, however, offer hints of a myth of forbidden knowledge. Fragment B, line 58, may imply that Ea imparted esoteric knowledge to Adapa along the lines of the Asael myth; Fragment D states that Adapa's actions had brought disease and death upon mankind.[301] Fragment D certainly preserves a serious story with more transgressive implications than the other versions of Adapa so far mentioned; however, the council of the gods are quick to rectify any harm caused by Adapa. Ultimately, Adapa's loss of immortality (something to which he had never held claim anyway) is the only misfortune to result.

West also briefly cites the myth of *Lahar and Ašnan* in connection with the Prometheus myth, but it does not offer a useful parallel to Asael.[302] According to Kramer's version, the story depicts the arts of agriculture and pastoralism as divine gifts, or, more correctly, considers their existence to be dependent on the creation of patron deities for each. The myth contains no reference to nor discussion of humanity, forbidden knowledge, nor even the receipt of knowledge.[303] Even if many aspects of Enoch's character parallel Babylonian prototypes,[304] the negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos* motif does not seem to have an adequate Babylonian parallel extant.

---

[299] See the version in Stanley M. Burstein, *The Babyloniaca of Berossus*, Sources and Monographs on the Ancient Near East 1.5 (Malibu: Undena, 1978), pp. 13–14. Note 6 claims that the recipient of the knowledge was the king Alorus, but this is not stated in this text itself.

[300] See Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia: Creation, the Flood, Gilgamesh and others*, Oxford World Classics (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1991), pp. 182–188. Comment from p. 183.

[301] See Pritchard, ed., *ANET*, p. 102 and pp. 102–3. Fragment B, line 58 reads, "of the earth the plan disclosed."

[302] West, *The East Face*, p. 582.

[303] Samuel Noah Kramer, *The Sumerians: Their History, Culture, and Character* (London: University of Chicago Press, 1970), pp. 220–222.

[304] See the explorations in Rykle Borger, "Die Beschwörungsserie Bīt mēseri und die Himmelfahrt Henochs," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 33.2 (1974): pp. 183–196; Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, particularly pp. 538–613; Andrei A. Orlov, *The Enoch-Metatron Tradition*, Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism 107 (Tübingen: Mohr

The *Kulturentstehungsmythos* appears twice in Persian traditions, one linked directly to sin, the other more with the loss of a golden age. The first version is the story of the first human couple, Mašye and Mašyane (also called Mašya and Mašyānag). The second story deals with the reign and fall of the first king, Yima.

The *Greater Bundahišn* XIV.11–34//*Indian Bundahišn* XV.19–21 describes how, prompted by demons, Mašye and Mašyane discover fire, kill animals, invent metallurgy, make weapons, make clothes, and worship demons.[305] Two things are notable in this story: that the sins are committed by humans on the prompting of avowedly evil spirits and that the couple are described as creating both good things (fire, ritual) and as well as negative things. The story thus also has an ambiguous element; while the author of the *Bundahišn* clearly viewed the couple as inveterate sinners,[306] they also put into place many of the things needed for the functioning of civilization.[307] That the author of the passage deemed them sinners is seen by the use of the term 'to lie' (Pahlavi *druxtan*, *drōz-*, Old Persian *duruj-*). This version of the motif represents a more moralizing reflex than the Prometheus or Adapa versions. At least some of the knowledge is itself wicked, and the protagonists are considered to be held guilty.

The *Kulturenstehungsmythos* also appears in Iran in the stories around the primeval king Yima. The character of Yima (Yama) is Indo-Iranian, although his roles in Iran and in India were quite different.[308] In the *Gāthās*, Yima only appears as having sinned, with no explanation of what the sin entailed.[309] In the *Zāmyād Yašt*, however, he appears as a king of a golden age who lost his *X'arənah* ('royal or heroic glory or fortune') through lying.[310] In the *Zāmyād Yašt* version, Yima forces the demons to impart to mankind the positive arts of civilization, listed largely in vague terms (XIX.32). Yima is able to do this because of his *X'arənah*. His subsequent fall is due to pride at his achievements, which caused him to lie

---

Siebeck, 2005), pp. 343–354; John J. Collins, "The Sage in the Apocalyptic and Pseudepigraphic Literature," *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, eds. John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990), pp. 343–354; Cf. VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, but note the (convincing) critique of the *baru* parallel in Bedenbender, "Jewish Apocalypticism: A Child of Mantic Wisdom?," pp. 189–196. It must be noted in this context that the parallel between Enmenduranki and Enoch is much more plausible than the old appeal to Gayomarətan (E.g., Bruce Lincoln, "The Indo-European Myth of Creation," *History of Religions* 15.2 (1975): p. 125).

[305] *Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 54–57. Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 128–133. Cf. R. C. Zaehner, *The Teachings of the Magi: A Compendium of Zoroastrian Beliefs* (London: 1956), p. 71.

[306] See *Greater Bundahišn* XIV.16 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 130–131); *Indian Bundahišn* XV.9 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 55).

[307] Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 96–97, 140.

[308] For a useful collection of the related Indo-European myths, see Bruce Lincoln, "The Lord of the Dead," *History of Religions* 20.3 (1981): pp. 224–241; pp. 233–235 note where the Iran myths depart from the remainder.

[309] *Yasna* XXXII.8 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 47; *The Zend-Avesta III*, p. 61).

[310] *Yašt* XIX.30–34 (Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 173–195; *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 293).

(XIX.33). Thus, in this version, the acquisition of knowledge was itself a beneficial thing; the sin was the subsequent hubris (lying and pride) rather than an effect of the knowledge.

The *Shahnameh* of Firdausī explicitly links the *Kulturenstehungsmythos* with Yima, a primaeval human king in Iranian tradition. Firdausī credits Yima with the discovery of metallurgy, weapons and warcraft; of clothing, castes, and jewelry; of perfume and medicine, and with forcing the demons to serve rather than harm humans. All of his achievements cause him to become prideful and claim to be god, whereupon he loses his glory and fortune.[311] Thus, in this story, the knowledge is of supernatural origin, but is of itself a good thing and reflective of the power of Yima's *X'arənah*; it does not cause Yima's later misfortune. Firdausī's version appears to be largely an expansion or filling out of the myth as it is visible in the *Zāmyād Yašt*, although the lateness of the *Shahnameh* makes using it very dubious.[312] It is worth noting in this context, however, the statement in the *Aogəmadaēcā* §§91–93 that Tahmōrup, son of Vīvanghān, acquired 'Seven kinds of writing and penmanship from Angra Mainyu.'[313] The deed is left unevaluated; interestestingly, *1 Enoch* 69:8–11 also attributes diabolic teaching to the creation of writing. The *Aogəmadaēcā* is a Parthian period liturgy which assembled, translated, and commented on now lost Avestan verses,[314] so a diabolic culture myth certainly did circulate in Iran prior to *1 Enoch*. Yima is also described as the 'son of Vīvanghān,' so it is possible that the diabolic inspiration comes from another *Kulturentstehungsmythos* tradition associated with Yima. In any case, several versions of the motif of forbidden knowledge circulated in Iran, although attached to a variety of figures; Boyce sees an alternate protagonist with a similar role in the character of Haošiiaŋha/Hōšang, and she suggests different heroes for different tribes.[315] Haošiiaŋha appears in *Yašts* V.21–2; IX.3–4; XV.7–8; XVII.24–5, the *Dēnkard* VIII.13.5, the *Aogəmadaēcā* §§88–89, and in the *Shahnameh* I.17–20.[316] In all of these texts he is depicted as a primaeval king who defeated demons. In this role he parallels Yima, and the *Zāmyād Yašt* and the *Dēnkard* even have him usurp Yima's role as the first king. However, there seems to be no evidence for a negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos* being connected with Haošiiaŋha. If his myths

---

311 Firdausī, *Shāhnāmeh*, Vol. 1, pp. 131–135. Note the remarkable similarity of this story to the Rabbinic traditions of Solomon. (See Louis Ginzberg, *Legends of the Jews*, trans. Henrietta Szold, 7 vols. [Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 1998], Vol. 4, pp. 123–176).

312 Cf. the comments in Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 37.

313 See Kaikhusroo M. Jamasp Asa, *Aogəmadaēcā: A Zoroastrian Liturgy*, Veröffentlichungen der Iranischen Kommission 11 (Vienna: Österreichischen Akademie Der Wissenschaften, 1982), p. 82.

314 Jamasp Asa, *Aogəmadaēcā*, pp. 9–10.

315 See Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 104; Cf. Wikander, *Vayu*, pp. 51–52, 61. The preface to the Shahnameh's translation (957 C.E.) also considers Hošang to be the first king. See Vladimir Minorsky, *Iranica: Twenty Articles*, Publications of the University of Tehran 775 (Hertford: Stephen Austin, 1964), p. 270.

316 See *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 58–59, 111, 251, 276–277; *Pahlavi Texts IV*, pp. 26–27; Jamasp Asa, *Aogəmadaēcā*, p. 81; Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, vol. 1, pp. 122–124.

were associated with royal ideology as Shahbazi suggests, then it seems highly unlikely they were negative in any case.[317] Interestingly, Carnoy, citing *Yašt* XVII.25, suggests it was Yima who was the original giver of forbidden knowledge rather than Mašya and Mašyānag.[318] If this is true, then the dating for the sinful *Kulturentstehungsmythos* would be pushed back comfortably into the Achaemenid period; however, the present writer cannot see how such an interpretation can be culled from that text.

Of the two Persian versions of the story, the myth of Mašya and Mašyānag parallels the Asael story in *1 Enoch* more closely than the myths associated with Yima. The focus of the story in *1 Enoch*, however, has shifted from the human protagonists to their demonic inspirations, which is consonant with the Enochic traditions' preoccupation with angelic figures in general. Unfortunately, this parallel cannot as comfortably be considered to be an older survival as the Yima myths can; indeed, Boyce considers Mašya and Mašyānag to be a later elaboration.[319] However, one could wish to see an Indo-European reflex in the story of the first human couple, since a story also appears in the Norse text, the *Vǫluspá*.[320] The first human pair, Askr and Embla, are there said to be fashioned out of two pieces of driftwood. While it is interesting that this first couple is fashioned from plant material (the *Bundahišn* describes Mašya and Mašyānag's birth from a rhubarb stalk), the association between humanity and driftwood in particular appears to be well situated in Norse tradition itself.[321] One may even wish to see the allusion to the ashtree (*askr*) as Indo-European as it also appears in Hesiod, but it does not appear in Iran.[322] Additionally, the manuscript which preserves the *Vǫluspá* (the Codex Regius) dates to 1270 C.E.,[323] even later than the manuscripts of the *Bundahišn*. The possibility that the Scandinavian story was influenced by the biblical story of Adam and Eve cannot be eliminated, and while Ström and Hasenfratz may be convinced of the Indo-European origins of both the *Bundahišn* and the *Vǫluspá* due to parallels,[324] the parallel of interest here—a negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos*—is not found in

---

[317] A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Hōšang," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 12 (2004): pp. 491–492, http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

[318] Carnoy, "Iranian Mythology," pp. 296–310.

[319] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 96–97.

[320] See the relevant text in Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, p. 11.

[321] Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, pp. 122–123.

[322] See Evelyn-White, ed., *Hesiod*, p. 13; Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, pp. 122–123.

[323] Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, p. xi.

[324] Åke V. Ström, "Indogermanisches in der Völuspá," *Numen* 14.3 (1967): pp. 167–208; he even claims influence of the trope on Daniel via Persia, see pp. 197–198; Hans P. Hasenfratz, "Iran und der Dualismus," *Numen* 30.1 (1983): pp. 44–45, arguing that the parallel proves antiquity; cf. Anders Hultgård, "Persian Apocalypticism," *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism. Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity*, ed. John J. Collins (New York: Continuum, 2000), p. 69. Katherine Nielsen, "'*Hver tíðendi eru at segja frá um ragnarøkr?*': The Debate over Christian Influences in Norse Indo-European Tradition," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 30.1–2 (2002): pp. 61–77 argues that the story itself is indeed of ancient Sandinavian origin, even if the current form has a Christian frame.

Scandinavia. Thus, despite the excellent parallels with the story in *1 Enoch*, it seems that the negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos* would need to have been associated with characters other than Mašya and Mašyānag to be viable as a source for the *Book of Watchers*.[325]

It is possible that the authors of this story in its Enochic version adapted it from an Iranian source for their own ends. It is also possible they adapted a version of the Prometheus myth, either from Greek sources, or from a Hellenized Persian source (such as Commagene). The scant hints make a definitive identification impossible, but a Persian source for the diabolical *Kulturentstehungsmythos* is at least as likely as a Greek or Babylonian one. Sadly, only vague hints of the Iranian myth survive for comparison. It may be worth noting that Aeschylus's version of Prometheus appears during the Persian period. The Greeks' fascination with 'oriental' wisdom is commonly acknowledged—it has even been suggested that the Greeks were quite open to Persian ideas until Darius's or Xerxes's invasions.[326] Potential links between Greek philosophy and Persia were noted above,[327] and, if this is true, perhaps the choice between a Persian source and a Greek source is, in the final analysis, no real choice at all.

None of the parallels discussed here offer an exact match to the Asael version of the myth. However, each of the versions discussed here are probably but single reflexes of a variety of oral variations on the *Kulturentstehungsmythos*. Ancient Near Eastern scribes would have come into contact with a variety of oral traditions, and most likely would have also known some of the written, scribal traditions as well. A scribe who wished to use the *Kulturenstehungsmythos* most likely had an eclectic mix of ideas available for use, stemming from around the Ancient Near East. One should perhaps posit a scholarly *koine* or stock of tropes from which the scribe could adapt or borrow. In this *koine* it is just as likely that the authors of *1 Enoch* knew the current Persian variations on the myth as the Greek or Babylonian ones.[328]

---

[325] Robert Chenciner, *Daghestan: Tradition and Survival*, Caucasian World (Surrey: Curzon, 1997), p. 40, 187, cites a "cylindrical bronze" from Daghestan which he claims depicts Mašya and Mašyānag, but unfortunately does not give reference information for the artifact.

[326] Cf. Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 153–4; Dandamaev and Lukonin, *The Culture and Social Institutions of Ancient Iran*, p. 297, 326; Duchesne-Guillemin, *The Western Response to Zoroaster*, p. 70; Duchesne-Guillemin, "Fire in Iran and in Greece," pp. 198–266; Duchesne-Guillemin, "Heraclitus and Iran," pp. 34–49; M. L. West, *Early Greek Philosophy and the Orient*, p. 203, suggests an "active period" of interest in things Persian until Xerxes's invasion, however, his later work does not mention a definite end, see West, *The East Face*; however, Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," p. 188, rejects an 'ending' of Persian influence caused by the Greco-Persian wars.

[327] See Chapter I.

[328] Cf. Ronald S. Hendel, "The Nephilim were on the Earth: Genesis 6:1–4 and its Ancient Near Eastern Context," *The Fall of the Angels*, eds. Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck, Themes in Biblical Narrative 6 (Leiden: Brill, 2004), p. 32, "rich circulation of oral traditions." If the suggestion that YHWH was originally a god of metallurgy is true, this would raise interesting questions for the negative view of that art in *1 Enoch*. Nissim Amzallag, "Yahweh, the Canaanite God of Metallurgy?," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 33.4 (2009): pp. 387–404.

	Asael Myth	*Prometheus (Aeschylus)*	*Mašye and Mašyane*	*Adapa (ANET)*	*Yima (Yt 19)*
Types of knowledge acquired	Weapons, metallurgy, cosmetics, sorcery, astrology, 'iniquity'	Fire, astronomy, writing, pastoralism, horse-riding, sea-faring, medicine, astrology, dream interpretation, augury, extispicy, metallurgy	Fire, (bad) sacrifice, clothing, well-making, metallurgy, weapons, cannibalism	Not extant: wisdom not including immortality	prosperity, reputation, flock and cattle, satisfaction and honour
Morality of knowledge	Morally evil	Morally neutral	Some neutral, some evil	Morally neutral	Morally neutral, morally good
Divine sanction	Against will of G-d	Against will of Zeus	According to the will of the *Daēuuas* (and by implication, against will of Ahura Mazda)	By Ea, unknown to divine council	Against will of *Daēuuas*; by implication, according to will of Ahura Mazda
Giver of knowledge	Asael (Watcher)	Prometheus (Titan/god)	The *Daēuuas* (demons)/Mašye and Mašyane	Ea (god)/Adapa	The *Daēuuas* (demons)/Yima
Results of knowledge for humanity	War, death, sin, birth of the Giants	Civilization	Civilization; both good and bad ritual; increase in demons	Civilization; temporary illnesses	no frost, heat, no death or age, envy
Results of knowledge for the Giver	Bound in abyss until final judgment	Bound to rock and liver eaten (Prometheus)	Souls in hell (Mašya and Mašyānag)	Loss of immortality (Adapa)	Became prideful and lied (Yima)

Figure 15: **Kulturenstehungsmythos** ***Table***

Author's Own

Excursus: The Šemihazah Myth

Most scholars consider the Šemihazah myth to be some form of an interpretation of Genesis 5–6,[329] which saw in the neutral account in Genesis a myth of the origins of evil. It is impossible to know exactly the extent of the tradition which was referenced/excerpted by Gen 6:1–4 or how much of said tradition survived orally, nor, therefore, how much of the interpretation in *Book of Watchers* is original to the Enochic tradition or was merely an

[329] Cf: Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 166–167; the majority of scholars in Gabriele Boccaccini, ed., *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism*. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19-23, 2001 (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), especially Stuckenbruck (pp. 99–106) would agree; Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, pp. 38–39; James C. VanderKam, "Biblical Interpretation in *1 Enoch* and *Jubilees*," *The Pseudepigrapha and Early Biblical Interpretation*, eds. James H Charlesworth and Craig A. Evans (Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1993), pp. 103–107; Alexander, "Enochic Literature and the Bible," pp. 64–65; Loren T. Stuckenbruck, "The Origin of Evil in Jewish Apocalyptic Tradition: The Interpretation of Gen 6:1–4 in the Second and Third Centuries B.C.E.," *The Fall of the Angels*, eds. Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck, Themes in Biblical Narrative 6 (Leiden: Brill, 2004), pp. 87–118. A few scholars reverse the direction of influence. See Milik, *The Books of Enoch*, p. 31; Barker, *The Older Testament*, pp. 19–20; Davies, "And Enoch was Not," p. 103, 106.

elaboration of lost oral material. It is highly likely the Torah's version was known to them, even if other versions were known as well. Since the story in *1 Enoch* adds narrative causality where there is none stated in Genesis, it is most probable that whomever created the Šemihazah myth in the *Book of Watchers* interpreted Gen 6:1–4 negatively as an explanation for the existence of demons as part of their dualistic theodicy. Such an interpretative narrative could have been inspired by a parallel story. It is worth, then, noting a parallel story which may have inspired such a reading of the Pentateuchal account.

An Avestan text, the *Zāmyād Yašt* §§80–81, records a myth of the demonic subjugation of women (and the demons' subsequent defeat by Zarathuštra). The passage is quoted below in two recent translations.

> [80]Vor (aller) Augen pflegten vor seiner Zeit die Dämonen einherzustürmen;
> Vor (aller) Augen pfleften ihre (Liebes-)Freuden stattzufinden;
> Vor (aller) Augen pflegten sie
> Die Frauen von ihren Männern wegzuschleppen;
> Dann pflegten die Dämonen diese weinenden (und) klagenden (Frauen)
> Der Gewalt zu unterwerfen.
> [81]Aber ein einziges Ahuna-Vairiia-Gebet
> Welches der wahrhafte Zarathustra zu Gehör brachte,
> Idem er es viermal in abschnitte gliederte,
> Den hinteren (Abschnitt) mit lauterem Vortrag,
> Trieb alle Dämonen hinab, so daß sie sich in der Erde verkrochen,
> Die verehrungsunwürdigen, lobesunwürdigen.[330]

> [80]Before that the *daēuuas* would run about in full view.
> (Their) pleasures would *take place in full view.
> In full view they would drag off
> The women from the humans.
> Then the *daēuuas* would by force debase
> Them, as they plaintively wept.
> [81]Then a single *Ahuna vairiia* of yours (=Ahura Mazda's),
> Which orderly Zarathustra chanted…
> Drove all the *daēuuas* underground
> Depriving them of sacrifices and hymns.[331]

This brief passage describes how Zoroaster ejected the *Daēuuas* from earth with a single recitation of the most sacred Zoroastrian formula, the so called *Ahuna Vairiia* prayer (=*Yasna* XXVII.13).[332] The detail of primary interest here is the habitual activity attributed to the *Daēuuas* while on the earth: the violation of human women. This aspect also appears in

---

[330] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 341, 344.

[331] Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "The Antiquity of Old Avestan," p. 24; See also Helmut Humbach and Pallan R. Ichapora, *Zamyād Yasht. Yasht 19 of the Younger Avesta: Text, Translation, Commentary* (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1998), pp. 54–55.

[332] This prayer is notoriously difficult to translate. A translation is available in *Zend-Avesta III*, p. 281; Humbach, et al., *Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, p. 115. Insler does not include *Yasna* 27 in his edition. Cf. Christopher J. Brunner, "Ahunwar," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 1.7 (1985): p. 683.

the version told by Moses of Khoren.[333] Hintze notes that the language of §81 inverts the traditional Indo-European epithets of the *Daēuuas* to underscore their demonic/non-Ahuranic attributes.[334] This suggests a context in which some still viewed the daevic gods as valid deities. It is interesting that illicit relations with human women are discussed in the context of the demonization of heavenly figures; this is largely the same context as the Šemihazah narrative in *1 Enoch*—not all Watchers are fallen (*1 Enoch* 20:1–8 mention the 'holy angels who watch').[335] But, contrary to the *Book of Watchers*, the purpose of the *Zāmyād Yašt* passage is not to explain the current situation as under demonic influence, but to explain why the current situation is *not* under demonic influence.

Perhaps, however, in the first Enochic version this is not so much of a difference. Chapters 12–16 describe how the flood will destroy the giants, but their spirits will proceed from them and still inflict humanity. Yet in the first version (ch. 6–11) the Watchers themselves were bound while their progeny destroyed.[336] It is afterwards that there is an admission of their continued presence on earth. The Zoroastrian material also does not deny the current presence of evil activity on the earth, though it implies that Zoroaster curtailed the brazenness of their activity. Thus the basic outline is still similar in form—divine beings ravishing human woman are defeated, but still cause havoc in the human world. The *Zāmyād* text, however, makes no mention of giants as progeny. Ultimately, while this passage cannot be used to argue direct influence, it is still suggestive: such a story could plausibly interact with the re-interpretation of Gen 6:1–4.

The Binding of Azazel (Asael) (10:4–8, 11–14; Cf. 54:1–6)

In 10:4–8 Raphael is commissioned to bind and imprison Asael until the final judgment in the unidentified place called 'the wilderness that is in Doudael (Δουδαήλ/duda'el).'[337] The Enochic author has Asael (and vv. 11–12 Šemihazah and the

---

[333] *History of Armenia* I.24, 27 (Khorenats'i, *History of the Armenians*, p. 114, 117).
[334] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 345.
[335] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 40. Cf: Excursus: On the Watchers.
[336] Cf. Reed, "Heavenly Ascent," p. 25; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 7.
[337] See the discussion in Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 215, 220–223, where he again discusses a parallel with Prometheus. For the reading 'Δουδαήλ' see p. 215. There is no extant Aramaic. Doudael could be read as the Greek rendering of דוראל ('dwelling of G-d') (On דור see Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 1849; cf. p. 217; David J.A. Clines, ed., *Dictionary of Classical Hebrew*. vol. II: ב–ו [Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995], p. 427). On דודי see Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 215), which misread the resh as a dalet, or perhaps it could be understood as a rendering of a Hebrew דודיאל ('cooking pot of G-d'), (supported by Black, *Book of Enoch*, p. 134; Michael A. Knibb, *The Ethiopic Book of Enoch*, vol. 2, p. 87, discusses various suggested interpretations, but does not decide between them) but both create difficulties for understanding their intended meaning.
Doudael could also be seen to be derived from or alluding to Hebrew דודאי, 'mandrakes.' (Clines, ed., *Dictionary II*, p. 424.) Josephus notes that the mandrake had magical associations, including exorcism (Josephus, *The Jewish*

other Watchers) confined until the eschatological judgment rather than receiving immediate judgment or destruction like the giants and wicked humanity (10:9–10, 15). The force of this rhetoric indicates an emphasis by the author on the coming judgment rather than the one ostensibly in focus in the passage (the Flood). The text describes Asael's 'binding' (δεσον, from δέω; Aramaic not extant) and imprisonment in a pit. Nickelsburg suggests that 'bind' (אסר) is a semi-technical term for exorcism.[338] This is possibly an intended connotation, but the eschatological context suggests that there could be more to the idea; Asael is not merely exorcised, but is held for future punishment. With the possible exceptions of the 'Isaian Apocalypse' and Job 7:12, this motif of *binding* until delayed punishment does not appear in the Hebrew Bible, somewhat surprisingly; typological enemies are *slain*. This is also true of the primaeval enemy *par excellence*, the dragon.

Nickelsburg parallels the binding motif with the Prometheus myth.[339] This parallel is not compelling; in addition to the general unsuitability of the parallel argued above, Prometheus's fate lacks both the permanence and the eschatological aspects of Asael's binding. Prometheus is promised hope of salvation from his punishment; indeed, Hesiod indicates that Heracles ended Prometheus's binding.[340] Further, if there is an eschatological link to the Prometheus myth at all, it is to the fall of Zeus himself (line 940), not to a future judgment of Prometheus![341] Certainly a threat to YHWH's role is not intended by the Enochic author. Prometheus is not the only available regional parallel; indeed, a better parallel presents itself. The direct link with eschatology which is so present in the myth's context in *1 Enoch* makes a parallel which also shares this concern desirable. The Iranian myth of the binding of Aži Dahāka parallels the binding, a future release to judgment, the

---

War, trans. H. St. J. Thackeray, *Josephus III: The Jewish War Books IV–VII*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1928], pp. 556–559 [VII.6.3]).

For some background on the mandrake, see: Theodor H. Gaster, *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament: a Comparative Study with Chapters from Sir James G. Frazier's Folklore in the Old Testament* (London: Duckworth, 1969), p. 200; R. K. Harrison, "The Mandrake and the Ancient World," *Evangelical Quarterly* 28.1 (1956): pp. 88–89; Raymond J. Clark, "A Note on Medea's Plant and the Mandrake," *Folklore* 79.3 (1968): pp. 227–231; Thierry Zarcone, "The Myth of the Mandrake, the 'Plant-Human'," *Diogenes* 52.3 (2005): pp. 115–129. Amitai Halevi, "Does God Have a Sense of Humor?," *Jewish Bible Quarterly* 24.3 (1996): p. 182 doubts that *duda'im* means 'mandrakes' in Song of Solomon, but does not deny the meaning in Genesis. Positing an etymology or popular etymology related to mandrakes behind Doudael offers a sarcastic pun on Asael's teachings: while Asael taught mankind forbidden knowledge, the forbidden sorcery and divination associated with him would be used against him, 'exorcising' him from the face of the earth. While 8:3 technically credits Shemihazah and Hermoni with teaching sorcery to people, 10:8 and 13:2 blames all of the illicit knowledge to Asael's agency, not just the metallurgic skills listed in 8:1. Considering the link between the name of the angel Raphael to his duties of healing in this section, (Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 221) it is reasonable to expect the name given to the site of the internment to carry similar thematic import.

[338] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 221. Cf. Johannes C. de Moor, *An Anthology of Religious Texts from Ugarit*, Nisaba 16 (Leiden: Brill, 1987), p. 177, n. 14.

[339] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 221–222.

[340] See Aeschylus, *Plays*, p. 309 (line 1025); Evelyn-White, ed., *Hesiod*, p. 117 (lines 520ff).

[341] Aeschylus, *Plays*, p. 301.

theme of violence, and the motif of illicit marriage in the Asael narrative. The myth of the bound arch-demon present here (and recurring in Revelation) is best explained by a post-exilic combination of the Ugaritic-Canaanite *Kaoskampf* motif and the Iranian legends of Aži Dahāka.

In Iran an overtly eschatological myth of a demon-dragon bound until the last days developed around the character Aži Dahāka. Persian sources locate Dahāka's prison inside Mount Damavand (*Qolleh-ye Damavand*), an inactive volcano 42 miles north-east of modern Teheran (see Figure 16). This mountain is well-known not only for being the highest mountain in the Near East, but for its volcanic fissures which leave sulphuric deposits and generate warm springs at the foot. Aži Dahāka is consistently portrayed as a monstrous dragon (*aži*),[342] although the details varied over time. *Yašt* XIX describes him as having three-mouths, three heads, six eyes, one thousand *druj*-like senses, and having been created by Angra Mainyu to destroy the good creation. Significantly, he shares the epithet 'of bad religion/conscience' (*dužḍaēna*) with Angra Mainyu in the Avesta.[343] He was later anthropomorphized into a human king (albeit it with serpents growing from each shoulder), yet Firdausī still periodically describes Dahāka as a dragon.[344] An appeal to this myth can answer several problems in Second Temple Judaism: it not only locates a source for the binding myth, but it also helps explain the rise of eschatology and the re-emergence of Canaanite myth in the post-exilic period.

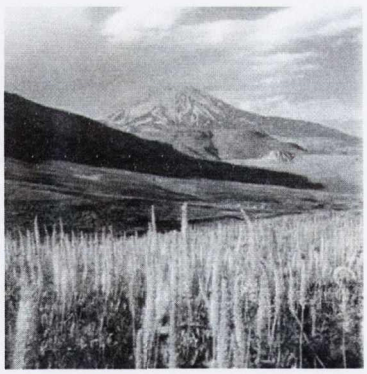


Figure 16: Mount Damavand
Public Domain

[342] Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch*, p. 266, gives "Schlange, Schlang enähnliches Untier, Drache."
[343] Louis H. Gray, "A List of the Divine and Demonic Epithets in the Avesta," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 46 (1926): p. 110.
[344] Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, Vol. 1, p. 139, 146, 155. The anthropomorphizing of Aži Dahāka predates Firdausī, however. It is evident in the demythologizing versions given by Moses of Khoren, *History of Armenia*, I.24–30 and the interlude between books I and II (Khorenats'i, *History of the Armenians*, pp. 114–121, 126–128.) Moses dates to the eighth century C.E., cf. pp. 59–60.

The defeat of a dragon or evil character is a common folk motif, and the motif of dragon combat is wide-spread in world mythology generally and in Semitic and Indo-European mythologies in particular.[345] In Biblical Studies, much has been made of the fight against the 'chaos-monster'/dragon in Ugaritic and biblical materials. Yet in these the context is creation, and the emphasis is on the destruction of the monster—the dragon (תנין, לויתן) is often described as *slain* (הרג), a description which precludes a future judgment (see Isa 51:9; Ps 74:12–17; 89:9–13; Ps 44:18–19; Ezek 29:3, 32:2; Job 26:5–14; 7:12). The Ugaritic material is very fragmented, but it appears that there were *two* combat stories: a 'recurrent' battle between Ba'al, Mot, and Yam, and a primaeval slaying of Leviathan and his dragonic compatriots by either Ba'al or Anat.[346] Both Anat and Ba'al claim to have killed Leviathan, but the Ugaritic tablets describe how Yam is held captive and how Ba'al was unable to overcome Mot.[347] With the possible exception of Isa 27:1 and Job 7:12, the biblical material appears to either characterize the dragon as killed at creation, uses it as a metaphor for historic enemies, or affirms the creature's status as part of G-d's creation.[348] This primaeval defeat is used by biblical authors as evidence of YHWH's kingship and as a guarantee that he is able to defeat the audience's current enemies as well.[349] A needed future defeat would undercut the rhetorical force of such a claim. Indeed, this usage is in contrast with Ba'al at Ugarit, who requires aid in his battles.[350]

In Indo-European tradition, the most prominent aspect of the dragon-battle is either one of primeval defeat or of the initiation of a hero.[351] This reflex is well attested in Iranian literature through all time periods, with the motif using several heroes and dragons as antagonists.[352] The most common in Iran appears to have been of Θraētaona's defeat of the monster Aži Dahāka, to which allusions are found in many Avestan passages (*Yašts* V.29–35; XIX.14; XIV.40; XV.23–25; XVII.34; XIX.37, 92; *Yasna* IX.7–11).[353] The typical allusion refers to his 'smiting' (*jan*)[354] of Aži Dahāka. Particularly interesting is the brief notice of a

---

[345] For the motif in Indo-European traditions, see Calvert Watkins, *How to Kill a Dragon: Aspects of Indo-European Poetics* (New York: Oxford Univ Press, 1995). Cf. Thompson, *Motif-Index*, vol. 1, p. 191 (A1070).

[346] Day, *God's Conflict*, pp. 12–15, 24–25; Rebecca S. Watson, *Chaos Uncreated: A Reassessment of the Theme of 'Chaos' in the Hebrew Bible*, BZAW 341 (Berlin: De Gruyter, 2005), p. 387.

[347] For Leviathan's death see de Moor, *Religious Texts from Ugarit*, p. 11, pp. 69–71; for Yam and Mot, pp. 38–42; 93–99, 131–134.

[348] E.g., Ps 93:3; Nah 1:4; Hab 3:8–9; Job 3:8; Job 41:1–34; Ps 77:17–21; Dan 7. See Day, *God's Conflict*, p. 22, 39–40, 72–75; Watson, *Chaos Uncreated*, p. 389, 392.

[349] Day, *God's Conflict*, p. 22.

[350] Cf. de Moor, *Religious Texts from Ugarit*, pp. 95–99; 131–134.

[351] Watkins, *How to Kill a Dragon*, p. 303.

[352] Cf: Mehri Bagheri, "Prince Mohammad, Fereydun, Thraētaona, and Trita Āptya: Themes and Connections in Persian Narratives," *Folklore* 112.2 (2001): pp. 199–201.

[353] See *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 60–62, 113, 242, 254–255, 277, 294, 307; *Zend-Avesta, III*, pp. 233–234. Wikander, *Vayu*, pp. 163–171, however, saw competing eastern and western dragon-slaying heroes.

[354] Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch*, p. 605, for the forms *jatay, jaidyai, jantay*.

myth of Aži Dahāka's illicit marriage, which does not occur in the other Indo-European versions of the motif.[355] In *Yašts* IX.14, V.34, XV.24, and XVII.34 Θraētaona prays to a deity to help him free the two women from the dragon's control;[356] the motif of the women, however, is not further elaborated in the Avesta.

This (past) reflex of the Θraētaona/ Dahāka myth stands solidly in Indo-European tradition and parallels the Babylonian and Ugaritic primaeval conflicts, but it is not the only interpretation available in the sources. The Pahlavi works mention the myth that while Θraētaona *defeated* Dahāka, he was unable to *kill* him due to the defilement of the earth caused thereby. Instead, Θraētaona imprisoned the monster. This is recounted in the *Dēnkard, Book IX*, a late Pahlavi text which purports to summarize the contents of (now) lost Avestan books.[357] Further, the *Dēnkard* recounts that at the eschaton Aži Dahāka will be released upon the earth and the slumbering hero Kərəsāspa will be awakened to finally kill him.[358] The *Bundahišn*, the *Mēnōg-ī Xrad*, and the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* also attest the story of Θraētaona's temporary binding of Aži Dahāka to a mountain and Kərəsāspa's final victory over him at the end of history (at *Frašōkərəti*, i.e., the *eschaton*).[359] These Pahlavi texts are late, but there are hints that this interpretation is significantly older than the Pahlavi documents. *Yašt* XIII.61 (ca. 800–400 B.C.E.)[360] records that Kərəsāspa is asleep and watched over by the *frauuašīs*, implying his later reawakening.[361] Kərəsāspa's association with dragon-slaying is well-attested in the Avesta, although in connection with dragons other than Aži Dahāka.[362] This indicates an antiquity for the sleeping hero motif, but not for the victim itself. Skjærvø suggests that the bound-until-the-*eschaton*-monster may be of Indo-European antiquity due to the similarity with the Fenris-wolf myth in Scandinavia, although other scholars see independent parallel developments.[363] The important question is the dating of the alteration from slaying to temporary binding: does it date prior to *1 Enoch*? Hintze suggests that the

---

[355] Watkins, *How to Kill a Dragon*, pp. 464–468, where the illicit marriage replaces stolen cattle.

[356] The *Aban*, *Goš*, *Ram*, and *Aši Yašt*s, respectively. See *The Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 61–2, 113, 254–255, 277.

[357] *Dēnkard* IX.21.8–11 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, p. 214).

[358] *Dēnkard* IX.15.2 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, pp. 198–99).

[359] In Pahlavi, Θraētaona is known as Fredun, Kərəsāspa as Sam or Garshasp, and Aži Dahāka as Bewarasp. See *Indian Bundahišn* XII.31 and XXIX.9 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 40, 119; *Greater Bundahišn* XXIX.7–9 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, p. 255); *Mēnōg-ī Xrad* XXVII.38–39 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 61); *Zand-ī Bahman Yašt* III.54–62; IX.14–22 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 233–235; Anklesaria, *Zand-ī Vohûman Yasn*, pp. 115, 127–128). Cf. Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, pp. 135–140, 145–173. Cf: Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 103; Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 420–421.

[360] William W. Malandra, *The Fravaši Yašt: Introduction, Text, Translation and Commentary* (London: University Microfilms Intl, 1977), pp. 1–7 seems to imply a later Achaemenid date for the *yašt*, but remains uncommittal; Skjærvø, "Avestan Quotations," p. 7.

[361] *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 194–195; Prods Oktor Skjærvø, "Aždahā I: in Old and Middle Iranian," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 196.

[362] See *Yasna* 9:7–11 (*Zend-Avesta, III*, pp. 233–234) and references cited above.

[363] Skjærvø, "Aždahā I: in Old and Middle Iranian," p. 191; Steven O'Brien, "Indo-European Eschatology: A Model," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 4 (1976): p. 297; Ström, "Indogermanisches in der Völuspá," pp. 189–191, 195–196; for the parallel texts see Dronke, *Mythological Poems*, pp. 16, 18, 19–20 (§§34, 43, 45–46).

use of the epithet *vərəθra-ja-* (used of the weapon with which Θraētaona killed Aži Dahāka) for the *Saošiiant* (the eschatological savior) in *Yašt* XIX already implies a conscious eschatologization of the hero myth, here associated with the *saošiiant* rather than Kərəsaspa.[364] If this is true, it would date the motif to the seventh or sixth centuries B.C.E. The 'new' aspect to the Pahlavi descriptions, then, would not be the interim binding of the dragon, but rather Kərəsāspa's role as the slayer. As Hintze notes, *Yašt* XIX fuses the Indo-European heroic tradition with Zoroastrian religious traditions of the eschatological savior.[365] The eschatological extension of the dragon slain by the hero was a natural development from there.

There are further indications that this dating is correct. One uncertain hint is the festival of **Miθrakana*. In Islamic times, the festival of **Miθrakana* celebrated the binding of Aži Dahāka.[366] The same festival was celebrated in the Achaemenid period, although the sources do not indicate clearly what kind of festival it was nor whether it was already associated with the defeat of Dahāka. If Krasnowolska is correct in linking the festival with an ideal type of kingship, then a link with Θraētaona is certainly possible.[367] Further, the use of the motif of Kərəsāspa and Dahāka in the *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn*—almost certainly originally a reaction to the fall of the Achaemenid Empire (even though the extant redaction is very late)[368]—suggests the altered myth predated Alexander. The myth is also hinted at in the *Aogəmadaēca* §§100–101, again implying an Achaemenid dating.[369] Thus, it seems likely that the bound and to-be-killed monster motif dates to the latter Achaemenid period at the latest, though the identification of his slayer with Kərəsāspa came later. The myth itself certainly predates the era of *1 Enoch*.

The motif's extensive representation and linkage with eschatology make it an important aspect of Iranian religious tradition, and it fits organically into the overall belief structure. The arch-villain of created creatures is left to await his judgment at the one which

---

[364] Almut Hintze, "The Saviour and the Dragon in Iranian and Jewish/Christian Eschatology," *Irano-Judaica IV*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999), pp. 77–78; Almut Hintze, "The Rise of the Saviour in the Avesta," *Iran und Turfan: Beiträge Berliner Wissenschaftler. Werner Sundermann zum 60. Geburtstag gewidmet*, eds. Christiane Reck and Peter Zieme, Iranica 2 (Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1995), pp. 93–94.

[365] Hintze, "Rise of the Saviour," pp. 93–94; Hintze, "The Saviour and the Dragon," p. 78.

[366] Al-Biruni, *Chronology of Ancient Nations*, p. 209; Boyce, "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism," p. 26, n. 82; Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 371–377, makes no mention of the link with Dahāka, only to the Greek's association of the Achaemenid festival with wine-drinking. See also Dj. Khaleghi-Motlagh, "Aždahā II: In Persian Literature," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 201.

[367] Anna Krasnowolska, "Some Heroes of Iranian Calendar Mythology," *Proceedings of the Second European Conference of Iranian Studies (Bamburg, 30 September–4 October, 1991)*, eds. Bert G. Fragner, et al. (Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1995), pp. 371–382.

[368] Cf. The discussion of this in the Daniel section above. Eddy, *The King is Dead*, pp. 26–32; see the references in Hultgård, "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse," p. 119; Chapter IVa.

[369] Jamasp Asa, *Aogəmadaēcā*, §§100–101 (p. 85).

will befall all of Angra Mainyu's creations—the same time when Ahura Mazda is finally able to overcome his enemies once and for all. This 'suspended' defeat does not sit well with pre-exilic Israelite ideas. Day argues that the conflict myth is—in both the Hebrew Bible and Ugarit—intimately intertwined with the enthronement of the chiefly worshipped deity (YHWH or Ba'al, respectively).[370] If Day is correct about the enthronement context in the Hebrew Bible, then the image must be understood as slaying; the dragon's temporary binding would imply that YHWH's kingship was also only temporary, or at least could be imperilled (indeed, Ba'al's reign was). That is certainly unacceptable in a monotheistic context. It is also foreign to the so-called Deuteronomistic historical-theology which sees G-d's workings happening within history, rather than deferred into a post-historical time.[371] Indeed, the idea of a binding-until-future-judgment practically requires an eschatology to merely make sense. It would be reasonable, however, for the motif to be borrowed with or formed following the development of the accompanying eschatology.

Nevertheless, the parallel between Asael and Dahāka faces a difficulty: the *Book of Watchers* does not describe Asael as a dragon—rather, he is called a 'Watcher' (עיר, ἐγρήγορος), a term first appearing in the *Book of Watchers* and Daniel. The origin and associations of this term are obscure.[372] Although another heavenly creature, the 'seraph,' has serpentine associations, it is unlikely that 'watcher' carried the same associations.[373] However, both the characters of Asael and Aži do have two common traits: supernatural origin and association with blood-thirst. Aži Dahāka is noted for his desire to eliminate all humankind. In *Yašt* V.29–31 and *Yašt* XV.19–21, he is depicted praying to gods for the

---

[370] Day, *God's Conflict*, pp. 18–38.

[371] Convenient overviews of problems in the Deuteronomistic history are given by A. D. H. Mayes, "Deuteronomistic Ideology and the Theology of the Old Testament," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 82.1 (1999): pp. 57–82 and A. D. H. Mayes, "Historiography in the Old Testament," *The Biblical World*, ed. John Barton, vol. 1 (London: Routledge, 2002), pp. 65–87, although he does not directly broach this aspect. This characterization still holds true even if the Noll's rejection of the Deuteronomistic history is accepted; K. L. Noll, "Deuteronomistic History or Deuteronomic Debate? (A Thought Experiment)," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 31.3 (2007): pp. 311–345, particularly Thesis 1 (despite its pan-Persianism).

[372] See the Excursus: On the Watchers. Cf. the various suggestions in Black, *Book of Enoch*, pp. 106–107; Montgomery, *Book of Daniel*, p. 232; Collins, *Daniel*, pp. 224–226; Davidson, *Angels at Qumran*, pp. 38–39, who notes their appearance, but does not give an origin; neither does Wright, *Origin of Evil Spirits*, pp. 20–21.

[373] It may be worth noting, however, that the word 'dragon' in Greek (δράκον) was possibly derived from the word δέρκομαι, 'to see clearly,' (Liddell and Scott, *GEL*, p. 448, 379; Carol Rose, *Giants, Monsters, and Dragons* (Santa Barbara, CA: ABC-CLIO, 2000), p. 104) even though the Greek translators of *the Book of Watchers* used ἐγρήγορος to translate 'Watchers.' Perhaps the author's monstrous allusions are the referent of the mysterious usage of Behemoth in 60:8, who is also thrown into Doudael. The text of the *Parables* is corrupt, however, and may originally be from a lost Noahic work. Cf: the discussion by Black, *Book of Enoch*, p. 227, 56; see a slightly different translation in Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 76. This is not say the fabled *Book of Noah*, *per se* (for a critique of the *Book of Noah* thesis, see Devorah Dimant, "Two 'Scientific' Fictions: The So-Called *Book of Noah* and the Alleged Quotation of *Jubilees* in CD 16:3–4," *Studies in the Hebrew Bible, Qumran, and the Septuagint Presented to Eugene Ulrich*, eds. Peter W. Flint, et al. (Leiden: Brill, 2006), pp. 231–242).

ability to clear the entire earth of inhabitants.[374] After Dahāka's transformation into an (Arab) usurper king, the *Shahnameh* still describes the blood-thirstiness of the serpents which grew from Aži's shoulders;[375] Firdausi actually links the blood-thirst of the serpents with Ahriman's scheme to destroy humanity.[376] Asael is also associated with a critique of violence. Asael is blamed for teaching 'swords of iron' and 'every instrument of war' (8:1), both obviously linked with violence.[377] The result of all of the Watchers' teachings combined caused men to perish (8:4, 9:1); further, their progeny also caused war and bloodshed (7:3–6;8:4, 9:9c). The critique of violence was certainly associated with Asael, even if it was not the most important aspect of his narrative.[378] Violence is certainly prominent enough to see it as a significant parallel with the character of Dahāka.

Dahāka's monstrous/demonic qualities and his blood-thirstiness combined with his abduction of beautiful human women (see above) is certainly suggestive in the Asael context—the *Book of Watchers* is also concerned with illicit marriage and monstrous, numinous creatures.[379] Even though the motif of the illicit marriage is connected with the Šemihazah layer and drawn from Gen 6, it helps to explain why an Iranian myth would be useful for combining the Asael story with the Šemihazah material. A bood-thirsty, woman-defiling demon bound until the final judgment certainly resonates with the *Book of Watchers*'s interests. In this light, it may be more useful to discuss sources of 'inspiration' or 'influence' rather than source documents. As Collins notes, perhaps the inconsistencies noted by scholars in the *Book of Watchers* are due less to different documents badly redacted together than to a different literate mindset.[380] If one speaks of 'inspiration' rather than source documents, the possibility arises that the Asael material could well have been more instrumental in the initial compiling of the story than is sometimes considered. Perhaps it was an Asael-like story which inspired the scribe to write the *Book of Watchers* in the first place.

Hintze discusses the motif of the bound dragon in Zoroastrian and Jewish texts, including the passage in *1 Enoch* 54:1–6.[381] In her opinion, this motif in Judaism was adopted from the old chaos myth motif under the influence of the Iranian model. Thus, the

---

[374] *Zend-Avesta II*, pp. 60–61, 253–254.
[375] Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, pp. 138–139; Cf. p. 163.
[376] Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, p. 139.
[377] Further, metallurgy is linked to violence by Josephus; Josephus, *Jewish Antiquities, Jewish Antiquities I–III*, ed. H. St. J. Thackeray, LCL ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998), p. 31 (I.64).
[378] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 190–194; Cf. p. 51, who sees it as an important aspect of the tradition; Carol A. Newsom, "The Development of *1 Enoch* 6–19: Cosmology and Judgment," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 42.3 (1980): p. 313; Alexander, "Enochic Literature and the Bible," p. 63.
[379] Cf. the similar opinions of the similarities in Geo Widengren, "Iran and Israel in Parthian Times with Special Regard to the Ethiopic Book of Enoch," *Temenos* 2 (1966): p. 172 and Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, p. 421.
[380] Collins, "Methodological Issues," p. 316.
[381] Hintze, "The Saviour and the Dragon," pp. 72–90.

eschatologization of the Ugaritic conflict-kingship motif (and indeed its rise) can be explained through an Iranian backdrop. The Ugaritic myth resurfaces in the post-exilic (Persian) period because the themes associated with the parallel myth in the Persian setting—eschatology, dualism, coming judgment and resurrection—gave them new meaning and relevance. While the polytheistic motif of a warrior god's ascent to kingship loses its vitality in monotheism, the eschatology of dualism returns the motif to prominence *on the behalf of* the deity, i.e., the *messiah* or *saošiiant* brings victory on behalf of the increasingly transcendent deity. The Persian parallel, then, does not deny the relevance or importance of the Ugaritic-Canaanite parallels, but it provides a logical catalyst for their resurgence and re-adoption in post-exilic Judaism.[382] Motifs associated with gods like Ba'al were able to be reused in a new monotheistic and future-oriented perspective without threating YHWH's kingship.[383]

It has been noted that the role of the Messiah in Jewish apocalyptic literature takes over much from the divine warrior traditions of the Hebrew Bible and Ancient Near East.[384] In so doing, motifs from the older religious traditions—quite possibly associated with other deities[385]—were reinterpreted. It is suggested here that the adoption of aspects of the structurally-intertwined matrix of the Iranian system helped make such reinterpretation attractive and useful for the Second Temple scribe. The Asael narrative is one example of detailed parallels between Judaean works and Iranian myths. The parallels are at least as striking as the ones with the Prometheus myth, but they have a greater structural affinity to the Enochic work as a whole.

Whether one accepts the Asael material as original or as secondary, it cannot be denied that it was extremely important for the formation of the *1 Enoch* corpus as it is currently known. Even if Šemihazah was the 'original villain' in the tradition, Asael eventually usurps that role, becoming a kind of embodiment of evil.[386] While part of the origin of the *Book of Watchers* comes from traditions associated with Gen 6, the analyses above suggest that certain aspects of the Asael material for which the biblical verses cannot account—the motif of forbidden, cultural instruction (negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos*) and the temporary, eschatological binding—are at least partially due to Iranian inspiration. If one credits the responsible scribe(s) with a 'persophilic' hermeneutic, the *Book of Watchers*'s differences with Genesis become much more understandable.

---

382 On a post-exilic resurgence, see Watson, *Chaos Uncreated*, p. 394.
383 For a revised Ba'al imagery, see John Day, *Yahweh and the Gods and Goddesses of Canaan*, JSOTSS 265 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000), pp. 116–127.
384 Frank Moore Cross, *Canaanite Myth and Hebrew Epic: Essays in the History of the Religion of Israel* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1973), pp. 91–111.
385 Cf. the suggestion in Watson, *Chaos Uncreated*, p. 395.
386 Black, "Twenty Angel Dekadarchs," p. 232.

A comparison of the various motifs associated with Asael directly or indirectly in the *Book of Watchers* with the Iranian traditions of the *Kulturentstehungsmythos*—associated with either Yima or Mašya and Mašyānag—and the myth of Aži Dahāka's imprisonment until the *eschaton* offers several useful insights. It offers an explanation for why the much older Ugaritic-Canaanite myths make a reappearance after the exile; it offers sources for the important Asael layer in the book; and, perhaps most importantly, it points to the potential importance of a new hermeneutic which developed in Second Temple Judaism.

Book of Parables/Book of Similitudes (37–71)

The dating of the *Book of Parables* is controversial since it was the only major section of the Ethiopic *Book of Enoch* not to have any identified Aramaic fragments at Qumran.[387] With no physical evidence for dating, it is difficult to determine whether this lack is due to the book's lateness, separate provenance, or the vagaries of survival. While the work probably dates later than the other Enochic books since it assumes the *Book of Watchers*, the identification of the Son of Man with Enoch (71:14) and similarities with the Gospels seem to require a pre-Christian date, contra Milik's argument for a very late date.[388] *Parables* is understood here to be a pre-Christian, Jewish work later than the remainder of the Enochic corpus, though Charles's attempt to place the *Parables* between 94–76 B.C.E. is too precise for the available evidence.[389] The work is important for understanding the context of the theology and ideas of the early Jesus Movement.

The *Book of Parables* contains many intriguing details of varying importance, many of which could be analyzed for the relevance of Iranian ideas. Only one—the motif of the weighing of souls—is discussed here; other ideas are reserved for future study.

---

[387] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 9; Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 4.

[388] Cf. the evaluation of Milik's arguments in Michael A. Knibb, "The Date of the Parables of Enoch: A Critical Review," *New Testament Studies* 25 (1979): pp. 345–350; Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, pp. 177–178; James C. VanderKam, "Some Major Issues in the Contemporary Study of 1 Enoch," *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature* (Leiden: Brill, 2000), pp. 354–365. For more recent discussions see the debate in Gabriele Boccaccini, ed., *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007), pp. 263–298, 415–498. While the present author is sympathetic to the idea of 'intellectual paradigms,' he is less so of using them to contruct block dating.

[389] Charles, *The Book of Enoch*, p. 67. Christopher L. Mearns, "Dating the Similitudes of Enoch," *New Testament Studies* 25 (1979): p. 369 dates it to the 40s C.E. For more recent discussions of the dating of the *Parables*, see Knibb, "Date of the Parables," pp. 345–359; Matthew Black, "The Messianism of the Parables of Enoch: Their Date and Contribution to Christological Origins," *The Messiah: Developments in Earliest Judaism and Christianity*, ed. James H Charlesworth (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1992), pp. 145–168; and Boccaccini, ed., *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man*, part Six.

Weighing of Souls

The image of human souls being weighed for judgment appears twice in the *Book of Parables* (41:1, 61:8), in neither case elaborated.[390] This image appears once in the sapiential tradition of the Hebrew Bible. In Job 31:6 Job asks for his righteousness to be weighed (שקל) by G-d. It also occurs in Daniel (Dan 5:27): Belshazzar's vision weighs him (תקל) and finds him delinquent. The misuse of weights is condemned and occurs often in the prophets as an indicator of justice (Deut 25:13–16; Prov 11:1, 20:23; Hos 12:7; Amos 8:5; Mic 6:11), but it is not applied directly to the judgment of people. Only in Daniel is this image used as a prerequisite or synonym for G-d's judgment of the wicked, and the influence of Daniel on the *Similitudes* is hard to determine.[391] Some translations read a reference to weighing in the closely parallel verses of Prov 16:2, 21:2 and 24:12,[392] but the word used in each of these verses is תכן, which BDB gives as 'regulate, measure, estimate' and Koehler-Baumgartener as 'examine, check.'[393] The latter further note that the root is cognate with תקן, 'to make straight.'[394] That the latter may be a better way to read the word is supported by the reading of the LXX for 21:2, Κατευθύνει δὲ καρδίας κύριος, "but the Lord directs/straightens the heart."[395] The Targum to Proverbs translates 16:2 as "sets ways in order" and 21:2 as "sets hearts aright," suggesting that this is the better way to translate the verses, and that no mention of 'weighing' is intended.[396] Thus the verses in Job and Dan are the only clear references in the Hebrew Bible.[397]

---

[390] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 55, 78.

[391] Collins does not consider the mutual influence between the two works to be very likely. Cf. Collins, *Daniel*, p. 59; However, James C. VanderKam, "Biblical Interpretation in 1 Enoch and Jubilees," *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature* (Leiden: Brill, 2000), p. 296, does see it as likely.

[392] The NRSV translates 16:2b and 21:2b as "but the Lord weighs the spirit" and "but the Lord weighs the heart" respectively. R. B. Y. Scott, *Proverbs, Ecclesiastes: Introduction, Translation, and Notes*, Anchor Bible 18 (New York: Doubleday, 1965), p. 106, translates 16:2 as "weighs the heart," and parallels the phrase with Egypt, but also claims it is used here of "judgment in this life."

[393] Brown, et al., *BDB*, p. 1067; Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 1733.

[394] Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, p. 1784

[395] William F. Arndt and F. Wilbur Gingrich, *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and Other Early Christian Literature*, A translation and adaptation of Walter Bauer's *Griechisch-Deutsches Wörterbuch zu den Schriften des Neuen Testaments und der übrigen urchristlichen Literatur*, 4th Ed. (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1957), p. 423, gives 'make straight, lead, direct' for κατευθυνω. The LXX for chapter 16 is highly defective as a whole, and verse 2 barely resembles the MT.

[396] John F. Healey, *The Targums of Proverbs*, The Aramaic Bible (Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1991), p. 38, 46. On p. 9 he notes that the places where the Targum agrees with the LXX may indicate a different Hebrew vorlage; but in this case, it is more a matter of the translation of the word. A. Kaminka, "Septuaginta und Targum zu Proverbia," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 8-9 (1931-1932): pp. 169–191 does not list either 16:2 or 21:2 as diverging from the MT.

[397] Contra Charles, *The Book of Enoch*, p. 79.

Considering the sapiential influences on *1 Enoch* in general and the *Book of Parables* in particular,[398] one could argue that the idea was taken from the brief mention in Job.[399] The question remains how such a brief mention, however, would be brought into prominence (particularly in the later *Testament of Abraham*).[400] It will be suggested here that this motif was selected out of sapiential tradition under the inspiration of the Zoroastrian preoccupation with the balancing of deeds.[401]

The eschatological weighing of the deeds of mankind holds a fundamental centrality in the Zoroastrian system that is traced to the *Gāthās*. This poetic-ethical idea was later expanded and taken to its logical conclusions by scholar-priests, but it retained its original relevance to Zoroastrian thought.[402] Already in the *Gāthās* a three-fold division of people can be found, between the 'truthful,' the 'deceitful,' and the 'indifferent.'[403] The most prominent image of judgment in the *Gāthās* is the one of the Bridge of Judgment or Separation, over which souls must travel to heaven or fall to hell; the hymns repeatedly hint at the motif of this individual judgment which precedes the final, eschatological one.[404] The individual judgment is often overseen by either the *yazata* of truth, *Rašnu* ('judge'), or the trio *Miθra*, *Sraoša*, and *Rašnu*.[405] *Rašnu* balances the actions, words, and thoughts of the deceased within a hair's breadth, sending the person to the appropriate destination.[406] That *Rašnu* was especially associated with judgment can be seen in the fact that the *Yašt* dedicated to *Rašnu* invokes him to come witness an ordeal.[407] The cult of *Rašnu* was known in Achaemenid Persia, which is demonstrated by the occurrence of his name in the onomastica found at Persepolis and Egypt.[408] Later, the *Ardā Virāz Nāmag* refers to *Rašnu* as the one with 'the yellow golden

---

[398] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 60; Gerhard von Rad, *Old Testament Theology*, trans. D. M. G. Stalker, Study ed., 2 vols. (London: SCM, 1975) Vol. 2, pp. 301–315; Cf. Nickelsburg and Wright in Gabriele Boccaccini and John J. Collins, eds., *The Early Enoch Literature*. JSJS 121 (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 81–94, 159–176, respectively.

[399] While the dating of Job is notorious, it certainly predates the *Parables*, see Norman C. Habel, *The Book of Job: A Commentary*, The Old Testament Library (Philadelphia: Westminster John Knox, 1985), pp. 40–42.

[400] See Charlesworth, ed., *OTP*, pp. 889–891 of E. P. Sander's translation (Recension A). The parallel passages in Recension B do not make use of the image (§§8–11, pp. 899–900).

[401] Already suggested by Hinnells, *Zoroastrian and Parsi Studies*, p. 78.

[402] Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 236–241.

[403] *Yasna* XXXIII.1 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 51).

[404] On the Bridge, see *Yasna* XLVI.10–11, 51.13. For various allusions, see XXXI.3, 13, 20, XLV.7, XLIX.10–11 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 37, 41, 43, 51, 77, 97; in H. Humbach, et al., *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra* vol. 1, pp. 126–127, 129, 131, 165, 182, the allusions are less obvious.)

[405] Cf. *Mihr Yašt* 42–43, 100, 126 (Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 95, 123, 135). On the close connections between *Sraoša*, *Rašnu* and *Miθra*, see Zaehner, *Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 111–113.

[406] See *Minokhirad* 119–121 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 18).

[407] *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 168.

[408] Bezalel Porten, "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), p. 184; Richard T. Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, Oriental Institute Publications 92 (Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1969), in theophoric names: PF335, PF1509, PF1956, PF2003 (p, 150, 423, 500–1, 605); *Rašnu* also occurs in a place name (Rašnumattiš), PF 1956 (p. 562); Cf. comments in Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 59, 241; Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 142.

balance' who sends people to limbo/purgatory.[409] Although *Ardā Virāz* is a late text, the idea of the threefold division of souls (righteous, wicked, and 'indifferent,' as implied by the existence of a limbo) is a Gathic idea, mentioned in *Yasna* XXXIII.1,[410] even though the Gathic support for a 'purgatory' *per se* appears to be about as elusive as it is in the Judeo-Christian tradition.[411] Boyce suggests that the Gathic verse *Yasna* XLVIII.4 refers to a 'separate place' for the 'indifferent,'[412] but in Insler's translation the text does not clearly refer to three places at all.[413] However, the term *Misvan Gātu*—denoting a place for the 'indifferent'—does appear in the Young Avesta (*Vidēvdāt* 19:36),[414] making its currency by the end of the Achaemenid period most likely. The idea was definitely developed further by the time of the redaction of the *Bundahišn*, however.[415]

It is not only Zoroastrian religious tradition which displays this preoccupation with balance; indeed, it has even been claimed that Achaemenid jurisprudence closely parallels the conception of justice as the totality of life.[416] Herodotus relates a story of Darius I's justice which appears to support this. After crucifying a judge for accepting a bribe, Darius discovered that the man's "good services to the royal house were more than his offenses," and Darius had the man removed from the cross.[417] While this story may be dubious historically, it is adequately illustrative of jurisprudence as the balancing of good and bad deeds *in toto*, rather than individual deeds or conversion experiences. Diodorus also offers a story which supports this conception. When Artaxerxes examines three judges' reasoning for the acquittal of Tiribazus, the second judge replies that Tiribazus's benefactions outweighed the accusations against him. This reply seems to have pleased the king.[418] Claims to justice do appear in the Old Persian inscriptions, at least those of Darius (DB I.20–

---

[409] Fereydun Vahman, *'Arda Wiraz Namag': The Iranian 'Divina Commedia'*, Scandinavian Institute of Asian Studies (London: Curzon, 1986), pp. 195–196.

[410] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 51.

[411] I.e. the later debates and developments around 2 Macc 12:38–45, which in no way mentions a 'purgatory' but was later taken to imply one.

[412] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 237.

[413] Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 91. However, Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin, *The Hymns of Zarathustra: Being a translation of the Gâthâs together with introduction and commentary*, trans. M. Henning, Wisdom of the East (London: Murray, 1992), pp. 34–35 sees a mention of a separate place both in his notes and in his translation. Humbach, et al., *Gāthās of Zarathushtra*, vol. 1, p. 136 does mention a threefold division, but sees no separate place on p. 177.

[414] Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 237, citing Bartholomae, *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch*, pp. 1186–1187. Bartholomae cites three references, but the present author could only trace *Vidēvdāt* XIX.36 as actually mentioning *misvan gātu*, which Darmesteter glossed as 'all of heaven.' (*Zend-Avesta I*, p. 215); however, Shaul Shaked, "Eschatology I: In Zoroastrianism and Zoroastrian Influence," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 8 (1998): pp. 565–569, http://www.iranica.com/newsite>, accepts the reference.

[415] *Greater Bundahišn* XXX.32–33 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 262–263).

[416] Moulton, *Early Zoroastrianism*, p. 170.

[417] Book VII.194 (Herodotus, *Wars V–VII*, p. 511).

[418] XV.11 (Diodorus Siculus, *Library of History*, trans. C. H. Oldfather, *Diodorus of Sicily VI*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1954], pp. 352–354); Cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 317.

24, IV.61–67, DNb 5–11),[419] but these inscriptions vary little from the stereotypical language of royal ideology in this regard. The idea of balance may have been merely a juridical ideal among the Iranians, however, as it is certainly true that all justice ultimately depended on the king's grace.[420]

The strict application of justice fits well into an Iranian context, but it does not fit so snugly into the Jewish system (e.g., Ezek 3:16–21). While YHWH was a god of justice, Judaism did not tend to picture him as a strict, balancing judge like *Rašnu*. Indeed, there is a strong tradition stretching through the rabbinic writings which emphasize the necessity of mercy for the existence of justice itself,[421] and mercy is by definition not strict. It is quite possible, however, under the influence of the Zoroastrian-Persian preoccupation with balance that the verse in Job was selected out and utilized in the *Book of Parables* as the symbol of the individual judgment.

The image of a divine scale-holder is not limited to Iran; it also occurs in Egypt. The *Book of the Dead* depicts the hearts of the dead being weighed against *Ma'at*, to determine whether or not they are worthy of eternal life,[422] and an Egyptian background is typically conceded for parts of Proverbs.[423] The basic idea is the same in the Persian and Egyptian systems, but the emphasis is slightly different. In the Iranian version, the person's good actions, words, and thoughts are weighed against his or her own bad actions, words and thoughts; in the Egyptian version, the person's heart is weighed against *Ma'at*. Although either could have in theory served as a catalyst towards the choice of the scales-image, the Persian version is technically closer in terminology—in both *1 Enoch* 41:1 and 61:8 it is the *deeds*[424] rather than the hearts of humanity which are weighed. For this particular detail, then,

---

[419] For the texts, see Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 119, 132, 140. Kent's translation of "Ordinance of Good Regulations" in DNb 3–5 appears to be a poor translation for *ubānām hadugām āxšnavaiy*, "until I have heard both of them." Cf. Hassan R. Baghbidi, "Darius and the Bisotun Inscription: a New Interpretation of the Last Paragraph of Column IV," *Journal of Persianate Studies* 2.1 (2009): p. 58; Maria Brosius, *The Persian Empire from Cyrus II to Artaxerxes I* (London: Classical Teachers Association, 2000), p. 64.

[420] Cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 129–130, 302–304.

[421] For a basic overview, see Jacob Neusner, *The Theology of the Oral Torah: Revealing the Justice of God* (Montreal: McGill-Queen's Univ Press, 1999), pp. 61–63, 324–326, but note the counter-tendencies also present in legalistic interpretations in Eliezer Segal, "Justice, Mercy and a Bird's Nest," *Journal of Jewish Studies* 42.2 (1991): 176–195. For a modern legal perspective on the issue, see Samuel J. Levine, "Looking Beyond the Mercy/Justice Dichotomy: Reflections on the Complementary Roles of Mercy and Justice in Jewish Law and Tradition," *Journal of Catholic Legal Studies* 45 (2006): pp. 455–472.

[422] See Stephen G. J. Quirke, "Judgment of the Dead," *The Ancient Gods Speak: A Guide to Egyptian Religion*, ed. Donald B. Redford (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2002), pp. 173–177; David P. Silverman, "Divinity and Deities in Ancient Egypt," *Religion in Ancient Egypt: Gods, Myths, and Personal Practice*, ed. Byron E. Shafer (London: Routledge, 1991), pp. 48–49, with fig. 32 on p. 51; Cf. A. Rosalie David, *The Ancient Egyptians: Religious Beliefs and Practices* (London: Kegan Paul, 1982), p. 111, where he describes the heart as weighed against a feather of Thoth.

[423] R.N. Whybray, *The Book of Proverbs*, Cambridge Bible Commentary (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1972), p. 3.

[424] No Greek or Aramaic versions of the *Book of Parables* have yet been found, so the original word has been left out here. See Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 15.

the closest parallel is Persian, and it represents an example of influence by the selection of pre-existing ideas.

Conclusion for Book of Parables

It is unfortunate that the provenance and dating of the *Parables* is so uncertain, but the detail of the weighing of souls offers another example where the re-interpretation and selection of Judaean material could have been in dialogue with Iranian ideas. This particular detail did not have a particularly distinguished afterlife in Judeo-Christian traditions, but it may serve as an indication that further research into the *Similitudes* could prove fruitful.

Astronomical Book/ Book of Luminaries (72–82)

The *Astronomical Book*, also called the *Book of Luminaries*, is often considered among the oldest of the *1 Enoch* corpus, perhaps dating to the Persian Period.[425] Considered on its own, the *Book of Luminaries* may not strictly be an apocalypse, but the worldview it evidences is significant for the remainder of the 1 Enochic corpus and is foundational to the understanding of the remainder.[426] Indeed, the matrix of ideas and influences evidenced in the *Astronomical Book* is suggestive of those which influenced the Enochic scribes in general.

The *Book of Luminaries* contains two enigmatic details—the concept of astronomical solar 'gates' and the mythical geography of chapter 77. Although the document is highly indebted to Mesopotamian traditions, it is argued here that the direct source of these two details can be best explained as mediated by an Iranian source. The ultimate Mesopotamian origin of the astronomy cannot be gainsayed, but the exact formulations found in the extant book may be shaped by intermediate Iranian hands.[427]

Solar Gates

The treatise describes a series of twelve gates, six on the east and six on the west, through which the sun and moon enter and exit in their daily motions (72–73, 75),

---

[425] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 7, 25; Otto Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters of the Ethiopic Book of Enoch (72 to 82): Translation and Commentary*, KDKSMM 40 (Copenhagen: Munksgaard, 1981), p. 3, considers the ideas to be old, if not the form as is currently extant. Cf. Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, pp. 31–32. However, Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, p. 44, doubts it predates the Hellenistic period; F. García Martínez, *Qumran and Apocalyptic: studies on the Aramaic texts from Qumran*, Studies on the texts of the desert of Judah, v. 9 (Leiden: Brill, 1992), p. 58; Cf: Charlesworth, "A Rare Consensus," pp. 231–234.

[426] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 31; Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 3; Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, p. 73, is non-committal on this issue; VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, p. 70 (for the person of Enoch); Matthias Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube: Untersuchungen zum astronomischen Henochbuch*, Wissenschaftliche Monographien zum Alten und Neuen Testament 68 (Neukirchen: Neukirchener Verlag, 1994), pp. 130–132.

[427] This section benefited from Helen R. Jacobus (University of Manchester) discussing the Babylonian aspects of *the Astronomical Book* and highlighting several useful resources.

accounting for the variation in day-length. As Neugebauer notes, the linear scheme given to the variation in the ratio of day to night ('linear zigzag function') is most likely of Babylonian origin.[428] The detail of the 'gates' to which the text gives so much attention is paralleled in the cosmologies of Babylonia, although there related to the Zodiak.[429] This detail is also paralleled in the Iranian cosmological collection, the *Bundahišn*. It seems likely—in view of the similarities with the Iranian material—that either the Enochic book derives its information from an Iranian source, or both of these are dependent on the same Babylonian one.

In the *Greater Bundahišn* Vb.1–11; IX,5–6//*Shorter Bundahišn* V.3–9,[430] the sun, moon, and constellations come and go through a series of 360 'apertures' in Mount Alburz, 180 in the East and 180 in the West, with five overlapping re-uses of apertures. Mount Alburz was viewed as both a peak in the center of the world and as the mountain range which ringed the disk of the world.[431] These apertures in the world-mountain appear to be the exact parallel of the gates in the *Book of Luminaries*. The gates or apertures in each are symmetrical, at the east and west horizons, and linked to specific calendrical units of time. The Iranian origin of this detail seems to be confirmed by the note in *1 Enoch* 72:5. This verse describes how the sun moves north during the night in order to return to the east for the morning. The *Greater Bundahišn* Vb.11/ *Shorter Bundahišn* V.4 describes how it is the Peak of Mount Alburz (in the centre of the world) which hides the light of the sun, moon, and stars when they are not visible, while they travel behind it.[432] As the Iranians viewed the human habitation to be south of this peak, this implies that the heavenly bodies travel to the north, and thus behind the peak from the point of view of human observers. It is the cosmic mountain in the center and ringing the earth which hides the sun in the night-time hours. Perhaps the seven mountains where 'days, seasons and years pass by' in *1 Enoch* 77:4 confirms the idea of mountains being related to these astronomical phenomena.

---

[428] Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 11. See the helpful Figure 1 on the same page, illustrating the linear scheme.

[429] Wayne Horowitz, *Mesopotamian Cosmic Geography*, Mesopotamian Civilizations 8 (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1998), pp. 266–267; Wolfgang Heimpel, "The Sun at Night and the Doors of Heaven in Babylonian Texts," *Journal of Cuneiform Studies* 38.2 (1986): pp. 132–140.

[430] Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 64–67, 94–95; *Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 22–24. West already noted this similarity, although did not seem to see a significance in it; *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 23, n.1. Cf. a footnote in West, *The East Face*, p. 143, n. 186, although he seems to view the *Bundahišn*'s account as a later culmination.

[431] *Shorter Bundahišn* V.3 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 22); *Yašt* XIX.1 (Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 66; *Zend-Avesta II*, p. 287). Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 133; Mary Boyce, "Alborz II: Alborz in Myth and Legend," *Encyclopædia Iranica* I (1985): pp. 811–813.

[432] Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 66–67; *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 22. Cf. *Yašt* XII.25 (*Zend-Avesta II*, p. 175); Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 135.

A further hint of the Iranian origin of this detail is the description of the sun riding a chariot across the sky (72:5; 75:4). This is typical language in the Iranian traditions[433] and is mostly likely to be of Indo-Iranian date due to its occurrence in the *Rig Veda*. Although the image of the sun riding a chariot is common to mythological language and so cannot be used to prove influence from any direction, it does fit well into a thesis for a Persian source-mediated source for the solar gates in the *Book of Luminaries*. This conception of multiple gates for the sun's chariot-drive across the sky appears to be a combination unique to the *Book of Luminaries* and Iran. [434]

While cosmologies of the sun's daily journey are important in Egypt, Babylonia and Greece, the details of that journey are significantly different than the picture presented in the *Book of Luminaries*. In these, the sun travels in a boat or barque through the heavens during the day and through the underworld at night.[435] The *Astronomical Book* gives no hint of an underworld journey for the sun in the text; indeed it specifies a northerly path. The idea of cosmological gates also appears in these systems, but they function in several different ways. When gates appear there, they are either the gates into/from the underworld[436] or are the stations along the spiritual highway from the netherworld to heaven,[437] as later appeared in the Mithraic Mysteries.[438] In neither of these cases are the gates linked to calendrical observance or the variation of day-length as in *1 Enoch* and the *Bundahišn*. A third use is a division of the sky as West describes (although he does not discuss the connection between the underworld associations on the one hand, or the calendrical ones on the other).[439] The other descriptions of heavenly gates for the winds in *1 Enoch* 74:5–6 and 76 do sound more like the meteorological/ astrological gates West describes. However, it is possible these are intended to be the 'windows' mentioned in 72:3, or they could stem from a separate tradition

---

[433] In the *Mihr Yašt* §13, the sun is described as 'swift-horsed sun'; in X.141–143, the sun is described as the wheel of Mithra's chariot. See Gershevitch, *The Avestan Hymn to Mithra*, p. 80, 135.

[434] Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube*, pp. 155–156, however, notes that this image was known in Palestine prior to the exile, but sees it as a sign of a Babylonian origin nevertheless. The present author sees it as more of an ambiguous note that is simply congruent with a Persian source (amongst the other influences).

[435] Nanno Marinatos, "The Cosmic Journey of Odysseus," *Numen* 48.4 (2001): pp. 381–395; Alan Cooper, "Ps 24:7-10: Mythology and Exegesis," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 102.1 (1983): p. 44, 42. Of course, the image of the sun's chariot occurs as well.

[436] William Hayes Ward, "Notes on Oriental Antiquities IV: The Rising Sun on Babylonian Cylinders," *The American Journal of Archaeology and of the History of the Fine Arts* 3.1/2 (1887): pp. 50–56, with an additional note in William Hayes Ward, "Notes on Oriental Antiquities IX: A Babylonian Cylindrical Basrelief from Urumia in Persia; X: Tiamat and Other Evil Spirits, as Figured on Oriental Seals," *The American Journal of Archaeology and of the History of the Fine Arts* 6.3 (1890): p. 289; David M. Johnson, "Hesiod's Description of Tartarus ("Theogony" 721-819)," *Phoenix* 53.1/2 (1999): p. 16, 21, 25.

[437] William F. Warren, "Babylonian and Pre-Babylonian Cosmology," *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 22 (1901): pp. 139–140.

[438] John R. Hinnells, "Reflections on the Lion-Headed Figure in Mithraism," *Monumentum H. S. Nyberg*, ed. J. Duchesne-Guillemin, vol. I, Acta Iranica 4 (Leiden: Brill, 1975), pp. 356–364.

[439] West, *The East Face*, pp. 139–143.

than the one of the solar gates.[440] A closer parallel is a tradition of four 'seasonal' gates (for the equinoxes and solstices) in Babylonia and Greece. These four gates were associated with the zodiac,[441] but the constellations—let alone the zodiac—are an aspect of astronomy strikingly absent from the extant *Book of Luminaries*.[442] It should be noted, however, that *Bundahišn* II also makes much of the zodiac.[443]

Albani, followed by Gleßmer, argues that the gate idea is borrowed from Babylon.[444] Yet his argument is not an exact correspondence between the two systems; he claims, rather, that the author of the *Astronomical Book* combined the ideas of the zodiacal gates and the solar (horizonal) gates to make room for his angelic theology.[445] Later, even though he finds it most unlikely, he refuses to totally rule out the possibility of Persian influences.[446] While the overall astronomical system does indeed appear to be based on the MUL.APIN, the extremely close correspondence between the solar gates in the *Bundahišn* and the *Astronomical Book* requires an explanation, and it is worth investigating.[447]

Both the Enochic and Persian systems seem to be originally based upon a 360-day scheme;[448] the *Bundahišn* has the Sun using an aperture per day, and the *Book of Luminaries* has the Sun using one per month. Both texts graft epagomenal days onto a 360-day system, 5 apertures re-used by the former, and 4 months with 31 days in the latter.[449] The attempt at adaptation of a 360-day scheme to 364-days in the *Astronomical Book* can be seen in the linear

---

[440] It is worth noting, however, the peculiarly Iranian-sounding detail of the 'fragrant wind' in 1 *Enoch* 76:8 (Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch* , p. 105). E.g., *Zadspram* XXXV.51, "And the humours in their bodies will be more fragrant than musk and ambergris and camphor." (as given in Mahnaz Moazami. "Millennialism, Eschatology, and Messianic figures in Iranian Tradition." *Journal of Millennial Studies* 2.2 (2000): p. 14, http://www.bu.edu/mille/publications/winter2000/moazami.pdf. Shaked lists fragrance as one of the typical Iranian binaries, Shaul Shaked, *Dualism in Transformation: Varieties of Religion in Sasanian Iran*, Jordan Lectures 1991 (London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1994), p. 13.

[441] Harald A. T. Reiche, "Heraclides' Three Soul-Gates: Plato Revised," *Transactions of the American Philogical Association* 123 (1993): p. 175, 169; West, *The East Face*, pp. 141–143.

[442] Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 4; Cf. Kvanvig, *Roots of Apocalyptic*, p. 69. While the stars and zodiac are absent from the *Astronomical Book*, they certainly were not from Qumran, e.g., 4Q318 (4Qbrontologion), which mentions the zodiac (Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, pp. 677–679).

[443] Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 30–35.

[444] Uwe Gleßmer, "Horizontal Measuring in the Babylonian Astronomical compendium MUL.APIN and in the Astronomical Book of 1En," *Henoch* 18.3 (1996): pp. 273–282.

[445] Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube*, pp. 158–159.

[446] Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube*, pp. 170–171.

[447] See the detailed and complex discussions of the mathematics and astronomy in Albani and in Gleßmer. (Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube*, and Gleßmer, "Horizontal Measuring," pp. 259–282). It is amusing that Gleßmer implicitly claims the mathematics involved is simple (p. 260). A simple summary and explanation of the relevant mathematics is available in Helmer Aslaksen, *Fake Leap Months in the Chinese Calendar: From the Jesuits to 2033*, http://www.math.nus.edu.sg/aslaksen/calendar/2033-talk.pdf, pp. 2–9.

[448] *Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 24, n. 1, comments on the original 360–day scheme. Cf. VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, pp. 97–98; Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic*, pp. 128–129.

[449] See *Shorter Bundahišn* V.7 (p. 24); Cf. Mary Boyce, "On the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 33.3 (1970): pp. 515–516, 527, and the comments to 75:1–2 in Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 20; James C. VanderKam, *Calendars in the Dead Sea Scrolls: Measuring Time* (London: Routledge, 1998), pp. 25–26. Note, however, Boyce's self-correction in Mary Boyce, "Further on the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts," *Iran* 43 (2005): pp. 1–38.

360-day scheme in chapter 72 and the note in 83, and is perhaps hinted at in 75:1–2 and 82:4–6, 11–12. The official Old Persian calendar was based on a simplification (or 'schematization') of the Babylonian (lunar) calendar: 360 days plus intercalated months, and the original Zoroastrian calendar also was 360-day.[450] Whatever the actual calendrical practices used or implied by the *Astronomical Book*, it is clear the Enochic scribes were not ignorant of the complexities of solar and lunar reckoning.[451] Thus, it seems probable that the scheme of apertures/gates was both devised and borrowed in a context which presumed a 360-day year.[452] It is unclear when a 365-day calendar was adopted in Iran,[453] but in any case the aperture-scheme must have pre-dated its adoption by a significant amount of time. Segal argues that *1 Enoch*'s insistence on a 364-day calendar implies the introduction of a 365.25-day one, such as operated under the Seleucids.[454] The complexity of the text makes this highly uncertain—is the *Book of Luminaries* advancing a new calendar, or defending an old one? Since both 360-day and 364-day schemes appear to have been known in Babylonia and in Israel for many centuries prior to *1 Enoch*, just as the 365-day scheme was in Egypt, it is difficult to determine priority.[455] Segal takes the reaction against 365.25-day scheme to be indicative of a Hellenistic/Seleucid date, but, according to Hartner, a 365.25-day calendar

---

[450] Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 144–145, 244–245; Antonio Panaino, "Calendars I: Pre-Islamic Calendars," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): pp. 659–660; For a useful explanation of calendars, see Liora Ravid, "The Book of Jubilees and its Calendar—a Reexamination," *Dead Sea Discoveries* 10.3 (2003): pp. 384–387.

[451] Cf. J. B. Segal, "Intercalation and the Hebrew Calendar," *Vetus Testamentum* 7.3 (1957): pp. 290–293; Joseph M. Baumgarten, "The Calendars of the Book of Jubilees and the Temple Scroll," *Vetus Testamentum* 37.1 (1987): p. 76; Ravid, "The Book of Jubilees and its Calendar," p. 390. Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic*, p. 137, contends that the *Astronomical Book* knew no lunar calendar, which is unlikely. The scholarship on the issue is surveyed by Jonathan Ben-Dov and Stephane Saulnier, "Qumran Calendars: a Survey of Scholarship 1980–2007," *Currents in Biblical Research* 7.1 (2008): pp. 124–168. For a lucid description of the calender issue, see Killian McAleese, "Actualizing Israel Every Month: The History and Development of *Ḥodeš* Ritual in Israelite and Jewish Tradition" (PhD Diss. Trinity College Dublin, 2008), pp. 207–251.

[452] It is worth noting that 364-day schemes apparently were known in Babylonia as well; see Uwe Gleßmer and Matthias Albani, "An Astronomical Measuring Instrument from Qumran," *The Provo International Conference on the Dead Sea Scrolls*, eds. Donald W. Parry and Eugene Ulrich (Leiden: Brill, 1999), p. 442, n. 81.

[453] The Iranian/Zoroastrian calendrical issue is nearly as contentious as the Qumranic ones, but usually for the dating of the adoption of the Zoroastrian calendar. The Zoroastrian Calendar is a 365-day one (twelve 30-day months plus five intercalary days before New Year). It is unclear, therefore, how the transition from Babylonian to Persian rule would have inspired the invention/adoption of a 364-day calendar in Yehud, as Najan claims, S. Najan and Ph. Guillaume, "The Jubilee Calendar Rescued from the Flood Narrative," *Journal of Hebrew Scriptures* 5.1 (2004): §5.2, http://www.arts.ualberta.ca/JHS/Articles/article_31.pdf.

Boyce, "On the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts," pp. 513–539 argues it was adopted early in the Sasanian Period, as does Elias J. Bickerman, "The 'Zoroastrian' Calendar," *Archiv Orientalni* 35 (1967): p. 207; however, Willy Hartner, "Old Iranian Calendars," *Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: 1985), p. 757, rejects this, dating the introduction of a 365-day 'vague year' to 503 B.C.E. In her correction (Boyce, "Further on the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts," p. 7) Boyce does not make a clear stand, talking about calendar reform ca. 481–479 B.C.E. For further studies, see S. H. Taqizadeh, *Old Iranian Calendars*, Prize Publication Fund 16 (Royal Asiatic Society, 1938); S. H. Taqizadeh, "The Old Iranian Calendars Again," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 14.3 (1952): pp. 603–611; William W. Malandra, "Frawardīgān," *Encyclopædia Iranica* 10 (2001): p. 199, http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

[454] Segal, "Intercalation and the Hebrew Calendar," pp. 293–301.

[455] A.T. Olmstead, "Babylonian Astronomy: Historical Sketch," *American Journal of Semitic Languages and Literatures* 55.2 (1938): p. 115 claims the 365-year was very old in Egypt.

was introduced in the Achaemenid Empire between 457–454 B.C.E.[456] This would seem to require the aperture/gate motif to date to the fifth century at the latest, and most likely a good deal earlier.

The difference between the systems of the gates and apertures—namely, between 360 and 12—can be explained by the rhetorical intent of the *Book of Luminaries*. *1 Enoch* 82:4–6 makes the religious-polemical point of the gates apparent: the placement of the four epagomenal days is determined by the sun's movement through the gates. If gates existed for each day, then the placement of the extra days would be of little cosmological consequence; they could be placed wherever. However, because the sun enters and exits through four gates 31 days rather then 30, the placement of the days must belong in those particular months to correspond with the divine ordinance, the discrepancy with reality notwithstanding. Thus, the polemic of the *Book of Luminaries* easily explains the change of gates/apertures from days to months. If a further reason was required, the symbolic resonances of the number twelve for Judaean tradition could also have played a part.

Neugebauer notes that there are 'windows' on either side of the gates in 72:3, presumably through which the stars travel.[457] This may be an accommodation to the Zodical gates, which do not play a significant role in the *Astronomical Book* like the sun or the moon. The relative reticence of the text about the stars and constellations may be motivated by the Enochic corpus's angelology—rather than focusing on the (calendrically irrelevant?) movement of the stars,[458] the text reserves discussion of them to their theological relevance, as one finds in *1 Enoch* 82. In the logic of the book, the angelic hierarchy is not discussing a fundamentally different reality; it certainly is not imperative to consider it an interpolation.[459] The role of angelic beings is a significant motif of the Enochic literature, and the idea of divinities being associated with or identified with the stars is common in the Ancient Near East, including Persia and Israel. In fact, in Zoroastrian cosmology, the stars were created by Ahura Mazda to withstand the attack of Angra Mainyu against his creation.[460] As Collins

---

[456] Hartner, "Old Iranian Calendars," p. 777.

[457] Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 10.

[458] The stars *are* important for time-reckoning, but the *Book of Luminaries* does not appeal to them in this capacity. The book limits its discussion to the sun and moon. Qumran, however, did allow for the calendrical usefulness of the stars; see the discovery of the astronomical instrument from Qumran, Gleßmer and Albani, "An Astronomical Measuring Instrument from Qumran," pp. 407–442..

[459] Contra Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 3; VanderKam, *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition*, pp. 107–8; See a similar opinion in Albani, *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube*, pp. 130–132.

[460] Walter B. Henning, "An Astronomical Chapter of the Bundahishn," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (1942): p. 231. There seems to be a link between the *fravašis* and the stars, see *Sh. Bundahišn* VI.1–4 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 25); Moulton, "Zoroaster and Israel III," p. 496.

notes, the concept of astral divinities was old in Israel,[461] and astral warriors can be found in the Ugaritic-Canaanite mythology.[462] The identity of the stars and (some of) the angels is more important to the Enochic author then their calendrical or zodiacal aspects. This is not a real difference with the Iranian ideas, as the Persians themselves seem to have borrowed the zodiac from Babylon.[463] If an Iranian-mediated source is therefore posited for the *Astronomical Book*, then this would perhaps date it before the Iranians absorbed the zodiac but after borrowing calendrical reckoning.

Ravid claims that the astronomical calculations of *1 Enoch* 72 point to an origin in modern Turkey;[464] this would place the borrowing of the motif of the solar gates among the Iranian diaspora in Anatolia. If this is correct, then the relationship between the calendars in *1 Enoch, Jubilees,* and at Qumran becomes even more complex. However, this claim would appear to be astronomically unsubstantiated.[465]

Another minor detail in the *Astronomical Book*—which is later taken up in the Enochic tradition—is an unexpected emphasis on cold as a negative or inherently evil phenomenon (76:6,11,12; Cf: 17:7, 6:7; 34:2–3; 60:17–19; 67:11–13; 100:13). Elliot has already noticed the unexpectedness of this meteorological opinion in the context of the *Book of Luminaries*, which he interprets as 'novel directions' in the interpretation of the covenant curses.[466] He explains these references as a peculiar 'familiarity with the *ravaging* effects of cold' (emphasis original). In Iranian tradition winter and cold are themselves creations of Angra Mainyu; hell itself is described as cold.[467] This belief makes perfect sense in a tradition which was born in the central Asian steppes with its long, harsh winters. It seems likely therefore that this detail was picked up from the general milieu by the early Enochic tradents and from there become a stock part of the tradition, even in areas where cold presents little real difficulties.

---

461 Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, p. 61, and in John J. Collins, "Theology and Identity in the Early Enochic Literature," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19-23, 2001*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), p. 59.

462 For example, see Dennis Pardee, *Ritual and Cult at Ugarit*, Writings from the Ancient World 10 (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2002), Text 18 (pp. 69–72).

463 Gherardo Gnoli, "Babylonia II: Babylonian Influences on Iran," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): p. 335; Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 234, in the context of the 'Great Year'; D. N. MacKenzie, "Zoroastrian Astrology in the *Bundahišn*," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 27 (1964): p. 523.

464 Ravid, "The Book of Jubilees and its Calendar," pp. 390–391.

465 Brian R. Espey, personal communication to author (4 Apr 2008). The author is grateful to Professor Brian Espey, Trinity College Dublin, who attempted to correlate the information in the *Astronomical Book* to a latitude, but could not correlate it with an Anatolian setting.

466 Mark Elliot, "Covenant and Cosmology in the Book of Watchers and the Astronomical Book," *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001.*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002), p. 33, n. 22; p. 36.

467 *Yašt* XVIII.2, 7; *Vidēvdāt* I.3, 20, 22; VII.26–27 (Anklesaria, *Pahlavi Vendidâd*, p. 27); *Greater Bundahišn* V.1 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, p. 57); *Dēnkard* IX.8.1–7 (*Pahlavi Texts IV*, p. 209); *Mēnōg-ī Xrad* 44.16–21 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 86). Cf. Wikander, *Vayu*, p. 147, 150, 206; Krasnowolska, "Some Heroes of Iranian Calendar Mythology," p. 377. Connell Monette, "Heroes and Hells in *Beowulf*, the *Shahnameh*, and the *Táin Bó Cúailnge*," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 36.1–2 (2008): p. 144 notes this motif is common to Iran and Germanic 'pagan' depictions of hell.

The details discussed above in the *Astronomical Book* are in the sections most likely to be original, making them part of the oldest surviving strands of the Enochic tradition. The use of such details is to be expected; the overall number of scholar-scribes in the Ancient Near East can never have been a massive number (like modern academics in a given field), and ideas must have been shared among scribes of different backgrounds, particularly in massive multi-ethnic empires like the Persian or Hellenistic ones. In the discussion over Babylonian 'science' in *1 Enoch*, the Persian details have gone largely unnoticed. While the vast majority of the Ancient Near Eastern 'scholarly community' was most likely from the old Babylonian and Assyrian centres, the above discussion seems to imply that Persian scholars participated in the general intellectual milieu alongside their more famous Babylonian colleagues. Babylon was not the only source of learning from which the Judaean scribes likely drew. Perhaps in this context, Mowinkel's 'Irano-Chaldaean syncretism' is in fact apt.[468]

Mythic Geography[469]

1 Enoch 77 (and parts of 76) contain a mythological geography of the world which is rather laconic and peculiar, bearing little resemblance either to traditions in the Hebrew Bible or to traditions in the book of *Jubilees*.[470] The text of the *Book of Luminaries* is particularly problematic; while Aramaic fragments have been found which have been assigned to the Enochic work, they often do not overlap or closely correspond with their Ethiopic counterparts.[471] Parts of these chapters do have some surviving Aramaic fragments relevant to the mythical geography of the world (of interest here are 4Q209, frag. 23 and 4Q210 I ii 13–20).[472] Although the textual problems and the paucity of elaboration make the task difficult, it is worth attempting to identify some of the sources or influences behind the traditions extent in the passage. While the geographical traditions evidenced in these chapters most likely contain a scholastic amalgam of Hellenistic and Near Eastern traditions,

---

[468] Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, pp. 432–433.

[469] The author is grateful to Dr. Mark Geller and Dr. Joan Taylor for their help and advice on this section.

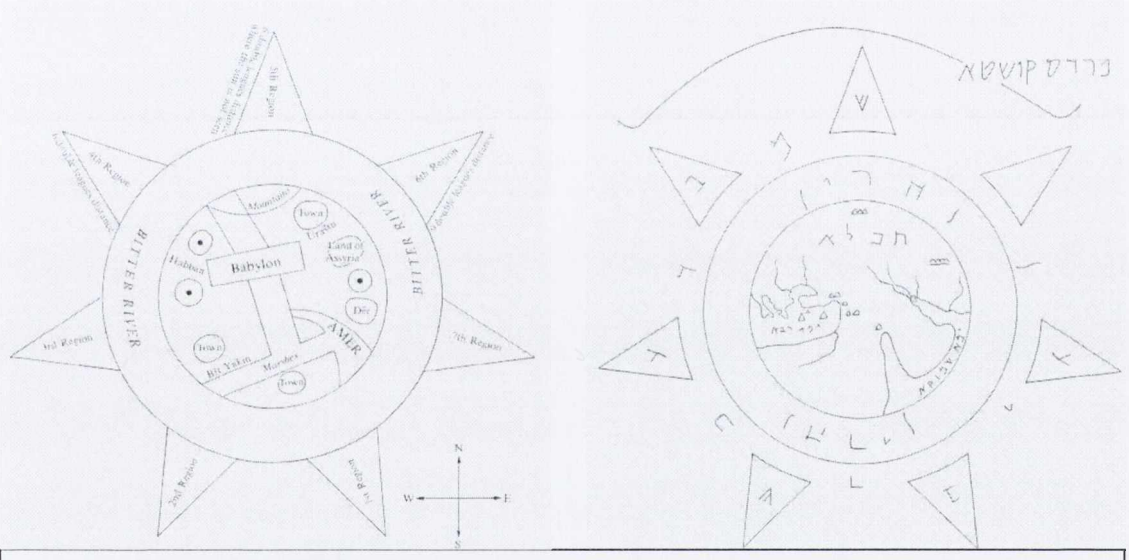
[470] For a discussion of the geography in *Jubilees*, see Philip S. Alexander, "Notes on the 'Imago Mundi' of the Book of Jubilees," *Journal of Jewish Studies* 33.1-2 (1982): pp. 197–213; Philip S. Alexander, "Geography and the Bible (Early Jewish)," *The Anchor Bible Dictionary*, ed. David Noel Freedman, vol. 2: D-G (New York: Doubleday, 1992), pp. 977–988; Philip S. Alexander, "Retelling the Old Testament," *It is Written: Scripture Citing Scripture. Essays in Honour of Barnabas Lindars*, eds. D. A. Carson and H. G. M. Williamson (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988), pp. 102–103.

[471] For discussion of these fragments and their relation to the Ethiopic, see Milik, *Books of Enoch*, pp. 7–21, 284–297; E. J. C. Tigchelaar and F. Garcia Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b} ar," *Qumran Cave 4: XXVI Cryptic Texts and Miscellanea Part I*, ed. Emmanuel Tov, DJD XXXVI (Oxford: Clarendon, 2000), pp. 95–172; Michael A. Knibb, *The Ethiopic Book of Enoch: a new edition in the light of the Aramaic Dead Sea fragments* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1978), vol. 2, pp. 6–14; 167–192.

[472] For a critical edition of 4Q209 see Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b}," pp. 95–172. 4Q210 appears in Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, pp. 438–441.

there are several details which may find a suitable location in Iranian traditions. The topics considered here are a schematic division of the world into sevenths, the identification of the seven islands, and the import of royal Iranian ideology.

In his presentation of the Aramaic fragments of *1 Enoch*, Milik proposes that the closest parallel to the Enochic geography is the so-called 'Babylonian World Map.'[473] He bases this claim on two points: the appearance of the word 'seven' in 77:4 of the Aramaic text and a circular river, which he claims parallels seven outer, triangular regions beyond an encircling river on the Babylonian map; in this he has been followed by several scholars[474] (See Figures 17–18). The relevance of the number seven for the text of the *Book of Luminaries* could derive from several textual bases: the appearance of the number seven in line 9 of 4Q209, fragment 23, the Ethiopic version of verse 3 (which implies a six-fold division around a central location), or the reference to 'islands' in verse 8.



Figures 17 and 18: Milik's Reconstruction of the* Babylonian World Map *and of* 1 Enoch *77
From Milik, Józef T. *The Books of Enoch: Aramaic Fragments of Qumran Cave 4*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1976. Used by Permission of Oxford University Press.

The so-called 'Babylonian World Map' (British Museum BM92687, Figure 19) is only partially extant.[475] Only five of the outer triangles are (partially) visible. However, upon closer inspection of the artifact it appears to the present author that the Babylonian map originally had *eight* rather than seven outer regions. The reverse inscription describes eight regions or *nagu*, and, although Horowitz cautions against identifying them with the

---

[473] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 15.
[474] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 15 and fig. 2 on p. 17. Alexander, "Imago Mundi," p. 212; Alexander, "Geography," p. 984; O. A. W. Dilke, *Greek and Roman Maps* (London: Thames & Hudson, 1985), p. 13.
[475] A redrawing and photograph is available in Horowitz, *Mesopotamian Cosmic Geography*, pp. 402–3, 405–6, respectively. I am grateful to Helen Jacobus for this reference.

transmundane regions on the obverse, the available space seems to make eight original regions most likely.[476] In his discussion of the parallel, Milik himself notes that the geographical/cosmological horizons of the passage in *1 Enoch* are 'astonishingly wide,'[477] particularly in comparison with the Babylonian Map, which only depicts the environs of the city from the source of the Euphrates to Elam. If neither the geographical horizons, the content, nor the number of regions corresponds to the Babylonian Map, one wonders in what respect they are similar. VanderKam rightly rejects the dependency of *1 Enoch* 77 on the Babylonian map, but due to his focus on the text of v. 3, he rejects the import of the number seven, ignoring the general motif of seven in the chapter (possibly v. 3, vv. 4, 5, 8) and the possible appearance of the word 'seven' in the Aramaic of 77:4.[478] VanderKam argues that the author of 77 knew two world division schemes (a fourfold and a threefold) so that there is no support in the Aramaic text for Milik's appeal to seven in 23:9.[479] While this may be true for 23:9, it ignores chapter 77. In his and Nickelsburg's new translation of *1 Enoch*, 77:3 retains the threefold division (making a total of seven), although it lacks the reference to seven in v. 4.

Figure 19: Babylonian World Map
BM 92687. Used by Permission of the British Museum. © The Trustees of the British Museum.

---

[476] This opinion is shared by James C. VanderKam, "1 Enoch 77:3 and a Babylonian Map of the World," *Revue de Qumran* 11.2 (1983): p. 272, n. 5; Alan R. Millard, "Cartography in the Ancient Near East," *The History of Cartography*, eds. J. B. Harley and David Woodward, vol. I: Cartography in the Prehistoric, Ancient, and Medieval Europe and the Mediterranean (London: Univ of Chicago Press, 1987), p. 111; Catherine Delano Smith, "Imago Mundi's Logo, the Babylonian Map of the World," *Imago Mundi* 48 (1996): pp. 209–211. Special thanks to Amy Daughton for pointing out to the present author that the recent British Museum exhibit on Babylon displayed the map redrawn with eight triangles.

[477] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 17.

[478] VanderKam, "Babylonian Map," p. 272. See Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch[a-b]," pp. 159–161. In line 9, ש and ע are extant, and they reconstruct the ב. This seems to be the seven on which Milik made his claim, rather than v. 3. However, James C. VanderKam, "The Book of Parables within the Enoch Tradition," *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007), p. 96, finds this reading dubious.

[479] VanderKam, "Babylonian Map," pp. 274–277.

The first necessary consideration, in light of the textual difficulties, is whether a sevenfold schematic division of the world is relevant at all to the mythic geography in Chapter 77. The Ethiopic texts of vv. 1–3 describe four quarters, the north one of which is divided into three parts, making a total of six regions.[480] This would equate to a seven-region scheme if a central region (Jerusalem/Judah) was implied. However, the word ארעא, preceded by a lacuna, appears in the text of 4Q209 and no word for north. On this basis, Knibb, Tigchelaar and Martinez, and VanderKam see two original, unconnected schemes in the Aramaic: a four-fold and a three-fold.[481] However, the part of the phrase preceding 'earth,' 'and I saw three' (וחזית תלת) is reconstructed, not extant. It is possible that the original text did describe the northern quarter rather than the entire earth, but the fragments cannot demonstrate it definitively either way. However, 4Q209 when paralleled with 4Q210 implies that the fourfold scheme applied to a quartering of the sky, and thus not relevant to the mythic geography at all.[482] A mysterious 'seven' is reconstructed further in the verse (in line 9) by Milik and by Martínez and Tigchelaar, which Martínez and Tigchelaar understand as a reference to Milik's 'ultra-terrestrial regions.'[483] If this reconstruction is correct, then a sevenfold scheme is still applicable to the Aramaic.[484] As seen above, the Babylonian Map contained eight regions rather than seven, troubling Milik's comparison. Further, the text of 77 does not mention a surrounding river, which was Milik's other point of comparison.

The attempt to see a sevenfold scheme in vv. 1–3 is admittedly difficult. However, a better case can be presented for its relevance later in the chapter. The last verse of chapter 77 contains an enigmatic sentence, in Nickelsburg's translation, "I saw seven large islands in the sea and on the land—two on the land and five in the Great Sea."[485] Even on first glance this verse appears corrupted—what is the meaning of 'islands on land'? However, Neugebauer, following Dillman, identifies the two islands 'on land' as Mesopotamia and Meroe, 'land[s] between rivers.'[486] The textual data is in fact problematic. In their respective translations, both Isaac and Nickelsburg and VanderKam note that the Ethiopic manuscripts vary between the 'Great Sea' and the 'Erythrean Sea,' as well as in the numbers.[487] There is no extant Aramaic. However, the Greek fragment *Oxyrhynchus* 2069 (fragment 3, line 37)

---

[480] Cf. Knibb, *Ethiopic Book of Enoch*, vol. 2, pp. 179–180; Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, pp. 106–107.
[481] Knibb, *Ethiopic Book of Enoch*, vol. 2, p. 180; Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b}," p. 160 (by implication of their reconstruction); VanderKam, "Babylonian Map," p. 275.
[482] 4Q210 14, "twelve gates of the four quarters of the heavens…" (ושלמו תרי עשר תרעי ארבע רוחי שמ[יא]) See Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, pp. 438–439; Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 289.
[483] Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b}," p. 161.
[484] The photographs in Milik and Martínez and Tigchelaar, however, do not clearly show anything but the lamed to the present author.
[485] Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 107. Neugebauer gives the same translation (Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 26.
[486] Neugebauer, *The 'Astronomical' Chapters*, p. 27.
[487] Isaac, "1 Enoch," p. 56, n. s; Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 107, n. o.

mentions the ἐρυθρᾷ θ[άλασσῃ] in the text for v. 8.[488] The evidence of the Greek fragment and common logic favours accepting Isaac's suggestion for reconstructing the original: "I saw seven big islands—two in the Great Sea, and five in the Red Sea"[489] or a similar phrasing. The Greek name 'Erythrean Sea' can apply to either or both of the bodies of water currently called the Red Sea and the Persian Gulf.[490] In both Greek and Persian usage, the Red Sea and Persian Gulf appear to have been considered a single body of water.[491] This reconstruction still begs the question of the significance of these islands and their placements in their respective bodies of water; all of the bodies of water potentially concerned (the Mediterranean, the Red Sea, and the Persian Gulf) all contain more than seven islands each.

Several interpretations could be considered. 1) They refer to real islands. These islands could be islands either well-known to the author, considered particularly large, or perhaps which housed Judaean communities. If one wished to see these islands as related to a general sevenfold division of the world, then perhaps the geographer here intended to imply that the Mediterranean and the 'Erythrean' Seas surrounded the whole world. If one wished to identify real islands as the intended referents, one is left to speculation as to their significance. A quick glance at an atlas reveals well over seven islands in each respective body of water.[492] Since Judaeans probably did live on islands in both seas,[493] it is possible that the number is related to islands with Judaean compatriots. Such an enumeration would be unique, however, and either a reference to world regions or else an expansion on the number seven would seem more likely explanations; 2) The number is merely symbolic, or perhaps corrupted. Such an interpretation cannot be wholly discounted, but one would expect either three or four if such were the intent. Rather than seeing a corruption in the number, however, one could argue that 'islands' is a poor translation of the intended

---

[488] Arthur S. Hunt, *The Oxyrhynchus Papyri*, vol. 17 (London: Egypt Exploration Society, 1927), pp. 6–8. He dates the fragment to the late fourth century C.E.; Also available on the Online Critical Pseudepigrapha, http://ocp.acadiau.ca/.

[489] Isaac, "1 Enoch," p. 56, n. s.

[490] Liddell and Scott, *GEL*, p. 693.

[491] Cf. Darius's Suez Inscription (DZc), Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 147. cf. D. T. Potts, "Persian Gulf," *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2005): n.p., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/; D. T. Potts, "Kharg Island," *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2004): n.p., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.
The status of the Persian Gulf region in the Achaemenid period is still poorly known. See Jean-François Salles, "Les Achéménides dans le Golfe Arabo-Persique," *Centre and Periphery: Achaemenid History IV*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990), pp. 111–130; The present author is grateful to Fr. Murray Watson for translating this). However, Heinrich Schiwek, "Der Persische Gulf als Schiffahrts- und Seehandelsroute in achämenidischer Zeit und in der Zeit Alexanders des Grossen," *Bonner Jahrbücher* 162 (1962): p. 17, claims that the voyages of Scylax and Nearchus demonstrate that the islands in the Gulf were controlled, at least from Darius I–Artaxerxes II (pp. 19–20).

[492] Upon inspection of the Times Atlas of the World (1994) by the author, there appears to be over 50 islands in both the Persian Gulf and the Red Sea, and easily over 100 islands in the Mediterranean.

[493] For an island (Kharg) in the Persian Gulf, at least from the Parthian period, see M-J Steve, "Sur l'île de Khârg dans le golfe Persique," *Dossiers d'Archéologie* 243 (1999): pp. 74–80. The author is indebted to Fr. Murray Watson for translating this reference from French. Cf. Potts, "Persian Gulf," n.p.

word.[494] A word for 'island' in Hebrew and in the Aramaic of Qumran is אי. While often translated 'island' or 'coastland,' the context of its use in the Hebrew texts often stretches that meaning to the point of meaning rather 'region' or 'dry land'[495] (E.g., Isa 42:15; Ezek 26:15, 18; 39:6; Ps 97:1). If this word underlies the Ethiopic translation, then the difficulty of the distinction between 'on land' and 'in the sea' is removed, and a sevenfold continent-like scheme emerges. The best interpretation then is 3) they refer to general regions rather than islands.

If the Babylonian World Map was inadequate, from where could a sevenfold scheme be derived? A Greek source for the sevenfold scheme is unlikely. The basic paradigm for world-division was either a fourfold division based on the cardinal directions or a threefold division along the three known continents (Europe, Asia, Africa).[496] Indeed, this appears to have deeply influenced the author of Jubilees, in which Greek traditions are merged with traditions of the Hebrew Bible.[497] Similarly, insofar as there is a Judaean tradition, it is also based on either a three- or fourfold division—either a basic 'four-corners of the earth' scheme or a division between the three sons of Noah.[498] Even though seven is a common symbolic number in the Ancient Near East and in Israel, it does not appear to have been applied to a schematic understanding of geography; schematic geographies tend to be three- or fourfold rather than sevenfold.[499] Another geographical scheme was, however, known in the region, the Iranian scheme of seven *karšuuar* (Pahlavi *kišvars*), or world-regions.

Of course, the number seven long had significance in Judaean traditions, and one may wish to see this chapter as simply an extension of this tendency, even though it is nowhere previously connected with geography. However, if a sevenfold division is accepted, it can be suggested that in the greater apocalyptic context these seven large regions derive from the Iranian idea of *karšuuar*, as part of a developing understanding of the divine empire *à la* the Persian Great King.

---

[494] The author is grateful to the audience at the International SBL in Rome, 2009, for making this observation.
[495] See Clines, ed., *Dictionary of Classical Hebrew*, vol. I: א, p. 203; Brown, et al., *BDB*, pp. 15–16.
[496] As by Herodotus, IV.37–45 (Herodotus, *Wars III–IV*, p. 237–245); Cf: James S. Romm, *The Edges of the Earth in Ancient Thought: Geography, Exploration, and Fiction* (Princeton, NJ: Princeton Univ Press, 1992) who mentions various schemes, but no sevenfold ones. On (later) Greek fourfold schemes, see J. B. Harley and David Woodward, eds., *The History of Cartography*. vol. I: Prehistoric, Ancient and Medieval Europe and the Mediterranean (London: Univ of Chicago Press, 1987), p. 172, 175; note, however, a potental fivefold division, Dilke, *Greek and Roman Maps*, p. 25, p. 27.
[497] Alexander, "Imago Mundi," pp. 197–213. It is worth noting that the author of Jubilees is aware of the many islands of the Mediterranean as well as the Iranian plateau (pp. 206–207, 208).
[498] James C. VanderKam, "Putting them in their Place: Geography as an Evaluative Tool," *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature* (Leiden: Brill, 2000), pp. 476–499; Esther Eschel, "The Imago Mundi of the Genesis Apocryphon," *Heavenly Tablets: Interpretation, Identity and Tradition in Ancient Judaism*, eds. Lynn LiDonnici and Andrea Lieber, SJSJ 119 (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 111–132.
[499] On Sumerian four-fold scheme, see Jean-Jacques Glassner, "Progress, Science, and the Use of Knowledge in Ancient Mesopotamia," *Civilizations of the Ancient Near East*, ed. Jack M. Sasson, vol. 3 (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995), p. 1821; Horowitz, *Mesopotamian Cosmic Geography*, pp. 324–325; on Greece, see note above.

In part of various Iranian traditions of many eras, in particular royal ideologies, the world was believed to consist of seven island-regions, or *karšuuar*.[500] Perhaps the most complete explication of the concept can be found in the Pahlavi work, the *Bundahišn*, although the concept is mentioned in much earlier Avestan texts as well. According to this text, the middle *karšuuar*, *X'aniraθa*, was the largest, as well as the one inhabited by men. These *karšuuar*s are not strictly speaking 'islands'—separated by bodies of water—but were separated from each other by a variety of means, such as water, forest, or mountain, much like the modern continent.[501] Indeed, *X'aniraθa* was separated from the eastern and western *karšuuars* by two great rivers.[502] The *Bundahišn* describes a central *karšuuar* surrounded by six *karšuuars* on the east, south-east, south-west, west, north-west, and north-east.[503] This formulation seems designed to represent the geographical situation of Iran, as Iran was typically identified with the central *karšuuar* (See Figures 20–21). The concept of the seven-part world became important for Persian royal ideology, and was utilized by many native Iranian dynasties as part of their claim to be *Iranian* rulers.[504] Claims to rule over the 'seven part earth' can be found in royal discourse in many eras in Iran,[505] and in the context of Achaemenid ideology, the rhetoric would have served the Great Kings' claims to be Ahura Mazda's agents of reform on earth.[506] That the concept and importance of the sevenfold division can be reliably dated to at least the Achaemenid period and is not merely a later formation is due to several important archaeological finds: an Achaemenid period earring, a papyrus, and several of Darius the Great's inscriptions.[507]

---

[500] See *Yasna* XXXII.3 (Insler, *The Gathas of Zarathustra*, p. 45); *Gr. Bundahišn* Vb.7–11; VIII.1–7(Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 64–67, 90–93); *Sh. Bundahišn* XI.1–6 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 32–33); Cf. *Yašt* X.15–16, 64, 67, 85, 87, 133; (*Zend-Avesta II*, p. 292, 305; Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 81, 103, 105, 115, 117, 141); *Yašt* XIX.26, 82 (Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 161, 346); Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 133–137; Martin Schwartz, "The Old Eastern Iranian World View According to the Avesta," *Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), p. 643.
For royal connotations, see the argument set forth below as well as the following; Yima and the seven-part earth: *Yašt* XIX.31; *Shahnameh* I (p. 123, 238, etc.); *Vidēvdāt* I.4 (*The Zend-Avesta I*, p. 12).

[501] *Gr. Bund* VIII.4–5 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 90–91); Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 134; in any case, impassible, Cf. the *Dînâ-î Maînôg-î Khirad* IX.6 (*Pahlavi Texts III*, p. 36.)

[502] *Yašt* X.104 (Gershevitch, *Hymn to Mithra*, p. 125); Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 136.

[503] *Gr. Bundahišn* VIII.1–5 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsīh*, pp. 90–91); Cf. *Shorter Bundahišn* XI.1–6 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 32–33).

[504] A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Haft Kešvar," *Encyclopædia Iranica* XI (2003): pp. 519–522.

[505] Cf. Its use as an imperial trope in the *Shahnameh*; Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, vol. 1, p. 123, 238; vol. 2, p. 15, 372, etc.

[506] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 189–194.

[507] This was first pointed out by A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Darius' '*Haft Kišvar*'," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* Supp 10 (1985): pp. 239–246. The following argument for dating largely follows his demonstration.

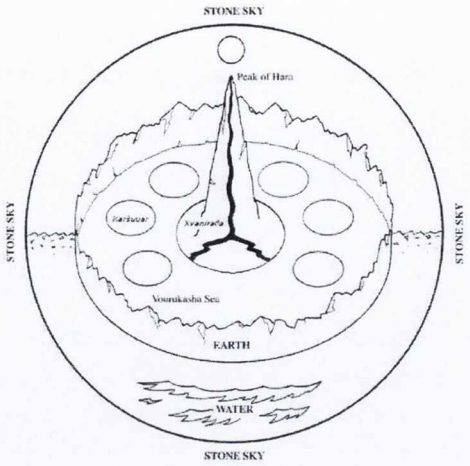


***Figure 20: Mythic Geography,* Karšuuars**
After Mary Boyce. *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism.* Textual Sources for the Study of Religion. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984, p. 17.

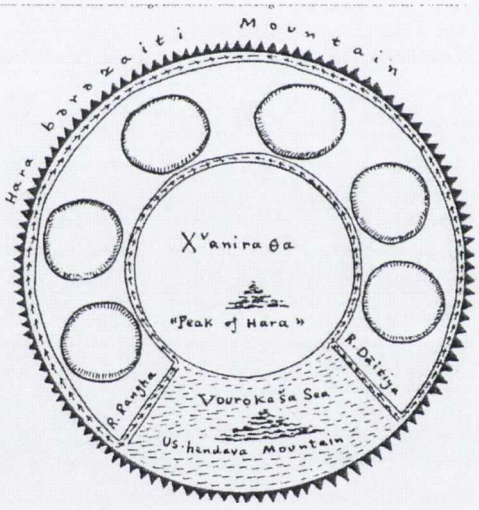


***Figure 21: Shahbazi's* Karšuuars**
From Shahbazi, A. Shapur. "Darius' *'Haft Kišvar'*." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* Supp 10 (1985), p. 241. Used by permission of the Deutsches Archäologisches Institut, Eurasien-Abteilung.

An Egyptian Aramaic papyri published by Kraeling contains a mysterious title for an Achaemenid commander, חפתחפתא.[508] Contrary to Kraeling's opinion, Henning argues that this title ultimately reflects an original Aramaic חפתחובאת, which would reflect a Persian title *Haftaxᵛwapata*, or 'protector of the seventh.'[509] Although this form is unattested, he argues a

[508] Emil G. Kraeling, *The Brooklyn Museum Aramaic Papyri: New Documents of the Fifth Century B.C. from the Jewish Colony at Elephantine* (New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1953), Papyrus 8, lines 2–3 (pp. 226–227).
[509] Walter B. Henning, "Ein persischer Titel im Altaramäischen," *Selected Papers II*, Acta Iranica 15 (Leiden: Brill, 1977), p. 139, 143–144; he holds this opinion despite Kraeling's objection to the middle ח (Kraeling, *Brooklyn*

similar form is found as a toponym on the Persian coast.[510] From this title he tentatively adduces that a sevenfold division of administrative districts was a typical part of Achaemenid administation,[511] and sees a parallel in the idea of *karšuuar*. While this conclusion is a bit over-reaching, at least an *ideological* aspect of administration seems to be implied by it. The ideological importance of seven, at least for Darius I, can be demonstrated by additional means.[512]

It has long been noted that in several of his self-depictions, Darius is surrounded by six supporters, and this has been compared to Ahura Mazda and his six *Amәša Spәntas*.[513] On his tomb Darius is flanked on both sides by six supporters,[514] although on his apology at Bisotun/Behistun only two figures stand behind the king. The accompanying inscription at Behistun, however, identifies Darius's six co-conspirators by name.[515] The numerical parallel could imply a deliberate parallel between Ahura Mazda and his six *Amәša Spәntas*, Darius and his six Supporters, and Iran and the world's subject six *karšuuar* (See Figure 22). While the parallels between the *Amәša Spәntas* and Darius have been challenged, as Shahbazi demonstrates, a gold Achaemenid earring seems to more clearly represent the import of a centre with six supports.

A gold Achaemenid earring held in the Boston Museum of Fine Art (and apparently elsewhere as well) has a winged figure in a disk surrounded by six figures in disks and another disk with a water lily in it (see Figure 23).[516] Shahbazi notes that the design on the earring matches Iranian geographical conceptions in several ways: both consist of a round plate, encircled by pointy objects (mountains or triangles), containing a large central region surrounded by six smaller regions.[517] The water lily on the earring symbolizes the mythical surrounding *Vouru.kaša* sea, which Shahbazi identifies with the "Sea which flows from Persia" (DZc)[518] (see Figure 24). That the image preserved on this earring has religious

---

Museum Papyri , p. 228). Note, however, Tuplin's hesitancy to accept Henning's conclusions (albeit while accepting his linguistic argument), Christopher Tuplin, "The Administration of the Achaemenid Empire," *Coinage and Administration in the Athenian and Persian Empires: the ninth Oxford Symposium on Coinage and Monetary History [held St. Hilda's College in April 1986]*, ed. Ian Carradice, BAR International Series 343 (Oxford: BAR, 1987), pp. 124–125.

510 Henning, "Ein persischer Titel im Altaramäischen," p. 140.

511 Henning, "Ein persischer Titel im Altaramäischen," p. 144.

512 Shahbazi, "Darius' '*Haft Kišvar*'," p. 246, understands Henning's article as confirmation of his own thesis (which is discussed further below).

513 Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 91–94; Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," p. 125.

514 Erich F. Schmidt, *Persepolis III: The Royal Tombs and Other Monuments*, Oriental Institute Publications 70 (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970), p. 86; see also Plates 19, 22, and 25.

515 §§ 68–69. Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 132; Schmitt, *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great*, pp. 72–73.

516 A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Darius' '*Haft Kišvar*'," pp. 239–240; on the water lily, p. 242.

517 Shahbazi, "Darius' '*Haft Kišvar*'," p. 242.

518 Kent, *Old Persian*, p. 147; also translated in Alan B. Lloyd, "Darius I in Egypt: Suez and Hibis," *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire*, ed. Christopher Tuplin (Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007), p. 106.

significance in the context of Iran is clear; its political import is made apparent when one realizes that the central winged figure is closely allied with the Great King in Achaemenid iconography.[519] In Shahbazi's opinion, a political connection also explains a comment by Plato in his *Laws* that Darius divided the empire into seven parts.[520] As far as the satrapal system organized by Darius is known, it did not consist of a sevenfold organization;[521] however, Plato could very well be transmitting a (misunderstood) part of royal ideology here, just as he repeated the Behistun story in the previous paragraph of *Laws*. In other words, it is a conceptual rather than an administrative division. Shahbazi believes that such an ideological division further explains the order of subject peoples listed on Darius's tomb (DNa §3).[522] Taking the geographical distribution and sequence of the peoples listed into account, Shahbazi finds seven conceptual regions in the list: which he labels as central, western, east/north east, 'borderlands', western lowlands, north/northwest, and the southern coast (see Figure 24);[523] this pattern parallels both the Iranian *Karšuuars* and a motif of a central figure surrounded by six supports. This earring, in connection with the other pieces of evidence, would seem to confirm, then, that the traditional Iranian royal claim to rule the seven-part earth played an important role in the ideology of Darius the Great.

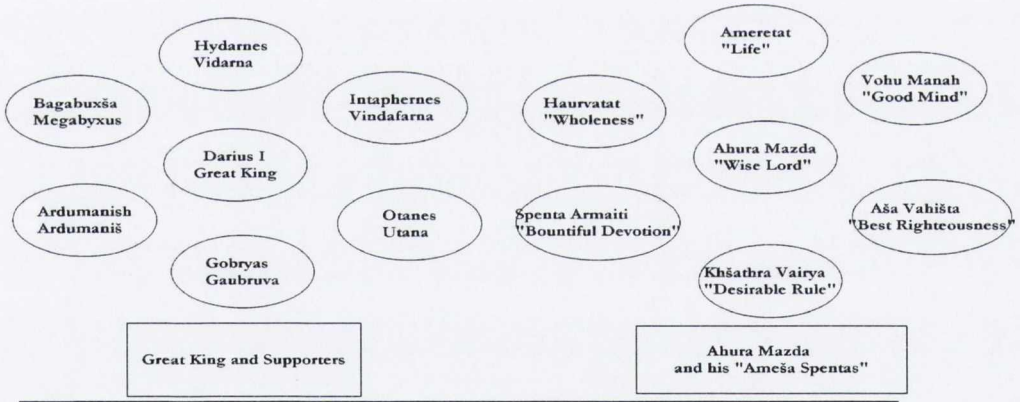


***Figure 22: Darius and His supporters and Ahura Mazda and his* Amәša Spәntas**
Author's Own.

[519] Indeed, Shahbazi argues that it symbolizes the Great King's *X'arənah*, or 'Kingly Fortune'; see Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol I," pp. 135–144; Shahbazi, "An Achaemenid Symbol II," pp. 119–147. Whatever the case about his identification, it cannot be denied that the symbol is ubiquitous on official inscriptions, reliefs, and seals.

[520] In his *Laws* III.695 (Plato, *Laws*, pp. 228–229); Shahbazi, "Haft Kešvar," p. 243.

[521] The organization of the empire is hotly debated, including the nature of the satrapies. See George G. Cameron, "The Persian Satrapies and Related Matters," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 32.1/2 (1973): pp. 47–56; Tuplin, "The Administration of the Achaemenid Empire," pp. 113–127; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander* , pp. 63–67, 388–421; J. M. Cook, "The Rise of the Achaemenids and Establishment of their Empire," *The Cambridge History of Iran*, ed. Ilya Gershevitch, vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985), pp. 244–267; for a general and convenient overview of theories of the Persian Empire as it impacted Yehud, see Fried, *The Priest and the Great King*, pp. 2–7.

[522] Kent, *Old Persian*, pp. 137–138.

[523] Shahbazi, "Darius' '*Haft Kišvar*'," pp. 244–245.

If one takes the current form of the Ethiopic in 77:3, the early Iranian map bears striking resemblances to the Enochic one. A central (important) region is surrounded by six other regions, and two religiously significant mountains (Hara/Ushendava and Zion/Sinai respectively) appear in the centre and on the periphery. The idea of a sevenfold conceptual division has been altered to a Jerusalem-centered one from an Iran-centered one. However, as noted above, the extant Aramaic of verse three probably has two distinct divisions, a four-fold and a three-fold. Unfortunately, the lacuna in 4Q209, 23, lines 8–9, do not seem to allow much confidence in how this division was understood. The appearance of most of the word 'seven' in line 9 could imply a similar sevenfold division as reconstructed above, or it could be part of one of a tripartite scheme (as Milik and Tigchelaar and Martinez seem to understand it).[524] However, although very different in wording, commentators agree that the 'general sense' of vv. 2–3 are the same in both the Ethiopic and Aramaic versions,[525] presenting the possibility that an Ethiopic's conflation of three+four still preserves the intended meaning of the Aramaic. Yet, a more solid basis for a division is seven islands in verse 8.

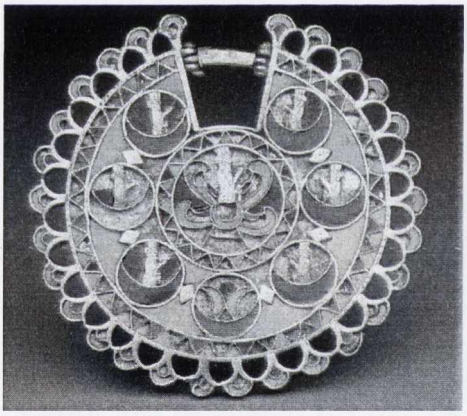


Figure 23: Achaemenid Earring
BMFA.1971.256. Used by Permission of the BMFA. © Boston Museum of Fine Arts

[524] Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b}," pp. 160–161.
[525] Tigchelaar and Martinez, "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b}," p. 161; Knibb, *Ethiopic Book of Enoch*, p. 180.

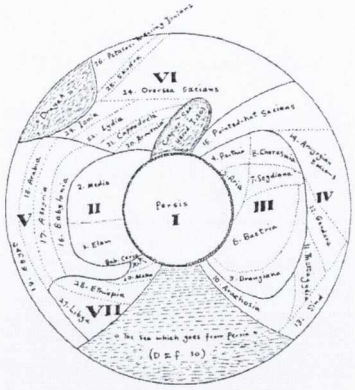


***Figure 24: Shahbazi's rendering of Darius's* Haftkešuuar**
From Shahbazi, A. Shapur. "Darius' *Haft Kišvar*." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* Supp 10 (1985): p. 244. Used by Permission of the Deutsches Archäologisches Institut, Eurasien-Abteilung.

The parallel adduced here is very slim, but the possibility that *1 Enoch* 77 echoes the Iranian *karšuuars* must be set within a context of Persian imperialism and of developing views of cosmology in Second Temple Judaism.

The Achaemenid kings inherited a rich tradition of royal ideology, one strain of which extends well into the Indo-Iranian past. The various mythic and religious traditions associated with kingship (and in particular, the first king, *Yima*) appear to have undergone a distinctive development in Iran.[526] Despite the obscurity of the Indo-Iranian origins of the Yima myths, he has long functioned as the symbol of ideal kingship, despite a tradition of his hubris and fall.[527] The name 'Yima' is attested in Persia.[528] Two aspects of this royal ideology are of relevance to *1 Enoch* 77: the sevenfold division of the world and the paradisal nature of Iranian rule. Yima has two connections to the *karšuuars*: as the 'king of the seven part earth' (*Zāmyād Yašt* 31)[529] and potentially as responsible for the population of the six outer *karšuuars*.[530] Although there is variety in the traditions associated with his name and the other

---

[526] Cf. the appearance of a king of a paradisal earth (*Yim*) in the *Zāmyād Yašt* 31–33 (Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 174–185). Yima, although third in the *Zāmyād Yašt*, had Indo-Iranian heritage as the first man/first king/first mortal. E.g., Lincoln, "The Lord of the Dead," pp. 224–241. The *Vidēvdāt* II.1–19 retains Yima as first as well. Cf. Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 92–96; Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 18; Steven O'Brien, "Eschatology," *Encyclopedia of Indo-European Culture*, eds. James Mallory and Charles J. Adams (London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1997), pp. 180–183; Helmut Humbach, "Yama/Yima/Jamšēd, King of Paradise of the Iranians," *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 26 (2002): pp. 68–77.

[527] Cf. the literary manifestations of Yim (Jamšid); Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, vol. 1, pp. 131–140; vv. 9 and 17 of Kayyam's *Rubaiyat*, Robert Graves and Omar Ali-Shah, *The Rubaiyyat of Omar Khayaam: a new translation with critical commentaries* (London: Cassell, 1967), p. 51, 53.

[528] The name 'Yima' appears in the onomastica preserved in the Persepolis tablets (in the Elamite forms *Yamakka* and *Yamakšedda*, the latter of which corresponds to Old Persian **Yama-xšaita*, the equivalent of modern *Jamšid*. See the index and linguistic explanation at Hallock, *Persepolis Fortification Tablets*, pp. 771–772. The relevant tablets are PF 403, 808–9, 890–95, 1025, 1774, 1795, 1833–34, 1943, 1961, 1997.

[529] Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, p. 174.

[530] Although not mentioning the *karšuuars* directly, *Vidēvdāt* II.8–19 (*Zend-Avesta I*, pp. 12–15) tells of Yima's increase of world-size three times, and three times implies that Yima added to the territory's population (§11,

mythical kings, the Achaemenids would have likely seized upon the positive and paradisical elements in the Yima myth (rather than the demonic aspects which he came to have in India). Several scholars have attempted to understand Persepolis as connected with an annual festival associated with Yima, although this is now generally rejected.[531] It is possible that the mysterious *Miθrakana-/Mihragan* festival known from Greek sources has some connection with Yima and kingly ideology;[532] however, the overtones of paradise in Achaemenid ideology are well attested on other grounds.

It is well-known that the word *paradise* comes from Iran, and that the Greeks were acquainted with the Great King's patronage of walled 'paradises.'[533] In fact, it appears that both Pasargadae and Persepolis integrated elaborate gardens into their construction, as did the area below Darius's inscription at Behistun.[534] Beyond concrete practical considerations, these paradises appear to have intentionally carried political and religious connotations.[535] Potential connotations include Yima's *var* (or enclosure, related to the etymology of the word *paradise* itself), the Ahuranic (i.e., perfect) creation, and the empire itself.[536] Other similar royal political-religious ideologies were certainly exploited by the Great Kings (like Xerxes's

---

15, 19). If there is any significance to the numbers given for the increases (1/3, 2/3, 3/3), they add up to 6/3, perhaps referring to six *karšuuars*. However, *Sh. Bundahišn* XVII.4 places the population of the outer *karšuuar* in the reign of *Taxma Urupi*, and XV.27 mentions it in no reign at all (*Pahlavi Texts I*, p. 62, 58). The mythology of these early kings is quite fragmentary, however. Cf. the kingly geneology in XXXI.1–5 (pp. 130–131). For discussions of this problem, see Fr. Windischmann, *Zoroastrische Studien: Abhandlungen zur Mythologie und Sagengeschichte des Alten Iran*, Ed. Fr. Spiegel (Berlin: Dümmler's Verlagsbuchhandlung, 1863), pp. 28, 200–201; Boyce, *HZ I*, p. 104, 93.

[531] For a history of the debate see Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, "Nowruz in Persepolis," *Achaemenid History VII: Through Travelers' Eyes*, eds. Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Jan W. Drijvers (Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991), pp. 173–201; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 183–186.

[532] Strabo *Geography* XI.14.9 (Strabo, *Geography V*, p. 331); the Islamic historian Al-Biruni also discusses late traditions: Al-Biruni, *Chronology of Ancient Nations*, pp. 208–209; cf. the discussions in Wikander, *Vayu*, p. 176; Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 371–377.

[533] For philological considerations, see Brown, *Legacy of Iranian Imperialism*, pp. 119–151; for a review of evidence, see Christopher Tuplin, *Achaemenid Studies*, Historia 99 (Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 1996), pp. 80–131; Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, p. 99.

[534] David Stronach, *Pasargadae: a Report on the Excavations* (Oxford: Clarendon, 1978), pp. 107–110; cf. Rémy Boucharlat, "Pasargadae," *Iran* 40 (2002): p. 280, 282; Diodorus Sicculus *History* II.13, XIX.21 (Diodorus Sicculus, *Library of History*, trans. C. H. Oldfather, *Diodorus of Sicily I*, LCL ed. [Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1989]; Diodorus Sicculus, *Library of History*, trans. Russel M. Geer, *Diodorus of Sicily IX*, LCL ed. [London: Heinemann, 1947], p. 289); W. M. Sumner, "Achaemenid Settlement in the Persepolis Plain," *American Journal of Archaeology* 90.1 (1986): p. 27.

[535] Anders Hultgård, "Das Paradies: vom Park des Perserkönigs zum Ort der Seligen," *La Cité de Dieu/Die Stadt Gottes. 3. Symposium Strasbourg, Tübingen, Uppsala 19.–23. September 1998 in Tübingen*, eds. Martin Hengel, et al., Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 129 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2000), pp. 1–26. Adela Yarbro Collins, *Cosmology and Eschatology in Jewish and Christian Apocalypticism*, SJSJ 50 (Leiden: Brill, 1996), p. 31, would deny any significance to this.

[536] A very good discussion within a broader historical perspective (albeit with a particular emphasis on the Achaemenids) is available in Thomas T. Allsen, *The Royal Hunt in Eurasian History* (Philadelphia: Univ of Pennsylvania Press, 2006), pp. 34–51. From an alternative perspective, this issue is also explored by Bruce Lincoln, *Religion, Empire and Torture: the Case of Achaemnian Persia with a Postscript on Abu Ghraib* (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 2007), pp. 78–83.

claim to be the eschatological savior),[537] and the general tenor of the official inscriptions and reliefs indisputably impart a sense of serene order all in the name of Ahuramazda.[538] Even accounting for the standards of ancient inscriptions, Darius's apology at Behistun places remarkable emphasis on his divine election (he cites the 'protection' of Ahura Mazda or the like 62 times,[539] not counting other mentions of the god's name). When all these elements are considered together, an ideology of divine fertility and peace beyond that typical of the Ancient Near East appears to be part and parcel of the Great Kings' ideology.

The *karšuuar*'s context in specifically royal ideology is important for the way in which the Ethiopic Enochic corpus constructs its understanding of the divine administration of the *cosmos*. If this little detail is accepted, it serves as one brick in the edifice of a heavenly economy remarkably patterned on the Achaemenid empire.[540] It is worth noting with Milik that the scope of the geography in the *Book of Luminaries* is large, corresponding more or less with the scope of the Achaemenid Empire.[541] Although in the extant text of the Ethiopic book this information interrupts the astronomical information on solar and lunar movements, it fits within a broadly Enochic attempt to describe the divine economy *vis-à-vis* the Persian Empire: just as the 'luminaries' follow the Lord's intricate commands, enabling regular seasons (and calendars), so his control extends over vast horizons.

Conclusions

While the main focus of scholarly appraisal of the *Astronomical Book* has been on the Mesopotamian precedents, an analysis of elements related to an Iranian milieu can also prove suggestive. A possible link with geographical traditions and royal Iranian traditions dovetails with the possible overall import of Iranian imperial ideology and administration for the developing views of the cosmos and YHWH's heavenly empire in Second Temple Judaism and apocalyptic specifically. In any case, these details plausibly imply at least a modicum of acquaintance with Iranian ideas in the earliest levels of Enochic literature.

---

[537] Cf. the explication in Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 173–209; on the likelihood of such early constructs, see Albert de Jong, "The Contribution of the Magi," pp. 85–99.

[538] Explored in detail in Root, *The King and Kingship*. Kuhrt, while approving, was a bit skeptical. See Kuhrt, "The Achaemenid Concept of Kingship," pp. 156–160; However, now see from a different perspective: Margaret Cool Root, "Reading Persepolis in Greek : gifts of the Yauna," *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire*, ed. Christopher Tuplin (Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007), pp. 177–224; cf. Briant, *From Cyrus to Alexander*, pp. 177–178; John Boardman, *Persia and the West: An Archaeological Investigation of the Genesis of Achaemenid Art* (London: Thames & Hudson, 2000), p. 19, 77, 123–134, 224–225.

[539] In the Babylonian version.

[540] See the Excursus: On the Watchers; perhaps this could be connected to the Ancient Near Eastern diplomatic practice of kings displaying their wealth, as suggested by Newsom, "Development of *1 Enoch* 6–19," p. 324; cf. Wright, *Origin of Evil Spirits*, pp. 43–44.

[541] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 17

The Birth of Noah/ Noahic Fragment (106–107)

1 Enoch 106–107 is generally considered an independent unit which perhaps derives from a longer narrative.[542] The fragment's position is old, since it follows the *Epistle* in 4Q204.[543] A similar (longer) narrative also appears in the *Genesis Apocryphon*,[544] although the birth narrative itself is not extant. Nickelsburg considers this section to be a concluding summary of the "whole gamut of Enochic eschatological thought," which served to encourage the reader, who was in the same historical position *vis-à-vis* God's wrath as Lamech.[545] This view is more probable than Milik's contention that 106–107 represent a transition between the Enochic Corpus and the lost Noahic Corpus,[546] since this section summarizes the Enochic tradition so well, and since the phrase "words of the Book of Noah" appear in the *Genesis Apocryphon* after the birth narrative.[547] Whatever the details of the sources used by the author of this section, it most likely dates between the second and first centuries B.C.E. due to the evidence of the Aramaic fragments.[548]

The birth of Noah in *1 Enoch* 106–107 is described as a profoundly strange incident, requiring the explanation of the departed Enoch. When born, Noah's

> body was whiter than snow and redder than a rose, his hair was all white and like white wool and curly. Glorious was his face. When he opened his eyes, the house shone like the sun (106:2; Cf. vv.10–11).[549]

He also immediately praised the Lord (v. 3, 11). This abnormality causes Lamech and Methuselah to suspect that Noah is the illegitimate child of a Watcher and to seek an answer from Enoch 'at the ends of the earth' (v. 8). This situation enables Enoch to recount the scenario of the Watchers (vv. 13–14), the Flood and Noah's role in it (vv. 15–18), and the future (final) destruction of evil (vv. 106:19–107:1). The basic outline of this scenario is paralleled in the *Genesis Apocryphon* (1QapGen, 1Q19, 1Q20, 4Q537, 4Q538), although the manuscripts are very fragmentary.[550]

While the section contains much material which occurs previously in *1 Enoch*, the details of Noah's birth are new. The child is described as numinous and precocious, with white and red body, white hair, glowing face and eyes, and the ability to speak from birth. The motif of an abnormal pregnancy and precocious child is widespread in folklore, although

---

[542] Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, p. 1, 4; Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 539.
[543] Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, vol 1, pp. 418–421. For a convenient overview of the manuscript evidence, see Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, p. 17, 20–25, 614–616.
[544] Column II, Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, Vol. 1, pp. 28–31.
[545] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 540.
[546] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, pp. 55–57; Cf. The comments in Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 541–542.
[547] Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, p. 611. It should be remembered that the existence of an independent *Book of Noah* is itself dubious. Cf. Dimant, "Two 'Scientific' Fictions," pp. 231–242.
[548] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, p. 542; Alexander, "Enochic Literature and the Bible," p. 69, appears to date the section to ca. 130 B.C.E.; Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, p. 616.
[549] Following the text in Nickelsburg and Vanderkam, *1 Enoch*, p. 164.
[550] Martínez and Tigchelaar, eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition*, vol. 1, pp. 26–49.

the motif does not occur in the Hebrew Bible.[551] Rabbinic legends portray Moses as having an extraordinary gestation.[552] Legends of Zoroaster portray an unusual pregnancy and precocious signs.[553] A parallel passage in *2 Enoch* 71:1–23 combines both an unusual pregnancy with an unusual child, although the child is not described like Noah is in this passage.[554] While the *child* Noah is remarkable, there is no indication in either the *1 Enoch* text or its expansion in the *Genesis Apocryphon* that the *pregnancy* was in anyway abnormal. It is noteworthy, therefore, that only the physical appearance of the child itself is unusual in *1 Enoch*. The particularly notable aspects of the child—white hair and glowing face—are otherwise only used in Jewish literature to describe G-d himself or his representative.[555] Thus, Nickelsburg suggests a divine characterization of Noah in the passage, but one which is merely in service of the revelation of the section.[556] Similarly Huggins considers it to emphasize Noah's divine role.[557] In a brief note, Bailey suggests that the name of Noah may be related to either an Akkadian or Hurrian god; Koehler-Baumgartner seems to agree and consider it assimiliated to the Hebrew נוח, so the image could be an old vestige of the Noah story which appears only here.[558] Stuckenbruck understands the divine imagery to be denying traditions that giants survived the flood by claiming that Noah was not in fact a giant.[559] While this passage does deny Noah's evil pedigree, this does not explain the unique combination of the red and the white skin, white hair, and shining eyes. However, this

---

[551] Louis H. Feldman, "Josephus' Portrait of Moses," *The Jewish Quarterly Review* 82.3/4 (1992): pp. 285–328; Paul G. Brewster, "Some Parallels between the "Fêng-Shên-Yên I" and the "Shahnameh" and the Possible Influence of the Former upon the Persian Epic," *Asian Folklore Studies* 31.1 (1972): p. 118; William A. Lessa, "'Discover-of-the-Sun': Mythology as a Reflection of Culture," *Journal of American Folklore* 79.311 (1966): p. 37. Cf: Lynn Holden, *Forms of Deformity*, JSOTSS 131 (Sheffield: Scheffield Academic Press, 1991) and Thompson, *Motif-Index* , vol. 5, p. 408 (T585). In his commentary, Nickelsburg discusses a number of parallels, but not to the birth itself, Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 542–544; George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Patriarchs Who Worry about their Wives. A Haggadic Tendency in the Genesis Apocryphon," *Biblical Perspectives: Early Use and Interpretation of the Bible in Light of the Dead Sea Scrolls*, eds. Michael E. Stone and Esther G. Chazon, vol. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 28 (Leiden: Brill, 1998), pp. 144–145.

[552] Rabbinic legends appear to have seen Moses's role presaged by an unusual pregnancy; see Feldman, "Josephus' Portrait of Moses," pp. 301–302. Cf: Ginzberg, *Legends of the Jews*, vol. 2, pp. 262–265. White hair is not one of the signs he mentions.

[553] See the legends in *Dēnkard*, Book VII.II.47–55 and III.1–19 (*Pahlvai Texts V*, pp. 28–30, 35–40); Cf. *Selections of Zad-Sparam* XIII.1–16 (*Pahlavi Texts V*, pp. 138–143). Anders Hultgård, "Das Judentum in der hellenistisch-römischen Zeit und die iranische Religion: ein religionsgeschichtliches Problem," *Principat* 19.1 (1979): p. 551, finds this to be an acceptible parallel. Of his discussion of numinous children, only one (Zāl) has white hair. See Ehsan Yarshater, "The Feared Child in Iranian Mythology," *K. R. Cama Oriental Institute Internation Congress Proceedings (5–8 January 1989)* (Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Insitute, 1991), pp. 65–68.

[554] Francis I. Andersen, "2 (Slavonic Apocalypse of) Enoch," *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*, ed. James H Charlesworth, vol. 1 (New York: Doubleday, 1983), pp. 204–206.

[555] Cf. Holden, *Forms of Deformity*, p. 97; Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, pp. 626–627. The only other instance of which the author is aware is *Jubilees* 23:25, which uses the motif of grey-haired children as the symbol for the nadir of decreasing human longevity, which occurs just before the *eschaton*.

[556] Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 543–544.

[557] Ronald V. Huggins, "Noah and the Giants: a Response to John C. Reeves," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 114.1 (1995): pp. 109–110.

[558] See Bailey's brief note in Jack P. Lewis, "Noah and the Flood: In Jewish, Christian and Muslim Tradition," *Biblical Archaeologist* 47.4 (1984): p. 225; Cf. Koehler and Baumgartner, *HAL*, pp. 684–685.

[559] Stuckenbruck, *1 Enoch 91–108*, pp. 633–635.

particular combination of physical features and normal pregnancy is paralleled by the story of the birth of the Persian hero Dastān, better known as Zāl-i-Zar or just Zāl, as recounted by Firdausī in his *Shāhnāmeh*.

When Zāl is born, he has 'beauty like the world-illuminating sun,' 'loveliness of face,' 'hair as white as snow,' and 'ruddy cheeks.'[560] There appears to have been some ambivalence in the Persian traditions towards the appearance Zāl's skin, as some sources depict him with dark body and white face, white skin and red face, or red and white skin.[561] When the father, Sām, learns of the child's appearance, he assumes the child has a demonic paternity and abandons him in the wilderness. For the present purposes, the physical features of the child are most relevant. In both stories, the child is described having a radiant face, a strange ambivalence between a red and white body, and white hair, and in both the father suspects demonic illegitimacy. While it is true that albinos are often considered suspicious in many pre-modern societies,[562] neither the description of Noah nor of Zāl can properly be described as Albino.[563] In both cases, the character involved in the story is situated in a context connected with wisdom. Noah, in the milieu of the Enochic and Noahic traditions, is associated with ancient revealed wisdom; Zāl became in Persian literature a 'personification of wisdom.'[564] Perhaps most interestingly, Zāl became a 'last bastion of hope' for the Iranian monarchy, a fitting parallel for the hero of the deluge.[565]

While this parallel is interesting, it is problematic for two reasons: the date of the *Shāhnāmeh*, and the folkloric nature of the motifs. It is certain that Firdausī's version of the story dates between 936–1026 C.E.,[566] and other known written antecedents to it still appear to only date to the tenth century.[567] While Firdausī's poetic form is very late, much of the legendary material contained within the poem is very ancient; parallels and allusions to the stories fleshed out by Firdausī are found in the Avesta and in the *Bundahišn*, as well as some Indian sources.[568] Indeed, the Rustam cycle, of which the Zāl stories are a part, is generally

---

[560] Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, Vol. 1, pp. 240–248.
[561] Mahmoud Omidsalar, "Rostam's Seven Trials and the Logic of Epic Narrative in the Shahnama," *Asian Folklore Studies* 60.2 (2001): p. 267; Firdausī describes Zāl as having a 'sunlike face' and 'blood-red cheeks', Firdausī, *Shāhnāma*, p. 247.
[562] Cf the study by Alexander H. Krappe, "Albinos and Albinism in Iranian Tradition," *Folklore* 55.4 (1944): pp. 170–174.
[563] Omidsalar, "Rostam's Seven Trials," p. 267; P. Froggatt, "The Albinism of Timur, Zāl, and Edward the Confessor," *Medical History* 6 (1962): pp. 334–335; Contra Krappe, "Albinos and Albinism in Iranian Tradition," p. 172.
[564] Omidsalar, "Rostam's Seven Trials," p. 265.
[565] A. Shapur Shahbazi, "Zāl," *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2004): n.p., http://www.iranica/newsite/.
[566] Morrison, "Persian Literature," p. 22; Cf. Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis, *Persian Myths* (London: British Museum, 1993), p. 29.
[567] Morrison, "Persian Literature," p. 16, 21.
[568] Morrison, "Persian Literature," pp. 39–40; Curtis, *Persian Myths*, p. 10, 24.

agreed to have been adopted in Parthia from the Saka/Scythians;[569] nevertheless, there are hints of a poorly remembered Achaemenid history.[570] Colarusso would suggest that the whiteness motif is of Indo-European origin due to Irish and Germanic parallels.[571] However, Davis sees the whiteness of Zāl as the mythic reflex of racial tensions from the Indo-Iranian invasions.[572] Thus, while it is difficult to reconstruct early forms of the myths with any certainty from the *Shāhnāmeh*, it is likely that many of the discrete stories in it are quite old. Widengren's suggestion that this detail is evidence of a 'Zurvanite' influence on Judaism is even more tenuous, as Zurvanism most probably did not exist as a separate tradition.[573] If the hero's description is indeed an old Indo-European motif, Colarusso's suggestion that this characteristic was related to the possession of 'prophetic powers' is certainly provocative in the context of this Enochic passage.[574]

The other difficulty is the possibility of a common folkloric impulse rather than a direct borrowing. Yet, while the story of Dastān/Zāl clearly contains the reworking of folkloric motifs, such a context appears to be lacking in *1 Enoch*. Firdausī's story includes the common motif of the abandoned and rescued child, which is completely absent in 106–107: consultation of Enoch precludes the child's abandonment. The details of Zāl's appearance appear to be designed to highlight his role as wise (rather than purely martial) hero, whereas the details of Noah's appearance take back seat to the need for consultation with Enoch. While it certainly is possible that folkstories circulated about the birth of Noah, some of which may have found their way into the *Genesis Apocryphon* and 1Q19, it is also possible these texts are based on *1 Enoch*. Indeed, the details of Noah's birth do not seem to reappear in any other early Jewish or Christian exegesis of the Flood.[575] When *1 Enoch* 106–107 was composed as a conclusion to the Enochic Corpus as it stood at the time, the author could have picked up the details of Noah's birth from popular folk traditions, invented them himself, or have borrowed them from a Persian source. It is impossible to tell for certain, but considering the Persian motifs which are evidenced throughout the previous Enochic Corpus and in other more or less contemporary Qumranic Documents, the possibility of

---

[569] Morrison, "Persian Literature," p. 23; Hintze, *Zamyād-Yašt*, pp. 34–35; Brewster, "Some Parallels," p. 115; Shahbazi, "Zāl," n.p.

[570] Morrison, "Persian Literature," p. 29; Curtis, *Persian Myths*, p. 56; Cf. the speculative articles, Parivash Jamzadeh, "An Assyrian Motif in the Shāhnāma," *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): pp. 167–172, and Jamzadeh, "A Shahnama Passage in an Achaemenid Context," pp. 383–388, which attempt to see early historical settings in some of the motifs.

[571] John Colarusso, "The Hunters (Indo-European Proto-myths: The Storm God, The Good King, The Mighty Hunter)," *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 36.3–4 (2008): pp. 448–449.

[572] Dick Davis, "Rustam-i Dastan," *Iranian Studies* 32.2 (1999): pp. 233–234.

[573] See his comments, Widengren, "Iran and Israel," p. 157.

[574] Colarusso, "The Hunters," p. 449.

[575] See the overview of the material in Jack P. Lewis, *A Study of the Interpretation of Noah and the Flood in Jewish and Christian Literature* (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1978), particularly chapters II, III, and VI.

Persian borrowing is quite plausible. However, until an older parallel than Firdausī is found, it must remain only an intriguing possibility. One could argue for the reverse influence of the Enochic passage on Firdausī, perhaps via the Manichaean dissemination of the *Book of Giants*,[576] but there is little evidence of the eastern dissemination of the five main sections of the *Ethiopic Book of Enoch*.

Conclusions

The *1 Enochic* Corpus represents an extended period of time and a variety of authors, albeit within what was most likely a continuous tradition. It is significant that in each of the major sections of the Ethiopic text of *1 Enoch* discussed above parallels or points of contact were found with the Iranian traditions, most of which implied the reinterpretation of native Judaean ideas. The *Book of Watchers* paralleled the negative *Kulturentstehungsmythos* and the eschatological binding of a (dragon-)demon. The *Parables* evidenced influence in the concepts of the weighing of souls, yet much more remains to be done. The earliest work, the *Astronomical Book*, modified the concept of horizontal solar gates and used a seven-part geographic scheme. Finally, the *Noachic Fragment* offered an intriguing possibility with Noah's white hair and glorious visage. None of the parallels are in themselves certain, but the number of parallels and structural considerations within a single tradition suggest that they may be more than mere coincidences. A more thorough look at the Enochic traditions with an eye towards Iran remains an important critical disideratum. Preliminarily, however, it would appear that the authors of the corpus as currently extant had access to, and were influenced by, Persian traditions.

Conclusion

Only a small number of texts have been considered here, and even these were only analyzed in part; no doubt the overall picture presented will vary as more texts are analyzed. Yet, the few parallels discussed here imply some very suggestive avenues for further research. A preliminary summary of the findings of this chapter will prepare for the subsequent chapter's look at the significance of the present chapter's findings.

The small number of analyses attempted here evince several potentially important trends. First, most of the texts could be best analyzed in the context of multiple traditions; it was not always a matter of *either/or*, but often of *both/and*. Ezekiel 37 may have been partially

---

[576] Milik, *Books of Enoch*, p. 299; Cf: Walter B. Henning, "The Book of Giants," *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 11.1 (1943): p. 66, frag. D; John C. Reeves, *Jewish Lore in Manichaean Cosmology: Studies in the Book of Giants Tradition*, HUCM 14 (Cincinnati: Hebrew Union College, 1992), p. 22, 29, 195, 208–209, is of the opinion that large amounts of Manichaeism is drawn from Jewish sources.

inspired by Mesopotamian reliefs, but subsequent audiences were more likely to have Iranian themes in mind. Daniel 2 likely evidenced dependency upon an Iranian oracle which itself utilized a variety of motifs, potentially some from Greece. *The Book of Watchers* used Iranian concepts to rehabilitate older Canaanite mythology. These examples, then, suggest that in any investigation of influence few cases will be discrete, 'pure' transfers from one context into another.

Second, every analysis above highlighted how traditions were re-interpreted. This was evident in the use of foreign material, native materials, and in the reception of the materials. Ezekiel 38–39 transformed prophetic threats against Israel into a future promise of protection while potentially inverting Median rhetoric. Daniel 2 borrowed the language of the Day of the Lord to color an Iranian oracle, in the process reinventing the term's meaning. *The Book of Watchers* transformed its understanding of Genesis in dialogue with a number of traditions, including Iranian ones.

Third, many of the contexts proposed for the parallels were related to Iranian royal ideology. The source behind Dan 2 was a reaction to the loss of Iranian sovereignty. The concept of the Watchers was modelled after Achaemenid functionaries. Some of the mysterious geographical traditions in the *Astronomical Book* potentially derived from Achaemenid geographical rhetoric. A supplementary bonus to this result is the potential of alleviating the difficulty inherent in using 'religious' sources from Iran; as a rule, material pertaining to the Great Kings is more securely dated and more widely attested. Subsequent research into the effects of Imperial administration on Yehud and the Torah could prove to be highly illuminated by such a trajectory.

For each individual text discussed, the criteria for influence were continually considered;[577] dating (criterion 1); context (criterion 2); relative structural logic (criterion 3); a space or 'hook' for the foreign element (criterion 4); discrete, distinctive elements (criterion 5). As it was possible, an attempt at assessing the relative interpretive or structural change effected by the proposed instance of influence was made. However, a broader canvass in the context of Second Temple Judaism as a whole is needed to better consider the sixth criterion of structural and interpretive change. The next chapter will attempt to situate the individual elements here considered into an intellectual and sociological context in which such changes can be profitably explored.

---

[577] See the Prolegomena.

V

An Apocalyptic Hermeneutic

INTROIT: THE PROPOSAL

After showing that the time is ripe for a reassessment of Iranian influence, discussing the nature of the Iranian evidence, setting the stage in the Achaemenid Empire, applying principles of Oral Theory, and tentatively analyzing several passages, it remains to assess the framework in which these considerations may be applied to the continuing study of Judaean apocalyptic and of Iranian influences. As argued in the Prolegomena, an understanding of influence requires consideration of the systemic import of any proposed details analyzed, rather than leaving them as a list of isolated instances of borrowing. Having amassed a number of potential discrete parallels, a method for understanding their significance is needed. The best way, it is here argued, to understand and pursue both the micro- and macroscopic questions is through appeal to an *Apocalyptic Hermeneutic*. This Apocalyptic Hermeneutic has two substantial contributions: the relationships between apocalypticism, millenarianism, and the apocalypses and the 'ground zero' for Iranian influences in Second Temple Judaism.

Six criteria for determining influence are proposed in the Prolegomena. Chapter I demonstrates the existence of Iranian material pre-dating apocalyptic (criterion 1). Chapters II and III present a historical context for interaction (criterion 2). In the analyses of Chapter IV, discrete elements are analyzed in terms of structural contexts in foreign and Judaean sources, as well as for plausible ways they were utilized (criteria 3–5). The final criterion—interpretive change—remains outstanding. The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic helps to fulfill that criterion.

A number of the analyses pointed to the importance of the reinterpretation of previous Judaean traditions for their interaction with Iranian ideas. It is therefore proposed here that the best place to envision Iranian influence on Jewish apocalyptic is within the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic.

The 'hermeneutic' of the term 'the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic' can be defined as

> *the point of departure and reflexive personal alignment from which, through which, and by which an individual and/or community receives, understands, interprets, and re-creates traditions, circumstances and ultimately worldview, involving some specific content which supports favored methodologies and media, while occurring with specific reference to a real social context. This may but need not be held exclusively of other hermeneutics by the same individual or group.*[1]

This type of hermeneutic is thus differentiated from a worldview by being a mechanism which both creates and comes out of a worldview (via the well-known

[1] Author's own definition for present purposes.

'hermeneutic circle');[2] a worldview is more comprehensive and may utilize multiple hermeneutics in its self-creation, sustenance, and evolution. Two important aspects are included in the definition above: methodologies and media, each deserving some comment.

The importance of 'methodology' for intellectual thought is axiomatic for the academy, and the results of the application of differing methods upon the same questions can be startling. Very different results are created by application of Rabbinic methods of *midrash* to a text than application of Philonic ideas. It is useful in the context of the human life-world, however, to broaden the concept of methodology from merely the self-conscious application of methods within a particular field to the strategies which people adopt for reception, understanding, and re-interpretation in their lives. In the life of an individual or a community, the application or non-application of ideas or traditions to daily life is as significant as purely 'intellectual' methodologies. A community which interprets texts as socially binding laws will differ significantly from one which interprets them as ennobling myths even in the nitty-gritty of life. This sort of application deserves to be included in considerations of methodology. The use of the term 'methodology' is meant, therefore, to include intellectual and pragmatic 'methods' and values.

Questions of media were discussed at length above, and they hold import here again. The medium or media in which one chooses to respond to a tradition or situation reverberates in the life of the individual and community—does the catalyst prompt a speech, a text, a mosaic floor? Perhaps it involves the carving of a new community, which again could be accomplished via several media; perhaps it prompts the creation of a previously non-existent genre or medium. The question of the media preferred or ignored for the purposes of hermeneutics ought to be integrated into the way the interpretive process is understood. An individual or group which considers textual study and creation the dominant paradigm will surely differ significantly from one which prefers oral modes—or, indeed, even from one which prefers an architectural response.

It stands as obvious that hermeneutics as defined above will vary drastically between peoples in their sophistication, their self-reflection, and their comprehensiveness. They need not be based purely on rational-logical arguments or principles, and even those which utilize such elements are likely to include some elements (at least) which Fisher would characterize as 'narrative' or 'the logic of good reasons.'[3] In other words, a hermeneutic includes reason,

---

[2] E.g., J. I. H. McDonald, "The Hermenutical Circle," *A Dictionary of Biblical Interpretation*, eds. R. J. Coggins and J. L. Houlden (London: SCM, 1990), pp. 281–282; Lawrence K. Schmidt, *Understanding Hermeneutics* (Stocksfield: Acumen, 2006), p. 14.

[3] Walter R. Fisher, *Human Communication as Narration: Toward a Philosophy of Reason, Value, and Action.*, Studies in Rhetoric/Communication (Columbia, SC: Univ of SC Press, 1987). Carl L. Bankston III, "Rationality, Choice and the Religious Economy: the Problem of Belief," *Review of Religious Research* 43.4 (2002): pp. 311–325 also

values, and actions. While the formulation above is an intellectual abstraction based on modern understandings of human knowledge, it is meant to describe the real workings of humans, whether 'intellectuals' or not. All people by needs must respond to and recreate traditions. This concept of hermeneutics is thus meant to be much more comprehensive than simply the exegesis and expansion of biblical texts, which is so often discussed with regards to Second Temple Judaism.[4]

Before discussing the implications and contours of this proposal, it is necessary to clarify what this Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is and what it is not. The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is primarily to be regarded as a *shared interpretive framework* which interrelates apocalypticism, the apocalypses, and millenarianism. It is not a shared theology, nor is it a coherent, systematic philosophy. It is a method of receiving and reshaping traditions which shares identifiable aspects while producing noticeably divergent results.[5] It is an intellectual and social paradigm through which many Judaeans of the Second Temple period channelled their concerns, queries, and teachings. By positing a shared framework one is able to account for both the similarities and the differences which are manifested in the extant texts and between various apocalyptic groups; developments in the cultural, sociological, political, economic, etc., situations will produce corresponding variations in the formulation of specific doctrines and ideas. By primarily placing the locus of Iranian influence in this hermeneutic one is able to better understand recurrent motifs which have Iranian parallels, as well as discern reasons for the divergences between acceptance and rejection of individual motifs. Ultimately, it offers the potential for a more nuanced appreciation of the levels of influence on individual texts while relating each to Second Temple Judaism as a whole.

It must be stressed that the proposal here called the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is entirely historiographical rather than prescriptive; it attempts to solve the problems of Iranian influence and its relation to apocalyptic in the Second Temple period. It is based on reflections on the foregoing analyses and methodological considerations.[6]

Towards these ends proceeds the following arguments. The first argument examines how the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic relates to the creation of the apocalypses and the potential impact of Iran thereupon. Second, the analyses of Chapter IV are drawn upon to flesh out

---

wants to include considerations above and beyond rational logic, in his case, communities, noting the complexities involved in their interactions.

[4] E.g., James H Charlesworth, "The Pseudepigrapha as Biblical Exegesis," *Early Jewish and Christian Exegesis*, eds. Craig A. Evans and William F. Stinespring (Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1987), pp. 139–152.

[5] This is perhaps consonant with the "intellectual transformation of prophecy" which Brooke sees in Qumran, George J. Brooke, "Prophecy and the Prophets in the Dead Sea Scrolls: Looking Backwards and Forwards," *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*, eds. Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2006), p. 158.

[6] The larger questions of apocalyptic through the ages or its relevance to modern thought or dogma are not within its scope. Such questions are left to others.

the nature of the hermeneutic and how Iranian considerations impact upon it. Lastly, an attempt to construct a preliminary model of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic provides a framework for a preliminary assessment of the significance of the analyses in Chapter IV. Further considerations of Iranica are reserved for the Metalegomena.

Hermeneutics: the Re-interpretation and Application of Tradition

The term 'hermeneutics' has of late acquired the patina of a scholarly commonplace and correspondingly appears in a variety of discussions on topics biblical, theological, and ethical.[7] The majority of analyses of Chapter IV highlighted the importance of (re-)interpretation for the understanding for each passage; this chapter expands that observation to suggest that re-interpretation is the dialectic connecting and separating the apocalypses, apocalypticism, millenarianism, and Iranian influences.

Relation of Hermeneutics to Apocalyptic

The relation of hermeneutics to apocalyptic and its three manifestations was hinted at in the Prolegomena.[8] A brief overview of how this fits into the phenomena of apocalyptic can here be sketched; a diagram of the terms appears as Figure 1.

A fairly widespread scholarly consensus distinguishes between apocalypticism (worldview), apocalypses (written genre), and millenarianism (social movement) and cautions against a one-to-one correspondence between any of them. The proper understanding of how these three relate to each other or more broadly to Second Temple Judaism is much more contested. An infuriating ambiguity causes this impasse: each of the three is similar while retaining significant differences; further, none of the three is in itself monolithic. How can the chaos of the details be reconciled without undermining the significance of the multiplicity? Appeal to a shared hermeneutic offers a way beyond this impasse: shared methods, media predilections, and values—rather than particular instances of exegesis—

---

[7] E.g., James A. Sanders, "Hermeneutics in True and False Prophecy," *Canon and Authority*, eds. B.W. Coats and B.O. Long (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1977): pp. 21–41; André LaCocque and Paul Ricoeur, *Thinking Biblically: Exegetical and Hermeneutical Studies*, trans. David Pellauer (Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1998); Murray A. Rae, *History and Hermeneutics* (London: T & T Clark, 2005); Manfred Oeming, *Contemporary Biblical Hermeneutics: An Introduction*, trans. Joachim F. Vette (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2006), to name but a few. For a brief overview, see Werner G. Jeanrond, "Hermeneutics," *A Dictionary of Biblical Interpretation*, eds. R. J. Coggins and J. L. Houlden (London: SCM, 1990), pp. 282–284; an in-depth but useful discussion of the topic can be found in Anthony C. Thiselton, *New Horizons in Hermeneutics* (London: HarperCollins, 1992). Much which passes under this term carries connotations foreign to the present intent; extensive interaction with this growing body of study is therefore impossible and distracting and will be limited to clarifying the denotation of the term as here proposed. It must be stressed that the intent of the concept herein is a historical description of the way real people interact with their traditions and construct their identities thereby, regardless of their self-consciousness in so doing. The term 'hermeneutic' may itself be relatively new; the construction of identity and traditions is not.

[8] See the Prolegomena.

relate the three and their constituents. Such a tie explains the 'instinctive' scholarly feeling of a similarity between the apocalypses while simultaneously explaining how individual apocalypses could interpret a tradition and/or circumstances divergently. If this idea is accurate, then one of the great impasses in modern apocalyptic studies can be surmounted. Further, a likely vista for Persian interaction in the Second Temple period is opened. Before attempting to sketch the preliminary outline of this Apocalyptic Hermeneutic in the next section, the function of this hermeneutic needs further explication.

An Apocalyptic Hermeneutic both comes out of and creates apocalypticism. As tradents interpret their traditions and circumstances, they refine patterns of interpretation which in turn form their worldview. Part of this process is the generation and refinement of ideas—doctrines, myths, philosophies, etc. These discrete ideas form part of the constellation of apocalypticism and are communicable beyond the confines of apocalypticism *per se*; the general culture and broader religious traditions can pick up and adopt ideas from the apocalyptic worldview without adopting it wholesale. If a group adopted the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic—and not just aspects of the worldview—it would likely (but not *necessarily*) begin to generate its own apocalyptic tradition and participate quite fully in apocalypticism. In this respect it is important to remember that apocalypticism can contain multiple apocalyptic traditions, i.e., more specific constellations of understandings;[9] Danielic and Enochic traditions can be distinguished within the greater umbrella of apocalypticism.

If a number of individuals who share the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic consciously form a group, they may be considered an apocalyptic movement. If such a movement expects an imminent appearance of the *eschaton*, perhaps taking actions to hasten it, it may be considered millenarian.[10] Even if a group adopts substantial aspects of apocalypticism but does not also adopt the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, it is unlikely to appear to be an apocalyptic movement: it will function as part of the general tradition more broadly.

As part of the construction and dissemination of their worldview, some apocalyptic tradents write apocalypses. The writing of an apocalypse will be a single instance of the utilization of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic; different instances will therefore produce differing results. Inasmuch as two historical-critical scholars may reconstruct the history of a text differently, so two apocalyptic writers—even from the same tradition—may write diverging apocalypses. Each, however, share methods of interpretation as well as a common medium.

---

[9] See the Prolegomena.

[10] The importance of a distinction between imminent and deferred eschatology was touched on in the analysis of Dan 2 (Chapter IVa), and is discussed again below.

The construct just described indicates how the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic interrelates the various apocalyptic categories while hinting at how individual catalysts could produce startlingly unique specific results. Since it is clear that apocalypticists were reshaping and receiving traditions, it is in this context that foreign influences—including Persia—should be considered. So doing broadens the concept of interaction and influence from just text-reception and text-creation to oral intercourse and community formation. It now remains to begin to reconstruct the architecture of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic and how this involves the Iranian question. A few examples from the preceding analyses will help to sketch out such a structure.

The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic's Blueprint

It was stated above that the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic consists of preferred methodologies, media, and specific content which supports these. A few examples from the previous discussion will help to illustrate this concept in the context of Second Temple Judaism.

Afterlife and the Resurrection: Ezekiel 37:1–14

Collins proposes to view the apocalypses as a means for the individual's transcendence of death.[11] He does this in the context of debate over the relevance of 'apocalyptic eschatology' for the study of the apocalypses.[12] The question of eschatology will be dealt with separately; the first test case here discussed is individual post-mortem expectations ('personal eschatology'): afterlife and resurrection. The related concept of judgment will be treated separately.

That a decisive shift in expectations for the individual afterlife occurred between most of the Hebrew Bible and the apocalypses is nearly a scholarly cliché.[13] This has been analyzed in terms of a shift from collective (or nationalist) to individual focus, a response to

---

[11] John J. Collins, "Apocalyptic Eschatology as the Transcendence of Death," pp. 21–43; Collins, *The Apocalyptic Imagination*, pp. 11–12; John J. Collins, "Eschatological Dynamics and Utopian Ideals in Early Judaism," *Imagining the End: Visions of Apocalypse from the Ancient Middle East to Modern America*, eds. Abbas Amanat and Magnus Bernhardsson (London: I. B. Tauris, 2002), p. 74; John J. Collins, "Prophecy, Apocalypse and Eschatology: Reflections on the Proposals of Lester Grabbe," p. 47.

[12] For the present study's view on these questions, see the Prolegomena.

[13] E.g., Birkeland, "The Belief in the Resurrection of the Dead," p. 75; Russell, *The Method and Message*, pp. 353–379; Spronk, *Beatific Afterlife in Ancient Israel*; Lester L. Grabbe, *Judaic Religion in the Second Temple Period: Belief and Practice from the Exile to Yavneh* (London: Routledge, 2000), p. 258, 267–268; see also the first three articles in Friedrich Avemarie and Hermann Lichtenberger, eds., *Auferstehung — Resurrection*. WUNT 135 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004); Senén Vidal, "Resurrection in the Israelite Tradition," *The Resurrection of the Dead*, eds. Andrés T. Queiruga, et al., Concilium 2006/5 (London: SCM, 2006), pp. 47–55.

persecution of the faithful, or the absorption of Greek ideas of a separable soul.[14] Yet it must be stressed that there is no single or uniform expectation in Second Temple Judaism: the unifying aspect is more the *types* of expectations than the details of those expectations. Part of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, then, must pertain to the kinds of afterlife which can be expected by the individual, with room left for the results of such expectations to be refined based on specific apocalyptic worldview of the individual or group in question.

The basic hope for afterlife in the Hebrew Bible had two aspects: a long, prosperous life followed by a good name remembered by one's descendants.[15] These hopes should not be seen as disappearing in later eras and literatures, but they cease to be sufficient for many: additional expectations are added. These additional hopes appear to be a meaningful (beatific) immortality and a final rectification of ideals not fulfilled in earthly life. The latter receives its fullest expression in terms of a Day of Judgment. The exact depiction (content) of these hopes vary; of interest here is the construction of the hope for individual 'transcendence' (so Collins) and what it means for the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic.

A simple appeal to deprivation or persecution is insufficient to explain these additional hopes (although they make the ideas more widely palatable)—such considerations appear well before the Antiochean crisis once considered so important for the appearance of apocalyptic.[16] While the roots of such expectations are likely pluriform, there are several aspects which can be profitably analyzed in regards to the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. First, the new hopes distance perceived cause and consequence. No longer do actions directly proceed via present consequences but via displacement (both temporal and spatial). Second, the hopes are by needs based on a perception of YHWH as just and not capricious. Third, the new hopes carry implicit cosmic implications. These new hopes involve the relation of the individual to the totality of YHWH's creation rather than to just the individual's family, tribe, or nation: the continued existence of the individual with recompense implies a transmundane community which in principle is broader than the existential horizons of any one earthly life. If one takes these three implicit principles, the re-interpretation of Ezek 37 in terms of bodily resurrection can be set in a useful framework.

---

[14] E.g., Charles, *Religious Development*, cited persecution and nationalism (p. 96, 113); Russell, *Method and Message*, appeals to 'corporate personality' and Greek pre-existent souls; Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, pp. 270–1, appeals to an increased individualism; George W. E. Nickelsburg, *Resurrection, Immortality, and Eternal Life in Intertestamental Judaism*, HTS 26, Expanded ed. (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006) appeals largely to persecution, although the preface to the revised edition (pp. 5–6) notes that this is now problematic; Claudia Setzer, *Resurrection of the Body in Early Judaism and Early Christianity: Doctrine, Community, and Self-Definition* (Boston: Brill, 2004), p. 20, disputes the concept of a progression in ideas at all. George W. E. Nickelsburg, "Where is the place of Eschatological Blessing?," *Things Revealed: Studies in Early Jewish and Christian Literature in Honor of Michael E. Stone*, eds. Esther G. Chazon, et al., SJSJ 89 (Leiden: Brill, 2004), pp. 53–72, is careful to highlight how 'earth-based' many of these expectations remain.

[15] E.g., Job 7:9; Ps 6:6; 21:5; 25:13; 30:4; 39:14; 49:12, 15; 88:11–13, etc.

[16] E.g., Russell, *Method and Message*, p. 16; Cf. the recantation in Nickelsburg, *Resurrection*, pp. 5–6.

The imagery of Ezek 37:1–14 is very vivid and strongly implies bodily resurrection when one accepts such an idea as reasonable. As discussed above, it seems that the similarities of this passage to Zoroastrian conceptions of bodily resurrection was already noted by some Jews in the Parthian empire.[17] The passage itself, however, declares national restoration for both Israel and Judah. A return to Yehud did indeed later occur, albeit along differing lines.[18] Subsequent interpretations of the text would likely alter the political understanding of the oracle in light of the community in Yehud and in light of the known conceptions of bodily resurrection. What if a subsequent receiver of this text applied the above three principles to this text? A distancing of cause and consequence mean the two stages of revival in the vision (vv. 7, 10) could be interpreted as belonging to different times, places, and protagonists; even if the revival is attributed to a return to the land, the breath of YHWH could come subsequently. The rhetorical addition of graves in vv. 12–13 could also tend towards a secondary, individualized interpretation. The description of the bodies as slain (הרוגים) also invites a re-interpretation along lines which view death as unnatural. Further, since YHWH is just, the idea of a resurrection brings to bear questions of who is resurrected (can only *some* be resurrected, and if so, on what criteria?). Lastly, if YHWH has a *cosmos* broader than Israel, then how do individual Judaeans relate to this greater *cosmos* and the populations there implied? When these questions are added to a non-metaphorical interpretation of the oracle, very clear trajectories for afterlife speculations and ideas of bodily resurrection are thereby created. The potential influence of Iranian ideas of resurrection find a logical place within the re-interpretation of the passage in the post-exilic period.[19]

For those for whom the older Hebraic hopes for the afterlife were insufficient, Ezek 37 provided a vivid hook whereby ideas of resurrection and immortality could be profitably explored within the Judaean tradition. When these questions are placed within a context of broader cosmological speculation, the development of the ideas of eternal heavenly life and resurrection are quite natural. It must be noted in this regard that Iranian conceptions of resurrection and human immortality are tightly bound up with the eschatological drama which is the *raison d'être* of the material creation.[20] The pre-existent, spiritual forms of humans

---

[17] See Chapter IVa.

[18] Proper understanding of the trope of exile and return is highly contentious; for a concise collection of a variety of opinions see Lester L. Grabbe, ed., *Leading Captivity Captive: 'The Exile' as History and Ideology*. JSOTSS 278; ESHM 2 (Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998); more recently, James M. Scott, ed., *Exile: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Conceptions*. Supp Journal for the Study of Judaism. vol. 56 (New York: Brill, 1997). The classic study is Peter R. Ackroyd, *Exile and Restoration* (London: SCM Press, 1968).

[19] After writing this analysis, the author was surprised to discover a rather similar analysis of the passage by Paul Ricoeur in LaCocque and Ricoeur, *Thinking Biblically*, pp. 165–183.

[20] Cf. Chapter I and the note below.

decided to enter physical form, die, and be bodily resurrected to enable the defeat of Angra Mainyu[21]—the bodily resurrection is one of the very mechanisms whereby evil is to be definitively defeated. This is inherently bound up, then, in an understanding of the *cosmos* itself, the relation of the individual to it, and the manner of divine justice and administration. Death itself plays a role in assuring its own defeat, and humanity's happiness is guaranteed by its tardiness. The potential impact of the Achaemenid Empire upon Judaean visions of the divine *cosmos* is periodically noted in Chapter IV.[22] Rather than attempting to see a one-to-one correspondence between individual Iranian views of the afterlife and Jewish ones, it is pertinent to note the similarities between the structure of the Iranian drama with the *types* of expectation within the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. If one looks to the hermeneutic, Iranian influence on the questions for which Judaeans were seeking answers appears more likely than upon each individual Judaean's answers to these questions.[23]

Ezekiel 37:1–14 and its likely reception nicely illustrates how the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic helps to find a locus for situating potential Iranian influence within Second Temple Judaism, specifically within apocalyptic traditions. A closely related issue to understandings of the afterlife is the concept of a Day of Judgment, or cosmic Day of YHWH. This will be explored in light of Ezek 38–39.

The Day of Judgment: Ezek 38–39

The previous analysis of the Gog pericope proposed to see a more direct use of Iranian traditions within the passage itself, as well as a subsequent impact upon its interpretation.[24] The direct use of this passage in apocalypses is important (e.g., *1 Enoch*, the *War Scroll*, *Sibylline Oracles* 3, and Revelation);[25] the present analysis, however, intends to discuss how the passage can be understood within the context of a developing Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. Of particular importance in this instance is the concept of negative or rhetorical influence, and the re-interpretation of previously present tradition, in this case the 'Day of YHWH' traditions.

---

[21] *Yasna* XXVI.6 (*The Zend-Avesta III*, p. 279); *Yašt* XIII.76 (*The Zend-Avesta II*, p. 198); *Shorter Bundahišn* II.10–11, cf III.1–7 (*Pahlavi Texts I*, pp. 14–16) = *Greater Bundahišn* III.23–24 (Anklesaria, *Zand-Ākāsih*, p. 45. Plutarch, *Isis and Osiris*, 370 (p. 115) may also supply support this with his 24 gods in an egg, which de Jong relates to the Zoroastrian calender. The nineteenth day and the first month of this calendar were dedicated to the *frauuaši* (Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 195–196, although he does not mention the *frauuaši* connection); for general discussion see Boyce, *HZ II*, pp. 243–250; Boyce, "Further on the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts," pp. 1–38; Malandra, *The Fravaši Yašt*; Zaehner, *The Dawn and Twilight*, pp. 269–270.

[22] E.g., Excursus: On the Watchers.

[23] While attention to the function resurrection ideas played in communities is important, *ala* Setzer, *Resurrection*, this does not explain the emergence of the ideas in the first place or how anyone first came to espouse them.

[24] Chapter IVa.

[25] Cf. Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, particularly pp. 159–382; On the *War Scroll*, Manning, *Echoes of a Prophet*, pp. 34–37; to a lesser extent, see Wacholder, "Ezekiel and Ezekielianism," pp. 194–195.

The Iranian influence proposed upon Ezek 38–39 above was one of appropriation for the sake of rhetorical combat, and as such, could be termed a conscious, negative influence.[26] The author made use of the religious imagery of the north-western Iranian peoples, in an ironic mode, to refute potential religious justifications for an invasion of (yet to be reconstituted) Israel, and thereby to strengthen the preceding prophecies. The rhetoric appropriated, however, became part of the tradition, coloring subsequent discourses within this receiving tradition. Several aspects of the rhetoric of Ezek 38–39 are notable in this regard. First, the oracle is neither predicated on a particular response on the part of Israel, nor is it viewed as imminent; it is a depiction of the revocation of the exile. This is in contrast to the divine threats which appear in other prophetic literature. Further, this distant future is depicted as already determined: there is no *if*. Gog is to marshal his allies for a call which will come, human responses notwithstanding. Lastly, the overthrow of the invading army is described as a purely divine effort in colorful, hyperbolic language, using a number of terms and motifs which would become stock apocalyptic language. The use of divine warrior imagery is drawn upon to its final extent to emphasize the purely divine nature of the war in view.[27] Like the story in Dan 2,[28] this oracle appears to have inadvertently imported an (implied) deferred eschatology in its utilization of imagery to declare the power of YHWH: G-d is not merely working through history, but has predetermined (at least some) aspects of human history for his intended ends. What would appear to have been intended as a historical guarantee—by its sequential placement in the book and its language—was susceptible to being re-read eschatologically (on eschatology, see below). Further, the apparent use of less-common referents for nations by the author gave rise to a situation where the historically specific grouping could be easily re-read as an universal attack (as, indeed, most modern scholars do).[29] Such a grouping further encourages a re-interpretation on a supra-historical level, particularly if one wishes to posit an eschatological battle.

The use of Ezek 38–39 by the *Parables of Enoch* is extremely suggestive in this regard.[30] Using similar imagery, the Enochic author replaces Gog from Magog with the Parthians and

---

[26] See Prolegomena.

[27] On the divine warrior, see Patrick D. Miller, *The Divine Warrior in Early Israel* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1973); Angeline Shellenberg. "Development of the Divine Warrior Motif in Apocalyptic," (Diss. Providence College and Seminary, 1999); John J. Collins, "The Mythology of Holy War in Daniel and the Qumran War Scroll: A Point of Transition in Jewish Apocalyptic," *Vetus Testamentum* 25.3 (1975): pp. 596–612; Cross, *Cannanite Myth*, pp. 91–111; Frank Moore Cross, *From Epic to Canon: History and Literature in Ancient Israel* (Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 2000), p. 22, 39.

[28] Chapter IVa.

[29] E.g., Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, p. 107; Block, *Ezekiel 25–48*, pp. 439–440.

[30] For a lucid discussion of the similarities and differences between the two passages can be found in Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, pp. 178–184.

Medes, who controlled a number of the regions identified in Ezekiel.[31] A similar phenomenon can be found in each passage: real, contemporary powers are depicted as playing a predetermined role in an unspecified future.[32] This has several implications for the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. First, the oft repeated (and criticized)[33] dichotomy between history and myth is inadequate: both of the passages in Ezekiel and *1 Enoch* utilize historical events to describe an ahistorical event which is itself still envisioned as taking place on the earth. This historical typology, however, also utilizes mythological imagery and ideas as part of its understanding of the historical typology. In short, 'history' and 'myth' are fused. Second, both passages tap into the Day of YHWH tradition, yet both passages describe a battle which implies judgment which is both ultimate and final: it is *the* Day of YHWH not just *a* Day of YHWH. This would imply an interpretive process which is in some ways the inverse of the previous—not only can events or myths be types of events to come, they may also be the shadow of the 'real' ones to come. Such an interpretive principle would lead very readily into the abstract speculations which are so significant in many apocalypses.[34]

The Day of YHWH tradition has long been a focus of scholarly rancour as well as a point of appeal for the origins of apocalyptic.[35] It would seem best to understand the pre-apocalyptic tradition as a depiction of a theophany of YHWH, one which was expected both in sacred war on behalf of Israel and in cultic settings.[36] The first thing that can be noticed in this regard is that the very conception of the Day of YHWH seems to embody the fusion of history and myth which was claimed as characteristic of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic: this aspect can be seen in full continuity with earlier Judaean traditions. Yet, two disconnects with the earlier form of the Day can also be seen: a transfer of focus from *a* Day to *the* Day and a concomitant eschatologizing of the idea. Once the Day of YHWH becomes a consummate event, the cosmological and juridical aspects of the idea necessarily increase in importance: the Day of Judgment. The importation of eschatology into the Day of YHWH transforms it

---

[31] Chapter IVa.

[32] Cf. the similar opinion of Bøe, *Gog and Magog*, p. 107, 184.

[33] Cf. the classic essay, Roberts, "Myth versus History," pp. 1–13.

[34] As pointed out by Rowland, *The Open Heaven*.

[35] E.g.,John M. P. Smith, "The Day of Yahweh," *American Journal of Theology* 5.3 (1901): pp. 505–533; Gerhard von Rad, "The Origin of the Concept of the Day of Yahweh," *Journal of Semitic Studies* 4.2 (1959): pp. 97–108; Hans-Peter Müller, *Ursprünge und Strucktуren alttestamentlicher Eschatologie*, Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft 109 (Berlin: Töpelmann, 1969), pp. 72–85; M. Sæbø, "יום IV: Theological Usage," trans. David E. Green, *Theological Dictionary of the Old Testament*, eds. G. Johannes Bottereck and Helmer Ringgren, vol. IV (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1990), pp. 28–31; John Barton, "The Day of Yahweh in the Minor Prophets," *Biblical and Near Eastern Essays: Studies in Honour of Kevin J. Cathcart*, eds. Carmel McCarthy and John F. Healey (London: T & T Clark, 2004): pp. 68–79.

[36] Cf. Meir Weiss, "The Origin of the 'Day of the Lord'—Reconsidered," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 37 (1966): pp. 29–60; Mowinckel, *He That Cometh*, p. 145; Jörg Jeremias, *Theophanie: Die Geschichte einer alttestamentlichen Gattung*, Wissenschaftliche Monographien zum Alten und Neuen Testament 10, 2nd ed. (Neukirchen: Neukirchener Verlag, 1977), pp. 97–100, would separate the two via the Day of the Lord absorbing theophanic motives; also, Cross, *Cannanite Myth*, pp. 91–111, who centers the motif on the Divine Warrior.

from a historical rhetoric (whether promise or threat) into a teleological point to which all other aspects of the Day must refer.

This passage, then, serves as an important crux for subsequent Judaean re-interpretation: it appears to offer the seeds where the particularization of typology could easily occur in its wake. This was done on the basis of previous traditions marshalled against a (presumably) Median rhetoric/ideology. Wide scope was thus open for a variety of speculations on the nature and timing of YHWH's judgment, without any need for the tradent to feel like an innovator. Ample scope is left for individuals and groups to accept or reject more specific Iranian concepts within this sphere.

As repeatedly noted, the concept of a Day of Judgment, whether individual or universal, is intimately intertwined with the problem of the emergence of eschatological thought.

Eschatology: Daniel 2, *Book of Watchers*

While the apocalypses are more than just eschatological treatises, eschatology is an essential part of what differentiates them from other genres of revelatory literature.[37] Two important aspects of eschatology are not always sufficiently noticed: the interpretive role of eschatology and the distinction between imminent and deferred eschatology. Eschatology shapes an important part of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, as by its very nature eschatology is an interpretive concept. This has been stated very well by Franke:

> It cannot be overemphasized that the very soul and inspiration of apocalyptic is the application to contemporary history of a theologically revealed vision of the end. This intrinsically hermeneutic dimension is the element in which apocalyptic springs to life, and it must be heeded if we are to understand apocalypse at a deeper level than that of its surface imagery, which is indeed meant to horrify and appall, but as a means of pointing out what is actually horrifying and appalling in the realities being lived historically.[38]

The previous analyses of Dan 2 and of the *Book of Watchers* indicate some of the ways this ought to be understood. In the analysis of Dan 2 above, it was argued that a deferred eschatology was imported along with an Iranian political oracle,[39] in a context which deliberately re-used prophetic language. It becomes apparent, then, that subsequent receivers accepted this eschatology in a context which implied that all previous prophetic uses of the terms related to the Day of YHWH also refer to eschatology. This point highlights a

---

[37] See Prolegomena.

[38] William Franke, "Apocalypse and the Breaking-Open of Dialogue: a Negatively Theological Perspective," *International Journal for Philosophy of Religion* 47.2 (2000): p. 74.

[39] See Chapter IVa.

neglected aspect of debate over 'prophetic' and 'apocalyptic' eschatology: one's presuppositions greatly influence the way the relevant prophetic passages are read; the future expectations of many oracles can be read to describe the *eschaton*, but only *when one accepts the concept that there is a coming* eschaton. Once a group of Judaeans accepted the eschatology implicit in Dan 2, it was only a matter of simple extrapolation to read other texts eschatologically. As such, eschatology functions as a hermeneutical principle. That this occurred can easily be seen in extreme form in several of the *pešarim* found at Qumran.[40]

The other important aspect is the distinction between deferred and imminent eschatology, one which cannot be over-stressed. As noted above, the *content* of the eschatology in the two parts of Daniel is quite similar; they differ most prominently on the authors' perceived *proximity* to the *eschaton* itself. In fact, many of the differences between subgroups of various traditions can be understood as reflexes of the perceived imminence of shared eschatological ideas: even if person *x* and person *y* agree exactly in the content of eschatology, the importance of the eschatology and the likely modes of expression between the two will drastically vary if *x* thinks the *eschaton* is tomorrow and *y* in three thousand years. Urgency of the end would be more likely to produce millenarian groups and new apocalypses than its long-term deferral and more likely to make eschatology more prominent in the authors' works.[41]

The importance of these two points can be seen in some of the more 'encyclopaedic' sections of the apocalypses.[42] Enoch's journeys in *the Book of Watchers* are a good example.[43] Enoch travels throughout the *cosmos* and learns arcane knowledge about many aspects of the world, yet much of the vast array of information is united by an orientation towards a deferred eschatology; he sees the prison for the Watchers and erring stars (19, 21), the place where the dead await judgment (22), the tree of life (25), a valley of punishment (27), and the future paradise (28–32). The author of this journey certainly had eschatological beliefs, but

---

[40] A convenient collection and translation of the *pešarim* is available in James H Charlesworth, et al., eds., *The Dead Sea Scrolls 6B: Pesharim, Other Commentaries, and Related Documents*. The Princetone Theological Seminary Dead Sea Scrolls Project (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2002).

[41] Cf. the history of Darbyism, which continues to see a series of imminent eschatologies; see the essays by Kent Eaton and Neil O'Connor in Fiona Bowie and Christopher Deacy, *The Coming Deliverer: Millennial Themes in World Religions* (Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1997), pp. 119–162 and 163–201, respectively; Kenneth G. C. Newport and Crawford Gribben, eds., *Expecting the End: Millennialism in Social and Historical Context* (Waco, TX: Baylor Univ Press, 2006); also the first chapter of Bart D. Ehrman, *Jesus: Apocalyptic Prophet of the New Millennium* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999).

[42] Also noted by Paul Owen, "The Relationship of Eschatology to Esoteric Wisdom in the Jewish Pseudepigraphal Apocalypses," *Of Scribes and Sages: Early Jewish Interpretation and Transmission of Scripture*, ed. Craig A. Evans, vol. 1, Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 122–133.

[43] Cf. Nickelsburg, *1 Enoch 1*, pp. 55–56; Collins, *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages*, p. 50.

there is no indication of their imminence; later Enochic authors, however, seem to have interpreted their times as falling much closer to the end (e.g., the *Animal Apocalypse*).[44]

An important aspect, therefore, of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is eschatology, as well as the hermeneutes' perception of their own temporal relation to it. Following the rule that the most violent disputes are between those whose positions are most similar, it is to be expected that the interpretation of the temporal relations to the end are a major factor in schism and controversy without negating overall shared features.

Although the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic (as well as apocalyptic) consists of much more than just eschatology, eschatology is an underlying factor for much of it: cosmic, personal, national; afterlife, justice, the interpretation of the Day of the Lord, etc., are all affected by it, and can be teased out once it is accepted as a principle of interpretation. This will need to be further discussed, making careful distinctions which are sometimes conflated.

(Re-)Constructing the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic (with an Eye towards Iran)

The thesis advanced here is that the connecting thread between the various apocalypses, apocalypticism, and millenarian groups is an Apocalyptic Hermeneutic which consists of shared interpretive principles and some shared content, and that the most likely locus for Iranian influence is to be found therein. This is not to discount the importance of the likely variety of influences and borrowings in different apocalypses and other, non-apocalyptic Judaean texts, rather, placing the central focus here helps to contextualize and explain the more individual and scattered borrowings or influences which may be found.

Having preliminarily sketched out the concept of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic above, it remains to more adequately describe it and its potential relations to Iran. This will be attempted in three brief movements: first, a number of suggested potential shared principles and contents will be listed—these are largely understood as dialectics and in relation to earlier extant Judaean traditions; second, the importance of textual and oral hermeneutics will be discussed; and lastly, a few suggested examples of how Iranian concepts can be seen to impact on the principles set forth first.

Shared Principles of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic

The Jerusalem Temple

Of fundamental importance to Judaean apocalyptic was the Jerusalem temple, a feature shared with most Judaeans. This can be seen in Daniel's indignation over its desecration and in *IV Ezra*'s distress over the temple's destruction. Few scholars would deny

---

[44] Tiller, *Animal*, p. 126.

this point, but it is worth making explicit as a twofold reminder: first, that references to the sacrificial cult need not necessarily imply a priestly origin,[45] and second, that for all its abstract speculations, the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic relates to people within a concrete historical situation.

Nevertheless, in addition to the concrete elements, the theology/ideology of the temple was susceptible to reformulation and divergent interpretation by different Judaean circles.[46] It must be queried, then, how these supra-cultic ideas may have interacted with other ideologies within the Achaemenid Empire (and its heirs)—whether along the lines of Imperial policy, official cults, or general Iranian attitudes.

Immanence and Transcendence

An important dialectic for apocalyptic is the immanence and transcendence of the divine. This dialectic is a consequence of the increased importance of monotheism; the one and only G-d becomes increasingly transcendent, creating a religious need for more immanent divine manifestations. This gap is susceptible to a variety of solutions, depending on the inclinations of the hermeneute in question. As is commonly noted, angels, a 'second power in heaven,' and other mediatory figures are methods for reconciling the tension between the immanence and transcendence of the divine.[47] This has several implications which bear on the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic.

First, the radical transcendence of G-d tends towards determinism: the farther above he is, the less involved in minutiae he must be, and thus control must be predetermined. The second derives from the first; the minutiae of life must relate to subordinate characters, such as angels and demons. This construct not only helps to explain the common fascination with angelology in the apocalypses, it helps to explain their divergences. Depending on the issue in focus, the necessary intermediation will vary. It also offers a space for foreign interactions: the roles and functions of angels and gods of other systems can be re-appropriated to serve YHWH's minutiae.

---

[45] Nor does the absence of priests or temple need imply their rejection. E.g., James R. Linville, "The Day of Yahweh and the Mourning of the Priests in Joel," *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets*, eds. Lester L Grabbe, ed. and Alice Ogden Bellis (London: T & T Clark, 2004), pp. 98–114.

[46] E.g., Michael A. Knibb, "Temple and Cult in Apocryphal and Pseudepigraphal Writings from before the Common Era," *Temple and Worship in Biblical Israel*, ed. John Day (London: T & T Clark, 2005), pp. 401–416; George J. Brooke, "The Ten Temples in the Dead Sea Scrolls," *Temple and Worship in Biblical Israel*, ed. John Day (London: T & T Clark, 2005), pp. 417–434.

[47] Note the interesting contention of E. Conrad, "The End of Prophecy and the Appearance of Angels/Messengers in the Book of the Twelve," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 73 (1997): pp. 65–79, that an angelic solution can be seen in the Persian period redaction of the Twelve.

The increased transcendence of YHWH is also likely to increase the dramatic nature of any posited divine intervention in history: the less immanent his workings, the more external and disruptive his interventions will appear. If the apocalypticist no longer sees YHWH's work directly in each historical moment, when YHWH does intervene in the moment, the consequences are likely to be viewed as catastrophic. Thus, the corollary to the increased transcendence of G-d is the increased uniqueness of the Day of YHWH. If the prophets saw YHWH directly at work behind the historical moment, the apocalyptic hermeneute saw YHWH directing all towards its ultimate culmination.

As mediators and managers for YHWH's celestial Imperium become more desirable, the hierarchical systems of Iran were surely influential (as was argued above for the concept of the Watchers)—both the 'secular' system inherited by Alexander as well as the complex of Iranian deities.

Theodicy and Pessimism

Sacchi highlights the importance of theodicy to the *Book of Watchers* and apocalyptic in general—even as he overstates the case[48]—and there can be no doubt that theodicy is an important theme for the apocalypses (as, indeed, for religions in general). While it is true that crises are likely to increase the urgency of theodical concerns, they are problems which occupy thinking peoples of all circumstances. As with the dialectic of transcendence, the principle of monotheism pushes this issue to the fore. This is a problem which the apocalypticists shared with all their Judaean compatriots. However, it may not be unfair to claim that for them the problem of evil and suffering was more urgent than for others: 'apocalyptically important' to use the colloquial phrase. It is this pre-occupation with evil which exposes the apocalypses—like their prophetic forebearers—to the charge of pessimism.[49]

As Russell points out, the charge of pessimism is unfair:[50] a long-term hopefulness can just as rightly be seen in them. G-d's justice *will* prevail, evil *will* be destroyed. This hope,

---

[48] Sacchi, *Jewish Apocalyptic*, particularly pp. 72–87. For a critique, cf. John J. Collins, "From Prophecy to Apocalypticism: The Expectation of the End," *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity*, ed. John J. Collins (New York: Continuum, 2000), p. 137.

[49] E.g., Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic*, pp. 11–12; Koch, *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic*, pp. 28–33.

[50] Russell, *Method and Message*, p. 18; also implied by Christopher Rowland, "Apocalyptic Literature," *It is Written: Scripture Citing Scripture. Essays in Honour of Barnabas Lindars*, eds. D. A. Carson and H. G. M. Williamson (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988), p. 185; cf. Wayne A. Meeks, "Apocalyptic Discourse and Strategies of Goodness," *Journal of Religion* 80.3 (2000): p. 402, who sees apocalyptic as "obsessed" with the possibility of goodness.

however, is forged in the face of seemingly intractable evil.[51] A principle of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, then, must be the utmost seriousness of the problem of evil. This principle then leaves open a space for consideration of one of the major solutions to theodicy: ontological dualism. Whether it is ultimately accepted or rejected, it is difficult to envision anyone who took theodicy seriously—as do the apocalyptic hermeneutes—to completely ignore a system built upon the seriousness of evil (such as that ascribed to Zoroaster).

In this regard, a dialectic of evaluations of the cosmos should perhaps be posited within Second Temple Judaism, one in which Ben Sirah and the *Book of Watchers* would represent opposite poles: whether the world is good though prone to the invasions of chaos or whether creation itself is broken and in need of a fundamental replacement. One's response to this would determine whether the purpose of humankind was to maintain order or to fight evil.

Within this dialectic, a Yahwist who saw evil as a radical problem—for whatever reasons—would be more prone to accepting and utilizing a persophilic theodicy than one who did not. In either case, however, a variety of competing philosophies must have been available and in dialogue.

Teleology

One of the more neglected aspects in the study of apocalyptic is the issue of teleology.[52] The teleology of relevance here is twofold: of history and of the person. The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic moves beyond the teleology found in the prophetic literature: the prophets declare the purpose behind a historical moment or series of moments, while the apocalypses find a purpose behind *history as such*. This represents a major intellectual shift, which has implications for both eschatology and free will/determinism. For Jeremiah the fall of Jerusalem is a work of YHWH;[53] for Daniel it is merely a step in the progression of YHWH's plan for the earth. For the sages of Proverbs, righteousness will ensure long life;[54] for the *Parables of Enoch* it will ensure eternity with YHWH. The teleological concerns of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic have expanded. There is a massive leap between claiming that YHWH is at work behind the present moment (and that one knows what this is) and claiming that he is behind the sweep of history.

---

[51] Cf. the discussion of Kelli Fuery and Patrick Fuery, "The Pharmakon of the Apocalypse," *The End that Does: Art, Science, and Millennial Accomplishment*, eds. Cathy Gutierrez and Hillel Schwartz, Millennialism and Society 3 (London: Equinox, 2006), pp. 7–16.

[52] A very useful elucidation of the importance of teleology and its distinctness from eschatology is Bull, "On Making Ends Meet," pp. 1–6.

[53] E.g., Jer 1:15.

[54] E.g., Prov 9:11.

As teleology expands, the perspective of ethical-demands (the so-called 'Paraenesis') will change: rather than warning that order is being subverted, the addressee must orient to an order which will replace the current one, towards an order which requires a *striving towards*. Covenantal terms thus alter from a return to a prerequisite. This shift in teleology is largely a matter of hermeneutics, and the historical moment loses its importance *qua* moment, and remains merely in relation to time as a whole. Again, this is not merely a question of future expectation nor of history versus eschatology or myth, but of how history is understood and interpreted (i.e., the philosophy of history).

The broadened concept of teleology is much more at home in Iran than in Israel (as Cohn fluently argues); therefore, ways in which the Iranian conceptions may have intersected with Judaean concepts of history must be considered.

Determinism and Freedom

The dialectic of determinism and free will is no stranger to western theological or philosophical thought, nor to debates on apocalyptic literature and its antecedents. Nevertheless, it is worth stating that most apocalypses can be understood as preserving the tension between the two: insofar as they hold to the *eschaton*, history is pre-determined; insofar as they make ethical demands on their audience, they affirm free will. Nevertheless, the extant apocalypses place much less stress on the freedom of YHWH than previous Judaean literature and place more on his sovereignty. This is to be expected as a corollary to the increased transcendence of G-d and the implicit determinism behind a teleological and eschatological theory of history. Such a perspective is conducive towards rampant cosmological speculations towards the methods, manners, and details of YHWH's control over his empire. This speculation, of course, must have interacted with the knowledge of the relevant temporal empires: not only Ptolemaic, Seleucid, and Roman, but Achaemenid and Parthian as well.

Eschatology, Imminent and Deferred

The issue of eschatology has been broached several times in this study. The interpretive functions are discussed above, and a discussion of the imminent-deferred dialectic and its implications is overdue. That the world should terminate is not self-evident, nor is the idea that this terminus is the fulfillment of history.[55] Indeed, Cohn would argue

[55] As well-put by Bull, "On Making Ends Meet," p. 1.

that this concept is highly distinctive in the Ancient Near East.[56] Be that as it may, the acceptance of the idea of an *eschaton* combined with a *telos* is highly significant for a worldview and its methods of interpretation.[57] However, the centrality of eschatology for a given interpretative system will vary in accordance to the manner in which the interpreter views the *eschaton*'s imminence or remoteness; the closer an interpreter believes the *eschaton* is, the more important it will be in their overall worldview. If it is far from nigh, a calm appraisal of speculations concerning it may be sufficient; if it is tomorrow, then not much else is likely to matter to them. Much in terms of perceived crisis relates directly to this aspect. An extremely deferred eschatology can even lead to the rhetorical downplaying of its importance.[58]

Not only the relative urgency of the eschatology is altered by its imminence or deferral; the popular acceptability of the concepts is also highly affected thereby. The concept of a teleological *eschaton* is much easier to accept as a distant concept than as a present reality. Two things follow from this. First, a general tradition is more likely to adopt a deferred eschatology than an imminent one. Second, the role of crises should be viewed not as *creating* eschatological hopes, but in making their difficult aspects more popularly palatable. A period of intense suffering can be more easily depicted as the end than a blissful one. Thus, the relation of deprivation to the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is less in the creation of eschatology and more in the ratcheting up of the popularly-sensed imminence of an idea already existent.

From the hints adduced by Kingsley,[59] it may be profitable to explore whether the Achaemenid Great Kings propagated a deferred or an imminent eschatology as part of their own ideology (ones which may have been subsequently re-used in reaction to their fall). In any case, a closer look into the interpretive function of eschatology—as a historical and philosophical-theological concept—should help to better frame the question of whether/how much/where Iranian eschatology influenced its development in Second Temple Judaism.

---

[56] Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos and the World to Come*; summarized in Cohn, "How Time Acquired a Consummation," pp. 21–37; Benjamin R. Foster, "Mesopotamia and the End of Time," *Imagining the End: Visions of Apocalypse from the Ancient Middle East to Modern America*, eds. Abbas Amanat and Magnus Bernhardsson (London: I. B. Tauris, 2002), pp. 23–32.

[57] Evidence of this can easily be seen in the history of millenarianism; e.g., Cohn, *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages*; Newport and Gribben, eds., *Expecting the End*; Christopher Rowland and John Barton, eds., *Apocalyptic in History and Tradition*. JSPSS 43 (London: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002).

[58] Cf. Collins, *Encounters with Biblical Theology*, pp. 134–136.

[59] Kingsley, "Meetings with Magi," pp. 174–209.

Typology, Mythology, and Prediction

The definition of myth is perhaps more fraught than that of apocalyptic;[60] rather than attempting to solve this dilemma, the implications of the apocalypses' use of myth is here explored for their methods of interpretation.

For the present purposes, myth is defined as 'an attempt to understand and impart meaning to reality in narrative and symbolic form without regard to empiricist concerns.'[61] In this sense, myth is characteristic of almost all Judaean literature. Yet, myths are particularly important in most apocalypses, and their authors' use of them is significant for their hermeneutic.

There are at least two methods of utilizing myth which must be distinguished: typological[62] and predictive. Myths can be used as a way of interpreting an event or person: *this* is like or foreshadowed by *that*. A good example of this is the common use of Exodus motifs to describe a return from exile,[63] or in depicting a prophet like Moses.[64] Here myth is used to explain or characterize something else, much like an elaborate metaphor. As described by Burkert, "Myth usually takes what has happened once as a model for what is now."[65] However, myth can also be used predictively: examples would include expectations of a second Elijah.[66] These two uses are quite distinct, but often conflated in discussion of myth in the apocalypses. There is no reason why typological (or aetiological) use of myth need lead to predictive use of myth. A case in point is the '*Endzeit wird Urzeit*' trope and its often associated *Kaoskampf* motif. When one investigates these, it is appropriate to ask whether they are being used typologically or predictively. Is the imagery of *Urzeit* hyperbolic or prognostic? Is the situation *like* a return to chaos or predicting an actual return of chaos?

---

[60] For a variety of views, see the introduction (pp. 1–12) of Gerald J. Larson, et al., eds., *Myth in Indo-European Antiquity* (Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1974), with its parade of problematic definitions; Fiona Bowie, *The Anthropology of Religion*, 2nd ed. (Oxford: Blackwell, 2006): pp. 267–304; Eric Caspo, *Theories of Mythology* (Oxford: Blackwell, 2005); in the context of apocalyptic, Lester L. Grabbe, "Introduction and Overview," *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.*, eds. Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak (London: T & T Clark, 2003), p. 20; S. Daniel Breslauer, "Mythology, Judaism and," *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*, eds. Jacob Neusner, et al., vol. III: L-Ra (Leiden: Brill, 2005), pp. 1812–1833.

[61] Author's own definition; see a longer explanation in Appendix IV. Without digressing into the complexities of the debate over what myth is, the definition above was crafted since other current definitions are defective, either placing too much emphasis on one type of myth (usually gods) or excluding more modern forms of myth (such as nationalistic myths of formation). This definition is meant to correct the deficiencies of myth in debates over apocalyptic, particularly in works such as Hanson, *The Dawn of Apocalyptic* or Arthur, *A Smooth Stone*, p. 278, who bases his analysis of Ezek 38–39 on a myth-history dichotomy. This dichotomy is not a vice restricted to Biblical Studies, as it can be seen in Robert Scholes, et al., *The Nature of Narrative*, 40th Anniversary, Revised and Expanded ed. (New York: Oxford Univ. Press, 2006), p. 55.

[62] Much use of this word has been unnecessarily restricted to the New Testament.

[63] E.g., Goldingay, *Message of Isaiah 40–55*, p. 264.

[64] E.g., Martin O'Kane, "Isaiah: a Prophet in the Footsteps of Moses," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 21.69 (1996): pp. 29–50.

[65] Walter Burkert, "The Logic of Cosmogony," *From Myth to Reason? Studies in the Development of Greek Thought*, ed. Richard Buxton (Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2001), p. 91.

[66] E.g., Mal 4:5; Mark 9:11; Matt 11:14; 17:10.

The two are cognitively very different even if literarily they can be quite difficult to distinguish.

It is here suggested, then, an element of the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is the addition of a predictive element to myth to its inherited typological use. The interpretative principle is an eschatologizing, predictive use of myth rather than merely its use instead of history (contra Hanson).

Just as the other Ancient Near Eastern societies, Iran had a rich mythological tradition. If investigations into apocalyptic are open to the subtleties possible in the use of myth—to interpret as well as to predict—a wide vista for and broad array of possibilities towards the use of Iranian myths is opened. This need not in any way exclude the use of other mythologies (as was argued for the Asael myths, above).

Epistemology

One's hermeneutic is highly impacted by one's epistemology. The apocalypses, by definition, evince a revelatory epistemology. This epistemology, however, appears to have three bases: first, the acceptance of the revelatory nature of the nascent Hebrew Bible; second, the revelatory nature of their interpretations of that scripture; and third, the legitimacy of their own revelatory experiences. The first of these was likely shared with most Judaeans. The second and third, however, were as liable to the problematics of verification as that which attends prophecy.[67]

The importance of this threefold epistemology can be seen in Ben Sirah's reaction to it (34:1,8).[68] Both the apocalypticists and Ben Sirah agree on the revelatory nature of texts and of their own interpretations; however, they disagree on the nature of their interpretations and on the value of personal revelations (visions, dreams).

If one accepts the possibility of real visionary experiences behind at least some of the apocalypses,[69] then a wide vista for interaction is opened up within the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. Since the material of visions and dreams is constituted from the life-world of the visionary/dreamer, real visions offer a potential locus for (unconscious?) interactions to surface. Since the apocalypses accept these as revelatory, the content thus received would then become more consciously integrated into the tradents' apocalypticism. In other words, latent ideas have the potential of becoming explicit in visions.

---

[67] E.g. the discussion of Carroll, *When Prophecy Failed*, p. 14; James .L. Crenshaw, *Prophetic Conflict: Its Effect upon Israelite Religion*, BZAW 124 (Berlin: de Gruyter, 1971); Thomas W. Overholt, *Channels of Prophecy: The Social Dynamics of Prophetic Activity* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989); Sanders, "Hermeneutics in True and False Prophecy," p. 23, 27.

[68] Cf. Argall, *1 Enoch and Sirach*, pp. 91–98; Wright, "Putting the Puzzle Together," pp. 89–112.

[69] E.g., Stone, "A Reconsideration of Apocalyptic Visions," pp. 167–180.

Perhaps an investigation into the scholarly paradigms of the Achaemenid Empire would discover parallel divergences in epistemologies elsewhere. 'Ecstatic' traditions (such as *Haoma* use) could perhaps be explored for their impact either on the deuteronomistic rejections of divination or upon the source of the apocalypses' visions.

Textual and Oral Hermeneutics

The importance of textual interpretation cannot be overstated for the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. The Apocalyptic Hermeneutic was fostered in a context in which Judaean traditions were being increasingly and authoritatively mediated by texts and their interpreters rather than by more oral means. Yet this textual context was within a greater oral context: most Judaeans were not literate, and texts themselves still relatively rare. This was briefly explored in Chapter III.

It is in the context of texts that prophecy 'died'—texts usurped their role, and scribes took over their mediatory function. This is a situation in which questions of authority were highly fraught—prophets still existed in reality,[70] but they had to prove their authenticity in the face of the written oracles of previous prophets which were held to have been already vindicated.[71] Any 'oracles' thus had to directly deal with the textual remains of previous oracles to guarantee their true prophetic status. This is a sign that re-interpretation is an important nexus of apocalyptic thought and a context for pseudepigraphy. This is a dialectical context, however, where texts are being re-oralized and the oral becoming new text.

Examples of Potential Iranian Impact

If the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic is shown to be tenable, it has broad implications for conceptualizing Iranian interactions. For the present, the nature of such a re-evaluation can only be sketched; it will remain for future work to refine the details.

Past attempts to discuss Iranian influence have largely focused on categorial parallels.[72] This approach is an unsatisfactory starting point yet is still a legitimate consideration. Such parallels ought to serve as a spur to detailed research as well as a way of synthesizing the results of varied textual analyses. The following merely lists severally

---

[70] E.g., John the Baptist, Jesus of Nazareth, or Josephus's anonymous false prophets (*War* 6.5.2; Josephus, *Jewish War III*, p. 459). Brooke, "Prophecy and Prophets," p. 159, cites 4Q375 and the Temple Scroll as evidence of contemporary prophets.

[71] Cf. a tantalizingly similar understanding in Davis, *Swallowing the Scroll*, chapter 6.

[72] E.g., George William Carter, *Zoroastrianism and Judaism* (New York: AMS, 1970); Scheftelowitz, *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum*; Cohn, *Cosmos, Chaos and the World to Come*; to a lesser extent, Boyce and Grenet, *HZ III*, pp. 361–440; cf. the critique in Barr, "The Question of Religious Influence," p. 204.

commonly cited categories by way of noting how they relate to the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, and how this should focus future research into the question.

The spectre of dualism is often raised in the context of Iran. Beyond careful delineation of what is meant by the word (ethical, ontological, etc.), the concept needs to be related to the theodical project in which the apocalyptic hermeneutes were laboring. How would consideration of dualisms and their themes have helped or challenged them in their ideas? Could they have appropriated aspects of Iranian dualistic schemes without appropriating the whole?

Another typical category compared is angelology (and demonology). This category needs to be evaluated in the context of the increasing transcendence of the divine as well as the apparent battle against remaining elements of heno- or polytheism within Judaean traditions themselves. Very closely related to this issue is the vexed question of messianic expectations; these are undoubtedly related to the method whereby G-d's transcendence is mediated, as well as the method of mythological typology used.

The most problematic question involves the issue of eschatology: can the apocalypses' versions of eschatology be compared with versions from Iran? Since eschatology largely plays an interpretive role, it seems likely that for questions of comparative eschatology entire, overall systems need to be compared. Similarly, distinctions between personal and universal eschatology and imminent and deferred eschatology must be remembered.

Finally, an area which deserves consideration is the area of ritual purity, although this is less often used as a category of comparison.[73] Considering the importance of the temple for the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic as well as the complex questions concerning Ezra's Torah and the development of purity laws in Second Temple Judaism, a valid question to be asked is whether some of the conflict between groups in Yehud or the diaspora related to rituals or purity laws derived from, or perceived to have been derived from, Iran.

Conclusions

A focus on the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic as a locus for Iranian influence helps to correlate disparate discrete proposed parallels, while pointing towards a way of assessing their overall significance to the evolution of Second Temple Judaism. This is not to revert to abstract parallel-seeking, or to claim a back-door method for non-textual-based theorizing. Rather, focusing on the hermeneutic draws attention to the real-life processes in which these

---

[73] See, however, Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 189; also proposed without discussion by Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," pp. 415–421; Morton Smith, "Bible II: Persian Elements in the Bible," *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): p. 201; also supported by Barr, "Question of Religious Influence," p. 228.

texts were created, drawing attention to the process in addition to the product.[74] Further, it helps bring clarity to a number of terms often used imprecisely, namely imminent and deferred eschatology, teleology, and mythology. Of course, a similar focus would be equally beneficial for the investigation of influence from other quarters as well.

In conclusion, there is ample scope for re-investigating the importance of Iranian interactions on the formation of Judaean apocalyptic in Second Temple Judaism. The phenomenon of the reinterpretation of traditions, both textual and contextual, offers the best way to understand both the situational context and the unity behind the diversity of the texts and their likely approach to ideas Persian. Paradoxically, the foci of scholarship on either individual apocalypses or on conceptual parallels has obscured how Iranian ideas could inform the process of their creation. It remains for scholarship to investigate more apocalypses individually and to relate them to the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic for a better picture to emerge of just how significant Israel's first encounters with Iran were.

Scholarship still needs, then, for more textual analyses to be done and for these to be related towards the overall Apocalyptic Hermeneutic. This ought to be done with reference to Achaemenid (and later Parthian) contexts, and with careful consideration of the oral-literate dialectic. As such a study advances, it will be possible to better answer the question—what was the significance of Iranian influence upon Jewish apocalyptic?

---

[74] In the realm of aesthetics, this also seems to be the intention of David Davies, "Artistic Intentions and the Ontology of Art," *British Journal of Aesthetics* 39.2 (1999): pp. 148–162.

Metalegomena

While it is hoped that the preceding discussion has adequately demonstrated the viability of and need for a reappraisal of Iranian influence upon Jewish apocalyptic, much which is relevant remains unsaid and untouched. Implications of the study herein and intended future research are therefore mentioned.

Adopting the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic as a framework for investigating Iranian influence carries a wide-ranging array of implications and ramifications which could prove fruitful for further study. A focus on hermeneutics could very productively interact with Boccaccini's attempts to define 'traditions' within Second Temple Judaism;[1] different traditions and/or sects likely operated with different hermeneutics. Each one of these hermeneutics—apocalyptic or not—would have likely interacted with Iranian ideas in divergent ways. Understanding how a group—or its text(s)—interpreted earlier traditions should help clarify the group's openness and potential to adapt from Iran, as well as its differences from other contemporary groups.

Based on the foregoing preliminary analyses, the Enochic tradition appears as a potential candidate for the most thoroughly 'Iranicized' of traditions within Second Temple Judaism, evidencing complex interactions throughout its literary history. In contrast, groups like the Sadducees or scribes like Ben Sirah may have had much less (positive) influence, due primarily to the way in which they interpreted Judaean traditions. This does not mean, however, that such Yahwists could not have been unconsciously and negatively influenced.[2]

Further, understanding eschatology as a method of interpretation which was adopted by some in the Persian period has implications for the study of the final form of the Hebrew Bible. For example, perhaps the eschatologizing of the Day of YHWH influenced the final presentation of the Twelve Minor Prophets in the Masoretic Text.[3]

This study focused in and advocated a closer engagement with the Achaemenid Empire. Since all Yahwists lived subject to the Great Kings for 200 years, this is historically justified and serves as a healthy balance to foci on the Neo-Babylonian and Hellenistic (Ptolemaic and Seleucid) empires. Nevertheless, Iran's significance is not limited to the direct heirs of Cyrus. The results of the analyses of Ezekiel above suggest that closer, sustained research into the Median Empire could prove rewarding, perhaps in conjunction with the

---

[1] E.g., Boccaccini, *Rabbinic Judaism*; Gabriele Boccaccini, "Finding a Place for the Parables with Second Temple Jewish Literature," *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables*, ed. Gabriele Boccaccini (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007), pp. 263–289.

[2] See the Prolegomena.

[3] Cf., the recent trend to see the Twelve as a redacted unity; Paul L. Redditt, "Recent Research on the Book of the Twelve as One Book," *Currents in Research: Biblical Studies* 9 (2001): pp. 47–80. Barton even thinks they evidence a unified eschatology, Barton, "The Day of Yahweh in the Minor Prophets," pp. 68–79.

Assyrian exiles of North or South, or later Jewish enclaves.[4] Perhaps Tobit could belong within such a remit. For the study of Early Christianity in particular, the role of Parthia and the Parthian Period should not be ignored, either. As the major rival to Imperial Rome, Parthia had an important presence in the Ancient Near East, an importance which potentially included its religious and imperial ideas.

A complex desideratum highlighted by this study is the need to investigate the effects and dynamics of the gradual interiorization of literacy in the Persian (and Hellenistic) periods, how this related to the emergence of the apocalypse, and how this interacted with the Persian bureaucracy and its heirs. Since Judaeans indeed served within the various administrative systems, these must have had important interactions. Perhaps one of the intersections of Persian interaction and literacy's interiorization will prove to be the Aramaization of the Judaeans' language.[5] If indeed the initial genesis of the apocalypse is a highly literate phenomenon, a final result of this slow progression of interiorization may prove to have been Qumran.

Further Areas for Research into Iranian Interaction

Persian Administration of Yehud and Diaspora and the Authorization of Torah

A relevant consideration which is not taken up in this study in any detail is the theory of Persian imperial authorization of the Torah.[6] This idea is largely based on an interpretation of Diodorus Sicculus's *Library of History*, the inscriptions of Udjahorresne, and the Book of Ezra.[7] Such an interpretation begs the question of the identity of the 'law of Moses' in Ezra as well as the level of imperial input into its contents. Fried and Fitzpatrick-McKinley argue

---

[4] Cf. an overview of Median sources in A. D. H. Bivar, "Mithraism: A Religion for the Ancient Medes," *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): pp. 341–358; for the archaeology, see Genito, "The Archaeology of the Median Period: An Outline and a Research Perspective," pp. 315–340.

[5] Of course, the relative roles of Hebrew and Aramaic are still much contested, although the importance of Imperial Aramaic for the administration cannot be gainsaid. It is odd that Aramaic is barely mentioned in Mayer Gruber, "Language(s) in Judaism," *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*, eds. Jacob Neusner, et al., vol. III: L-Ra (Leiden: Brill, 2005), pp. 1535–1550. For a study in this vein (although without reference to Persia), see Daniel I. Block, "The Role of Language in Ancient Israelite Perceptions of National Identity," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 103.3 (1984): 321–340.

[6] For a recent discussion of this theory, see the papers in Watts, ed., *Persia and Torah*. See now Cataldo, *A Theocratic Yehud?*.

[7] For the reference in Diodorus, see I.95.4 (Sicculus, *Diodorus of Sicily I*, pp. 324–325); a translation of Udjahorresne is available in Miriam Lichtheim, "Statue Inscription of Udjahorresne," *The Late Period.*, ed. Miriam Lichtheim, Ancient Egyptian Literature 3 (Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1980), pp. 39–40; now, Kuhrt, *The Persian Empire*, pp. 117–120; for discussion of these, see: Donald B. Redford, "The So-Called 'Codification' of Egyptian Law under Darius I," *Persia and Torah*, ed. James W. Watts (Atlanta: SBL, 2001); Joseph Blenkinsopp, "The Mission of Udjahorresnet and Those of Ezra and Nehemiah," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 106.3 (1987): pp. 409–421; Fried, *The Priest and the Great King*, pp. 63–86; cf. Gösta W. Ahlström, *The History of Ancient Palestine* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1994), pp. 874–878.

that it is more likely that Ezra's mission was to set up Imperial *judges* rather than a lawcode.[8] In either case—lawcode or judges—the answer would carry significant implications for Iranian interactions. Of course, the increased use of writing for Judaean traditions and their concomitant authority must be considered in conjunction with the imperial administration. The potential relevance of this line of enquiry is not limited to Ezra-Nehemiah; the general religious policy of the empire—towards cults, cultic sites, proselytizing, self-governance, etc.—are still imperfectly understood.[9] In this respect, renewed examination of the implications of the Elephantine papyri and of the Persepolis tablets could prove ground-breaking. If the Persians were even partially instrumental in the written codification of *Torah*, by fiat or by example, this would have been a watershed in the development of Second Temple Judaism and the Apocalyptic Hermeneutic, indeed.

Ritual and Attitudes towards Purity

Boyce has suggested that Judaism inherited some of its purity concerns from Zoroastrianism.[10] While concern for ritual purity must extend well into the early history of Israel, there is no doubt that their formulation and practice evolved during the Persian period. The impact of ritual practices deserves investigation; perhaps the apparent increase in ritual concerns in Zoroastrianism up to the Sassanian period (and the extension of purity laws from priests to laity) had reverberations within the practices of Second Temple Judaism. Maybe some of the disputes between factions, such as the Pharisees and Sadducees,[11] relate to such dynamics.

Related to purity is the possibilty that behind the apocalypses (and the Merkabeh tradition) lay deliberate cultivation techniques.[12] If this is true, then the practices associated with *Haoma* use in Iran could prove an interesting addition to the Egyptian, Greek, and Babylonian traditions.[13]

---

[8] Lisbeth S. Fried, "'You Shall Appoint Judges': Ezra's Mission and the Rescript of Artaxerxes," *Persia and Torah*, ed. James W. Watts (Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2001), pp. 63–90; Fried, *The Priest and the Great King*, pp. 212–226; Anne Fitzpatrick-McKinley, "Ezra, Nehemiah and Some Early Greek Lawgivers," *Rabbinic Law in its Roman and Near Eastern Context*, ed. Catherine Hezser, Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism 97 (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003), pp. 42–48; Richard C. Steiner, "The mbqr at Qumran, the episkopos in the Athenian Empire, and the Meaning of lbqr' in Ezra 7:14: On the Relation of Ezra's Mission to the Persian Legal Project," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 120.4 (2001): p. 629.

[9] Interestingly in this context, Michael Heltzer, "The Flogging and Plucking of Beards in the Achaemenid Empire and the Chronology of Nehemiah," *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 28 (1995–1996): pp. 305–307, argues that Nehemiah uses imperial punishments for internal Judaean issues.

[10] Boyce, *HZ II*, p. 189; Boyce, *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices*, p. 43.

[11] Perhaps even along the lines of T. W. Manson, "Sadducee and Pharisee: The Origin and Significance of Names," *Bulletin of the John Rylands Library* 22 (1938): pp. 144–159.

[12] E.g., Yarbro Collins, *Cosmology and Eschatology*, p. 8.

[13] On *Haoma*, see Boyce, *HZ I*, pp. 157–159; Jong, *Traditions of the Magi*, pp. 357–362. For objects potentially related from Persepolis, see Bowman, *Aramaic Ritual Texts From Persepolis*, pp. 6–7; for names with a *Haoma-*

Qumran

Qumran is often invoked in discussion of Iranian influence, and a thorough analysis is necessary. In light of the results of this study, a close look at the implications of the reinterpretation of previous traditions through the lens of the apocalyptic hermeneutic should illuminate more clearly the significance of works such as the War Scroll.[14] Further, since Qumran represents a remarkable congregation of highly literate Jews, it ought to exhibit a fascinating relationship with the orality-literacy dialectic and its implications for Iranian influence.

Further Texts

Only a very small sample of relevant texts are discussed here. A number of texts deserve closer scrutiny. Isaiah—in particular Second and Third Isaiah and the 'Isaiah Apocalypse'—ought to be analyzed in terms of its likely Achaemenid setting. As the brief discussion of Smith's thesis of Persian influence on Second Isaiah demonstrated,[15] ample work remains to be done here. Beyond Isaiah, the formation of the prophetic corpus as a whole needs to be evaluated in terms of their textualization in the Persian period. A solid understanding of how apocalyptic related to both prophecy and Iran will require a thorough analysis of this process. It is to be expected that works such as Joel and Zechariah will prove highly significant in this development.

Early Christianity

Only Judaism *per se* was addressed in this study, but a crucial consideration for the overall impact of Iran on apocalyptic is the nascent Jesus movement. Since 'the parting of the ways' can no longer be invoked easily within the period of Second Temple Judaism,[16] the early Jesus movement represents a strain of Judaism particularly influenced by the apocalyptic hermeneutic.[17] Several aspects of study require exploration: the historical Jesus and his role as an 'apocalyptic prophet,' Christian apocalyptic, the relations of this movement

---

theophoric, see Bezalel Porten, "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt," *Irano-Judaica V*, eds. Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer (Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003), pp. 183–184.

[14] Cf. the work done by Paul J. Kobelski, *Melchizedek and Melchireša'*, CBQMS 10 (Washington, DC: Catholic Biblical Association of America, 1981); Shaul Shaked, "Qumran and Iran: further considerations," *Israel Oriental Studies* 2 (1972): pp. 433–446.

[15] Chapter III; Smith, "II Isaiah and the Persians," pp. 415–421.

[16] E.g., as implied by recent titles like Sean Freyne, *Jesus, A Jewish Galilean* (London: T&T Clark, 2004).

[17] E.g., F. García Martínez, "Is Jewish Apocalyptic the Mother of Christian Theology?," *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism*, ed. E. J. C. Tigchelaar, Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 63 (Leiden: Brill, 2007), pp. 129–152; Ehrman, *Jesus: Apocalyptic Prophet of the New Millennium*, chapters 8 and 9; Dieter Georgi, "The Early Church: Internal Jewish Migration or New Religion?," *Harvard Theological Review* 88.1 (1995): pp. 35–68.

to other Jewish traditions, and the relations of all of these to Iran. A closer look at the Parthian Empire and its ideologies and religions will be required for this effort to succeed.[18] It, nevertheless, promises to be extremely fruitful.

Synthesis

A simple yes or no to the question posited by this study is no longer tenable; previous studies need to be replaced by a new paradigm founded on the apocalyptic hermeneutic and complex oral-literate interactions situated within the Achaemenid and later Parthian contexts. A wide array of ideas—from sociological affinities to royal ideologies to religion—need to be considered separately and in concert. Once such a broad spectrum of studies has been completed, biblical scholarship should finally be able to synthesize a sound answer to the question 'what has Persepolis to do with Jerusalem?'

[18] Already favored by Geo Widengren, *Iranisch-semitische Kulturbegegnung in parthischer Zeit*, Arbeitsgemeinschaft für Forschung des Landes Nordrhein-Westfalen 70 (Cologne: Westdeutscher Verlag, 1960); Widengren, "Stand und Aufgaben der iranischen Religionsgeschichte II: Geschichte der iranischen Religionen und ihre Nachwirkung," p. 108; and John R. Hinnells, "Zoroastrian Saviour Imagery and Its Influence on the New Testament," *Numen* 16.3 (1969): pp. 161–185. See also Bryan Rennie, "Zoroastrianism: The Iranian Roots of Christianity?" (paper presented at North American Association for the Study of Religion, Washington, DC), pp. 5–6, who is enthusiastic about Parthian period potentials. The author is grateful to Prof. Rennie for forwarding this paper to him.

Appendix I

Textual and Archaeological Sources

Iranian Sources Cf: (Kellens 1989), (Malandra 1983), (Skjærvø 1995).

A comprehensive anthology of the many sources for the Achaemenid Empire is now available in (Kuhrt 2009). The following considers each category of source separately.

1. THE AVESTA. The Avesta is a collection of the sacred texts of the Zoroastrian community. Only a small portion of the originally oral material is extant (perhaps about one third). The Avesta can be divided into two main divisions based on dialect: the 'Old Avestan' sections (the *Gāthās* and the *Yasna Haptaŋhāiti*) which date around 1000 B.C.E., and the 'Young Avestan' sections (the remainder of the *Yasna*, the *Yašts*, and the *Vidēvdāt*) which date roughly to the Achaemenid period. The extant Avesta largely consists of the liturgy of the Zoroastrian sacrifice (the *Yasna*), but it also includes a purity code (the *Vidēvdāt*) and hymns (the *Yašts*). Some miscellaneous prayers and fragments are also included (the *Niyayeš* and *Sirozahs*). The Old Avestan sections are obscure hymns which have been embedded in the liturgy, and are obviously much older than the surrounding liturgy of which they are now a part. Many of the *Yašts* are also quite archaic, perhaps preserving features of the old Indo-Iranian religion. Rather than viewing the Avesta as the 'Zoroastrian Bible' it is perhaps better to compare it to the Anglican Book of Common Prayer. The only comprehensive translation of these texts in English is still the collection in the Sacred Books of the East Series; even though the translations are outdated, they have been continually referenced here due to their accessibility. In addition, a variety of selected passages are presented in Boyce, *Textual Sources.*

Translations and critical editions:

a. **The Gāthās.** The *Gāthās* are notoriously obscure but are also the most commonly translated. For critical editions see: INSLER, S. *The Gathas of Zarathustra.* Acta Iranica 8. Leiden: Brill, 1975; HUMBACH, H., JOSEF ELFENBEIN, AND PRODS OKTOR SKJÆRVØ. *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra and Other Old Avestan Texts.* Indogermanische Bibliothek: Reihe 1, Lehr- und Handbücher. 2 vols. Heidelberg: Carl Winter, 1991. For easily accessible translations see: DUCHESNE-GUILLEMIN, JACQUES. *The Hymns of Zarathustra: Being a translation of the Gâthâs together with introduction and commentary.* Trans. M. Henning. Wisdom of the East. London: Murray, 1992; *The Yasna, Visparad, Āfrīnagān, Gāhs, and Miscellaneous Fragments.* Trans. Lawrence H. Mills. *The Zend-Avesta, Part III: Sacred Books of the East.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 31. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1887 by Oxford Univ Press.

b. **The Yasna Haptaŋhāiti.** For critical editions, see: NARTEN, JOHANNA. *Der Yasna Haptaŋhāiti.* Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1986; HINTZE, ALMUT. *A Zoroastrian Liturgy: The Worship in Seven Chapters (Yasna 35–41).* Iranica 12. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 2008. Humbach's translation of the *Gāthās* also includes the *Haptaŋhāiti.* The SBE translation is found in: *The Yasna, Visparad, Āfrīnagān, Gāhs, and Miscellaneous Fragments.* Trans. Lawrence H. Mills. *The Zend-Avesta, Part III: Sacred Books of the East.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 31. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1887 by Oxford Univ Press.

c. **The Vidēvdāt**. (also known as the *Vendidad*) There are two English translations: ANKLESARIA, T. *Pahlavi Vendidâd (Zand-î Jvît-dêv-dât): Transliteration and Translation in English*. Dinshah Kapadia, ed. Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Institute, 1949; *The Vendidad*. Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta, Part I: Sacred Books of the East*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 4. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1992. Reprint of 1895 (Second Edition) by Clarendon.

d. **The Yašts**. The only comprehensive English translation of all the *Yašts* remains the SBE edition: *The Sīrōzahs, Yasts, and Nyāyis*. Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta, Part II: The Sacred Books of the East*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 23. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1882 by Oxford Univ Press. A German translation of the complete Avesta (including the *Yašts*; which I have been unable to source, however) is WOLFF, F. *Avesta: Die heiligen Bücher der Parsen, Übersetz auf der Grundlage von Chr. Bartholomae's Altiranishem Wörterbuch*. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1960. See now KOTWAL, FIROZE M., AND ALMUT HINTZE. *The Khorda Avesta and Yašt Codex E1*. Iranica 16. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 2008. Five of the *Yašts* are available in critical editions:

Tištrya Yašt (Yt. 7): PANAINO, ANTONIO. *Tištrya I: The Avestan Hymn to Sirius*. Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990.

Mihr Yašt (Yt. 10): GERSHEVITCH, ILYA. *The Avestan Hymn to Mithra: Introduction, Translation, and Commentary*. Oriental Publications 4. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1959.

Fravaši Yašt (Yt. 13): MALANDRA, WILLIAM W. *The Fravaši Yašt: Introduction, Text, Translation and Commentary*. [PhD, Univ of Pennsylvania, 1971]. London: University Microfilms Intl, 1977.

Vayu Yašt (Yt. 15): A translation is available in the first part (pp. 1–12) of WIKANDER, STIG. *Vayu: Texte und Untersuchungen zur Indo-Iranischen Religionsgeschichte*. Vol. I: Texte. Quastiones Indo-Iranicae 1. Uppsala: Lundequistska Bokhandeln, 1941.

Zamyad Yašt (Yt. 19): HINTZE, ALMUT. *Zamyād-Yašt: Edition, Übersetzung, Kommentar*. Beiträge zur Iranistik 15. Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1994; HUMBACH, HELMUT, AND PALLAN R. ICHAPORA. *Zamyād Yasht, Yasht 19 of the Younger Avesta: Text, Translation, Commentary*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1998.

2. VARIOUS PRAYERS AND FRAGMENTS. In addition to the Avesta proper, various other texts in the Avestan language have survived. A funeral liturgy, the *Aogəmadaēcā*, quotes both extant and lost Avestan passages. The *Niyayeš*, *Sirozahs*, and various other prayers and fragments also exist.

Translations:

a. **The Sirozahs and Niyayeš.** See *The Sīrōzahs, Yasts, and Nyāyis*. Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta, Part II: The Sacred Books of the East*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Vol. 23. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1882 byOxford Univ Press.

b. **The Aogəmadaēcā**. JAMASP ASA, KAIKHUSROO M. *Aogəmadaēcā: A Zoroastrian Liturgy*. Veröffentlichungen der Iranischen Kommission 11. Vienna: Österreichischen Akademie Der Wissenschaften, 1982.

3. THE OLD PERSIAN INSCRIPTIONS. A number of inscriptions in Old Persian cuneiform have been found throughout Iran from the reigns of Darius I to Artaxerxes II. These are from the palaces at Persepolis, Pasargadae, and Susa, as well as from the Behistun cliff, Naqsh-ī Rustam, and Ecbatana/Hamadan. While largely concerned with commemorative

and political issues, various religious concepts known from the Avesta do appear. A full list of the Old Persian inscriptions can be found in Kent; a number of critical editions and facsimiles have been produced by Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum.

Translations and Critical Editions:

a. **General Corpus.** The standard edition, with grammatical discussion, is KENT, ROLAND GRUBB. *Old Persian: Grammar, Texts, Lexicon.* 2nd ed. New Haven, CT: American Oriental Society, 1961. More recently, selected translations (without transcriptions) are offered by BROSIUS, MARIA. *The Persian Empire from Cyrus II to Artaxerxes I.* London: Classical Teachers Association, 2000. For a correction to two of Kent's versions, see SCHMITT, RÜDIGER. "On Two Xerxes Inscriptions." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 62.2 (1999): 323–325.

b. **Critical Editions and Facsimiles.** For Darius's Bisitun/Behistun inscription, see the editions of: SCHMITT, RÜDIGER. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991; GREENFIELD, JONAS C., BEZALEL PORTEN, AND ADA YARDENI. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Aramaic Version.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1982; VOIGTLANDER, ELIZABETH N. VON. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great, Babylonian Version.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicum II.1. London: Lund Humphries, 1978. For Persepolis itself, see: SHAHBAZI, A. SHAPUR. *Old Persian Inscriptions of the Persepolis Platform.* Portfolio I. Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1985. For Post-Achaemenid Iranian inscriptions, see: GIGNOUX, PHILIPPE. *Glossaire des inscriptions Pehlevies et Parthes.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1972.

4. VARIOUS TABLET ARCHIVES. Several large deposits of clay tablets from the Achaemenid period have been found which can be used to cull details on the actual conditions and mechanisms of daily life in the empire. Most relevant are the Elamite cuneiform archives found at Persepolis (The Treasury Tablets and the Fortification Tablets.) These tablets are largely receipts and ration documents showing the economic and administrative activities around Persepolis. The topics disclosed include religious rations and a mysterious, otherwise unknown *Lan* ceremony. Not all of the tablets have been published to date. In addition to the Persepolis tablets, the Akkadian tablets of the Murašu Archive help to illuminate the situation in Achaemenid Babylonia.

Translations and Critical Editions:

a. **Persepolis Tablets**. CAMERON, GEORGE G. *Persepolis Treasury Tablets.* Oriental Institute Publications 65. Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1948; CAMERON, GEORGE G., AND ILYA GERSHEVITCH. "New Tablets from the Persepolis Treasury." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 24.3 (1965): 167–192; HALLOCK, RICHARD T. "The Use of Seals on the Persepolis Fortification Tablets." pp. 127–133 in *Seals and Sealings in the Ancient Near East.* Eds. M. Gibson and R. D. Briggs. Bibliotheca Mesopotamica 6. Malibu: Undena, 1977; HALLOCK, RICHARD T. *Persepolis Fortification Tablets.* Oriental Institute Publications 92. Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1969; HALLOCK, RICHARD T. "Selected Fortification Texts." *Cahiers de la D. A. F. I.* 8 (1978): 109–136; BOWMAN, RAYMOND A. *Aramaic Ritual Texts From Persepolis.* University of Chicago Oriental Institute Pub XCI. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970; STOLPER, MATTHEW W. "The Neo–Babylonian Text from the Persepolis Fortification." *Journal of Near Eastern*

Studies 43.4 (1984): 299–310; RAZMJOU, SHAHROKH. "Project Report of the Persepolis Fortification Tablets." *Achemenet: Arta* 2.4 (2004): 1–12, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2004.2004–Razmjou.pdf.; JONES, CHARLES E., AND MATTHEW W. STOLPER. "Fortification Texts Sold at the Auction of the Erlenmeyer Collection." *Achemenet: Arta* 4.1 (2006): 1–22, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2006.2001.Jones–Stolper.pdf; STOLPER, MATTHEW W., AND JAN TAVERNIER. "An Old Persian Administrative Tablet from the Persepolis Fortification." *Achemenet: Arta* 5.1 (2007): 1–28, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2007.2001–Stolper–Tavernier.pdf; ARFA'I, ABDOL MAJID. "PT 10a, Collated and Completed." *Achemenet: Arta* 6.1 (2008): 1–8, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2008.2001–Arfai.pdf.

b. **Babylonian Tablets**. Several Akkadian archives provide information for the Achaemenid Empire. Commonly cited is the **Murašu Archive**. This Archive is supposedly published in Cardascia, G. *Les Archives des Murašu.* Paris, 1951, but I have been unable to access it.For the Ergibi texts, see Abraham, Kathleen. *Business and Politics under the Persian Empire: the Financial Dealings of Marduk-nasir-apli of the House of Egibi (521–487 B.C.E.).* Bethesda, MD: CDL, 2004. More recently discovered is the **TAYN** archive, which is discussed in Pearce, Laurie E. "New Evidence for Judeans in Babylonia." pp. 399–412 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period.* Eds. Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming. Winona Lake, IN: Eerdmans, 2006.

5. VARIOUS PAPYRI. A number of Aramaic papyri from the Achaemenid period have been discovered, most notably in Egypt. Administrative notes belonging to the Satrap Aršam are known, as well as a remarkable collection from the Yahwistic military colony on the island of Elephantine. Like the tablet archives, these provide valuable insights into the daily workings of the empire, and they occasionally mention religious issues. A collection of Persian period papyri from Samaria is also available.

Translations and Critical Editions:

a. **Egyptian Papyri**. A number of collections of papyri from Egypt have been published; PORTEN, BEZALEL. *The Elephantine Papyri in English: Three Millennia of Cross-Cultural Continuity and Change.* Leiden: Brill, 1996; DRIVER, G. R. *Aramaic Documents of the Fifth Century B.C.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1954; COWLEY, A. *Aramaic Papyri of the Fifth Century B.C.* Osnabrück: Otto Zeller, 1967. First Published 1923. KRAELING, EMIL G. *The Brooklyn Museum Aramaic Papyri: New Documents of the Fifth Century B.C. from the Jewish Colony at Elephantine.* New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1953; GREENFIELD, JONAS C., BEZALEL PORTEN, AND ADA YARDENI. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Aramaic Version.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1982.

b. **Samarian Papyri**. A number of papyri were found at Wadi ed-Daliyeh in Samaria. Editions of the seals and the papyri are available in the DJD series: WINN LEITH, MARY JOAN. *Wadi Daliyeh I: The Wadi Daliyeh Seal Impressions.* Discoveries in the Judean Desert XXIV. Oxford: Clarendon, 1997; GROPP, DOUGLAS M., ET AL. *Wadi Daliyeh II: The Samaria Papyri from Wadi Daliyeh and Qumran Cave 4 XXVIII.* Discoveries in the Judaean Desert XXVIII. Oxford: Clarendon, 2001.

6. THE PAHLAVI WRITINGS. A variety of religious writings in Pahlavi (Middle Persian) from the ninth and tenth centuries C.E. have also survived. These preserve translations and commentaries on the Avesta, both extant and (now) lost, digests of theological literature, and

new compositions. While the date of these texts is extremely late, they cannot be ignored when discussing early Iranian religion for several reasons. Firstly, most the Avesta is lost and much of Pahlavi writings are translations, epitomes, or commentaries on the Avestan text; they thus preserve valuable additional information which is otherwise lost and must be considered when evaluating the extent Avesta. Secondly, perhaps more dangerously, the Pahlavi writings preserve earlier interpretations of the Zoroastrian traditions which are again useful for assessing the continuity and evolution of that tradition. These texts must be used very warily, with the understanding that some of the material must be late, even though some of it may be incredibly ancient. It is wise to try to parallel materials in the Pahlavi material with the extant Avesta and Greek sources when trying to evaluate the usefulness of a particular work. Among the Pahlavi writings are the *Bundahišn* (An epitome largely on mythology, cosmogony, and eschatology), the so-called *Zand-ī Vahman Yašn* (supposedly a commentary on a lost *Yašt*), the *Ardā Virāz Nāmag* (report of an ecstatic vision), the *Dēnkard* (a summary of the contents of the Avesta), the *Mēnōg-ī Xrad*, and the Selections of Zatspram (an epitome and letter by a theologian). For a List of a variety of other texts and the editions of them available, see Nyberg, *A Manual of Pahlavi*. The only comprehensive English translation is again in the Sacred Books of the East.

Translations and Critical Editions:

a. **The Bundahišn**. For transliteration and translation of the 'Greater' *Bundahišn*, see: ANKLESARIA, BEHRAMGORE T. *Zand-Ākāsīh: Iranian or Greater Bundahisn: Text and Translation*. Bombay: Rahnumae Mazdayasnan Sabha, 1956; The 'Shorter' or 'Indian' *Bundahišn* is given in the SBE edition: *The Bundahis, Bahman Yast, and Shāyast Lā-Shāyast*. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts I*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 5. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1880 by Oxford Univ Press.

b. **Zand-ī Vahman Yašn**. The most recent critical edition is CERETI, CARLO G. *The Zand-ī Wahman Yasn: a Zoroastrian Apocalypse*. SOR 75. Rome, 1995. An older transliteration and translation is: ANKLESARIA, BEHRAMGORE T. *Zand-î Vohûman Yasn and Two Pahlavi Fragments: Text, Transliteration, and Translation*. Bombay: Mrs. B. T. Anklesaria, 1957; *The Bundahis, Bahman Yast, and Shāyast Lā-Shāyast*. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts I*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 5. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1880 by Oxford Univ Press.

c. **Ardā Virāz Nāmag**. A critical edition with facsimiles and translation is available in VAHMAN, FEREYDUN. *'Arda Wiraz Namag': The Iranian 'Divina Commedia'*. Scandinavian Institute of Asian Studies London: Curzon, 1986.

d. **Dēnkard.** The *Dēnkard* is not available in its entirety in translation. A facsimile of the text is available in DRESDEN, MARK J. *Denkart: a Pahlavi Text*. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1966, which I have not been able to access. A variety of scholars offer translations of portions of the *Dēnkard*, including, BOYCE, MARY. *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism*. Textual Sources for the Study of Religion. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984; BAILEY, H. W. *Zoroastrian Problems in the Ninth-Century Books*. Ratanbai Katrak Lectures. Rev. ed. Oxford: Clarendon, 1971; ZAEHNER, R. C. *The Teachings of the Magi: A Compendium of Zoroastrian Beliefs*. London, 1956. Two volumes of the SBE offer translations of parts of Books VII and IX. See: *Contents of the Nasks*. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts IV*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of

the East 37. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1892 by Oxford Univ Press; *Marvels of Zoroastrianism.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts V.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 47. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1897 by Oxford Univ Press.

e. **Mēnōg-ī Xrad** . The only complete English translation of this text is the SBE edition: *Dīnā-ī Maīnōg-ī Khirad Sikand-Gūmānīk Vigār Sad Dar.* Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts III.* Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 24. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1885 by Oxford Univ Press. Selections are also available in ZAEHNER, R. C. *The Teachings of the Magi* (1971).

Classical Sources. Cf. (Clemen 1920), (Benveniste 1929), (Jong 1997)

1. THE GREEK HISTORIANS. A number of Greek writers wrote directly about the Persian Empire and the religion of its inhabitants, and they provide valuable, if difficult to use and assess, information. The more complete and important writers are Herodotus, Xenophon, Plutarch, Strabo, and Arrian, but various small notices and details appear in many writers. Perhaps most significant for the history of Persian religion are the comments in Plato, Aristotle, and Xanthos the Lydian. All these sources must be carefully weighed and used as they represent a Hellenized view of the Persian Empire and its religion which is not always completely trustworthy. A complete collection of all the classical texts relevant to Persian religion (Greek and Latin) has been complied by Clemen. Several have been critically discussed by de Jong.

Translations and Critical Editions:

a. **General Collection**. Clemen, Carolus. *Fontes Historiae Religionis Persicae.* Bonn: Marcus & Weber, 1920.

b. **Individual Sources**. A variety of editions for most classical sources are available. The ones consulted in this study are here given for convenience and transparency.

Aeschylus. *Suppliant Maidens, The Persians, Prometheus Bound, and Seven Against Thebes.* Trans. Herbert W. Smyth. *Aeschylus I: Plays.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1922.

Aristotle. Ross, Sir David. *Select Fragments.* The Works of Aristotle, Vol. XII. Oxford: Clarendon, 1952.

Arrian. *Anabasis Alexandri, Books I–IV.* Trans. P. A. Brunt. *Arrian I.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1976; *Anabasis Alexandri Books V–VII; Indica.* Trans. P. A. Brunt. *Arrian II.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1983.

Athenaeus. *The Deipnosophists.* Trans. Charles B Gulick. *Athenaeus VI.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1937.

Basil, Saint. *The Letters.* Trans. Roy J. Deferrari. *The Letters, IV.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1934.

Ctesias. *Persika.* Trans. John Gilmore. *The Fragments of the Persika of Ktesias.* London: Macmillan, 1888; Photius. *The Bibliotheca.* Trans. N. G. Wilson. *Photius: The Bibliotheca.* London: Duckworth, 1994.

Hesiod. Evelyn-White, Hugh G., ed. *Hesiod, Homeric Hymns, Epic Cycle, Homerica.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998.

Herodotus. *The Persian Wars.* Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books I–II* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002; Trans. A. D. Godley. *The*

Persian Wars, Books III–IV. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000; Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books V–VII* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006; Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books VIII–IX*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001.

Josephus. *Jewish Antiquities*. Trans. H. St. J. Thackeray. *Jewish Antiquities I–III*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998; *The Jewish War*. Trans. H. St. J. Thackeray. *Josephus III: The Jewish War Books IV–VII*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1928.

Meiggs, Russell, and David Lewis. *A Selection of Greek Historical Inscriptions to the End of the Fifth Century B.C.* Revised ed. Oxford: Clarendon, 1989.

Pausanias. *Description of Greece*. Trans. W. H. S. Jones and H. A. Ormerod. *Description of Greece, Books III–V*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1977.

Plato. *Alcibiades I*. Trans. W. R. M. Lamb. *Carmides, Alcibiades I & II, Hipparchus, The Lovers, Theages, Minos, Epinomis*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1964; *Laws*. Trans. R. G. Bury. *The Laws, Books I–VI*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1967; *Phaedrus*. Trans. Harold North Fowler. *Plato I: Euthyphro, Apology, Crito, Phaedo, Phaedrus*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1982; *Seventh Letter*. Trans. R. G. Bury. Pages 463–565 in *Plato IX: Timaeus, Critias, Cleitophon, Menexenus, Epistles*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1975.

Plutarch. *Artaxerxes*. Trans. Bernadotte Perrin. Pages 127–204 in *Plutarch Lives XI (Aratus, Artaxerxes, Galba, Otho)*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002; *Isis and Osiris*. Trans. F. C. Babbitt. *Moralia V*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1935; *Lysander*. Trans. Bernadotte Perrin. *Plutarch's Lives IV*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1986.

Rufus, Quintus Curtius. *History of Alexander*. Trans. John C. Rolfe. *Quintus Curtius I, Books I–V*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946; Rufus, Quintus Cutius. *History of Alexander*. Trans. John C. Rolfe. *Quintus Curtius II, Books VI–X*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946

Sicculus, Diodorus. *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily I*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1989; *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily IV, Books IX–XII*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946; *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily VI*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1954; *Library of History*. Trans. Russel M. Geer. *Diodorus of Sicily IX*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1947.

Strabo. *Geography*. Trans. Horace Leonard Jones. *The Geography of Strabo, V*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1928; *Geography*. Trans. Horace Leonard Jones. *The Geography of Strabo VI*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1929; *Geography*. Trans. Horace Leonard Jones. *The Geography of Strabo, VII*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1930.

Thucydides. *History of the Peloponnesian War*. Trans. C. Forster Smith. *Thucydides I*. LCL ed. Cambridge: Harvard Univ Press, 1980.

Xenophon. *Cyropaedia*. Trans. Walter Miller. *Cyropaedia, Books I–IV*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001; *Cyropaedia*. Trans. Walter Miller. *Cyropaedia, Books V–VIII*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000; *Anabasis*. Trans. Carleton L. Brownson and John Dillery. *Anabasis*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006.

Archaeological Sources. Cf. (Root 1979).

1. MONUMENTAL REMAINS. Excavations have been conducted at the imperial capitals of Pasargade, Persepolis, and Susa, but not yet at Ecbatana. These sites provide invaluable

information on the official ideology and iconography of the Great Kings, as well as details about the administration.

Reports:

STRONACH, DAVID. *Pasargadae: a Report on the Excavations.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1978; SCHMIDT, ERICH F. *Persepolis I: Structures, Reliefs, Inscriptions.* Oriental Institute Publications 68. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1953; *Persepolis II: Contents of the Treasury and Other Discoveries.* Oriental Institute Publications 69. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1957; *Persepolis III: The Royal Tombs and Other Monuments.* Oriental Institute Publications 70. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970; BOUCHARLAT, RÉMY. "Pasargadae." *Iran* 40 (2002): 279–282. For recent salvage excavations in Fars, see the following Achemenet reports: ADACHI, TAKURO, AND MOHSEN ZEIDI. "Achaemenid and Post-Achaemenid Remains from TB 75 and the General Survey of the Tang-i Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.2 (2009): 1–8, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2002–Adachi&Zeidi.pdf; CHAVERDI, ALIREZA ASKARI, AND PIERFRANCESCO CALLIERI. "Achaemenid and Post-Achaemenid Remains at TB 76 and TB 77." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.4 (2009): 1–35, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2004–Askari&Callieri.pdf; ATAI, MOHAMMAD T., AND RÉMY BOUCHARLAT. "An Achaemenid Pavilion and Other Remains in Tang-i Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.5 (2009): 1–33, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2005–Atai&Boucharlat.pdf; ASADI, ALI, AND BARBARA KAIM. "The Achaemenid Building at Site 64 in Tang-e Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.3 (2009): 1–20, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2003–Asadi&Kaim.pdf.; HELWING, BARBARA, AND MOJGAN SEYEDIN. "The Achaemenid Period Occupation at Tang-i Bulaghi Site 73." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.6 (2009): 1–7, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2006–Helwing&Seyedin.pdf; HENKELMAN, WOUTER, CHARLES E. JONES, AND MATTHEW W. STOLPER. "Clay tags with Achaemenid Seal Impressions in the Dutch Institute of the Near East (NINO) and Elsewhere." *Achemenet: Arta* 2.1 (2004): 1–66, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2004.2001/2004.2001.pdf.; "Achaemenid Elamite Administratives Tablets 2: the Qasr-i Abu Nasr Tablet." *Achemenet: Arta* 4.3 (2006): 1–20, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2006.2003–Stolper–Jones–Henkelman.pdf.

2. OTHER MATERIAL REMAINS. The vast territory of the Achaemenid Empire still hold untold potential for archaeological information. An inkling of some of types of information is given below.

CALMEYER, PETER. "Art in Iran II: Median Art and Architecture." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1986): 565–569; "Art in Iran III: Achaemenian Art and Architecture." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1986): 569–580. CURTIS, JOHN E. "The Material Culture of Tepe Nush-i Jan and the End of the Iron Age III Period in Western Iran." *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): 233–246. EPH'AL, ISRAEL. "Changes in Palestine During the Persian Period in Light of Epigraphic Sources." *Israel Exploration Journal* 48.1–2 (1998): 106–119; GARRISON, MARK B., AND PAUL E. DION. "The Seal of Ariyāramna in the Royal Ontario Museum, Toronto." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 58.1 (1999): 1–17. GENITO, BRUNO. "The Archaeology of the Median Period: An Outline and a Research Perspective." *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): 315–340. HARRISON, CYNTHIA M. "Persian Names on Coins of Northern Anatolia." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 41.3

(1982): 181–194. HOUTKAMP, J. "Some Remarks on Fire Altars of the Achaemenid Period." pp. 23–48 in *La Religion iranienne a l'epoque achaemenide (Actes du collogne de Liege 11 decembre 1987).* Ed. Jean Kellens. Iranica Antiqua Supp. 5. Gent: Iranica Antiqua, 1991. MAGEE, PETER, ET AL. "The Achaemenid Empire in South Asia and Recent Excavations in Akra in Northwest Pakistan." *American Journal of Archaeology* 109.4 (2005): 711–741; NASHLI, HASAN FAZELI. "The Achemenid/Post-Achaemenid Remains in Tang-i Bulaghi near Pasargadae: a Report on the Salvage Excavations conducted by five teams in 2004–2007." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.1 (2009): 1–6, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2001–Fazeli.pdf. MATHIESON, Ian, Elizabeth Bettles, and H. S. Smith. "A Stela of the Persian Period from Saqqara." *Journal of Egyptian Archaeology* 81 (1995): 23–41. MOOREY, P. R. S. "Aspects of Worship and Ritual on Achaemenid Seals." pp. 218–226 in *Akten des VII International Kongress für Iran: Kunst und Archäologie (Munich, 1976).* Berlin: Dietrich Reimer, 1979; "The Iconography of an Achaemenid Stamp-Seal Acquired in the Lebanon." *Iran* 16 (1978): 143–154. POPE, ARTHUR UPHAM, AND PHYLLIS ACKERMAN, eds. *A Survey of Persian Art.* 16 vols. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1938–1960?. POTTS, D. T. "Kharg Island." *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2004): n.p., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/; SHAHBAZI, ALIREZA. "The Irano-Lycian Monuments: The Principle Antiquities of Xanthos and its Region as Evidence for Iranian Aspects of Achaemenid Lycia." PhD Diss, London Univ, 1973. STRONACH, DAVID. "Notes on Median and Early Achaemenian Religious Monuments." pp. 123–130 in *Temples and High Places in Biblical Times: Proceedings of the Colloquium in Honor of the Centennial of Hebrew Union College-Jewish Institute of Religion, Jerusalem, 14–16 March 1977.* Ed. Avraham Biran. Jerusalem: Hebrew Union College, 1981; "Tepe Nūsh-i Jān: the Median Settlement." pp. 832–836 in *Cambridge History of Iran.* Ed. Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. 2: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985. SUMMERS, GEOFFREY D. "Aspects of Material Culture at the Iron Age Capital on the Kerkenes Dağ in Central Anatolia." *Ancient Near Eastern Studies* 43 (2006): 164–202; "The Median Empire Reconsidered: A View from Kerkenes Dağ." *Anatolian Studies* 50 (2000): 55–73; "Archaeological Evidence for the Achaemenid Period in Eastern Turkey." *Anatolian Studies* 43 (1993): 85–108. TADMOR, MIRYAM. "Fragments from an Achaemenid Throne From Samaria." *Israel Exploration Journal* 24.1 (1974): 37–43. WESTENHOLZ, JOAN G., AND MATTHEW W. STOLPER. "A stone Jar with Inscriptions of Darius I in Four Languages." *Achemenet: Arta* 1.5 (2002): 1–13, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2002.2005–loc.pdf. WUTTMAN, MICHAEL, THIERRY GONON, AND CHRISTOPHE THIERS. "The Qanats of 'Ayn-Manâwîr Kharga Oasis, Egypt." *Journal of Achaemenid Studies and Researches* 1 (2000): n.p., http://www.achemenet.com/pdf/jasr/jasr2000.pdf.

3. SYNTHETIC PUBLICATIONS. A number of excellent publications display a range of photographs of sites and artefacts from Achaemenid Iran, and are well worth consulting. For some excellent works, see:

GHIRSHMAN, ROMAN. *Persia: From the Origins to Alexander the Great.* Trans. Stuart Gilbert and James Emmons. The Arts of Mankind. London: Thames & Hudson, 1964; PORADA, EDITH. *Ancient Iran: the Art of Pre-Islamic Times.* Art of the World XVI. London: Methuen, 1965; BOARDMAN, JOHN. *Persia and the West: An Archaeological Investigation of the Genesis of Achaemenid Art.* London: Thames & Hudson, 2000; ALLEN, LINDSAY. *The Persian Empire: A History.* London: British Museum, 2005; CURTIS, JOHN E., AND NIGEL TALLIS, eds. *Forgotten Empire: The World of Ancient Persia.* Berkeley: Univ of California P, 2005; MITCHELL, Terence C. "The Persepolis Sculptures in the British Museum." *Iran* 38 (2000): 49–56.

Appendix II

Orthography of Languages

A variety of ancient languages are relevant to the topic of this dissertation, and most of them display multiple methods of transcription into Roman characters. For clarity and ease of reference, the methods of dealing with each language employed in this study are noted below. Direct quotations from authors retain the author's orthography.

Hebrew and Aramaic

Words are displayed using the square 'Aramaic' characters without pointing, unless the pointing is necessary for the argument, and English transliteration is avoided.

א ב ג ד ו ז ח ט י כ ל מ נ ס ע פ צ ק ר ש ת

Greek

Words appear using the Greek alphabet; transliteration is avoided.

α β γ δ ε ζ η θ ι κ λ μ ν ξ ο π ρ σ τ υ φ χ ψ ω

Old Persian

Words appear in English transliteration in italics, without reference to the cuneiform script. The spellings of words conform to that given by Schmitt (2008)[1] with reference to Kent (1961),[2] except where a conventional spelling prevails (e.g., *Ahura Mazda* for *Auramazdā*). As a rule, the Latinized Greek forms of Persian names are used in lieu of the Persian forms (e.g., Darius for *Dārayavauš*). A * prefix indicates a reconstructed form.

a ā b ç č d f g h i ī j k (l) m n p r s š t θ u ū v x y z (ž)

Avestan

Words appear in English transliteration in italics. The spellings of words are simplified, but based on Hale (2008:1),[3] except for the letter *c*, where the older *č* is retained; common words follow conventional spellings (e.g., *Gāthās* for *Gāθās*). See also (Hoffman 1988).[4] A * prefix indicates a reconstructed form.

a ā ə e ē o ō i ī u ū k x x^{v} g č j t θ d δ p f b β ŋ n m y v r š s ž h

---

[1] Rüdiger Schmitt, "Old Persian," *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas*, ed. Roger D. Woodard (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008), pp. 76–100.

[2] Kent, *Old Persian.*

[3] Mark Hale, "Avestan," *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas*, ed. Roger D. Woodard (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008), pp. 101–122.

[4] Karl Hoffman, "Avesta Script; Phonology of the Avesta; Grammar of the Avesta," *Encyclopædia Iranica* III.1 (1988): pp. 47–62

Pahlavi

The Pahlavi script has its own difficulties; for a discussion see Hale (2008:2).[5] 'Transcriptions' of Pahlavi follow those in MacKenzie (1967; 1971).[6] The exception to this rule is Hale's character 5, for which MacKenzie and Hale use *w*, since Boyce, Bailey, and other scholarship familiar to Biblical Studies use *v*, the standard spellings here retain the older orthography. Other, related languages (Parthian, Manichaean Middle Persian) are based on the orthography in Boyce, *A Word-List of Manichaean Middle Persian and Parthian.*[7]

a ā b č d e ē f g h i ī j k l m n o ō p r s š t u ū v x y z ž

Other Languages

Any other language incidentally encountered (e.g., Elamite, Akkadian, Ge'ez) are transcribed in English following their scholarly sources and no attempt at normalization is made.

---

[5] Mark Hale, "Pahlavi," *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas*, ed. Roger D. Woodard (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008), pp. 123–135.

[6] D. N. MacKenzie, "Notes on the Transcription of Pahlavi," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 30.1 (1967): pp. 17–29; D. N. MacKenzie, *A Concise Pahlavi Dictionary* (London: Oxford Univ Press, 1971).

[7] Mary Boyce, *A Word-List of Manichaean Middle Persian and Parthian*, Acta Iranica (Leiden: Brill, 1975).

Appendix III

Glossary of Iranian Terms

When possible, words appear initially in their Avestan form, followed by the Pahlavi in parenthesis, e.g., Miθra (Mihr).

Achaemenid: Dynasty which ruled from Persia from Cyrus II to Darius III (ca. 600–332 B.C.E.). Although Cyrus's line was broken by Darius I (522), it was continued by Xerxes I, whose mother was Cyrus's daughter, Atossa.

Aēšma (Xēšm): Personification of 'wrath' and one of the principle demons in Zoroastrianism. First appears in the *Gāthās*.

Ahura: Avestan equivalent of Sanskrit 'Asura,' meaning 'lord.' Originally a class designation of Indo-Iranian deities.

Ahura Mazda (Ohrmazd): 'The Wise Lord,' chief god in Iran and in Zoroastrianism. Appears in the Old Persian inscriptions as *Auramazdā*.

Amәša Spәnta (Amahraspand): A group of personified abstractions which emanate from *Ahura Mazda*. Originally a fluid group, by the Young Avesta they were standardized into a group of seven (*Spәnta Mainiiu, Vohu Manah, Spәnta Armāiti, Aša Vahišta, Xšaθra Vairiia, Haurvātat* and *Amәrәtat*).

Arәdvī Sūrā Anāhitā (Ardvīsūr): Goddess, probably originally the deification of a spring or river. Popular in the west, she was later assimilated to/identified with Anaïtis and Ištar. One of three deities which appear in Old Persian inscriptions.

Aŋra Mainiiu/Angra Mainyu (Ahriman): 'The Devil' of Zoroastrianism, technical name derived from 'evil/malignant spirit.' He is the inverse of *Ahura Mazda* in all respects. There was some ambivalence in the tradition over whether *Aŋra Mainiiu* was properly the evil counterpart to *Ahura Mazda* or *Spәnta Mainiiu*.

Aogәmadaēca: A late Avestan funeral liturgy.

Apadāna: Old Persian word for a columned hall, as at Pasargadae, Persepolis, and Susa.

Apocalyptic literature: literature in Second Temple Judaism which is related to the genre 'apocalypse' but not strictly an apocalypse.

Apocalypse: A genre of literature which appears in Second Temple Judaism and has parallels in other contexts. It takes a narrative form and depicts a revelation. See the standard definition in *Semeia* 14 and amended in *Semeia* 36.

Ardā Virāz Nāmag: A ninth–tenth century Pahlavi apocalypse, with a tour of heaven and hell. Often described as 'the Persian *Divine Comedy*.'

Armāiti (Spendārmad): Personification of obedience or religious devotion, patron of the earth, and one of the *Amәša Spәnta*s.

Arštāt (Aštād): Personification of justice.

Aša: 'Truth' or 'Order,' the good principle of the universe and the quality of all Ahura Mazda's creation. Appears as *Rta* in Sanskrit and *Arta* in Old Persian.

Aša Vahišta (Ardvahišt): The personification of *Aša* as one of the *Amәša Spәntas*.

Aši (Ard): Personification of 'Reward, recompense.'

Astuuat.ərəta: The given name of the only Saošiiant in the original eschatological framework and of the final Saošiiant in the tripled version.

Astōdān: Old Persian for an ossuary.

Avesta: The sacred writings of the Zoroastrians. Originally transmitted solely orally, only approximately one quarter is today extant.

Aži Dahāka: Mythical dragon who became an arch-accomplice of Angra Mainyu. He had three heads and killed the primeval king Yima. He was defeated by *Θraētaona*; in some versions, he lays bound inside Mount Damavand, awaiting his release and death at the hands of *Kərəsāspa*.

Barəsman (Barsom): Originally a mat of grass or twigs upon which sacrifice was performed. Later became a bundle of twigs held by the priests during the ceremony, as is visible on a number of Achaemenid archaeological remains.

Behistun: Cliff face on the road from the Iranian plateau to the Mesopotamian plains upon which Darius I inscribed his account of his accession to the throne (also spelled *Bisitun*).

Bundahišn: A ninth–tenth century Pahlavi epitome and commentary on the Avestan creation and eschatological myths. Some parts are clearly translations of lost Avestan sections; others are later interpretations. Contains the most systematic presentation of Zoroastrian eschatology extant.

Činvatō Pəretu (Činvat Puhl): Precise definition of the term is debated; bridge over which the newly deceased soul must pass to reach paradise. If the soul is wicked the bridge reduces to a hair's breadth and the soul plunges to hell; if it is righteous the bridge becomes wide.

Daēna (Dēn): Common noun means 'religion.' As a personification, it appears to represent a deceased soul's conscience. It appears after death to reward or rebuke the soul. Also sometime personified as a separate *yazata* representing Zoroastrianism itself.

Daēuua (Dēv): Avestan for 'demon.' Originally a class of Indo-Iranian deities.

Dādestān ī dīnīg: A late Sassanian priest's response to a series of questions on Zoroastrian doctrine.

Daxma: Originally a grave; after the widespread adoption of exposure became a technical term for the places of exposure later termed 'towers of silence.'

Dēnkard: A ninth century Pahlavi work which lists the contents of the Avestan Nasks and summarizes some of them.

Druj (Drōz): 'Lie,' 'deceit;' the evil principle of the universe; the opposite of *Aša.*

Frašo.kərəti (Frašegird): 'Making wonderful,' the eschatological restoration of the world to the perfection originally created by Ahura Mazda.

Frauuašī (Fravard/Fravahr): A band of warrior deities, spirits of the ancestors, and the eternal 'essence' of a righteous entity; which meaning is intended at a given time is not always clear.

Gāthās: Esoteric religious poems in Old Avestan traditionally ascribed to Zarathuštra which form the central portion of the *Yasna.* Roughly equivalent to the psalms.

Haoma (Hōm): The juice pounded from an unknown plant and used during the *Yasna.* The juice most likely had some kind of hallucinogenic, intoxicating, or narcotic effect. The mortars and pestles found at Persepolis are usually connected to the pounding of *Haoma.* Paralleled by the use of Soma in the Rig Veda.

Haurvātat and Amərətat (Hordād and Amurdād): Personifications of 'Health' and 'Immortality' respectively and two of the *Aməša Spəntas.* Usually appear together.

Herā (Harburz, Alburz)/ Taēra (Terag): The mythical mountain both in the centre of the world and the range ringing the world; later identified with Mount Damavand north east of Tehran. The *Taēra* is its peak.

Kavi Vīštāspa: The legendary first convert and patron of Zaraθuštra; also the namesake of Darius I's father and the *Oracle of Hystaspes.*

Kərəsāspa (Garšāsp): One of the great heroes of Iranian tradition, known for his exploits fighting dragons. In some myths he is asleep to be awoken at the end of time to defeat the bound *Aži Dahāka.*

Karšuuar (Kešvar): 'Continent,' 'island,' 'region.' Iranian mythology traditionally held that the earth was composed of seven *karšuuars.*

Xšaθra Vairiia (Shahrevar): Personification of 'rule, dominion.' One of the *Aməša Spəntas.*

X'arənah (Khwarr(ah), Farnah): Exact translation of this word is disputed; generally translated as 'glory,' 'fortune,' or 'Glückglanz.' Usually reserved for kings, heroes, and divinities. Some scholars identify the Achaemenid winged disk with the kings' *X'arənah.*

***Mainiiavaka/*Gaēθiiaka (Mēnōg/Gētīg):** Spiritual/Material or intangible/tangible. Ahura Mazda first created the world in a *mēnōg* state and then in a *gētīg* state. Neither state has any ethical implications.

Mēnōg-ī Xrad: A ninth century Pahlavi writing on miscellaneous issues, of unknown authorship.

Miθra (Mihr): Indo-Iranian deity, personification of 'contract,' and related to the sun. Appears in Sankrit as *Mitra* and Old Persian as *Miça*. His relationship to the Roman *Mithras* is unclear.

***Miθrakāna (Mihragān):** Annual autumnal festival. Al-Biruni reports that it honoured the binding of *Aži Dahāka*, and Herodotus reports of a festival in honour of Miθra on which the Great King became drunk.

Magus/Magi: Scholar-priests of Western Iran. Their precise understanding is contested.

Nask: A 'book' or major division of the *Avesta*. Originally there were 21.

Niyāyeš: Daily prayers for times of the day, largely extracted from the *Avesta*.

Old Avestan: The language of the *Gāthās* and the *Yasna Haptaŋhāiti*. The oldest extant Iranian language.

Ossuary: A receptacle for the disarticulated bones of the deceased.

Pahlavi: The form of the Persian language after Old Persian and before Modern Persian/Farsi.

Paradayadā (Aramaic Pardeš): Old Persian for 'garden,' 'paradise.' Primarily referred to walled, cultivated gardens, orchards, and gameparks.

Pešōtanu (Pešōtan): The immortal son of *Kavi Vištāspa*.

Rašnu (Rašn): 'The Judge;' *yazata* who, with *Miθra* and *Sraoša*, will judge the souls of the dead.

Saošiiant (Sōšyant): 'The Over-comer, Savior;' Originally used of Zaraθuštra himself, later of the believer, and ultimately for the eschatological savior who will usher in the *Frašo.kərəti*.

Šāyest nē-šāyest: 'The Proper and the Improper;' a ninth century Pahlavi miscellany.

Spənta Mainiiu (Spennāg Mēnōg): 'The Beneficial/Bountiful/Holy Spirit;' sometimes considered simply an aspect/emanation of Ahura Mazda, sometimes identified with him; usually (but not always) counted as one of the *Aməša Spəntas*.

Sirozahs: Dedicatory prayers to the patron deities of the Zoroastrian calendar.

Sraoša (Srōš): Personification of '(Religious) Obedience;' one of the *yazatas* who judge the individual soul.

Tīri (Tīr): An obscure Western Iranian deity who does not appear in the Avesta, but appears in the Zoroastrian Calendar and in Western Iranian names. Later identified with the Avestan deity *Tištrya.*

Tištrya (Teštar): Rain deity usually identified with the star Sirius.

Θraētaona (Frēdon): Indo-Iranian heroic figure, associated with the defeat of dragons, especially *Aži Dahāka.*

Vāta (Vād): Indo-Iranian *Yazata* of the winds.

Vayu (Vāy): Indo-Iranian personification simultaneously of the wind, the breath of life, and of death. Was divided in Zoroastrianism into two, a 'good *Vayu*' associated with resurrection and an 'evil *Vayu*' associated with death.

Vidēvdāt (Vendidād): 'Laws against the demons;' a Young Avestan text which compiles a variety of ritual purity laws and some fragments of myths.

Vizīdagīhā ī Zādspram: 'The Selections of Zadspram,' a ninth century Pahlavi theologian's selections from the *Bundahišn.*

Vərəθraghna (Vahrām, Bahrām): Personification of 'victory.' Often associated with *Miθra*, but has his own *Yašt* (XIV).

Vohu Manah (Vahman): 'Best Thought,' the *Amәša Spәnta* who, according to tradition, imparted revelation to Zaraθuštra. Usually contrasted with the demon *Aka Manah*, 'Bad Thought.'

Yasna (Yašn): 'Worship.' Used as the technical term for the liturgy and sacrifice, as well as the Avestan sections recited during the sacrifice.

Yasna Haptaŋhāiti: Seven Old Avestan poems which surround the *Gāthās* in the *Yasna.* Considered either slightly younger than or contemporaneous with the *Gāthās.*

Yašt: Young Avestan hymns dedicated to various deities, of varying antiquity and quality. Many contain very archaic elements.

Yazata: Zoroastrian term for 'deities worthy of worship' to differentiate them from the evil deities not to be propitiated or worshipped (i.e., *Angra Mainyu* and his hosts.)

Yima (Yam, Jamšed): Indo-Iranian first human king, with whom a variety of traditions are associated. In India, he became the king of the dead, a role he does not appear to have had in Iran.

Young Avestan: The language of the newer sections of the Avesta (parts of the *Yasna*, the *Yašts*, *Aogәmadaēca,* and the *Vidēvdāt.*) Generally considered contemporaneous with Old Persian.

Zāmyād Yašt: Important Young Avestan Yašt (XIX), dedicated to the earth, which praises *X'arənah* and alludes to mythological and eschatological characters associated with it.

Zand: 'Interpretation or Commentary.' Used of the Pahlavi commentaries to the Avesta. In nineteenth century scholarship was mistakenly thought to be the proper name of the Avesta.

Zand-ī Vahman Yašn: A ninth century Pahlavi work, supposedly an epitome and commentary upon a lost Avestan *Yašt.* Certain aspects of the work are clearly archaic, but other sections most clearly post-date the Arab conquest of Iran.

Zaoθra (zōhr): libation or blood sacrifice.

Appendix IV

Annotated Definitions of Terms

This study uses a number of problematic concepts over which scholarship has fought bitter battles of definition, and for some of these, the definitions presented and utilized above may be viewed as somewhat idiosyncratic. A selection of these terms and their definitions are therefore listed below, with brief glosses explaining the choices involved. More contextualized discussion and references can be found in the relevant chapters. All definitions, unless otherwise cited, are the author's own.

Apocalyptic

Definition

Apocalyptic is a collective noun to describe the genre of apocalypse, apocalypticism, and millenarianism.

Comments

The study of apocalyptic has made significant strides since the common refinement of 'apocalyptic' into three more specific referents. However, since all three retain relations, it is expedient on occasion to refer to them collectively, particularly for a study such as this, which seeks backgrounds for all of them. The collective use does not question the import or utility of the more precise terms (apocalypse, apocalypticism, millenarianism).

The Genre of Apocalypse

Definition

"'Apocalypse' is a literary genre of revelatory literature with a narrative framework, in which a revelation is mediated by an otherworldly being to a human recipient, disclosing a transcendent reality which is both temporal, insofar as it envisages eschatological salvation, and spacial insofar as it involves another, supernatural world, intended to interpret present, earthly circumstances in light of the supernatural world and of the future, and to influence both the understanding and the behavior of the audience by means of divine authority."[1]

Comments

This definition has received numerous criticisms, but a better replacement has yet to emerge. Even though neither 'genre' nor 'apocalypse' are terms which were contemporary with their creation, as a heuristic device for clarity in modern discussion it remains very useful, and it adequately describes the similarities in the multifaceted books typically called

[1] As defined in Collins, ed., *Semeia 14*, p. 9 and amended by Yarbro Collins, ed., *Semeia 36*, p. 7.

apocalypses. The retention of eschatology as part of the definition is important as one of the distinguishing features of these books from other (contemporary) revelatory genres.

Dialectic

Definition

Dialectic is the interplay and relationship between two opposites which remain in perpetual tension.

Comments

This understanding of dialectics is based on the works of Kierkegaard, and explicitly contradicts the Hegelian and Marxist notion of Thesis–Antithesis–Synthesis (there is no synthesis). It is necessary to carefully distinguish between 'dialectic' and 'dichotomy,' the two of which are often unfortunately confused. Dichotomies are merely opposites which fail to interact, and thus fail to explain complex relationships.

Eschatology

Definition

Eschatology is a category of beliefs regarding the decisive termination or transformation of the cosmos or the individual, beyond which present historical processes can never recur.

Comments

Conflating future predictions and hopes with eschatology confuses the very different kinds of understanding involved with each. Restricting eschatology to a decisive end does not impinge recognition of the vast array of ends which can be imagined or advocated. The differences between these are often involved with some form of teleology (ultimate goal) of either the world or the individual. The idea of purpose, however, is independent from termination.

Hermeneutic

Definition

A hermeneutic is the point of departure and reflexive personal alignment from which, through which, and by which an individual and/or community receives, understands, interprets, and re-creates traditions, circumstances and ultimately worldview, involving some specific content which supports favored methodologies and media, while occurring with

specific reference to a real social context. This may but need not be held exclusively of other hermeneutics by the same individual or group.

Comments

The definition used here is meant as a description of the way humans practically interpret their traditions and surroundings rather than as a philosophy of textual interpretation *per se*, as in much of the post-Schleiermacher tradition. Human beings cannot avoid interpretation, and the manner and principles by which this is done—however intuitively or explicitly—is open to analysis and investigation. This study argues that these hermeneutics are vitally important for understanding any tradition's relationships with previous traditions.

INFLUENCE

Definition

Influence designates the reshaping, selection, and/or interpretation of native ideas, stories, characters, or doctrines due to interaction with another culture or tradition which occurs within living traditions.

Comments

This definition is designed to highlight the complexity involved in influence and its dialectical rather than dichotomous nature. Influence relates 'native' and 'foreign,' intentionality and unconscious processes, and calls for an analysis of hermeneutics as well as ideas and myths.

INTERIORIZATION

Definition

Interiorization is the process whereby a technology becomes integrated into individual and societal psychological processes and becomes part of the cognitional and functional norm. The first stage of this is called amplification, the phenomenon whereby aspects of a previous technology are at first increased by the advent of a new technology.

Comments

This concept is derived from the work of McLuhan and Ong and is an important tool for understanding how a technology transforms and is transformed by a society and an individual. Interiorization allows for a nuancing of effects synchronistically and

diachronistically due to variations in the extent of its process. A falsely dichotomous 'Great Divide' is thus avoided without neglecting the severe implications—psychologically and communicatively—of technological-communicative change.

Myth

Definition

A myth is an attempt to understand and impart meaning to reality in narrative and symbolic form without regard to empiricist concerns.

Comments

This definition focuses more on function than on content; this is contra to much discussion in Biblical Studies, which is limited to cosmogonic/theogonic myths, an approach which neglects how other stories function symbolically and meaningfully in the same manner. The qualifier 'without regard to empiricist concerns' is essential to this definition because it highlights two aspects: one, myth and history are not dichotomous—they simply relate differently to empirical evidence; two, a story's mythic and historical natures are independent. This requires a little unpacking.

Modern societies have stories which function as myth just like ancient ones, although they tend to be dressed differently; the myth of George Washington in America or of the 800 years of English oppression in Ireland have the same culturally-defining and –orienting function as the myth of Athena or even Abraham. When these modern stories are told not as historiography but as explanations for the way things are or ought to be, they are myths. It is this function which is important—the teller is not concerned with the evidence *per se* but with how it explains and imparts meaning to reality, and thus function is mythic regardless of what the teller thinks of the story's historicity.[2]

This definition therefore transcends specific genre categories, as the function can be served in many different settings; the only generic necessity is narrative. While myths may often utilize gods or superhuman heroes, these are not strictly speaking necessary for the function.

Prophet

Definition

[2] Of course, in some cases, a story's perceived historicity can be used to justify its normativity.

A prophet is a person who fulfills the role of speaking a message from YHWH to his or her contemporaries, which is characterized more by revelatory acumen than learned skill.[3]

Comments

Again, this definition is mostly functional. The understanding of the relationship between the concepts of revelation, divination, and human intermediation are very complex, but it is still useful to retain at least an ideal distinction between 'technical' and 'intuitive' approaches to the impartation of revelation. Even though the borders are necessarily fuzzy in reality, the fact that oracles were double-checked through mantic means in the Ancient Near East helps to justify a continued distinction between them. By focusing on prophet as a role, this definition ameliorates the difficulties caused by instances of prophets using divinatory techniques on occasions (i.e., on such occasions, they are fulfilling the *role* of diviner rather than the *role* of prophet, even if their authority as a prophet validates their divination). The exact forms of prophets and prophecy are necessarily highly culturally dependent.

TRADITION

Definition

A tradition is a mid-level term to describe currents of thought or elements of culture which share recognizable traits while displaying elements of growth and divergence which are due to "inheritance and development."[4]

Comments

The necessary problem with this term is its all-encompassing vagueness, as it can refer to macro- and micro-traditions, but English at present does not facilitate a less nebulous terminology without descending into incomprehensible jargon. It is sufficient here to assert that a tradition can simultaneously be a sub-tradition of another while containing sub-traditions within itself. For example, a 'meta-tradition' could be Western culture, which contains Christian, Jewish, and secular traditions, each of which also contain traditions, like Roman Catholicism, Protestantism, etc. In the context of Biblical Studies, Second Temple Judaism can justifiably be considered a 'meta-tradition' with sub-traditions of apocalyptic, sapientialism, and prophecy, as well as groups such as Sadducees, Pharisees, etc. It should be remembered, however, that traditions are neither exclusive nor static (i.e., a person or text can simultaneously interact and partake in multiple traditions of varying levels).

---

[3] As defined by Petersen, "Defining Prophecy," pp. 37–38; cf. Carroll, "Ancient Israelite Prophecy and Dissonance Theory," p. 382.

[4] Martínez, "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls," p. 200, 226.

Works Cited

Aaron, David H. *Etched in Stone: The Emergence of the Decalogue.* London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Abdi, Kamyar. "Bes in the Achaemenid Empire." *Ars Orientalis* 29 (1999): 111, 113–140.

———. "Notes on the Iranization of Bes in the Achaemenid Empire." *Ars Orientalis* 32 (2002): 133–162.

———. "The 'Daiva' Inscription Revisited." *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 6.1–2 (2006): 45–74.

Aberle, David F. "A Note on Relative Deprivation Theory as Applied to Millenarian and Other Cult Movements." Pages 7–12 in *The Sociology of Religion.* Vol. V: Religious Movements. Edited by Malcolm Hamilton. London: Routledge, 2007. First Published 1962, Pages 209–214 in *Millennial Dreams in Action.* Comparative Studies in Society and History Supplements 2. Edited by S. Thrupp. The Hague: Moulton.

Abraham, Kathleen. *Business and Politics under the Persian Empire: the Financial Dealings of Marduk-nasir-apli of the House of Egibi (521–487 B.C.E.).* Bethesda, MD: CDL, 2004.

Achtemeier, Paul J. "Omne verbum sonat: The New Testament and the Oral Environment of Late Western Antiquity." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 109.1 (1990): 3–27.

Ackroyd, Peter R. *Exile and Restoration.* London: SCM Press, 1968.

———. *Israel under Babylon and Persia.* New Clarendon Bible. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1970.

———. "The Biblical Portrayal of Achaemenid Rulers." Pages 1–16 in *Achaemenid History V: The Roots of the European Tradition.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and J. W. Drijvers. Proceedings of the 1987 Gronigen Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990.

———. "The Written Evidence for Palestine." Pages 207–220 in *Achaemenid History IV: Centre and Periphery.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Proceedings of the Groningen 1986 Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990.

Adachi, Takuro, and Mohsen Zeidi. "Achaemenid and Post-Achaemenid Remains from TB 75 and the General Survey of the Tang-i Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.2 (2009): 1–8, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2002–Adachi&Zeidi.pdf.

Aelian. *On the Characteristics of Animals.* Trans. A. F. Scholfield. *On the Characteristics of Animals III (Books XII–XVII).* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1959.

Aeschylus. *Suppliant Maidens, The Persians, Prometheus Bound, and Seven Against Thebes.* Trans. Herbert W. Smyth. *Aeschylus I: Plays.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1922.

Afnan, Ruhi Muhsen. *Zoroaster's Influence on Greek Thought.* New York: Philosophical Library, 1965.

Ahlström, Gösta W. "Oral and Written Transmission. Some Considerations." *Harvard Theological Review* 59 (1966): 69–81.

———. *The History of Ancient Palestine.* Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1994.

Ahn, Gregor. "Dualismen in Kontext von Gegenweltvorstellungen. Die rituelle Abwehr der Dämonen im altiranischen Zoroastrismus." Pages 122–136 in *Die Dämonen/Demons: Die Dämonologie der israelitisch-jüdischen und frühchristlichen Literatur im Kontext ihrer Umwelt.* Edited by Armin Lange and Hermann Lichtenberger. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003.

Aiken, C. F. "The Avesta and the Bible." *Catholic University Bulletin* 3 (1897): 243–291.

Akinnaso, F. Niyi. "Literacy and Individual Conciousness." Pages 73–94 in *Literate Systems and Individual Lives*. Edited by Edward M. Jennings and Alan C. Purves. New York: SUNY Press, 1991.

Al-Biruni, Muhammad ibn Ahmad. *Athar-ul-bakiya*. Trans. C. Edward Sachau. *The Chronology of Ancient Nations: An English version of the Arabic Text of the Athâr-ul-Bâkiya of Albîrûnî or 'Vestiges of the Past'*. London: Allen, 1879.

Albani, Matthias. *Astronomie und Schöpfungsglaube: Untersuchungen zum astronomischen Henochbuch*. Wissenschaftliche Monographien zum Alten und Neuen Testament 68. Neukirchen: Neukirchener Verlag, 1994.

Albertz, Rainer. *A History of Israelite Religion in the Old Testament Period*. 2 vols. London: SCM, 1994.

———. "Darius in Place of Cyrus: the First Edition of Deutero-Isaiah (Isaiah 40.1–52.12) in 521 BCE." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 27 (2003): 371–383.

———. *Israel in Exile: the History and Literature of the Sixth Century BCE*. Trans. David Green. SBL Studies in Biblical Literature 3. Atlanta: SBL, 2003.

Alexander, Philip S. "Notes on the 'Imago Mundi' of the Book of Jubilees." *Journal of Jewish Studies* 33.1–2 (1982): 197–213.

———. "Retelling the Old Testament." Pages 99–121 in *It is Written: Scripture Citing Scripture. Essays in Honour of Barnabas Lindars*. Edited by D. A. Carson and H. G. M. Williamson. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988.

———. "Geography and the Bible (Early Jewish)." Pages 977–988 in *The Anchor Bible Dictionary*. Edited by David Noel Freedman. Vol. 2: D–G. New York: Doubleday, 1992.

———. "The Enochic Literature and the Bible: Intertextuality and its Implications." Pages 57–69 in *The Bible as Book: The Hebrew Bible and the Judaean Desert Discoveries*. Edited by Edward D. Herbert and Emmanuel Tov. London: British Library, 2002.

Allen, Lindsay. *The Persian Empire: A History*. London: British Museum, 2005.

Allsen, Thomas T. *The Royal Hunt in Eurasian History*. Philadelphia: Univ of Pennsylvania Press, 2006.

Alvarex-Mon, Javier. "Imago Mundi: Cosmological and Ideological Aspects of the Arjan Bowl." *Iranica Antiqua* 39 (2004): 203–237.

Amanat, Abbas, and Magnus Bernhardsson, eds. *Imagining the End: Visions of Apocalypse from the Ancient Middle East to Modern America*. London: I. B. Tauris, 2002.

Ameling, Walter, ed. *Inscriptiones Judaicae Orientis II: Kleinasiens*. Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004.

Amiran, Ruth. "The Persian-Achaemenid Impact on Palestine." Pages 3017–3023 in *A Survey of Persian Art*. Edited by Arthur Upham Pope. Vol. 14. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1967.

———. "Achaemenian Bronze Objects from a Tomb at Kh. Ibsan in Lower Galilee." *Levant* 4 (1972): 135–138.

Amodio, Mark C., and Katherine O. O'Keeffe, eds. *Unlocking the Wordhord: Anglo-Saxon Studies in Memory of Edward B. Irving, Jr.* Toronto: Univ of Toronto Press, 2003.

Amzallag, Nissim. "Yahweh, the Canaanite God of Metallurgy?" *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 33.4 (2009): 387–404.

Andersen, Francis I. "2 (Slavonic Apocalypse of) Enoch." Pages 91–222 in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* Edited by James H. Charlesworth. Vol. 1. New York: Doubleday, 1983.

———. *Habakkuk: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* The Anchor Bible. New York: Doubleday, 2001.

Anderson, Øivind. "The Significance of Writing in Early Greece—a critical appraisal." Pages 73–90 in *Literacy and Society.* Edited by Karin Schousboe and Mogens Trolle Larsen. Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1989.

Anderson, William S. *Ovid's Metamorphoses Books 1–5 Edited, with Introduction and Commentary.* Norman, OK: Univ of Oklahoma Press, 1997.

Anföldi, Andreas. "Königsweihe und Männerbund bei dem Achämeniden." *Archives Suisses des Traditions Populaires/Schweitzerisches Archiv für Volkskunde* 47 (1951): 11–17.

Anklesaria, Behramgore T. *Zand-Ākāsīh: Iranian or Greater Bundahisn: Text and Translation.* Bombay: Rahnumae Mazdayasnan Sabha, 1956.

———. *Zand-î Vohûman Yasn and Two Pahlavi Fragments: Text, Transliteration, and Translation.* Bombay: Mrs. B. T. Anklesaria, 1957.

Anklesaria, T. *Pahlavi Vendidâd (Zand-î Jvît-dêv-dât): Transliteration and Translation in English.* Dinshah Kapadia, ed. Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Institute, 1949.

Aperghis, G. G. "Storehouses and Systems at Persepolis: Evidence from the Persepolis Fortification Tablets." *Journal of the Economic and Social History of the Orient* 42.2 (1999): 152–193.

Arfa'i, Abdol Majid. "PT 10a, Collated and Completed." *Achemenet: Arta* 6.1 (2008): 1–8, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2008.2001–Arfai.pdf.

Argall, Randal A. *1 Enoch and Sirach: a Comparative Literary and Conceptual Analysis of the Themes of Revelation, Creation, and Judgment.* SBLEJL 8. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1995.

Ariel, Yaakov, and Ruth Kark. "Messianism, Holiness, Charisma, and Community: the American-Swedish Colony in Jerusalem, 1881–1933." *Church History* 65.4 (1996): 641–657.

Arjomand, Saïd Amir. "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr, and Bahman." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 118.2 (1998): 245–248.

Arndt, William F., and F. Wilbur Gingrich. *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and Other Early Christian Literature. A translation and adaptation of Walter Bauer's Griechisch-Deutsches Wörterbuch zu den Schriften des Neuen Testaments und der übrigen urchristlichen Literatur, 4th Ed.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1957.

Arrian. *Anabasis Alexandri, Books I–IV.* Trans. P. A. Brunt. *Arrian I.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1976.

———. *Anabasis Alexandri Books V–VII; Indica.* Trans. P. A. Brunt. *Arrian II.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1983.

Arthur, David. *A Smooth Stone: Biblical Prophecy in Historical Perspective.* Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 2001.

Asa, K. M. Jamasp. "Relationship between Zoroastrianism and Judaism." Pages 340–344 in *Second International Congress Proceedings of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute (5th–8th Jan, 1995).* Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Insitute, 1996.

Asadi, Ali, and Barbara Kaim. "The Achaemenid Building at Site 64 in Tang-e Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.3 (2009): 1–20, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2003–Asadi&Kaim.pdf.

Aslaksen, Helmer. *Fake Leap Months in the Chinese Calendar: From the Jesuits to 2033.* 11 Oct 2007. Singapore, http://www.math.nus.edu.sg/aslaksen/calendar/2033-talk.pdf.

Asmussen, Jes P. "Die Verkündigung Zarathustras im Lichte der Religionsgeschichte." *Temenos* 6 (1970): 20–35.

———. "Aešma." *Encyclopædia Iranica* I (1985): 479–480.

Astour, Michael C. "Ezekiel's Prophecy of Gog and the Cuthean Legend of Naram-Sin." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 95.4 (1976): 567–579.

Atai, Mohammad T., and Rémy Boucharlat. "An Achaemenid Pavilion and Other Remains in Tang-i Bulaghi." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.5 (2009): 1–33, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2005–Atai&Boucharlat.pdf.

Athenaeus. *The Deipnosophists.* Trans. Charles B Gulick. *Athenaeus VI.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1937.

Auffarth, Christoph, and Loren T. Stuckenbruck, eds. *The Fall of the Angels.* Themes in Biblical Narrative 6. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

Aune, David E. "Transformations of Apocalypticism in Early Christianity." Pages 54–64 in *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

———. *Apocalypticism, Prophecy and Magic in Early Christianity.* WUNT 199. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2006.

Avemarie, Friedrich, and Hermann Lichtenberger, eds. *Auferstehung—Resurrection.* WUNT 135. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004.

Avigad, Nahman. *Bullae and Seals from a Post-Exilic Judean Archive.* Qedem 4. Jerusalem: Institute of Archaeology, Hebrew University, 1976.

Axworthy, Michael. *Empire of the Mind: a History of Iran.* London: Hurst, 2007.

Baghbidi, Hassan R. "Darius and the Bisotun Inscription: a New Interpretation of the Last Paragraph of Column IV." *Journal of Persianate Studies* 2.1 (2009): 44–61.

Bagheri, Mehri. "Prince Mohammad, Fereydun, Thraētaona, and Trita Āptya: Themes and Connections in Persian Narratives." *Folklore* 112.2 (2001): 199–201.

Bailey, H. W. *Zoroastrian Problems in the Ninth-Century Books.* Ratanbai Katrak Lectures. Rev. ed. Oxford: Clarendon, 1971.

Bailey, H. W., et al., eds. *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce.* Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI. 2 vols. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

Bakker, Janine. "The Lady and the Lotus: Representations of Women in the Achaemenid Empire." *Iranica Antiqua* 42 (2007): 207–220.

Balcer, Jack M. "The Athenian Episkopos and the Achaemenid 'King's Eye.'" *American Journal of Philology* 98.3 (1977): 252–263.

———. "The Greeks and the Persians: the Processes of Acculturation." *Historia* 32.3 (1983): 257–267.

———. *Herodotus and Bisitun: Problems in Ancient Persian Historiography.* Historia Einzelschriften 49. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 1987.

———. *A Prosopographical Study of the Ancient Persians Royal and Noble c. 550–450 B.C.* Lewiston, NY: Edwin Mellon, 1993.

Baltzer, Klaus. *Deutero-Isaiah: a Commentary on Isaiah 40–55.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001.

Bankston, Carl L., III. "Rationality, Choice and the Religious Economy: the Problem of Belief." *Review of Religious Research* 43.4 (2002): 311–325.

Barag, D. "The Effects of the Tennes Rebellion on Palestine." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 183 (1966): 6–12.

Barag, Dan P. "Some Notes on a Silver Coin of Johanan the High Priest." *Biblical Archaeologist* 48.3 (1985): 166–168.

Barclay, John M. G. *Jews in the Mediterranean Diaspora: From Alexander to Trajan (323 BCE–117 CE).* Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1998.

Barker, Margaret. *The Older Testamant: the Survival of Themes from the Ancient Royal Cult in Sectarian Judaism and Early Christianity.* London: SPCK, 1987.

Barr, James. "Aramaic-Greek Notes on the Book of Enoch (I)." *Journal of Semitic Studies* 23.2 (1978): 184–198.

———. "The Question of Religious Influence: the case of Zoroastrianism, Judaism, and Christianity." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 53 (1985): 201–235.

Barstad, Hans M. "No Prophets? Recent Developments in Biblical Prophetic Research and Ancient Near Eastern Prophecy." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 57 (1993): 39–60.

Bartholomae, Christian. *Altiraniranisches Wörterbuch.* Strassburg: Trübner, 1904.

Bartlett, John R. *Jews in the Hellenistic World: Josephus, Aristeas, the Sibylline Oracles, Eupolemus.* Cambridge Commentaries on the Writings of the Jewish and Christian World. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Barton, George A. "The Origin of the Names of Angels and Demons in the Extra-Canonical Apocalyptic Literature to 100 AD." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 31.4 (1912): 156–167.

Barton, John. "The Day of Yahweh in the Minor Prophets." Pages 68–79 in *Biblical and Near Eastern Essays: Studies in Honour of Kevin J. Cathcart.* Edited by Carmel McCarthy and John F. Healey. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Basil, Saint. *The Letters.* Trans. Roy J. Deferrari. *The Letters, IV.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1934

Baumgarten, Joseph M. "The Calendars of the Book of Jubilees and the Temple Scroll." *Vetus Testamentum* 37.1 (1987): 71–78.

Bäuml, Franz. "Medieval texts and the Two Theories of Oral-Formulaic Composition: A Proposal for a Third Theory." *New Literary History* 16.1 (1984): 31–49.

Beck, Roger. "The Mysteries of Mithras: A New Account of Their Genesis." *Journal of Roman Studies* 88 (1998): 115–128.

Bedenbender, Andreas. "Jewish Apocalypticism: A Child of Mantic Wisdom?" Pages 189–196 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001.* Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

Ben-Dov, Jonathan, and Stephane Saulnier. "Qumran Calendars: a Survey of Scholarship 1980–2007." *Currents in Biblical Research* 7.1 (2008): 124–168.

Ben Zvi, Ehud, and Michael H. Floyd, eds. *Writings and Speech in Israelite and Ancient Near Eastern Prophecy*. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2000.

Benveniste, Emile. *The Persian Religion According to the Chief Greek Texts*. Ratanbai Katrak Lectures I. Paris: Paul Geuthner, 1929.

———. "Mithra aux vastes patûrages." *Journal Asiatique* 248.4 (1960): 421–429.

———. "Le terme iranien *mazdayasna*." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 33.1 (1970): 5–9.

Berquist, Jon L. *Judaism in Persia's Shadow*. Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1995.

———., ed. *Approaching Yehud: New Approaches to the Study of the Persian Period*. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2007.

Betlyon, John W. "Archaeological Evidence of Military Operations in Southern Judah during the Early Hellenistic Period." *Biblical Archaeologist* 54.1 (1991): 36–43.

———. "A People Transformed Palestine in the Persian Period." *Near Eastern Archaeology* 68.1/2 (2005): 4–58.

Bhayro, Siam. *The Shemihazah and Asael Narrative of 1 Enoch 6–11: Introduction, text, Translation and Commentary with Reference to Ancient Near Eastern and Biblical Antecedents*. Alter Orient und Altes Testament 322. Münster: Ugarit-Verlag, 2005.

Bianchi, Ugo. "Mithra and the Question of Iranian Monotheism." Pages 19–46 in *Étude Mithriaques*. Edited by Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

Bickerman, Elias J. *Four Strange Books of the Bible*. New York: Schocken, 1967.

———. "The 'Zoroastrian' Calendar." *Archiv Orientalni* 35 (1967): 197–207.

———. "The Babylonian Captivity." Pages 342–357 in *Cambridge History of Judaism*. Edited by W. D. Davies and Louis Finkelstein. Vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984.

Bickerman, Elias J., and Hayim Tadmor. "Darius I, Pseudo-Smerdis, and the Magi." *Athenaeum* 56.3 (1978): 239–261.

Bienkowski, Piotr, Christopher Mee, and Elizabeth Slater, eds. *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society: Papers in Honour of Alan R. Millard*. London: T&T Clark, 2005.

Birkeland, Harris. "The Belief in the Resurrection of the Dead in the Old Testament." *Studia Theologica* 3 (1949): 60–78.

Bivar, A. D. H. "Document and Symbol in the Art of the Achaemenids." Pages 49–67 in *Monumentum H. S. Nyberg I*. Edited by J. Duchesne-Guillemin. Acta Iranica 4. Leiden: Brill, 1975.

———. "Mithra and Mesopotamia." Pages 275–289 in *Mithraic Studies*. Edited by John R. Hinnells. Vol. 2. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975.

———. "Religious Subjects on Achaemenid Seals." Pages 90–105 in *Mithraic Studies*. Edited by John R. Hinnells. Vol. 1. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975.

———. "Mithraism: A Religion for the Ancient Medes." *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): 341–358.

Black, Matthew. "The Twenty Angel Dekadarchs at 1 Enoch 6.7 and 69.2." *Journal of Jewish Studies* 1–2 (1982): 227–235.

Black, Matthew. *The Book of Enoch or 1 Enoch: A New English Edition*. Studia in Veteris Testamenti Pseudepigrapha 7. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

Black, Matthew. "The Messianism of the Parables of Enoch: Their Date and Contribution to Christological Origins." Pages 145–168 in *The Messiah: Developments in Earliest Judaism and Christianity*. Edited by James H. Charlesworth. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1992.

Blenkinsopp, Joseph. *Prophecy and Canon*. Notre Dame, IN: Univ of Notre Dame Press, 1977.

———. "The Mission of Udjahorresnet and Those of Ezra and Nehemiah." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 106.3 (1987): 409–421.

———. "The Sage, the Scribe, and Scribalism in the Chronicler's Work." Pages 307–318 in *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East*. Edited by John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990.

———. "Temple and Society in Achaemenid Judah." Pages 22–53 in *Second Temple Studies I: The Persian Period*. Edited by Philip R. Davies. JSOTSS 117. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

———. *A History of Prophecy in Israel*. Revised and Enlarged ed. London: Westminster John Knox, 1996.

———. *Isaiah 40–55: a New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*. Anchor Bible 19. New York: Doubleday, 2000.

———. "The Social Roles of Prophets in Early Archaemenid Judah." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 93 (2001): 39–58.

———. *Isaiah 56–66: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*. The Anchor Bible 19B. New York: Doubleday, 2003.

Block, Daniel I. "The Role of Language in Ancient Israelite Perceptions of National Identity." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 103.3 (1984): 321–340.

———. "Gog and the pouring out of the Spirit : reflections on Ezekiel 39:21–29." *Vetus Testamentum* 37.3 (1987): 257–270.

———. "Gog in Prophetic Tradition: a new look at Ezekiel XXXVIII:17." *Vetus Testamentum* 42.2 (1992): 154–172.

———. *The Book of Ezekiel: Chapters 25–48*. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998.

Boardman, John. *Persia and the West: An Archaeological Investigation of the Genesis of Achaemenid Art*. London: Thames & Hudson, 2000.

Boccaccini, Gabriele. *Middle Judaism: Jewish Thought 300 BCE to 200 CE*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1991.

———. *Roots of Rabbinic Judaism: An Intellectual History from Ezekiel to Daniel*. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2001.

———., ed. *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism*. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

———., ed. *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables*. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007.

———. "Finding a Place for the Parables with Second Temple Jewish Literature." Pages 263–289 in *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables*. Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007.

Boccaccini, Gabriele, and John J. Collins, eds. *The Early Enoch Literature*. JSJS 121. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

Bodi, Daniel. *The Book of Ezekiel and the Poem of Erra.* Orbis Biblicus et Orientalis 104. Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1991.

Böklen, Ernst. *Die Verwandtschaft der jüdisch-christlichen mit der parsischen Eschatologie.* Göttingen: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1902.

Borger, Rykle. "Die Beschwörungsserie Bīt mēseri und die Himmelfahrt Henochs." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 33.2 (1974): 183–196.

Botha, Pieter J.J. "Cognition, Orality-Literacy, and Approaches to First-Century Writings." Pages 37–63 in *Orality, Literacy and Colonialism in Antiquity.* Edited by Jonathan A. Draper. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

Boucharlat, Rémy. "Pasargadae." *Iran* 40 (2002): 279–282.

Bowie, Fiona. *The Anthropology of Religion.* 2nd ed. Oxford: Blackwell, 2006.

Bowie, Fiona, and Christopher Deacy. *The Coming Deliverer: Millennial Themes in World Religions.* Cardiff: Univ of Wales Press, 1997.

Bowman, A.K., and Greg Woolf, eds. *Literacy and Power in the Ancient World.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1994.

Bowman, Raymond A. *Aramaic Ritual Texts From Persepolis.* University of Chicago Oriental Institute Pub XCI. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970.

Boyce, Mary. "Some Remarks on the Transmission of the Kayanian Heroic Cycle." Pages 45–52 in *Serta Cantabrigienisa Viris doctissimis clarissimisque qui a die XXI usque ad diem XXVIII mensis Augusti anni MCMLIV congressum internationalem rebus litterisque orientalibus dedicatum Cantabrigiam convenerunt. Donum praebuit Franciscus Steiner, Aquis Mattiacis A.D. MCMLIV.* Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1954.

———. "Zariadres and Zarēr." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 17.3 (1955): 463–477.

———. "The Parthian *gōsān* and Iranian Minstrel Tradition." *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (1957): 10–45.

———. "Some Reflections on Zurvanism." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 19.2 (1957): 304–316.

———. "Middle Persian Literature." Pages 32–66 in *Iranistik: Literatur.* Edited. Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1. Leiden: Brill, 1968.

———. "On Mithra's Part in Zoroastrianism." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 32.1 (1969): 10–34.

———. "Haoma, priest of the sacrifice." Pages 62–80 in *W. B. Henning Memorial Volume.* Edited by Mary Boyce and Ilya Gershevitch. London: Lund Humphries, 1970.

———. "On the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 33.3 (1970): 513–539.

———. *A History of Zoroastrianism: The Early Period.* Vol. I. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.1. Leiden: Brill, 1975.

———. *A Word-List of Manichaean Middle Persian and Parthian.* Acta Iranica. Leiden: Brill, 1975.

———. *A History of Zoroastrianism: Under the Achaemenians.* Vol. II. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2A.2. Leiden: Brill, 1982.

———. "On the Antiquity of the Zoroastrian Apocalyptic." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* XLVII.1 (1984): 57–75.

———. "Review: *Die Aməša Spəntas im Avesta* by Johanna Narten." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 47.1 (1984): 158–161.

———. *Textual Sources for the Study of Zoroastrianism.* Textual Sources for the Study of Religion. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1984.

———. "Alborz II: Alborz in Myth and Legend." *Encyclopaedia Iranica* I (1985): 811–813.

———. "Apąm Napāt." *Encyclopaedia Iranica* II.2 (1986): 148–150.

———. "Apocalyptic (that which has been revealed) i. In Zoroastrianism." *Encyclopaedia Iranica* II.2 (1986): 154–157.

———. "Astvat.ərəta." *Encyclopaedia Iranica* II.8 (1987): 871–873.

———. "Priests, Cattle and Men." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 50.3 (1987): 508–526.

———. *Zoroastrianism: a Shadowy but Powerful Presence in the Judaeo-Christian World.* Friends of Dr. William's Library Lecture. London: Dr. William's Trust, 1987.

———. "The Religion of Cyrus the Great." Pages 15–31 in *Achaemenid History III: Method and Theory.* Edited by Amélie Kuhrt and Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg. Proceedings of the London 1985 Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1988.

———. "Ātašdān." *Encyclopaedia Iranica* III (1989): 7–9.

———. "The Poems of the Persian Sibyl and the Zand i Vahman Yasht." Pages 59–77 in *Etudes irano-aryennes offertes a Gilbert Lazard.* Edited by Philippe Gignoux and Charles-Henri de Fouchécour. Studia Iranica Cahiers 7. Paris: Association pour l'avancement des études irannienes, 1989.

———. "Persian Religion in the Achaemenid Age." Pages 279–307 in *The Cambridge History of Judaism.* Edited by W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein. Vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2000.

———. *Zoroastrians: Their Religious Beliefs and Practices.* London: Routledge, 2001.

———. "Further on the Calendar of Zoroastrian Feasts." *Iran* 43 (2005): 1–38.

Boyce, Mary, and Ilya Gershevitch, eds. *W. B. Henning Memorial Volume.* Asia Major Library. London: Lund Humphries, 1970.

Boyce, Mary, and Frantz Grenet. *A History of Zoroastrianism: Zoroastrianism under Macedonian and Roman Rule.* Vol. III. Handbuch der Orientalistik VIII.1.2.2.3. Leiden: Brill, 1991.

Boyd, James W., and Donald A. Crosby. "Is Zoroastrianism Dualistic or Monotheistic?" *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 47.4 (1979): 557–588.

Boyd, Robert, and Peter J. Richerson. *The Origin and Evolution of Cultures.* Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2005.

Bredin, Mark, ed. *Studies in the Book of Tobit: a Multidisciplinary Approach.* Library of Second Temple Studies 55. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Bremmer, Jan N. "Remember the Titans!" Pages 35–61 in *The Fall of the Angels.* Edited by Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck. Themes in Biblical Narrative 6. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

Bresciani, Edda. "Egypt, Persian Satrapy." Pages 358–371 in *The Cambridge History of Judaism I: The Persian Period.* Edited by W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984.

Breslauer, S. Daniel. "Mythology, Judaism and." Pages 1812–1833 in *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*. Edited by Jacob Neusner, Alan J. Avery-Peck and William Scott Green. Vol. III: L-Ra. Leiden: Brill, 2005.

Brewster, Paul G. "Some Parallels between the 'Fêng-Shên-Yên I' and the 'Shahnameh' and the Possible Influence of the Former upon the Persian Epic." *Asian Folklore Studies* 31.1 (1972): 115–122.

Briant, Pierre. *From Cyrus to Alexander: A History of the Persian Empire*. Trans. Peter T. Daniels. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2002. First Published 1996 as *Histoire de l'Empire perse*.

Brockington, L. H. *Ezra, Nehemiah and Esther*. The Century Bible. London: Nelson, 1969.

Brooke, George J. "The Ten Temples in the Dead Sea Scrolls." Pages 417–434 in *Temple and Worship in Biblical Israel*. Edited by John Day. London: T & T Clark, 2005.

———. "Prophecy and the Prophets in the Dead Sea Scrolls: Looking Backwards and Forwards." Pages 151–165 in *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*. Edited by Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Brosius, Maria. *Women in Ancient Persia (559–331 BC)*. Oxford Classical Monographs. Oxford: Clarendon, 1998.

———. *The Persian Empire from Cyrus II to Artaxerxes I*. London: Classical Teachers Association, 2000.

———, ed. *Ancient Archives and Archival Traditions: Concepts of Record-Keeping in the Ancient World*. Oxford Studies in Ancient Documents. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2003.

Brown, Francis, S. R. Driver, and Charles A. Briggs. *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament. Based on the Lexicon of William Gesenius as Translated by Edward Robinson*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1966

Brown, John P. *Israel and Hellas*. Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft 231. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995.

Brown, John P. *Israel and Hellas III: The Legacy of Iranian Imperialism and the Individual*. Beihefte zur Zeitscrift für die altestamentliche Wissenschaft 299. Berlin: De Gruyter, 2001.

Brownlee, William H. "'Son of Man set your face': Ezekiel the refugee prophet." *Hebrew Union College Annual* 54 (1983): 83–110.

Bruce, Steve. "Religion and Rational Choice: a Critique of Economic Explanations of Religious Behaviour." *Sociology of Religion* 54.2 (1993): 193–205.

Brunner, Christopher J. "Geographical and Administrative Divisions: Settlements and Economy." Pages 747–777 in *Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Vol. 3(2) The Seleucid, Parthian, and Sasanian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

———. "Ahunwar." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 1.7 (1985): 683.

Bryan, David. *Cosmos, Chaos and the Kosher Mentality*. JSPS 12. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995.

Bull, Malcolm. "On Making Ends Meet." Pages 1–17 in *Apocalypse Theory and the Ends of the World*. Edited by Malcolm Bull. Oxford: Blackwell, 1995.

Bull, Malcolm, ed. *Apocalypse Theory and the Ends of the World*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1995.

The Bundahis, Bahman Yast, and Shāyast Lā-Shāyast. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts I*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 5. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1880 by Oxford Univ Press.

Burkert, Walter. "The Logic of Cosmogony." Pages 87–106 in *From Myth to Reason? Studies in the Development of Greek Thought.* Edited by Richard Buxton. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2001.

Burn, A. R. "Persia and the Greeks." Pages 292–391 in *Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Burstein, Stanley M. *The Babyloniaca of Berossus.* Sources and Monographs on the Ancient Near East 1.5. Malibu: Undena, 1978.

Bynum, David E. *The Daemon in the Wood: A Study of Oral Narrative Patterns.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1978.

Calmeyer, Peter. "Art in Iran II: Median Art and Architecture." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1986): 565–569.

———. "Art in Iran III: Achaemenian Art and Architecture." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1986): 569–580.

Cameron, George G. *History of Early Iran.* Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1936.

———. *Persepolis Treasury Tablets.* Oriental Institute Publications 65. Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1948.

———. "Persepolis Treasury Tablets Old and New." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 17.3 (1958): 161–176.

———. "The Persian Satrapies and Related Matters." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 32.1/2 (1973): 47–56.

Cameron, George G., and Ilya Gershevitch. "New Tablets from the Persepolis Treasury." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 24.3 (1965): 167–192.

Camp, Claudia V. "Oralities, Literacies, and Colonialism in Antiquity and Contemporary Scholarship." Pages 193–217 in *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity.* Edited by Jonathan A. Draper. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

Cancik, Hubert, and Helmuth Schneider, eds. *Der Neue Pauly Enzyklopädie der Antike.* Vol. 11 Sam-Tal. Stuttgart: Metzler, 2001.

Cardascia, G. *Les Archives des Murašu.* Paris, 1951.

Carnoy, Albert J. "The Iranian Gods of Healing." Journal of the American Oriental Society 38 (1918): 294–307.

Carnoy, M. "Iranian Mythology." Pages 253–354, 360–370, 395–404 in *Mythology of All Races.* Edited by Louis H. Gray. Vol. VI. Boston: Marshall Jones, 1917.

Carr, David. *Writing on the Tablet of the Heart: Origins of Scripture and Literature.* Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2005.

Carroll, Robert P. *When Prophecy Failed: Cognitive Dissonance in the Prophetic Traditions of the Old Testament.* New York: Seabury, 1979.

———. "Ancient Israelite Prophecy and Dissonance Theory." Pages 377–391 in *The Place is Too Small for Us.* Edited by Robert P. Gordon. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1995. First Published *Numen* 24 (1977): 135–151.

Carter, Charles E. *The Emergence of Yehud in the Persian Period: A Social and Demographic Study.* JSOTSupp 294. Sheffield: Scheffield Academic Press, 1999.

Carter, George William. *Zoroastrianism and Judaism.* New York: AMS, 1970. First Published Boston, 1918.

Caspo, Eric. *Theories of Mythology*. Oxford: Blackwell, 2005.

Cataldo, Jeremiah W. *A Theocratic Yehud? Issues of Government in a Persian Period*. London: T & T Clark, 2009.

Cereti, Carlo G. *The Zand-ī Wahman Yasn: a Zoroastrian Apocalypse*. SOR 75. Rome, 1995.

Charles, R. H. *The Book of Enoch, or, 1 Enoch*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1912.

———. *A Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life in Israel, in Judaism, and in Christianity*. 2nd ed. London: Adam & Charles Black, 1913.

———. *Religious Development between the Old and New Testaments*. London: Williams & Northgate, 1914.

Charlesworth, James H, ed. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments*. Vol. 1. New York: Doubleday, 1983.

———, ed. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha: Expansions*. Vol. 2. New York: Doubleday, 1985.

———. "The Pseudepigrapha as Biblical Exegesis." Pages 139–152 in *Early Jewish and Christian Exegesis*. Edited by Craig A. Evans and William F. Stinespring. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1987.

———. "A Rare Consensus Among Enoch Specialists: The Date of the Earliest Enoch Books." Pages 225–234 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001*. Edited Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

Charlesworth, James H, et al., eds. *The Dead Sea Scrolls 6B: Pesharim, Other Commentaries, and Related Documents*. The Princeton Theological Seminary Dead Sea Scrolls Project. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2002.

Chaverdi, Alireza Askari, and Pierfrancesco Callieri. "Achaemenid and Post-Achaemenid Remains at TB 76 and TB 77." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.4 (2009): 1–35, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2004–Askari&Callieri.pdf.

Chazon, Esther G., David Satran, and Ruth A. Clements, eds. *Things Revealed: Studies in Early Jewish and Christian Literature in Honor of Michael E. Stone*. SJSJ 89. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

Chenciner, Robert. *Daghestan: Tradition and Survival*. Caucasian World. Surrey: Curzon, 1997.

Choksy, Jamsheed K. "Review: *Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith* by Norman Cohn." *Iranian Studies* 29.1/2 (1996): 183.

———. "Hagiography and Monotheism in History: doctrinal encounters between Zoroastrianism, Judaism and Christianity 1." *Islam and Christian-Muslim Relations* 14.4 (2003): 407–421.

———. "Reassessing the Material Contexts of Ritual Fires in Ancient Iran." *Iranica Antiqua* 42 (2007): 229–269.

Clark, Raymond J. "A Note on Medea's Plant and the Mandrake." *Folklore* 79.3 (1968): 227–231.

Clarke, Joanne, ed. *Archaeological Perspectives on the Transmission and Transformation of Culture in the Eastern Mediterranean*. Levant Supplementary Series 2. Oxford: Oxbow, 2005.

Clemen, Carolus. *Fontes Historiae Religionis Persicae*. Bonn: Marcus & Weber, 1920.

Clines, David J.A., ed. *The Dictionary of Classical Hebrew*. Vol. I:א. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1993.

———., ed. *Dictionary of Classical Hebrew.* Vol. II: גּ–בּ . Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995.

———., ed. *The Dictionary of Classical Hebrew.* Vol. III: ד – ט. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996.

———., ed. *The Dictionary of Classical Hebrew.* Vol. IV: י – ל. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

Cohn, Norman. *Cosmos, Chaos and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith.* 2nd ed. New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1995.

———. "How Time Acquired a Consummation." Pages 21–37 in *Apocalypse Theory and the Ends of the World.* Edited by Malcolm Bull. Oxford: Blackwell, 1995.

———. *The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Millenarians and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages.* London: Pimlico, 2004. First Published 1957.

Colarusso, John. "The Hunters (Indo-European Proto-myths: The Storm God, The Good King, The Mighty Hunter)." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 36.3–4 (2008): 442–463.

Colless, Brian E. "Cyrus the Persian as Darius the Mede in the Book of Daniel." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 56 (1992): 113–126.

Collins, Billie Jean, ed. *A History of the Animal World in the Ancient Near East.* Handbuch der Orientalistik I.64. Leiden: Brill, 2002.

Collins, John J. "Apocalyptic Eschatology as the Transcendence of Death." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 36 (1974): 21–43.

———. "The Court-Tales in Daniel and the Development of Apocalyptic." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 94.2 (1975): 218–234.

———. "Jewish Apocalyptic Against Its Hellenistic Near Eastern Environment." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 220 (1975): 27–36.

———. "The Mythology of Holy War in Daniel and the Qumran War Scroll: A Point of Transition in Jewish Apocalyptic." *Vetus Testamentum* 25.3 (1975): 596–612.

Collins, John J. *The Apocalyptic Vision of the Book of Daniel.* Harvard Semitic Monographs 16. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1977.

———. "Cosmos and Salvation: Jewish Wisdom and Apocalyptic in the Hellenistic Age." *History of Religions* 17.2 (1977): 121–142.

Collins, John J. "Methodological Issues in the Study of 1 Enoch: Reflections on the Articles of P. D. Hanson and G. W. Nickelsburg." Pages 315–322 in *Society of Biblical Literature 1978 Seminar Papers.* Edited by Paul J. Achtemeier. Vol. 1. SBLSP 18. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1978.

———., ed. *Apocalypse: The Morphology of a Genre. Semeia* 14 (1979).

———. "Introduction: Towards the Morphology of a Genre." *Semeia* 14 (1979): 1–20.

———. "The Jewish Apocalypses." *Semeia* 14 (1979): 21–60.

———. "The Persian Apocalypses." *Semeia* 14 (1979): 207–217.

———. "The Apocalyptic Technique: Setting and Function in the Book of Watchers." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 44.1 (1982): 91–111.

———. "The Sibylline Oracles." Pages 317–472 in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* Edited by James H Charlesworth. Vol. I: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments. New York: Doubleday, 1983.

———. "Review: *Roots of Apocalyptic: The Mesopotamian Background of the Enoch Figure and of the Son of Man*, by Helge S. Kvanvig." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 109.4 (1990): 715–718.

———. "The Sage in the Apocalyptic and Pseudepigraphic Literature." Pages 343–354 in *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East.* Edited by John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990.

———. "Genre, Ideology, and Social Movements in Jewish Apocalypticism." Pages 11–32 in *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocalyptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium.* Edited by John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

———. *Daniel.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1993.

———. "Review: *Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith.* By Norman Cohn." *Theological Studies* 55.2 (1994): 347–348.

———. "Prayer of Nabonidus." Pages 83–94 in *Qumran Cave 4 XVII Parabiblical Texts 3.* Edited by James C. VanderKam. DJD XXII. Oxford: Clarendon, 1996.

———. "The Jewish Transformation of Sibylline Oracles." Pages 181–197 in *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages in Hellenistic-Roman Judaism.* Leiden: Brill, 1997.

———. *Seers, Sybils* (sic) *and Sages in Hellenistic-Roman Judaism.* Leiden: Brill, 1997.

———. *The Apocalyptic Imagination.* Biblical Resource Series. Second ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998.

———., ed. *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity.* New York: Continuum, 2000.

———. "From Prophecy to Apocalypticism: The Expectation of the End." Pages 129–161 in *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity.* Edited by John J. Collins. New York: Continuum, 2000.

———. "Eschatological Dynamics and Utopian Ideals in Early Judaism." Pages 69–89 in *Imagining the End: Visions of Apocalypse from the Ancient Middle East to Modern America.* Edited by Abbas Amanat and Magnus Bernhardsson. London: I. B. Tauris, 2002.

———. "Theology and Identity in the Early Enochic Literature." Pages 57–62 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001.* Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

———. "Prophecy, Apocalypse and Eschatology: Reflections on the Proposals of Lester Grabbe." Pages 44–52 in *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak. JSPSS 46. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

———. *Encounters with Biblical Theology.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2005.

Collins, John J., and James H. Charlesworth, eds. *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocalyptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium.* Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

Collins, John J., and Peter W. Flint. "Pseudo-Daniel." Pages 95–164 in *Qumran Cave 4 XVII Parabiblical Texts 3.* Edited by James C. VanderKam. DJD XXII. Oxford: Clarendon, 1996.

Collon, Dominique. *Ancient Near Eastern Art.* London: British Museum, 1995.

Colpe, Carsten. "Development of Religious Thought." Pages 819–865 in *The Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Vol. 3(2) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

Conrad, E. "The End of Prophecy and the Appearance of Angels/Messengers in the Book of the Twelve." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 73 (1997): 65–79.

Conroy, Charles, "Recent Studies of the Enigmatic Servant Texts in Isaiah." Paper presented at Irish Biblical Association Annual Meeting, 24–24 April 2009, Dublin.

Contents of the Nasks. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts IV*. Ed. F. Max Müller. Sacred Books of the East 37. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1882 by Oxford Univ Press.

Coogan, Michael David. *West Semitic Personal Names in the Murašu Documents*. Harvard Semitic Monographs 7. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1976.

Cook, J. M. "The Rise of the Achaemenids and Establishment of their Empire." Pages 200–291 in *The Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Cook, Stephen L. *Prophecy and Apocalypticism: The Postexilic Social Setting*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995.

———. *The Apocalyptic Literature*. Nashville: Abington Press, 2003.

———. "Mythological Discourse in Ezekiel and Daniel and the Rise of Apocalypticism in Israel." Pages 85–106 in *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship*. Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak. JSPSS 46. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

Cooke, G. A. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Ezekiel*. International Critical Commentaries. Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1936.

Cooper, Alan. "Ps 24:7–10: Mythology and Exegesis." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 102.1 (1983): 37–60.

Cowley, A. *Aramaic Papyri of the Fifth Century B.C.* Osnabrück: Otto Zeller, 1967. First Published 1923.

Crawford, Michael H., and David Whitehead. *Archaic and Classical Greece: A Selection of Ancient Sources in Translation*. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

Crenshaw, James .L. *Prophetic Conflict: Its Effect upon Israelite Religion*. BZAW 124. Berlin: de Gruyter, 1971.

———. *Education in Ancient Israel*. New York: Doubleday, 1998.

Creppin, John. "The Xvarənah as a Transfunctional Figure." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 1.2 (1973): 232–242.

Cross, Frank Moore. "Aspects of Samaritan and Jewish History in Late Persian and Hellenistic Times." *Harvard Theological Review* 59.3 (1966): 201–211.

———. *Canaanite Myth and Hebrew Epic: Essays in the History of the Religion of Israel*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1973.

———. *From Epic to Canon: History and Literature in Ancient Israel*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 2000.

Culley, Robert C., ed. *Oral Tradition and Old Testament Studies: Semeia* 5 (1976).

Cumont, Franz. *The Mysteries of Mithra*. Trans. Thomas J. McCormick. 2nd Rev. ed. London: Kegan Paul, 1903.

———. "St. George and Mithra the Cattle Thief." *Journal of Roman Studies* 27.1 (1937): 63–71.

Curtis, Edward Lewis, and Albert Alonzo Madsen. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Books of Chronicles.* International Critical Commentaries. Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1910.

Curtis, John E., ed. *Mesopotamia and Iran in the Persian Period: Conquest and Imperialism 539–331 BC.* Proceedings of a Seminar in memory of Vladimir G. Lukonin. London: British Museum, 1997.

Curtis, John E., and Nigel Tallis, eds. *Forgotten Empire: The World of Ancient Persia.* Berkeley: Univ of California P, 2005.

Curtis, Vesta Sarkhosh. *Persian Myths.* London: British Museum, 1993.

Curtis, Vesta Sarkhosh, Robert Hillenbrand, and J. M. Rogers, eds. *The Art and Archaeology of Ancient Persia: New Light on the Parthian and Sasanian Empires.* London: I. B. Tauris, 1998.

Curtis, Vesta Sarkhosh, and Sarah Stewart, eds. *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I.* London: I. B. Tauris, 2005.

Daiches, Samuel. *The Jews in Babylon in the Time of Ezra and Nehemiah according to Babylonian Inscriptions.* Jew's College Publication 2. London: Jew's College, 1910.

Dalley, Stephanie. *Myths from Mesopotamia: Creation, the Flood, Gilgamesh and others.* Oxford World Classics. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1991.

Dallmayr, Fred R. *Beyond Orientalism: Essays in Cross-Cultural Encounters.* New York: SUNY Press, 1996.

Dandamaev, Muhammad A. "The Domain-Lands of Achaemenes in Babylonia." *Schriften zur Geschichte und Kultur des Alten Orients* 11 (1974): 123–127.

———. "Data of the Babylonian Documents from the 6th to the 5th Centuries B.C. on the Sakas." Pages 95–109 in *Prolegomena to the Sources on the History of Pre-Islamic Central Asia.* Edited by J. Harmatta. Budapest, 1979.

———. "Royal Paradeisoi in Babylonia." Pages 113–117 in *Orientalia J. Duchesne-Guillemin Emerito Oblata.* Acta Iranica 23. Leiden: Brill, 1984.

———. "Babylonia I: History of Babylonia in the Median and Achaemenid Periods." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 327–334.

———. "Assyria II: Achaemenid Aθurā." *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.8 (1987): 816.

———. *A Political History of the Achaemenid Empire.* Trans. W. J. Vogelsang. Leiden: Brill, 1989.

Dandamaev, Muhammad A., and Vladimir Lukonin. *The Culture and Social Institutions of Ancient Iran.* Trans. Philip L. Kohl. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1989.

Daniels, Ted. "Charters of Righteousness: Politics, Prophets, and the Drama of Conversion." Pages 3–18 in *War in Heaven/Heaven on Earth: Theories of the Apocalyptic.* Edited by Stephen D. O'Leary and Glen S. McGhee. Millennialism and Society 2. London: Equinox, 2005.

David, A. Rosalie. *The Ancient Egyptians: Religious Beliefs and Practices.* London: Kegan Paul, 1982.

Davidson, Maxwell J. *Angels at Qumran: A Comparative Study of 1 Enoch 1–36, 72–108 and Sectarian Writings from Qumran.* JSPSS 11. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1992.

Davies, David. "Artistic Intentions and the Ontology of Art." *British Journal of Aesthetics* 39.2 (1999): 148–162.

Davies, Philip R., ed. *Second Temple Studies I.* JSOT Supp 117. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

———. "God of Cyrus, God of Israel: Some Religio-Historical Reflections on Isaiah 40–55." Pages 207–225 in *Words Remembered, Texts Renewed: Essays in Honour of John F.A. Sawyer.* Edited by Jon Davies, Graham Harvey and Wilfred G. E. Watson. JSOTSS 195. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995.

———. *Scribes and Schools: The Canonization of the Hebrew Scriptures.* Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998.

———. "And Enoch was Not, For Genesis Took Him." Pages 97–108 in *Biblical Traditions in Transmission.* Edited by Charlotte Hempel and Judith M. Lieu. Leiden: Brill, 2006.

Davies, W. D., and L. Finkelstein, eds. *The Cambridge History of Judaism.* Vol. I: The Persian Persiod. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984.

Davis, Dick. "Rustam-i Dastan." *Iranian Studies* 32.2 (1999): 231–241.

Davis, Ellen F. *Swallowing the Scroll: Textuality and the Dynamics of Discourse in Ezekiel's Prophecy.* JSOTSS 78. Sheffield: Almond, 1989.

Day, John. *God's Conflict with the Dragon and the Sea: Echoes of a Canaanite Myth in the Old Testament.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

———. *Molech: a God of Human Sacrifice in the Old Testament.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1989.

———. *Yahweh and the Gods and Goddesses of Canaan.* JSOTSS 265. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000.

Day, Leslie Preston. "Dog Burials in the Greek World." *American Journal of Archaeology* 88.1 (1984): 21–32.

de Boer, P. A. H., ed. *Congress Volume, Uppsala 1971.* Supplements to Vetus Testamentum 22. Leiden: Brill, 1972.

de Moor, Johannes C. *An Anthology of Religious Texts from Ugarit.* Nisaba 16. Leiden: Brill, 1987.

Delitzsch, Friedrich. *Wo lag das Paradies? Eine biblisch-assyriologische Studie, mit zahlreichen assyriologischen Beiträgen zur biblischen Länder- und Völkerkunde.* Leipzig: Hinrichs'sche, 1881.

Demsky, Aaron. "Double Names in the Babylonian Exile and the Identitiy of Sheshbazzar." Pages 23–40 in *These are the Names: Studies in Jewish Onomastics.* Edited by Aaron Demsky. Vol. 2. Ramat-Gan, Israel: Bar Ilan Univ Press, 1999.

Dequeker, Luc. "Darius the Persian and the Reconstruction of the Jewish Temple in Jerusalem (Ezra 4,24)." Pages 67–92 in *Ritual and Sacrifice in the Ancient Near East.* Edited by J. Quaegebeur. Orientalia Lovaniensia Analecta 55. Louvain: Peeters, 1993.

Dhalla, Maneckji N. *History of Zoroastrianism.* London: Oxford Univ Press, 1938.

Diakonoff, I. "Media." Pages 36–148 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Dilke, O. A. W. *Greek and Roman Maps.* London: Thames & Hudson, 1985.

Dimant, Devorah. "The 'Pesher on the Periods' (4Q180) and 4Q181." *Israel Oriental Studies* 9 (1979): 77–102.

———. "The Biography of Enoch and the Books of Enoch." *Vetus Testamentum* 33.1 (1983): 14–29.

———. "The Apocalyptic Interpretation of Ezekiel at Qumran." Pages 31–52 in *Messiah and Christos: Studies in the Jewish Origins of Christianity*. Edited by Ithamar Gruenwald, Shaul Shaked and Gedaliahu G. Stroumsa. Texte und Studen zum antiken Judentum 32. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1992.

———. "Review: *Cosmos, Chaos, and the World to Come: The Ancient Roots of Apocalyptic Faith* by Norman Cohn." *History of Religions* 36.1 (1996): 79–81.

———. "Two 'Scientific' Fictions: The So-Called Book of Noah and the Alleged Quotation of Jubilees in CD 16:3–4." Pages 230–249 in *Studies in the Hebrew Bible, Qumran, and the Septuagint Presented to Eugene Ulrich*. Edited by Peter W. Flint, Emmanuel Tov and James C. VanderKam. Leiden: Brill, 2006.

DiTommaso, Lorenzo. "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism in Antiquity Part I." *Currents in Biblical Research* 5.2 (2007): 235–286.

———. "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism in Antiquity, Part II." *Currents in Biblical Research* 5.3 (2007): 367–432.

Dix, G. H. "The Enochic Pentateuch." *Journal of Theological Studies* 27 (1926): 29–42.

Doan, William, and Terry Giles. *Prophets, Performance, and Power: Performance Criticism of the Hebrew Bible*. New York: T&T Clark, 2005.

Dostoevsky, Fyodor. "Notes from the Underground." Pages 95–214 in *The Best Short Stories of Fyodor Dostoevsky*. Trans. David Magershack. New York: Modern Library, 2001.

Dozeman, Thomas B. "Geography and History in Herodotus and in Ezra-Nehemiah." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 122.3 (2003): 449–466.

Draper, Jonathan A., ed. *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity*. S.B.L. Semeia Studies. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

Dresden, Mark J. *Denkart: a Pahlavi Text*. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1966.

———. "Survey of the History of Iranian Studies." Pages 168–190 in *Iranistik: Literatur*. Edited Ilya Gershevitch et. al. Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1. Leiden: Brill, 1968.

Driver, G. R. *Aramaic Documents of the Fifth Century B.C.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1954.

Drønen, Tomas S. "Scientific Revolution and Religious Conversion: a Closer Look at Thomas Kuhns's Theory of Paradigm-shift." *Method and Theory in the Study of Religion* 18.3 (2006): 232–253.

Dronke, Ursula. *The Poetic Edda II: Mythological Poems*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1997.

Duchesne-Guillemin, Jacques. *The Western Response to Zoroaster*. Ratanbai Katrak Lectures. Oxford: Clarendon, 1958.

———. "Fire in Iran and in Greece." *East and West* 13 (1963): 198–206.

———. "Heraclitus and Iran." *History of Religions* 3 (1963): 34–49.

———. "The Religion of Ancient Iran." Pages 323–376 in *Historia Religionum*. Edited by C. J. Bleeker and Geo Widengren. Vol. I. Leiden: Brill, 1969.

———, ed. *Études Mithriaques*. Acta Iranica 17. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

———. *The Hymns of Zarathustra: Being a translation of the Gâthâs together with introduction and commentary*. Trans. M. Henning. Wisdom of the East. London: Murray, 1992.

Durham, William H. "Applications of Evolutionary Culture Theory." *Annual Review of Anthropology* 21 (1992): 331–355.

Dusinberre, Elspeth R. M. "Satrapal Sardis: Achaemenid Bowls in an Achaemenid Capital." *American Journal of Archaeology* 103.1 (1999): 73–102.

Eaton, Kent. "Beware the Trumpet of Judgement: John Nelson Darby and the nineteenth-century Brethren." Pages 119–162 in *The Coming Deliverer: Millennial Themes in World Religions*. Edited by Fiona Bowie. Cardiff: Univ of Wales Press, 1997.

Eddy, Samuel K. *The King is Dead: Studies in the Near Eastern Resistance to Hellenism, 334–31 B.C.* London: University Microfilms Intl, 1980. First Published 1961 in Lincoln, NE.

Edelman, Diana V. *The Origins of the 'Second' Temple: Persian Imperial Policy and the Rebuilding of Jerusalem*. Bible World. London: Equinox, 2005.

Edwards, M. J. "Herodotus and Mithras: Histories I.131." *American Journal of Philology* 111.1 (1990): 1–4.

Ehrman, Bart D. *Jesus: Apocalyptic Prophet of the New Millennium*. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1999.

Eichrodt, Walther. *Ezekiel: A Commentary*. Trans. Cosslett Quin. The Old Testament Library. London: SCM, 1970.

Elayi, Josette, and Jean Sapin. *Beyond the River: New Perspectives on Transeuphratene*. Trans. J. Edward Crowley. JSOTSS 250. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

Eliade, Mircea. *A History of Religious Ideas*. Vol. 1: From the Stone Age to the Eleusinian Mysteries. Trans. Willard R. Trask. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1978.

Eliade, Mircea, and Joseph M. Kitagawa, eds. *The History of Religions: Essays in Methodology*. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1959.

Elliot, Mark. "Covenant and Cosmology in the Book of Watchers and the Astronomical Book." Pages 23–38 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001*. Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

Elliott, Marianne. *The Catholics of Ulster: a History*. London: Penguin, 2000.

Eph'al, Israel. "Changes in Palestine During the Persian Period in Light of Epigraphic Sources." *Israel Exploration Journal* 48.1–2 (1998): 106–119.

Epstein, I., ed. *Tractate Sanhedrin*. New ed. Sanhedrin. Hebrew-English Edition of the Babylonian Talmud. London: Soncino, 1969.

Erho, Ted M. "The Ahistorical Nature of 1 Enoch 56:5–8 and Its Ramifications upon the Opinio Communis on the Dating of the Similitudes of Enoch." *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 40.1 (2009): 23–54.

Eschel, Esther. "The Imago Mundi of the Genesis Apocryphon." Pages 111–132 in *Heavenly Tablets: Interpretation, Identity and Tradition in Ancient Judaism*. Edited by Lynn LiDonnici and Andrea Lieber. SJSJ 119. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

Eslinger, Lyle. "Ezekiel 20 and the Metaphor of Historical Teleology: Concepts of Biblical History." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 23.81 (1998): 93–120.

Evans, Craig A., ed. *Of Scribes and Sages: Early Jewish Interpretation and Transmission of Scripture*. Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity. 2 vols. London: T&T Clark, 2004.

Evelyn-White, Hugh G., ed. *Hesiod, Homeric Hymns, Epic Cycle, Homerica*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998.

Farmanfarmaian, Fatema S. "Georgia and Iran: Three Millennia of Cultural Relations, an Overview." *Journal of Persianate Studies* 2.1 (2009): 1–43.

Farrell, Thomas J. "Kelber's Breakthrough." *Semeia* 39 (1987): 27–46.

Feldman, Louis H. "Josephus' Portrait of Moses." *The Jewish Quarterly Review* 82.3/4 (1992): 285–328.

———. *Jew and Gentile in the Ancient World: Attitudes and Interactions From Alexander to Justinian.* Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1993.

Finnegan, Ruth. "What is Orality—If Anything?" *Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies* 14 (1990): 130–149.

Firdausī. *Shāhnāmeh. The Shāhnāma of Firdausī.* Eds. Arthur George Warner and Edmond Warner. 9 vols. London: Routledge, 2000. First Published 1905 by Kegan Paul.

Fischer, Stephen Roger. *A History of Writing.* London: Reaktion, 2001.

Fishbane, Michael. *Biblical Interpretation in Ancient Israel.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1985.

———. "From Scribalism to Rabbinism: Perspectives on the Emergence of Classical Judaism." Pages 439–456 in *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East.* Edited by John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990.

———. *The Exegetical Imagination: on Jewish Thought and Theology.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998.

Fisher, Walter R. *Human Communication as Narration: Toward a Philosophy of Reason, Value, and Action.* Studies in Rhetoric/Communication. Columbia, SC: Univ of SC Press, 1987.

Fitzmyer, Joseph A. *The Genesis Apocryphon of Qumran Cave 1 : a commentary.* 2nd rev. ed. Rome: Biblical Institute Press, 1971.

Fitzpatrick-McKinley, Anne. *The Transformation of Torah from Scribal Advice to Law.* JSOTSS 287. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1999.

———. "Ezra, Nehemiah and Some Early Greek Lawgivers." Pages 17–48 in *Rabbinic Law in its Roman and Near Eastern Context.* Edited by Catherine Hezser. Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism 97. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003.

Fleming, Daniel E. "Prophets and Temple Personnel in the Mari Archives." Pages 44–64 in *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Alice Ogden Bellis. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Floyd, Michael H. "The Production of Prophetic Books in the Early Second Temple Period." Pages 276–297 in *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism.* Edited by Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Floyd, Michael H., and Robert D. Haak, eds. *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism.* Library of Hebrew Bible 427. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Flusser, David. "The Four Empires in the Fourth Sibyl and in the Book of Daniel." *Israel Oriental Studies* 2 (1972): 148–175.

———. "Hystaspes and John of Patmos." Pages 12–75 in *Irano-Judaica.* Edited by Shaul Shaked. Vol. I. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982.

Foley, John Miles. "Beowulf and the traditional narrative song: the potential and limits of comparison." Pages 117–136; 173–178 in *Old English Literature in context: Ten Essays.* Edited by John D. Niles. London: Boydell, 1980.

———. "Tradition and the Collective Talent: Oral Epic, Textual Meaning, and Receptionalist Theory." *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): 203–222.

Foltz, Richard. "Judaism and the Silk Route." *The History Teacher* 32.1 (1998): 9–16.

Fontaine, P.F. M. *The Light and the Dark: The Cultural History of Dualism.* Vol. V: Dualism in Ancient Iran, India and China. Amsterdam: Gieben, 1990.

Fortson, Benjamin W., IV. *Indo-European Language and Culture: An Introduction.* Oxford: Blackwell, 2004.

Foster, Benjamin R. "Mesopotamia and the End of Time." Pages 23–32 in *Imagining the End: Visions of Apocalypse from the Ancient Middle East to Modern America.* Edited by Abbas Amanat and Magnus Bernhardsson. London: I. B. Tauris, 2002.

Fox, Douglas A. "Darkness and Light: The Zoroastrian View." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 35.2 (1967): 129–137.

Fox, Michael V. "The Rhetoric of Ezekiel's Vision of the Valley of the Bones." *Hebrew Union College Annual* 51 (1980): 1–15.

Fragner, Bert G., et al., eds. *Proceedings of the Second European Conference of Iranian Studies (Bamburg, 30 September–4 October, 1991).* Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1995.

Frame, Grant, and Andrew R. George. "The Royal Libraries of Nineveh: New Evidence for King Ashurbanipal's Tablet Collecting." Pages 265–284 in *Nineveh: Papers of the XLIXe Recontre Assyriologique Internationale, London, 7–11 July 2003.* Edited by Dominique Collon and Andrew George. Vol. 2. London: British School of Archaeology in Iraq, 2005.

Franke, William. "Apocalypse and the Breaking-Open of Dialogue: a Negatively Theological Perspective." *International Journal for Philosophy of Religion* 47.2 (2000): 65–86.

Freyne, Sean. *Jesus, A Jewish Galilean.* London: T&T Clark, 2004.

Fried, Lisbeth S. "'You Shall Appoint Judges': Ezra's Mission and the Rescript of Artaxerxes." Pages 63–90 in *Persia and Torah.* Edited by James W. Watts. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2001.

———. "Cyrus the Messiah? The Historical Background to Isaiah 45:1." *Harvard Theological Review* 95.4 (2002): 373–393.

———. *The Priest and the Great King: Temple-Palace Relations in the Persian Empire.* Biblical and Judaic Studies from the University of California 10. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2004.

Froggatt, P. "The Albinism of Timur, Zāl, and Edward the Confessor." *Medical History* 6 (1962): 328–342.

Fröhlich, Ida. *'Time and Times and Half a Time': Historical Consciousness in the Jewish Literature of the Persian and Hellenistic Periods.* JSPS 19. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996.

Frye, Richard N. *The Heritage of Persia.* London: Weidenfeld and Nicholson, 1962.

———. "Iran and Israel in Antiquity." *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 44 (1973): 71–75.

———. "Mithra in Iranian History." Pages 62–67 in *Mithraic Studies: Proceedings of the First International Congress of Mithraic Studies.* Edited by John R. Hinnells. Vol. 1. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975.

———. *The Heritage of Persia.* History of Civilisation. 2nd ed. London: Cardinal, 1976.

———. "The Political History of Iran Under the Sasanians." Pages 116–180 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Volume 3: The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Vol. 1. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

———. *The History of Ancient Iran.* Handbuch der Altertumswissenschaft. München: C. H. Beck'sche, 1984.

———. "Religion in Fars Under the Achaemenids." Pages 171–178 in *Orientalia J. Duchesne-Guillemin Emerito Oblata.* Acta Iranica 23. Leiden: Brill, 1984.

Fuery, Kelli, and Patrick Fuery. "The Pharmakon of the Apocalypse." Pages 7–16 in *The End that Does: Art, Science, and Millennial Accomplishment.* Edited by Cathy Gutierrez and Hillel Schwartz. Millennialism and Society 3. London: Equinox, 2006.

Gadd, C. J., and L. Legrain. *Ur Excavations: Texts.* Vol. I: Royal Inscriptions. 8 vols. London: British Museum, 1928.

Galambush, Julie. "Necessary Enemies: Nebuchadnezzar, YHWH, and Gog in Ezekiel 38–39." Pages 254–267 in *Israel's Prophets and Israel's Past: Essays on the Relationship of Prophetic Texts and Israelite History in Honor of John H. Hayes.* Edited by Brad E. Kelle and Megan Bishop Moore. Library of Hebrew Bible 446. New York: T & T Clark, 2006.

Gamkrelidze, Thomas V., and Vjačeslav V. Ivanov. *Indo-European and the Indo-Europeans: a Reconstruction and Historical Analysis of a Proto-Language and a Proto-Culture, Part 1:The Text.* Trans. Johanna Nichols. Trends in Linguistics: Studies and Monographs 80. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995.

Gammie, John G. "Spatial and Ethical Dualism in Jewish Wisdom and Apocalyptic Literature." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 93.3 (1974): 356–385.

Gammie, John G., and Leo G. Perdue, eds. *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East.* Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990.

Garrison, Mark B. "A Persepolis Fortification Seal on the Tablet MDP 11 308 (Louvre Sb 13078)." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 55.1 (1996): 15–35.

Garrison, Mark B., and Paul E. Dion. "The Seal of Ariyāramna in the Royal Ontario Museum, Toronto." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 58.1 (1999): 1–17.

Garsoïan, Nina G. *The Epic Histories Attributed to P'awstos Buzand (Buzandaran Patmut'iwnk').* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1989.

Gaster, Theodor H. *Myth, Legend and Custom in the Old Testament: a Comparative Study with Chapters from Sir James G. Frazier's Folklore in the Old Testament.* London: Duckworth, 1969.

Genito, Bruno. "The Archaeology of the Median Period: An Outline and a Research Perspective." *Iranica Antiqua* 40 (2005): 315–340.

Georgi, Dieter. "The Early Church: Internal Jewish Migration or New Religion?" *Harvard Theological Review* 88.1 (1995): 35–68.

Gershevitch, Ilya. *The Avestan Hymn to Mithra: Introduction, Translation, and Commentary.* Oriental Publications 4. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1959.

———. "Zoroaster's Own Contribution." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 23.1 (1964): 12–38.

———. "Old Iranian Literature." Pages 1–31 in *Iranistik: Literatur.* Edited by Ilya Gerschavitch, et al. Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1. Leiden: Brill, 1968.

———., ed. *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

———., et al., eds. *Iranistik: Literatur.* Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.1. Leiden: Brill, 1968.

Gesenius, D. Wilhelm. *Gesenius's Hebrew and Chaldee Lexicon to the Old Testament Scriptures.* Trans. Samuel P. Tregelles. London: Bagster & Sons, 1846.

Geyer, John B. "Desolation and Cosmos." *Vetus Testamentum* 49.1 (1999): 49–64.

Ghirshman, Roman. *Persia: From the Origins to Alexander the Great.* Trans. Stuart Gilbert and James Emmons. The Arts of Mankind. London: Thames & Hudson, 1964.

Gignoux, Philippe. *Glossaire des inscriptions Pehlevies et Parthes.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum Supp Series 1. London: Lund Humphries, 1972.

———. "Bahman II: In the Pahlavi Texts." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 488.

———. "Monotheism or Polytheism in the Gathic Revelation?" Pages 65–71 in *Irano-Judaica IV.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999.

Ginzberg, Louis. *Legends of the Jews.* Trans. Henrietta Szold. 7 vols. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 1998. First Published 1909–1938 by Jewish Publication Society.

Gitay, Yehoshua. "Deutero-Isaiah: Oral or Written?" *Journal of Biblical Literature* 99.2 (1980): 185–197.

Glassner, Jean-Jacques. "Progress, Science, and the Use of Knowledge in Ancient Mesopotamia." Pages 1815–1823 in *Civilizations of the Ancient Near East.* Edited by Jack M. Sasson. Vol. 3. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

———. *Mesopotamian Chronicles.* SBL Writings from the Ancient World 19. Leiden: Brill, 2005.

Gleßmer, Uwe. "Horizontal Measuring in the Babylonian Astronomical compendium MUL.APIN and in the Astronomical Book of 1En." *Henoch* 18.3 (1996): 259–282.

Gleßmer, Uwe, and Matthias Albani. "An Astronomical Measuring Instrument from Qumran." Pages 407–442 in *The Provo International Conference on the Dead Sea Scrolls.* Edited by Donald W. Parry and Eugene Ulrich. Leiden: Brill, 1999.

Gnoli, Gherardo. "Avestan Geography." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 44–47.

———. "Babylonia II: Babylonian Influences on Iran." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 334–336.

———. "Bahrām I: In Old and Middle Iranian Texts." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 510–513.

———. "Bang I: In Ancient Iran." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 689–690.

Goff, Matthew J. "Discerning Trajectories: 4QInstruction and the Sapiential Background of the Sayings Source Q." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 124.4 (2005): 657–673.

———. "Wisdom, Apocalypticism, and the Pedagogical Ethos of 4QInstruction." Pages 57–68 in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism.* Edited by Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005.

Goldingay, John. *The Message of Isaiah 40–55: a Literary-Theological Commentary.* London: T & T Clark, 2005.

Gonda, J. *Vedic Ritual: the Non-Solemn Rites.* Handbuch der Orientalistik 4.1. Leiden: Brill, 1980.

Goodell, Grace. "Bird Lore in Southwestern Iran." *Asian Folklore Studies* 38.2 (1979): 131–153.

Goodenough, Ward H. "Phylogenetically related cultural traditions." *Cross-Cultural Research* 31.1 (1997): 16–26.

Goody, Jack. *The Domestication of the Savage Mind.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press, 1977.

———. *The Interface between the Written and the Oral.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1987.

———. *The Power of the Written Tradition.* Smithsonian Series in Ethnographic Inquiry. Washington, DC: Smithsonian, 2000.

Grabbe, Lester L. "Another Look at the *Gestalt* of Darius the Mede." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 50 (1988): 198–213.

———. *Judaism From Cyrus to Hadrian.* London: SCM, 1992.

———. *Priests, Prophets, Diviners, Sages: A Socio-Historical Study of Religious Specialists in Ancient Israel.* Valley Forge, PA: Trinity Press International, 1995.

———. *Ezra-Nehemiah.* London: Routledge, 1998.

———, ed. *Leading Captivity Captive: 'The Exile' as History and Ideology.* JSOTSS 278; ESHM 2. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

———. "Israel's Historical Reality After the Exile." Pages 9–32 in *The Crisis of Israelite Religion: Transformation of Religious Tradition in Exilic and Post-Exilic Times.* Edited by Bob Becking and Marjo C. A. Korpel. Leiden: Brill, 1999.

———. *Judaic Religion in the Second Temple Period: Belief and Practice from the Exile to Yavneh.* London: Routledge, 2000.

———. "Introduction and Overview." Pages 2–43 in *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

———. "Prophetic and Apocalyptic: Time for New Definitions—and New Thinking." Pages 107–133 in *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Robert D. Haak. JSPSS 46. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

———. *A History of the Jews and Judaism in the Second Temple Period, Vol I: Yehud: A History of the Persian Province of Judah.* Library of Second Temple Studies 47. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

———. "A Priest is Without Honor in His Own Prophet: Priests and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets." Pages 79–97 in *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets.* Edited by Lester L. Grabbe and Alice Ogden Bellis. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

———. "Archaeology and *archaiologias*: Relating excavations to History in Fourth-Century B.C.E. Palestine." Pages 125–135 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Fourth Century B.C.E.* Edited by Oded Lipschits, Gary N. Knoppers, and Rainer Albertz. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2007.

Grabbe, Lester L., and Alice Ogden Bellis, eds. *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets.* JSOTSS 408. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Grabbe, Lester L., and Robert D. Haak, eds. *Knowing the End from the Beginning: Prophecy, Apocalyptic, and Their Relationship.* JSPSS 46. London: T & T Clark, 2003.

Graf, David F. "Medism: The Origin and Significance of the Term." *Journal of Hellenic Studies* 104 (1984): 15–30.

———. "The Persian Royal Road System." Pages 167–189 in *Achaemenid History VIII: Continuity and Change*. Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg, Amélie Kuhrt and Margaret Cool Root. Proceedings of the Last Achaemenid History Workshop, Ann Arbor, Michigan. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1994.

Graf, Fritz. "Mythical Production: Aspects of Myth and Technology in Antiquity." Pages 317–328 in *From Myth to Reason? Studies in the Development of Greek Thought*. Edited by Richard Buxton. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 1999.

Graves, Robert, and Omar Ali-Shah. *The Rubaiyyat of Omar Khayaam: a new translation with critical commentaries*. London: Cassell, 1967.

Gray, Louis H. "A List of the Divine and Demonic Epithets in the Avesta." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 46 (1926): 97–153.

———. *The Foundations of the Iranian Religions*. K. R. Cama Oriental Institute Pub. 5. Bombay: D. B. Taraporevala, 1930.

Grayson, James H. "The Accommodation of Korean Folk Religion to the Religious Forms of Buddhism: An Example of Reverse Syncretism." *Asian Folklore Studies* 51.2 (1992): 199–217.

Green, Alberto R. W. *The Role of Human Sacrifice in the Ancient Near East*. American Schools of Oriental Research Dissertation Series 1. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975.

Greenberg, Moshe. *Ezekiel 21–37*. The Anchor Bible 22A. New York: Doubleday, 1997.

Greene, John T. *The Role of the Messenger and Message in the Ancient Near East: Oral and Written Communication in the Ancient Near East and in the Hebrew Scriptures: Communicators and Communiques in Context*. Brown Judaic Studies 169. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1989.

Greenfield, Jonas C. "Aramaic II: Iranian Loanwords in Early Aramaic." *Encyclopædia Iranica* II.3 (1986): 256–259.

Greenfield, Jonas C., Bezalel Porten, and Ada Yardeni. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Aramaic Version*. Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1982.

Greenfield, Jonas C., and Michael E. Stone. "The Enochic Pentateuch and the Date of the Similitudes." *Harvard Theological Review* 70 (1977): 51–65.

Grenet, Frantz. "Burial II: Remnants of Burial Practices in Ancient Iran." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 559–561.

Griffiths, J. Gwyn. "Archaeology and Hesiod's Five Ages." *Journal of the History of Ideas* 17.1 (1956): 109–119.

———. *Plutarch's De Iside et Osiride: Introduction, Translation, and Commentary*. Swansea: Univ of Wales P, 1970.

Gropp, Douglas M., et al. *Wadi Daliyeh II: The Samaria Papyri from Wadi Daliyeh and Qumran Cave 4 XXVIII*. Discoveries in the Judaean Desert XXVIII. Oxford: Clarendon, 2001.

Gross, Walter. "Lying Prophet and Disobedient Man of God in 1 Kings 13: role Analysis as an Instrument of Theological Interpretation of an O.T. Narrative Text." *Semeia* 15 (1979): 97–135.

Gruber, Mayer. "Language(s) in Judaism." Pages 1535–1550 in *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*. Edited by Jacob Neusner, Alan J. Avery-Peck and William Scott Green. Vol. III: L-Ra. Leiden: Brill, 2005.

Gruen, Erich S. *Heritage and Hellenism; the Reinvention of Jewish Tradition.* University of California Press, 1998.

———. "Hellenistic Judaism." Pages 77–134 in *Cultures of the Jews.* Edited by David Biale. New York: Schocken, 2002.

———. "Persia through the Jewish Looking-Glass." Pages 90–104 in *Cultural Borrowings and Ethnic Appropriations in Antiquity.* Edited by Erich S. Gruen. Oriens et Occidens 8. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 2005.

———., ed. *Cultural Borrowings and Ethnic Appropriations in Antiquity.* Oriens et Occidens 8. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 2005.

Gunkel, Hermann. *What Remains of the Old Testament and Other Essays.* London: G. Allen & Unwin, 1928.

———. *Genesis.* Trans. Mark E. Biddle. Mercer Library of Biblical Studies. Macon, GA: Mercer Univ Press, 1997.

Gutierrez, Cathy, and Hillel Schwartz, eds. *The End that Does: Art, Science, and Millennial Accomplishment.* Millennialism and Society 3. London: Equinox, 2006.

Gutmann, Joseph, ed. *The Dura-Europos Synagogue: A Re-evaluation (1932–1992).* South Florida Studies in the History of Judaism 25. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992.

Habel, Norman C. *The Book of Job: A Commentary.* The Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster John Knox, 1985.

Hale, Mark. "Avestan." Pages 101–122 in *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas.* Edited by Roger D. Woodard. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008.

———. "Pahlavi." Pages 123–135 in *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas.* Edited by Roger D. Woodard. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008.

Halevi, Amitai. "Does God Have a Sense of Humor?" *Jewish Bible Quarterly* 24.3 (1996): 178–182.

Hallo, William W., ed. *The Context of Scripture I: Canonical Compositions from the Biblical World.* Leiden: Brill, 1997.

———, ed. *The Context of Scripture. Vol. II: Monumental Inscriptions from the Biblical World.* Leiden: Brill, 2000.

Hallock, Richard T. "New Light From Persepolis." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 9.4 (1950): 237–252.

———. *Persepolis Fortification Tablets.* Oriental Institute Publications 92. Chicago: Chicago Univ Press, 1969.

———. "Selected Fortification Texts." *Cahiers de la D. A. F. I.* 8 (1978): 109–136.

Hamilton, Malcolm, ed. *The Sociology of Religion.* Vol. V: Religious Movements. London: Routledge, 2007.

Handley-Schachler, Morrison. "The *Lan* Ritual in the Persepolis Fortification Texts." Pages 195–204 in *Achaemenid History XI: Studies in Persian History, Essays in Memory of David M. Lewis.* Edited by Maria Brosius and Amélie Kuhrt. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1998.

Hanson, Paul D. "Jewish Apocalyptic against its Near Eastern Environment." *Revue Biblique* 78 (1971): 31–58.

———. *The Dawn of Apocalyptic.* Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1975.

———. "Apocalypse, Genre." Pages 27–28 in *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, Supplemtentary Volume*. Edited by Keith Crim. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1976.

———. "Apocalypticism." Pages 28–34 in *Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible, Supplemtentary Volume*. Edited by Keith Crim. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1976.

———. "Prolegomena to the Study of Jewish Apocalyptic." Pages 389–413 in *Magnalia Dei, The Mighty Acts of God: Essays on the Bible and Archaeology in Memory of G. Ernest Wright*. Edited by Frank Moore Cross, Werner E. Lemke and Patrick D. Miller. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1976.

———. "Rebellion in Heaven, Azazel, and Euhemeristic Heroes in 1 Enoch 6–11." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 96.2 (1977): 195–233.

Harley, J. B., and David Woodward, eds. *The History of Cartography*. Vol. I: Prehistoric, Ancient and Medieval Europe and the Mediterranean. London: Univ of Chicago Press, 1987.

Harrington, Daniel J. "The Raz Nihyeh in a Qumran Wisdom Text." *Revue Qumran* 17.1–4 (1996): 549–553.

———. *Wisdom Texts from Qumran*. London: Routledge, 1996.

Harrison, Cynthia M. "Persian Names on Coins of Northern Anatolia." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 41.3 (1982): 181–194.

Harrison, R. K. "The Mandrake and the Ancient World." *Evangelical Quarterly* 28.1 (1956): 87–92.

Harrison, Simon. "Cultural Boundaries." *Anthropology Today* 15.5 (1999): 10–13.

Harrison, Thomas. *Divinity and History: The Religion of Herodotus*. Oxford Classical Monographs. Oxford: Clarendon, 2002.

Hartman, Sven S. "Datierung der junavestischen Apokalyptik." Pages 61–76 in *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12–17, 1979*. Edited by David Hellholm. Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983.

Hartner, Willy. "Old Iranian Calendars." Pages 714–792 in *Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge, 1985.

Hasenfratz, Hans P. "Iran und der Dualismus." *Numen* 30.1 (1983): 35–52.

Haug, Martin. "Über das Ardâî Vîrâf Nâmeh (die Visionen das alten Parsenpriester Ardâî Vîrâf) und seinen angeblichen Zusammenhang mit dem Christlichen Apocryphon, 'die Himmelfahrt des Jesaja' betitelt." *Sitzungsberichte der kgl.bayerischen Akademie der Wissenschaften* I.3 (1870): 327–346.

———. *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings, and Religion of the Parsis*. Trübner Oriental Series. Third ed. London: Routledge, 2000. First Published 1884 by Trübner.

Havelock, Eric A. *The Greek Concept of Justice: From Its Shadow in Homer to Its Subtance in Plato*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1978.

———. "The Coming of Literate Communication to Western Civilization." *Journal of Communication* 30 (1980): 90–98.

Healey, John F. *The Targums of Proverbs*. The Aramaic Bible. Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1991.

Heider, George C. *The Cult of Molek: A Reassessment*. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1985.

Heimpel, Wolfgang. "The Sun at Night and the Doors of Heaven in Babylonian Texts." *Journal of Cuneiform Studies* 38.2 (1986): 127–151.

Hellerman, Joseph. "Purity and Nationalism in Second Temple Literature: 1–2 Maccabees and Jubilees." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 46.3 (2003): 401–421.

Hellholm, David, ed. *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12–17, 1979.* Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983.

———. "The Problem of Apocalyptic Genre and the Apocalypse of John." *Semeia* 36 (1986): 13–64.

Heltzer, Michael. "The Flogging and Plucking of Beards in the Achaemenid Empire and the Chronology of Nehemiah." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 28 (1995–1996): 305–307.

Helwing, Barbara, and Mojgan Seyedin. "The Achaemenid Period Occupation at Tang-i Bulaghi Site 73." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.6 (2009): 1–7, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2006–Helwing&Seyedin.pdf.

Hendel, Ronald S. "The Nephilim were on the Earth: Genesis 6:1–4 and its Ancient Near Eastern Context." Pages 11–34 in *The Fall of the Angels.* Edited by Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck. Themes in Biblical Narrative 6. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

Hengel, Martin. *Judaism and Hellenism.* Trans. John Bowden. London: Xpress Reprints, 1996. First Published 1974 by SCM.

Henkelman, Wouter, and Amélie Kuhrt, eds. *A Persian Perspective: Essays in Memory of Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg.* Achaemenid History XIII. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 2003.

Henkelman, Wouter, Charles E. Jones, and Matthew W. Stolper. "Clay tags with Achaemenid Seal Impressions in the Dutch Institute of the Near East (NINO) and Elsewhere." *Achemenet: Arta* 2.1 (2004): 1–66, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2004.2001/2004.2001.pdf.

Henkelman, Wouter, Charles E. Jones, and Matthew W. Stolper. "Achaemenid Elamite Administratives Tablets 2: the Qasr-i Abu Nasr Tablet." *Achemenet: Arta* 4.3 (2006): 1–20, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2006.2003–Stolper–Jones–Henkelman.pdf.

Henkelman, Wouter, and Kristin Kleber. "Babylonian Workers in the Persian Heartland: Palace Building at Matannan in the Reign of Cambyses." Pages 163–176 in *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire.* Edited by Christopher Tuplin. Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007.

Henning, Walter B. "An Astronomical Chapter of the Bundahishn." *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (1942): 229–248.

———. "The Book of Giants." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 11.1 (1943): 52–74.

———. *Zoroaster: Politician or Witch-Doctor?* Ratanbai Katrak Lectures 1949. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1951.

———. "Ein persischer Titel im Altaramäischen." Pages 659–666 in *Selected Papers II.* Acta Iranica 15. Leiden: Brill, 1977. First Published 1968.

———. *Selected Papers II.* Acta Iranica 15. Leiden: Brill, 1977.

Henze, Matthias. *The Madness of King Nebuchadnezzar: The Ancient Near Eastern Origins and Early History of Interpretation of Daniel 4.* SJSJ 61. Leiden: Brill, 1999.

Herman, Geoffrey. "Ahasuerus, the Former Stable-Master of Belshazzar, and the wicked Alexander of Macedon: two Parallels Between the Babylonian Talmud and Persian Sources." *AJS Review* 29.2 (2005): 283–297.

Herodotus. *The Persian Wars.* Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books III–IV.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000.

———. *The Persian Wars.* Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books VIII–IX.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001.

———. *The Persian Wars.* Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books I–II.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002.

———. *The Persian Wars.* Trans. A. D. Godley. *The Persian Wars, Books V–VII.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006.

Herzfeld, Ernst E. "The Traditional Date of Zoroaster." Pages 132–136 in *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry.* Edited by Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1933.

———. *Archaeological History of Iran.* Schweich Lectures of the British Academy. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1935.

Heschel, Abraham J. *The Prophets.* Perennial Classics. New York: HarperCollins, 2001.

Himmelfarb, Martha. *Tours of Hell: An Apocalyptic Form in Jewish and Christian Literature.* Philadelphia: Univ of Pennsylvania Press, 1983.

———. "The Experience of the Visionary and Genre in the Ascension of Isaiah 6–11 and the Apocalypse of Paul." *Semeia* 36 (1986): 97–112.

Hinnells, John R. "Zoroastrian Saviour Imagery and Its Influence on the New Testament." *Numen* 16.3 (1969): 161–185.

———. "The Zoroastrian Doctrine of Salvation in the Roman World: A Study of the Oracle of Hystaspes." Pages 125–148 in *Man and his Salvation: Studies in Memory of S. G. F. Brandon.* Edited by Eric J. Sharpe and John R. Hinnells. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1973.

———., ed. *Mithraic Studies: Proceedings of the First International Congress of Mithraic Studies.* 2 vols. Manchester: Manchester Univ Press, 1975.

———. "Reflections on the Lion-Headed Figure in Mithraism." Pages 333–370 in *Monumentum H. S. Nyberg.* Edited by J. Duchesne-Guillemin. Vol. I. Acta Iranica 4. Leiden: Brill, 1975.

———. "Zoroastrian Influence on the Judeo-Christian Tradition." *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 45 (1976): 1–23.

———. *Zoroastrian and Parsi Studies: Selected Works of John R. Hinnells.* Aldershot: Ashgate, 2000.

Hintze, Almut. *Zamyād-Yašt: Edition, Übersetzung, Kommentar.* Beiträge zur Iranistik 15. Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1994.

———. "The Rise of the Saviour in the Avesta." Pages 77–97 in *Iran und Turfan: Beiträge Berliner Wissenschaftler, Werner Sundermann zum 60. Geburtstag gewidmet.* Edited by Christiane Reck and Peter Zieme. Iranica 2. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1995.

———. "The Saviour and the Dragon in Iranian and Jewish/Christian Eschatology." Pages 72–90 in *Irano-Judaica IV.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999.

———. "Fraš̄o.kərəti." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 10 (2000): 190–192.

———. "On the Literary Structure of the Older Avesta." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 65.1 (2002): 31–51.

———. "'Do ut des': Patterns of Exchange in Zoroastrianism." *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 14.1 (2004): 27–45.

———. *A Zoroastrian Liturgy: The Worship in Seven Chapters (Yasna 35–41).* Iranica 12. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 2008.

Hirschberg, H. Z. J. W. "The Oriental Jewish Communities." Pages 119–225 in *Religion in the Middle East: Three Religions in Concord and Conflict.* Edited Arthur J. Arbury. Vol. 1. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1969.

Hoffman, Karl. "Avesta Script; Phonology of the Avesta; Grammar of the Avesta." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 3.1 (1988): 47–62.

Hoffman, Karl, and Johanna Narten. *Der Sasanidische Archetypus: Untersuchungen zu Schreibung und Lautgestalt des Avestischen.* Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1989.

Hogeterp, Albert L. A. "Resurrection and Biblical Tradition: Pseudo-Ezekiel Reconsidered." *Biblica* 89.1 (2008): 59–69.

Hoglund, Kenneth G. "The Achaemenid Context." Pages 54–72 in *Second Temple Studies I.* Edited by Philip R. Davies. JSOTSS 117. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

Hoglund, Kenneth G. *Achaemenid Imperial Administration in Syra-Palestine and the Missions of Ezra and Nehemiah.* Society of Biblical Literature Dissertation Series. Ed. David L. Peterson. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992.

Holbek, Bengt. "What the Illiterate Think of Writing." Pages 183–196 in *Literacy and Society.* Edited by Karen Schousboe and Mogens Trolle Larsen. Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1989.

Holden, Lynn. *Forms of Deformity.* JSOTSS 131. Sheffield: Scheffield Academic Press, 1991.

Holladay, William L. *Jeremiah 1: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Jeremiah Chapters 1–25.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1986.

———. *Jeremiah 2: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Jeremiah Chapters 26–52.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989.

Horowitz, Wayne. *Mesopotamian Cosmic Geography.* Mesopotamian Civilizations 8. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1998.

Horsley, Richard. "Religion and Other Products of Empire." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 71.1 (2003): 13–44.

———. "The Origins of the Hebrew Scriptures in Imperial Relations." Pages 107–135 in *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity.* Edited by Jonathan A. Draper. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

———. "The Politics of Cultural Production in Second Temple Judea: Historical Context and Political-Religious Relations of the scribes Who Produced 1 Enoch, Sirach, and Daniel." Pages 123–148 in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism.* Edited by Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005.

Houtkamp, J. "Some Remarks on Fire Altars of the Achaemenid Period." Pages 23–48 in *La Religion iranienne a l'epoque achaemenide (Actes du collogne de Liege 11 decembre 1987).* Edited by Jean Kellens. Iranica Antiqua Supp. 5. Gent: Iranica Antiqua, 1991.

Huggins, Ronald V. "Noah and the Giants: a Response to John C. Reeves." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 114.1 (1995): 103–110.

Hultgård, Anders. "Das Judentum in der hellenistisch-römischen Zeit und die iranische Religion: ein religionsgeschichtliches Problem." *Principat* 19.1 (1979): 512–590.

———. "Forms and Origins of Iranian Apocalypticism." Pages 387–412 in *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East.* Edited by David Hellholm. Tübingen: J.C.B. Mohr, 1983.

———. "The First Chapter of the Bundahišn. Remarks on the Text and Composition." Pages 167–190 in *Proceedings of the First European Conference of Iranian Studies (Turin, September 7–11, 1987).* Edited by Gherardo Gnoli and Antonio Panaino. Vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies. Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990.

———. "Bahman Yasht: A Persian Apocalypse." Pages 114–134 in *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocaylptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium.* Edited by John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1991.

———. "Zoroastrian Myth in Bahman Yasht." Pages 15–27 in *The Middle East Viewed from the North.* Papers from the First Nordic Conference on Middle Eastern Studies, Uppsala 26–29 January 1989. Edited by B. Utas and K. Vikør. Bergen, 1992.

———. "Das Paradies: vom Park des Perserkönigs zum Ort der Seligen." Pages 1–43 in *La Cité de Dieu/Die Stadt Gottes. 3. Symposium Strasbourg, Tübingen, Uppsala 19.–23. September 1998 in Tübingen.* Edited by Martin Hengel, Siegfried Mittmann and Anna M. Schwemer. Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 129. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2000.

———. "Persian Apocalypticism." Pages 39–83 in *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity.* Edited by John J. Collins. New York: Continuum, 2000.

Humbach, Helmut. "Yama/Yima/Jamšēd, King of Paradise of the Iranians." *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 26 (2002): 68–77.

Humbach, H., Josef Elfenbein, and Prods Oktor Skjærvø. *The Gāthās of Zarathushtra and Other Old Avestan Texts.* Indogermanische Bibliothek: Reihe 1, Lehr- und Handbücher. 2 vols. Heidelberg: Carl Winter, 1991.

Humbach, Helmut, and Pallan R. Ichapora. *Zamyād Yasht, Yasht 19 of the Younger Avesta: Text, Translation, Commentary.* Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1998.

Hunt, Arthur S. *The Oxyrhynchus Papyri.* Vol.17. London: Egypt Exploration Society, 1927.

Hüsing, G. "Gūgu (678–643)." *Orientalistische Literaturzeitung* 10 (1915): 299–303.

Huyse, P. "Noch einmal zu Parallelen zwischen Achaemeniden- und Sāsānideninschriften." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 23 (1990): 177–183.

Hyatt, J. Philip. "The Peril from the North in Jeremiah." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 59.4 (1940): 499–513.

Ichapora, Pallan R. "The Legendary History of Iran in the religio-Historical Account of the Zamyād Yašt (Yt. 19)." Pages 106–110 in *Irano-Judaica IV.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999.

Inostrantsev, K. A. "On the Ancient Iranian Burial Customs and Buildings." *Journal of the K. R. Cama Oriental Institute* 3 (1923): 1–28.

Insler, S. *The Gathas of Zarathustra.* Acta Iranica 8. Leiden: Brill, 1975.

Irwin, Brian P. "Molek Imagery and the Slaughter of Gog in Ezekiel 38 and 39." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 65 (1995): 93–112.

Isaac, Ephraim. "1 (Ethiopic Apocalypse of) Enoch." Pages 5–89 in *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha I: Apocalyptic Literature and Testaments.* Edited by James H. Charlesworth. New York: Doubleday, 1983.

Jackson, A. V. Williams. "Zoroastrianism and the Resemblences between It and Christianity." *Biblical World* 27.5 (1906): 335–343.

Jackson, David R. *Enochic Judaism: Three Defining Paradigm Exemplars.* London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Jaffee, Martin S. *Torah in the Mouth: Writing and Oral Tradition in Palestinian Judaism 200 BCE–400 CE.* Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2001.

Jakobson, Roman. "The Slavic God Velesb." Pages pp. 33–48 in *Selected Writings VII.* Edited by Stephen Rudy. Berlin: Mouton, 1985.

Jamasp Asa, Kaikhusroo M. *Aogəmadaēcā: A Zoroastrian Liturgy.* Veröffentlichungen der Iranischen Kommission 11. Vienna: Österreichischen Akademie Der Wissenschaften, 1982.

Jamzadeh, Parivash. "An Assyrian Motif in the Shāhnāma." *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): 167–172.

———. "A Shahnama Passage in an Achaemenid Context." *Iranica Antiqua* 39 (2004): 383–388.

Janowski, Bernd. "Die Toten loben JHWH nicht: Psalm 88 und das alttestamentliche Todesverständnis." Pages 3–46 in *Auferstehung – Resurrection.* Edited by Friedrich Avemarie and Hermann Lichtenberger. WUNT 135. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004.

Jason, Heda. "Study of Israelite and Jewish Oral and Folk Literature: Problems and Issues." *Asian Folklore Studies* 49.1 (1990): 69–108.

Jastrow, Morris, Jr. *Babylonian-Assyrian Birth-Omens and Their Cultural Significance.* Religionsgeschichtliche Versuche und Vorarbeiten 14.5. Giessen: Töpelmann, 1914.

Jeanrond, Werner G. "Hermeneutics." Pages 282–284 in *A Dictionary of Biblical Interpretation.* Edited by R. J. Coggins and J. L. Houlden. London: SCM, 1990.

Jeremias, Jörg. *Theophanie: Die Geschichte einer alttestamentlichen Gattung.* Wissenschaftliche Monographien zum Alten und Neuen Testament 10. 2nd ed. Neukirchen: Neukirchener Verlag, 1977.

Johnson, David M. "Hesiod's Description of Tartarus ("Theogony" 721–819)." *Phoenix* 53.1/2 (1999): 8–28.

Jones, Charles E., and Matthew W. Stolper. "Fortification Texts Sold at the Auction of the Erlenmeyer Collection." *Achemenet: Arta* 4.1 (2006): 1–22, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2006.2001.Jones–Stolper.pdf.

Jones, Elaine Marie. "An Examination of the Influence of Zoroastrianism on the Development of Belief in Resurrection of the Dead in Judaism." MA Diss. University of Wales, 1989.

Jong, Albert de. *Traditions of the Magi: Zoroastrianism in Greek and Latin Literature.* Religions in the Greco-Roman World 133. Leiden: Brill, 1997.

———. "The Contribution of the Magi." Pages 85–99 in *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I.* Edited by Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart. London: I. B. Tauris, 2005.

Josephus. *The Jewish War.* Trans. H. St. J. Thackeray. *Josephus III: The Jewish War Books IV–VII.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1928.

———. *Jewish Antiquities.* Trans. H. St. J. Thackeray. *Jewish Antiquities I–III.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1998.

Kaminka, A. "Septuaginta und Targum zu Proverbia." *Hebrew Union College Annual* 8–9 (1931–1932): 169–191.

Kanga, M. F. "Barsom." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 825–827.

Kaptan, Deniz. "A Glance at Northwestern Asia Minor During the Achaemenid Period." Pages 189–202 in *A Persian Perspective: Essays in Memory of Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg.* Edited by Wouter Henkelman and Amélie Kuhrt. Achaemenid History XIII. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 2003.

Keall, Edward J. "Archaeology and the Fire Temple." Pages 15–22 in *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the the Persian Empire.* Edited by Charles J. Adams. Montreal: McGill, 1972.

Keen, Anthony G. *Dynastic Lycia: a Political History of the Lycians and their Relations with Foreign Powers, c. 545–362 BC.* Leiden: Brill, 1998.

Keith, Chris. "'In My Own Hand': Grapho-Literacy and the Apostle Paul." *Biblica* 89.1 (2008): 39–58.

Kelber, Werner H. "Roman Imperialism and Early Christian Scribality." Pages 135–154 in *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity.* Edited by Jonathan A. Draper. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

———. "Orality and Biblical Studies: a Review Essay." *Review of Biblical Literature* 12 (2007): np., http://www.bookreviews.org/pdf/2107_6748.pdf.

Kelle, Brad E. "Ancient Israelite Prophets and Greek Political Orators: Analogies for the Prophets and Their Implications for Historical Reconstruction." Pages 57–84 in *Israel's Prophets and Israel's Past: Essays on the Relationship of Prophetic Texts and Israelite History in Honor of John H. Hayes.* Edited by Brad E. Kelle and Megan Bishop Moore. Library of Hebrew Bible 446. New York: T & T Clark, 2006.

Kellens, Jean. "Avesta." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 35–44.

———. *Essays on Zarathustra and Zoroastrianism.* Trans. Prods Oktor Skjærvø. Bibliotheca Iranica: Zoroastrian Studies Series. Costa Mesa, CA: Mazda Publishers, 2000.

Kelly, Thomas. "Persian Propaganda: a Neglected Factor in Xerxes' Invasion of Greece and Herodotus." *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): 173–219.

Kent, Roland Grubb. "The Name Ahuramazda." Pages 200–208 in *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry.* Edited by Jal Dastur Cursetji Pavry. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1933.

———. "The Name of Hystaspes." *Language* 21.2 (1945): 55–58.

———. "The Oldest of the Old Persian Inscriptions." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 66.3 (1946): 206–212.

———. *Old Persian: Grammar, Texts, Lexicon.* 2nd ed. New Haven, CT: American Oriental Society, 1961.

Khaleghi-Motlagh, Dj. "Aždahā II: In Persian Literature." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 199–203.

Khorenats'i, Moses. *History of the Armenians.* Trans. Robert W. Thomson. *History of the Armenians: Translation and Commentary.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1978

Kierkegaard, Søren. *Philosophical Fragments; Johannes Climacus.* Kierkegaard's Writings VII. Eds. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1985.

———. *Either/Or.* Vol. I. Trans. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong. Kierkegaard's Writings III. Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1987.

———. *Either/Or.* Vol. II. Trans. Howard V Hong and Edna H Hong. Kierkegaard's Writings IV. Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1990.

Killingsworth, M. Jimmie. "Product and Process, Literacy and Orality: An Essay on Composition and Culture." *College Composition and Communication* 44.1 (1993): 26–39.

Kingsley, Peter. "Meetings with Magi: Iranian Themes among the Greeks, from Xanthus of Lydia to Plato's Academy." *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 5.2 (1995): 173–209.

Klein, Ralph W. *1 Chronicles: A Commentary.* Hermeneia. Ed. Thomas Krüger. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2006.

Knibb, Michael A. *The Ethiopic Book of Enoch : A New Edition in the Light of the Aramaic Dead Sea Fragments.* 2 vols. Oxford: Clarendon, 1978.

———. "The Date of the Parables of Enoch: A Critical Review." *New Testament Studies* 25 (1979): 345–359.

———. "Apocalyptic and Wisdom in 4 Ezra." *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 13.1–2 (1982): 56–74.

———. "Interpreting the Book of Enoch: Reflections on a Recently Published Commentary." *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 33.4 (2002): 437–450.

———. "Temple and Cult in Apocryphal and Pseudepigraphal Writings from before the Common Era." Pages 401–416 in *Temple and Worship in Biblical Israel.* Edited by John Day. London: T & T Clark, 2005.

Knoppers, Gary N. *1 Chronicles 1–9: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* The Anchor Bible. New York: Doubleday, 2003.

Kobelski, Paul J. *Melchizedek and Mechireša'.* CBQMS 10. Washington, DC: Catholic Biblical Association of America, 1981.

Koch, Klaus. *The Rediscovery of Apocalyptic.* Trans. Margaret Kohl. SBT (Second Series) 22. London: SCM, 1972.

———. "Dereios, der Meder." Pages 287–299 in *The Word of the Lord Shall Go Forth: Essays in Honor of David Noel Freedman in Celebration of His Sixtieth Birthday.* Edited by Carol L. Meyers and M. O'Connor. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1983.

———. *Daniel 1. Teilband Dan 1–4.* Biblischer Kommentar Altes Testament 22.1. Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 2005.

Koehler, Ludwig, and Walter Baumgartner. *The Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament.* Trans. M. E. J. Richardson. Study ed. 2 vols. Leiden: Brill, 2001.

Koenen, Ludwig. "Greece, the Near East, and Egypt: Cyclic Destruction in Hesiod and the Catalogue of Women." *Transactions of the American Philogical Association* 124 (1994): 1–34.

Köhler-Rollefson, Ilse. "Camels and Camel Pastoralism in Arabia." *Biblical Archaeologist* 56.4 (1993): 180–188.

Kohn, Risa Levitt. "Ezekiel at the Turn of the Century." *Currents in Biblical Research* 2.1 (2003): 9–31.

Kohut, Alexander. *Über die Jüdische Angelologie und Dämonologie in ihrer Abhängigkeit vom Parsismus.* Abhandlungen der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft 4.3. Leipzig: Brockhaus, 1866.

Kotwal, Firoze M., and Almut Hintze. *The Khorda Avesta and Yašt Codex E1.* Iranica 16. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 2008.

Kraeling, Carl H. "Method in the Study of Religious Syncretism." *Journal of Bible and Religion* 9.1 (1941): 28–34, 66.

Kraeling, Emil G. "The Meaning of the Ezekiel Panel in the Synagogue at Dura." *Bulletin of the American Schools for Oriental Research* 78 (1940): 12–18.

———. *The Brooklyn Museum Aramaic Papyri: New Documents of the Fifth Century B.C. from the Jewish Colony at Elephantine.* New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 1953.

Kramer, Samuel Noah. *The Sumerians: Their History, Culture, and Character.* London: University of Chicago Press, 1970.

Krappe, Alexander H. "Albinos and Albinism in Iranian Tradition." *Folklore* 55.4 (1944): 170–174.

Krasnowolska, Anna. "Some Heroes of Iranian Calendar Mythology." Pages 371–382 in *Proceedings of the Second European Conference of Iranian Studies (Bamburg, 30 September–4 October, 1991).* Edited by Bert G. Fragner, et al. Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1995.

Kratz, Reinhard G. "Statthalter, Hohepriester und Schreiber im perserzeitlichen Juda." Pages 93–119 in *Das Judentum im Zeitalter des Zweiten Temples.* Edited by Reinhard G. Kratz. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004.

Kraus, F.R. "Ein sentrales Problem des altmesopotamisehen Rechtes: Was ist der Codex Hammu-Rabi?" *Genava* 8 (1960): 283–296.

Kreyenbroek, G. *Sraoša in the Zoroastrian Tradition.* Leiden: Brill, 1985.

Kuhn, Thomas S. *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions.* 3rd ed. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1996. First Published 1970.

Kuhrt, Amélie. "The Cyrus Cylinder and Achaemenid Imperial Policy." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 25 (1983): 83–97.

———. "The Achaemenid Concept of Kingship." *Iran* 22 (1984): 156–160.

———. "Nabonidus and the Babylonian Priesthood." Pages 117–156 in *Pagan Priests: Religion and Power in the Ancient World.* Edited by Mary Beard and John North. London: Duckworth, 1990.

———. "The Achaemenid Persian Empire (c. 500–c. 330 BCE): Continuities, Adaptations, Transformations." Pages 93–124 in *Empires: Perspectives from Archaeology and History.* Edited by Suasan E. Alcock, et al. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2001.

———. "Making History: Sargon of Agade and Cyrus the Great of Persia." Pages 347–361 in *A Persian Perspective: Essays in Memory of Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg.* Edited by Wouter Henkelman and Amélie Kuhrt. Achaemenid History XIII. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 2003.

———. *The Persian Empire: a Corpus of Sources from the Achaemenid Period.* London: Routledge, 2009. First Published 2007.

Kuhrt, Amélie, and Susan Sherwin-White. "Xerxes' Destruction of Babylonian Temples." Pages 69–78 in *Achaemenid History II: Greek Sources.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Proceedings of the Groningen 1984 Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1987.

Kuiper, F. B. J. "Remarks on the Avestan Hymn to Mithra." *Indo-Iranian Journal* 5 (1961): 36–60.

———. "Ahura Mazda 'Lord Wisdom'?" *Indo-Iranian Journal* 18 (1976): 25–42.

Kvanvig, Helge S. *Roots of Apocalyptic: The Mesopotamian Background of the Enoch Figure and the Son of Man.* Wissenschaftliche Monographien Zum Alten und Neuen Testament 61. Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1988.

———. "Origin and Identity of the Enoch Group." Pages 207–212 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001.* Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

———. "Throne Visions and Monsters: The Encounter Between Danielic and Enochic Traditions." *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 117.2 (2005): 248–272.

LaCocque, André. *The Book of Daniel.* Trans. David Pellauer. London: SPCK, 1979.

LaCocque, André, and Paul Ricoeur. *Thinking Biblically: Exegetical and Hermeneutical Studies.* Trans. David Pellauer. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1998.

Lactantius, Caeculius. *Divine Institutes.* Trans. Anthony Bowen and Peter Garnsey. *The Divine Institutes of Lactantius.* Liverpool: Liverpool Univ Press, 2003.

Laertius, Diogenes. *Vitae Philosophorum.* Trans. R. D. Hicks. *Diogenes Laertius I.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1980.

Lambert, W. G. *The Background of Jewish Apocalyptic.* Ethel M. Wood Lectures. London: Athlone, 1978.

Landes, Richard. "Roosters Crow, Owls Hoot: On the Dynamics of Apocalyptic Millennialism." Pages 19–46 in *War in Heaven/Heaven on Earth: Theories of the Apocalyptic.* Edited by Stephen D. O'Leary and Glen S. McGhee. London: Equinox, 2005.

Lang, Bernhard. *Monotheism and the Prophetic Minority: An Essay in Biblical History and Sociology.* Sheffield: Almond, 1983.

———. "Street Theatre, Raising the Dead and the Zoroastrian Connection in Ezekiel's Prophecy." Pages 297–316 in *Ezekiel and His Book: Textual and Literary Criticism and their Interrelation.* Edited by J. Lust. Bibliotheca Ephemeridum Theologicarium Lovaniensium LXXIV. Leuven: Leuven Univerity Press, 1986.

Lange, Armin. "Literary Prophecy and Oracle Collection: a Comparison between Judah and Greece in Persian Times." Pages 248–275 in *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism.* Edited by Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Lange, Armin, Hermann Lichtenberger, and K. F. Diethard Römheld, eds. *Die Dämonen/Demons: Die Dämonologie der israelitisch-jüdischen und frühchristlichen Literatur im Kontext ihrer Umwelt.* Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2003.

Lapp, Paul W., and Nancy L. Lapp, eds. *Discoveries in the Wâdī Ed-Dâliyeh.* Annual of the American Schools of Oriental Research XLI. Cambridge, MA: ASOR, 1974.

Larson, Gerald J., C. Scott Littleton, and Jaan Puhvel, eds. *Myth in Indo-European Antiquity.* Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1974.

Lemaire, Andre. "The Sage in School and Temple." Pages 165–184 in *The Sage in Israel and the Ancient Near East.* Edited by John G. Gammie and Leo G. Perdue. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990.

Leopold, Anita M., and Jeppe S. Jensen, eds. *Syncretism in Religion: a Reader.* Critical Categories in the Study of Religion. London: Equinox, 2004.

Lessa, William A. "'Discover-of-the-Sun': Mythology as a Reflection of Culture." *Journal of American Folklore* 79.311 (1966): 3–51.

Lesser, Alexander. "Social Fields and the Evolution of Society." *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology* 17.1 (1961): 40–48.

Lester, Robert C. "Hinduism: Veda and Sacred Texts." Pages 126–147 in *The Holy Book in Comparitive Perspective.* Edited by Frederick M. Denny and Rodney L. Taylor. Columbia, SC: Univ of SC Press, 1985.

Levine, Baruch A. *Numbers 1–20.* The Anchor Bible. New York: Doubleday, 1993.

Levine, Lee I. Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence? Samuel and Althea Stroum Lectures in Jewish Studies. Seattle: Univ of Washington P, 1998.

———. The Ancient Synagogue: The First Thousand Years. New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 2000.

Levine, Louis D. "Prelude to Monarchy: Iran and the Neo-Assyrian Empire." Pages 39–46 in *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the Persian Empire.* Edited by Charles J. Adams. Montreal: McGill, 1972.

Levine, Lee I. *Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence?* Samuel and Althea Stroum Lectures in Jewish Studies. Seattle: Univ of Washington P, 1998.

———. *The Ancient Synagogue: The First Thousand Years.* New Haven: Yale Univ Press, 2000.

Levine, Samuel J. "Looking Beyond the Mercy/Justice Dichotomy: Reflections on the Complementary Roles of Mercy and Justice in Jewish Law and Tradition." *Journal of Catholic Legal Studies* 45 (2006): 455–472.

Lewis, David M. "The Persepolis Tablets: Speech, Seal and Script." Pages 17–32 in Literacy and Power in the Ancient World. Edited by A.K. Bowman and Greg Woolf. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1994.

Lewis, Jack P. *A Study of the Interpretation of Noah and the Flood in Jewish and Christian Literature.* Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1978.

———. "Noah and the Flood: In Jewish, Christian and Muslim Tradition." *Biblical Archaeologist* 47.4 (1984): 224–239.

Lichtheim, Miriam. "Statue Inscription of Udjahorresne." Pages 36–41 in *The Late Period.* Edited by Miriam Lichtheim. Ancient Egyptian Literature 3. Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1980.

Liddell, Henry George, and Robert Scott. *A Greek-English Lexicon.* Eds. Sir Henry Stuart Jones and Roderick McKenzie. 9th ed. Oxford: Clarendon, 1996.

Lidzbarski, Mark. *Ephemeris für Semitische Epigraphik.* Vol. 1. Giessen: Töpelmann, 1902.

———. *Ephemeris für Semitische Epigraphik.* Vol. 3. Giessen: Töpelmann, 1915.

Light, Timothy. "Orthosyncretism: an Account of Melding in Religion." *Method and Theory in the Study of Religion* 12.1 (2000): 162–185.

Lincoln, Bruce. "The Indo-European Myth of Creation." *History of Religions* 15.2 (1975): 121–145.

———. "Review: Mitra, Mithra, Mithras: Problems of a Multiform Diety." *History of Religions* 17.2 (1977): 200–208.

———. "The Lord of the Dead." *History of Religions* 20.3 (1981): 224–241.

———. *Priests, Warriors, and Cattle: a Study in the Ecology of Religions.* Berkeley: Univ of California P, 1981.

———. "'The Earth Becomes Flat'—A Study of Apocalyptic Imagery." *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 25.1 (1983): 136–153.

———. "The Center of the World and the Origins of Life." *History of Religions* 40.4 (2001): 311–326.

———. *Religion, Empire and Torture: the Case of Achaemenian Persia with a Postscript on Abu Ghraib.* Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 2007.

Lindblom, J. *Prophecy in Ancient Israel.* Oxford: Blackwell, 1962.

Linville, James R. "The Day of Yahweh and the Mourning of the Priests in Joel." Pages 98–114 in *The Priests in the Prophets: The Portrayal of Priests, Prophets and Other Religious Specialists in the Latter Prophets.* Edited by Lester L Grabbe and Alice Ogden Bellis. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Lipinski, E. "Obadiah 20." *Vetus Testamentum* 23 (1973): 368–370.

———. "Western Semites in Persepolis." *Acta Antiqua Academiae Scientiarum Hungaricae* 25 (1977): 101–112.

Lipschits, Oded. "Achaemenid Imperial Policy, Settlement Processes in Palestine, and the Status of Jerusalem in the Middle of the Fifth Century B.C.E." Pages 19–52 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period.* Edited by Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006.

Lipschits, Oded, Gary N. Knoppers, and Rainer Albertz, eds. *Judah and the Judeans in the Fourth Century B.C.E.* Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2007.

Lipschits, Oded, and Manfred Oeming, eds. *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period.* Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006.

Lloyd, Alan B. "Darius I in Egypt: Suez and Hibis." Pages 99–116 in *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire.* Edited by Christopher Tuplin. Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007.

Lommel, Herman. *Die Religion Zarathustras nach dem Awesta dargestellt.* Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1930.

Lord, Albert B. *The Singer of Tales.* Second ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000. First Published 1960.

Loubser, J. A. "Bobby". "Moving Beyond Colonialist Discourse: Understanding Oral Theory and Cultural Difference in the Context of Media Analysis." Pages 65–82 in *Orality, Literacy, and Colonialism in Antiquity.* Edited by Jonathan A. Draper. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2004.

Lucas, Ernest C. "The Origin of Daniel's Four Empire Scheme Re-examined." *Tyndale Bulletin* 40.2 (1989): 185–202.

———. "Daniel: Resolving the Enigma." *Vetus Testamentum* 50.1 (2000): 66–80.

Luria, Aleksandr R. *Cognitive Development: Its Cultural and Social Foundations.* Trans. Martin Lopez-Morillas and Lynn Solotaroff. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1976.

Lyman, R. Lee, and Michael J. O'Brien. "Cultural Traits: Units of Analysis in Early Twentieth-Century Anthropology." *Journal of Anthropological Research* 59.2 (2003): 225–250.

MacDonald, M. C. A. "Literacy in an Oral Environment." Pages 49–118 in *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society: Papers in Honour of Alan R. Millard.* Edited by Piotr Bienkowski, Christopher Mee and Elizabeth Slater. London: T & T Clark, 2005.

MacKenzie, D. N. "Zoroastrian Astrology in the Bundahišn." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 27 (1964): 513–529.

———. "Notes on the Transcription of Pahlavi." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 30.1 (1967): 17–29.

———. *A Concise Pahlavi Dictionary.* London: Oxford Univ Press, 1971.

———. "Bundahišn." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 4 (1990): 547–551.

Magee, Peter, et al. "The Achaemenid Empire in South Asia and Recent Excavations in Akra in Northwest Pakistan." *American Journal of Archaeology* 109.4 (2005): 711–741.

Malandra, William W. *The Fravaši Yašt: Introduction, Text, Translation and Commentary.* London: University Microfilms Intl, 1977. PhD Diss., Univ of Pennsylvania, 1971.

———. *An Introduction to Ancient Iranian Religion.* Minnesota Publications in the Humanities 2. Minneapolis, MN: Univ of Minnesota Press, 1983.

———. "Frawardīgān." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 10 (2001): 199.

Mallory, James P. "A Short History of the Indo-European Problem." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 1 (1973): 21–65.

———. "Cosmology." Pages 130–131 in *Encyclopedia of Indo-European Culture.* Edited by James Mallory and D. Q. Adams. London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1997.

Mallowan, Max. "Cyrus the Great (558–529 BC)." Pages 392–419 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Manning, Gary T., Jr. *Echoes of a Prophet: The Use of Ezekiel in the Gospel of John and in the Literature of the Second Temple Period.* JSNTSS 270. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Manson, T. W. "Sadducee and Pharisee: The Origin and Significance of Names." *Bulletin of the John Rylands Library* 22 (1938): 144–159.

Marinatos, Nanno. "The Cosmic Journey of Odysseus." *Numen* 48.4 (2001): 381–416.

Martínez, F. García. *Qumran and Apocalyptic: studies on the Aramaic texts from Qumran.* Studies on the texts of the desert of Judah 9. Leiden: Brill, 1992.

———. "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls." Pages 162–192 in *The Encyclopedia of Apocalypticism, Vol I: The Origins of Apocalypticism in Judaism and Christianity.* Edited by John J. Collins. New York: Continuum, 2000.

———. "Apocalypticism in the Dead Sea Scrolls." Pages 195–226 in *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism.* Edited by E. J. C. Tigchelaar. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

———. "Is Jewish Apocalyptic the Mother of Christian Theology?" Pages 129–152 in *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism.* Edited by E. J. C. Tigchelaar. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 63. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

———. *Qumranica Minora I: Qumran Origins and Apocalypticism.* Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 63. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

Martínez, F. García, and E. J. C. Tigchelaar, eds. *The Dead Sea Scrolls Study Edition.* 2 vols. Leiden: Brill, 1998.

Martyr, Justin. *The First Apology.* Pages 159–187 in *The Apostolic Fathers with Justin Martyr and Irenæus.* Ed. A. Cleveland Coxe. Vol. I of the Ante-Nicene Fathers. Reprint, American ed. Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1996.

Marvels of Zoroastrianism. Trans. E. W. West. *Pahlavi Texts V.* Sacred Books of the East 47. Ed. F. Max Müller. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1987. First Published 1987 by Oxford Univ Press.

Mason, Steve. "Jews, Judaeans, Judaizing, Judaism: Problems of Categorization in Ancient History." *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 38.4–5 (2007): 457–512.

Matassa, Lidia D., and Jason M. Silverman, eds. *Text, Theology, and Trowel: Recent Research into the Hebrew Bible.* Scranton, PA: Scranton Univ Press, 2010.

Mathieson, Ian, Elizabeth Bettles, and H. S. Smith. "A Stela of the Persian Period from Saqqara." *Journal of Egyptian Archaeology* 81 (1995): 23–41.

Mayer, Rudolf. "Monotheismus in Israel und in der Religion Zarathustras." *Biblische Zeitschrift* 1 (1957): 23–58.

Mayes, A. D. H. "Deuteronomistic Ideology and the Theology of the Old Testament." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 82.1 (1999): 57–82.

———. "Historiography in the Old Testament." Pages 65–87 in *The Biblical World.* Edited by John Barton. Vol. 1. London: Routledge, 2002.

Maynard, John Albert. "Studies in Religious Texts from Assur." *American Journal of Semitic Languages and Literatures* 34.1 (1917): 21–59.

———. "Judaism and Mazdayasna: A Study in Dissimilarities." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 44.1–2 (1925): 163–170.

McAleese, Killian. "Actualizing Israel Every Month: The History and Development of *Ḥodeš* Ritual in Israelite and Jewish Tradition." PhD Diss. Trinity College Dublin, 2008.

McDonald, J. I. H. "The Hermenutical Circle." Pages 281–282 in *A Dictionary of Biblical Interpretation.* Edited by R. J. Coggins and J. L. Houlden. London: SCM, 1990.

McIver, Robert K., and Marie Carroll. "Experiments to Develop Criteria for Determining the Existence of Written Sources and Their Potential Implications for the Synoptic Problem." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 121.4 (2002): 667–687.

McKeating, Henry. *Ezekiel.* Old Testament Guides. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995.

McLuhan, Marshall. *Understanding Media.* Routledge Classics. London: Routledge, 2001.

———. *The Gutenberg Galaxy.* Toronto: Univ of Toronto Press, 2002. First Published 1962.

Mearns, Christopher L. "Dating the Similitudes of Enoch." *New Testament Studies* 25 (1979): 360–369.

Meeks, Wayne A. "Apocalyptic Discourse and Strategies of Goodness." *Journal of Religion* 80.3 (2000): 461–475.

Meiggs, Russell, and David Lewis. *A Selection of Greek Historical Inscriptions to the End of the Fifth Century B.C.* Revised ed. Oxford: Clarendon, 1989.

Milik, Józef T. *The Books of Enoch: Aramaic Fragments of Qumran Cave 4*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1976.

Millard, Alan R. "The Practice of Writing in Ancient Israel." *Biblical Archaeologist* 35.4 (1972): 97–111.

———. "Cartography in the Ancient Near East." Pages 107–116 in *The History of Cartography*. Edited by J. B. Harley and David Woodward. Vol. I: Cartography in the Prehistoric, Ancient, and Medieval Europe and the Mediterranean. London: Univ of Chicago Press, 1987.

———. "The Knowledge of writing in Late Bronze Age Palestine." Pages 317–326 in *Languages and Cultures in Contact: At the Crossroads of Civilizations in the Syro-Mesopotamian Realm*. Proceedings of the 42nd RAI. Edited by K. van Lerberghe and G. Voet. Orientalia Lovaniensia Analecta 96. Leuven: Peeters, 1999.

———. "Oral Proclamation and Written Record: spreading and preserving information in Ancient Israel." Pages 237–241 in *Michael: Historical, Epigraphical and Biblical Studies in Honor of Prof. Michael Heltzer*. Edited by Yitzhak Avishur and Robert Deutsch. Tel Aviv: Archaelogical Center Publications, 1999.

———. *Reading and Writing in the Time of Jesus*. The Biblical Seminar 69. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000.

Miller, J. Maxwell, and John H. Hayes. *A History of Ancient Israel and Judah*. 2nd ed. London: SCM, 1999.

Miller, Patrick D. *The Divine Warrior in Early Israel*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1973.

Mills, Lawrence H. "Mr. Moulton's Zoroaster and Israel." *The Thinker* 1.6 (1892): 508–514.

———. *Zarathuštra, Philo, the Achaemenids, and Israel*. Leipzig: Brockhaus, 1905–6.

———. *Avesta Eschatology Compared with the Books of Daniel and Revelation*. Chicago: Open Court, 1908.

———. *Our Own Religion in Ancient Persia*. Chicago, 1913.

Minorsky, Vladimir. *Iranica: Twenty Articles*. Publications of the University of Tehran 775. Hertford: Stephen Austin, 1964.

Mitchell, Terence C. "The Persepolis Sculptures in the British Museum." *Iran* 38 (2000): 49–56.

Moazami, Mahnaz. "Millennialism, Eschatology, and Messianic figures in Iranian Tradition." *Journal of Millennial Studies* 2.2 (2000): 1–16, http://www.bu.edu/mille/publications/winter2000/moazami.pdf.

Molenberg, Corrie. "A Study of the Roles of Shemihaza and Asael in 1 Enoch 6–11." *Journal of Jewish Studies* 35.2 (1984): 136–146.

Monette, Connell. "Heroes and Hells in *Beowulf*, the *Shahnameh*, and the *Táin Bó Cúailnge*." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 36.1–2 (2008): 99–147.

Montgomery, James A. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Daniel*. International Critical Commentaries. Edinburgh: T & T Clark, 1927.

Moorey, P. R. S. "Aspects of Worship and Ritual on Achaemenid Seals." Pages 218–226 in *Akten des VII International Kongress für Iran: Kunst und Archäologie* (Munich, 1976). Berlin: Dietrich Reimer, 1979.

———. "The Persian Empire." in *Cambridge Ancient History*. Edited by John Boardman. Plates to Volume IV. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988.

Morrison, George. "Persian Literature (Belles-Lettres) from the Earliest Times to the Time of Jāmī." Pages 1–82 in *History of Persian Literature from the Beginning of the Islamic Period to the Present Day*. Edited by George Morrison. Handbuch der Orientalistik I.IV.2.2. Leiden: Brill, 1981.

Moulton, James H. "Zoroaster and Israel I." *The Thinker* 1.5 (1892): 401–408.

———. "Zoroaster and Israel—A Reply." *The Thinker* 2.1 (1893): 16–18.

———. "Zoroaster and Israel II." *The Thinker* 2.4 (1893): 308–315.

———. "Zoroaster and Israel III." *The Thinker* 2.6 (1893): 490–501.

———. "Zoroastrian Influences on Judaism." *Expository Times* 9 (1898): 352–358.

———. *Early Zoroastrianism: The Origins, The Prophet, The Magi*. Amsterdam: Philo, 1972. First Published 1913.

Mowinckel, Sigmund. *He That Cometh*. Trans. G. W. Anderson. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2005. First Published 1951 in Copenhagen.

Muilenburg, James. "The Biblical View of Time." *Harvard Theological Review* 54.4 (1961): 225–252.

Müller, Hans-Peter. "Magisch-Mantische Weisheit und die Gestalt Daniels." *Ugarit-Forschungen* 1 (1969): 79–94.

———. *Ursprünge und Strucktуren alttestamentlicher Eschatologie*. Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft 109 Berlin: Töpelmann, 1969.

———. "Mantische Weisheit und Apokalyptik." Pages 268–293 in *Congress Volume: Uppsala 1971*. Edited by P. A. H. De Boer. Supplements to Vetus Testamentum 22. Leiden: Brill, 1972.

Murphy, Frederick J. "Apocalypses and Apocalypticism: The State of the Question." *Currents in Research: Biblical Studies* 2 (1994): 147–179.

Mustafavi, M. T. "The Achaemenid Royal Road: Post-Stations between Susa and Persepolis." Pages 3008–3010 in *A Survey of Persian Art*. Edited by Arthur Upham Pope and Phyllis Ackerman. Vol. 14. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1967.

Na'aman, Nadav. "Royal Vassals of Governors? On the Status of Sheshbazzar and Zerubbabel in the Persian Empire." *Henoch* 22.1 (2000): 35–44.

Najan, S., and Ph. Guillaume. "The Jubilee Calendar Rescued from the Flood Narrative." *Journal of Hebrew Scriptures* 5.1 (2004): n.p., http://www.arts.ualberta.ca/JHS/Articles/article_31.pdf.

Nakhai, Beth Alpert. "Review of The Battles of Armageddon: Megiddo and the Jezreel Valley from the Bronze Age to the Nuclear Age by Eric H. Cline." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 327 (2002): 89–90.

Narten, Johanna. *Die Amәša Spәntas im Avesta*. Wiesbaden, 1982.

———. *Der Yasna Haptaŋhaiti*. Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1986.

———. "Bahman I: In the Avesta." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 487–488.

Nashli, Hasan Fazeli. "The Achemenid/Post-Achaemenid Remains in Tang-i Bulaghi near Pasargadae: a Report on the Salvage Excavations conducted by five teams in 2004–2007." *Achemenet: Arta* 7.1 (2009): 1–6, http://www.achemenet.com/document/2009.2001–Fazeli.pdf.

Neugebauer, Otto. *The 'Astronomical' Chapters of the Ethiopic Book of Enoch (72 to 82): Translation and Commentary*. KDKSMM 40. Copenhagen: Munksgaard, 1981.

Neusner, Jacob. "Jews and Judaism under Iranian Rule: Bibliographical Reflections." *History of Religions* 8.2 (1968): 159–177.

———. "The Rabbi and the Magus." Pages 78–86 in *Talmudic Judaism in Sasanian Babylonia: Essays and Studies*. Edited by Jacob Neusner. Leiden: Brill, 1976.

———. *The Theology of the Oral Torah: Revealing the Justice of God*. Montreal: McGill-Queen's Univ Press, 1999.

Neusner, Jacob, Alan J. Avery-Peck, and William Scott Green. *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*. 2nd. ed. 4 vols. Leiden: Brill, 2005.

Newman, Hillel. *Proximity to Power and Jewish Sectarian Groups of the Ancient Period*. Brill Reference Library of Judaism 25. Leiden: Brill, 2006.

Newport, Kenneth G. C., and Crawford Gribben, eds. *Expecting the End: Millennialism in Social and Historical Context*. Waco, TX: Baylor Univ Press, 2006.

Newsom, Carol A. "The Development of 1 Enoch 6–19: Cosmology and Judgment." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 42.3 (1980): 310–329.

Nickelsburg, George W. E. "Apocalyptic and Myth in 1 Enoch 6–11." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 96.3 (1977): 383–405.

———. "Early Jewish Eschatology." Pages 579–594 in *Anchor Bible Dictionary*. Edited by David Noel Freedman. Vol. II. New York: Doubleday, 1992.

———. "Patriarchs Who Worry about their Wives. A Haggadic Tendency in the Genesis Apocryphon." Pages 137–158 in *Biblical Perspectives: Early Use and Interpretation of the Bible in Light of the Dead Sea Scrolls*. Edited by Michael E. Stone and Esther G. Chazon. Vol. Studies on the Texts of the Desert of Judah 28. Leiden: Brill, 1998.

———. *1 Enoch 1*. Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2001.

———. "Where is the place of Eschatological Blessing?" Pages 53–72 in *Things Revealed: Studies in Early Jewish and Christian Literature in Honor of Michael E. Stone*. Edited by Esther G. Chazon, David Satran and Ruth A. Clements. SJSJ 89. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

———. "Apocalyptic Judaism." Pages 68–84 in *The Encyclopaedia of Judaism*. Edited by Jacob Neusner, Alan J. Avery-Peck and William Scott Green. Vol. I: A-E. Leiden: Brill, 2005.

———. "Wisdom and Apocalypticism in Early Judaism: Some Points for Discussion." Pages 17–38 in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*. Edited by Benjamin G. III Wright and Lawrence M. Wills. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005.

———. *Resurrection, Immortality, and Eternal Life in Intertestamental Judaism*. HTS 26. Expanded ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006. First Published 1972.

Nickelsburg, George W. E., and James C. Vanderkam. *1 Enoch: A New Translation Based on the Hermeneia Commentary*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 2004.

Niditch, Susan. *Underdogs and Tricksters: a Prelude to Biblical Folklore*. San Fransisco: Harper & Row, 1987.

———. *Oral World and Written Word: Ancient Israelite Literature*. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1996.

Nielsen, Eduard. *Oral Tradition: A Modern Problem in Old Testament Introduction*. Studies in Biblical Theology 11. London: SCM, 1954. First Published 1950 and 1952 by Dansk Teologisk Tidsskrift.

Nielsen, Katherine. "'*Hver tíðendi eru at segja frá um ragnarøkr?*': The Debate over Christian Influences in Norse Indo-European Tradition." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 30.1–2 (2002): 61–77.

Niskanen, Paul. *The Human and the Divine in History: Herodotus and the Book of Daniel.* JSOTSS 396. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Nissinen, Martti, ed. *Prophecy in its Ancient Near Eastern Context.* Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2000.

———. *Prophets and Prophecy in the Ancient Near East.* Writings from the Ancient World. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2003.

———. "The Dubious Image of Prophecy." Pages 26–41 in *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism.* Edited by Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Noll, K. L. "Deuteronomistic History or Deuteronomic Debate? (A Thought Experiment)." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 31.3 (2007): 311–345.

Noth, Martin. *A History of Pentateuchal Traditions.* Trans. Berhard W. Anderson. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentic Hall, 1972. First Published 1948 in Stuttgart.

Nyberg, Henrik S. *A Manual of Pahlavi: Texts, Alphabets, Index, Paradigms, Notes and an Introduction.* Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz, 1964.

Nykolaishen, Douglas J. E. "The Sway of the Persian Sceptre: The Narrative Characterisation of the Persian Kings in Ezra-Nehemiah." PhD Diss. Univ of Edinburgh, 2007, http://hdl.handle.net/1842/1732.

Nylander, Carl. "Achaemenid Imperial Art." Pages 345–360 in *Power and Propaganda: A Symposium on Ancient Empires.* Edited by Mogens Trolle Larsen. Mesopotamia: Copenhagen Studies in Assyriology 7. Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag, 1979.

O'Brien, Steven. "Indo-European Eschatology: A Model." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 4 (1976): 295–320.

———. "Eschatology." Pages 180–183 in *Encyclopedia of Indo-European Culture.* Edited by James Mallory and Charles J. Adams. London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1997.

O'Connor, Neil. "'Take One, It's FREE!' The Story Behind the Worldwide Church of God and The Plain Truth Magazine." Pages 163–201 in *The Coming Deliverer: Millennial Themes in World Religions.* Edited by Fiona Bowie and Christopher Deacy. Cardiff: Univ of Wales Press, 1997.

O'Kane, Martin. "Isaiah: a Prophet in the Footsteps of Moses." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 21.69 (1996): 29–50.

Oded, B. "The Settlements of the Israelite and Judean exiles in Meopotamia in the 8th–6th Centuries BCE." Pages 91–103 in *Studies in Historical Geography and Biblical Historiography: Presented to Zecharia Kallai.* Edited by Gershon Galil and Moshe Weinfeld. VTSupp 81. Leiden: Brill, 2000.

Odell, Margaret S. "'You Are What You Eat': Ezekiel and the Scroll." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 117.2 (1998): 229–248.

Oeming, Manfred. *Contemporary Biblical Hermeneutics: An Introduction.* Trans. Joachim F. Vette. Aldershot: Ashgate, 2006.

O'Kane, Martin. "Isaiah: a Prophet in the Footsteps of Moses." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 21.69 (1996): 29–50.

O'Leary, Stephen D., and Glen S. McGhee, eds. *War in Heaven/Heaven on Earth: Theories of the Apocalyptic.* Millennialism and Society 2. London: Equinox, 2005.

Olmstead, A. T. "Babylonian Astronomy: Historical Sketch." *American Journal of Semitic Languages and Literatures* 55.2 (1938): 113–129.

———. *History of the Persian Empire: Achaemenid Period.* Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1948.

Olyan, Saul M. "Purity Ideology in Ezra-Nehemiah as a Tool to Reconsitute the Community." *Journal for the Study of Judaism* 35.1 (2004): 1–16.

Omidsalar, Mahmoud. "Rostam's Seven Trials and the Logic of Epic Narrative in the Shahnama." *Asian Folklore Studies* 60.2 (2001): 259–293.

Ong, Walter J. *The Presence of the Word: Some Prolegomena for Cultural and Religious History.* London: Yale University Press, 1967.

———. *Interfaces of the Word.* London: Cornell University Press, 1977.

———. "Maranatha: Death and Life in the Text of the Book." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 45.4 (1977): 419–449.

———. "Orality, Literacy and Medieval Textualization." *New Literary History* 16.1 (1984): 1–12.

———. "A Comment on 'Arguing about Literacy'." *College English* 50.6 (1988): 700–701.

———. *Orality and Literacy.* London: Routledge, 2004. First Published 1982.

Oppenheim, A. Leo. "The Eyes of the Lord." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 88.1 (1968): 173–180.

———. "The Babylonian Evidence of Achaemenian Rule in Mesopotamia." Pages 529–587 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Orlov, Andrei A. *The Enoch-Metatron Tradition.* Texts and Studies in Ancient Judaism 107. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2005.

Overholt, Thomas W. *Channels of Prophecy: The Social Dynamics of Prophetic Activity.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989.

Ovid, Publius. *Metamorphoses.* Trans. Frank J. Miller. *Ovid III: Metamorphoses I.* LCL. Third, rev. ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1977.

Owen, Paul. "The Relationship of Eschatology to Esoteric Wisdom in the Jewish Pseudepigraphal Apocalypses." Pages 123–133 in *Of Scribes and Sages: Early Jewish Interpretation and Transmission of Scripture.* Edited by Craig A. Evans. Vol. 1. Studies in Scripture in Early Judaism and Christianity. London: T & T Clark, 2004.

Oxtoby, William Gurdon. "Interpretations of Iranian Dualism." Pages 59–70 in *Iranian Civilization and Culture: Essays in Honour of the 2,500th Anniversary of the Founding of the the Persian Empire.* Edited by Charles J. Adams. Montreal: McGill, 1972.

Panaino, Antonio. "Calendars I: Pre-Islamic Calendars." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 658–668.

———. *Tištrya I: The Avestan Hymn to Sirius.* Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990.

Pardee, Dennis. *Ritual and Cult at Ugarit.* Writings from the Ancient World 10. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2002.

Parke, H. W. *Sibyls and Sibylline Prophecy in Classical Antiquity.* Croom Helm Classical Studies. Edited by Brian C. McGing. London: Routledge, 1988.

Parpola, Simo. "The Originality of the Teachings of Zarathustra in the Light of Yasna 44." Pages 373–383 in *Sefer Moshe: The Moshe Weinfeld Jubilee Volume.* Edited by Chaim Cohen, Avi Hurvitz and Shalom M. Paul. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2004.

Parry, Milman. *The Making of Homeric Verse: The Collected Papers of Milman Parry.* Edited by Adam Parry. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1971.

Pausanias. *Description of Greece.* Trans. W. H. S. Jones and H. A. Ormerod. *Description of Greece, Books III–V.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1977.

Pavry, Jal Dastur Cursetji, ed. *Oriental Studies in Honour of Cursetji Erachji Pavry.* London: Oxford Univ Press, 1933.

Peabody, Berkley. *The Winged Word: A Study in the Technique of Ancient Greek Oral Composition as Seen Principally through Hesiod's Works and Days.* Albany, NY: SUNY Press, 1975.

Pearce, Laurie E. "New Evidence for Judeans in Babylonia." Pages 399–412 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period.* Edited by Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming. Winona Lake, IN: Eerdmans, 2006.

Pedersen, Olof. *Archives and Libraries in the Ancient Near East 1500–300 BC.* Bethesda, MD: CDL, 1998.

Peiser, Felix E. "Miscellen." *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 17 (1897): 350.

Peters, John P. "The Cock." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 33 (1913): 363–396.

Petersen, David L. *The Roles of Israel's Prophets.* JSOTSS 17. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1981.

———. "Defining Prophecy and Prophetic Literature." Pages 33–44 in *Prophecy in its Ancient Near Eastern Context.* Edited by Martti Nissinen. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2000.

Phillips, E. D. "The Scythian Domination in Western Asia: Its Record in History, Scripture and Archaeology." *World Archaeology* 4.2 (1972): 129–138.

Photius. *The Bibliotheca.* Trans. N. G. Wilson. *Photius: The Bibliotheca.* London: Duckworth, 1994

Pines, Shlomo. "Wrath and Creature of Wrath in Pahlavi, Jewish and New Testament Sources." Pages 76–82 in *Irano-Judaica.* Edited by Shaul Shaked. Vol. I. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982.

Pinker, Aron. "A Goat to Go to Azazel." *Journal of Hebrew Scriptures* 7 (2007): 1–23, http://www.arts.ualberta.ca/JHS/Articles/article_69.pdf.

Pirart, Eric. "Le sacrifice humain: Réflections sur la Philosophie Religieuse Indo-Iranienne Ancienne." *Journal Asiatique* 284.1 (1996): 1–36.

Plato. *Alcibiades I.* Trans. W. R. M. Lamb. *Carmides, Alcibiades I & II, Hipparchus, The Lovers, Theages, Minos, Epinomis.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1964.

———. *Laws.* Trans. R. G. Bury. *The Laws, Books I–VI.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1967.

———. *Seventh Letter.* Trans. R. G. Bury. Pages 463–565 in *Plato IX: Timaeus, Critias, Cleitophon, Menexenus, Epistles.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1975.

———. *Phaedrus.* Trans. Harold North Fowler. *Plato I: Euthyphro, Apology, Crito, Phaedo, Phaedrus.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1982

Plöger, Otto. *Theocracy and Eschatology.* Trans. S. Rudman. Oxford: Blackwell Press, 1968.

Plutarch. *Isis and Osiris.* Trans. F. C. Babbitt. *Moralia V.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1935

———. *Lysander.* Trans. Bernadotte Perrin. *Plutarch's Lives IV.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1986

———. *Artaxerxes.* Trans. Bernadotte Perrin. Pages 127–204 in *Plutarch Lives XI (Aratus, Artaxerxes, Galba, Otho).* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2002.

Polaski, Donald C. "Mene, Mene, Tekel, Parsin: Writing and Resistance in Daniel 5 and 6." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 123.4 (2004): 649–669.

Poole, Fitz John Porter. "Metaphors and Maps: Towards Comparison in the Anthropology of Religion." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 54.3 (1986): 411–457.

Pope, Arthur Upham, and Phyllis Ackerman, eds. *A Survey of Persian Art.* 16 vols. London: Oxford Univ Press, 1938–1960?.

Porada, Edith. *Ancient Iran: the Art of Pre-Islamic Times.* Art of the World XVI. London: Methuen, 1965.

Porten, Bezalel. *Archives from Elephantine: The Life of an Ancient Jewish Military Colony.* Berkeley: Univ of California Press, 1968.

———. "The Jews in Egypt." Pages 372–400 in *The Cambridge History of Judaism I: The Persian Period.* Edited by W. D. Davies and Louis Finkelstein. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1984.

———. *The Elephantine Papyri in English: Three Millennia of Cross-Cultural Continuity and Change.* Leiden: Brill, 1996.

———. "Persian Names in Aramaic Documents from Ancient Egypt." Pages 165–186 in *Irano-Judaica V.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003.

Potts, D. T. "Kharg Island." *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2004), n.p., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

———. "Cyrus the Great and the Kingdom of Anshan." Pages 7–28 in *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I.* Edited by Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart. London: I. B. Tauris, 2005.

———. "Persian Gulf." *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2005): n.p., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

Powell, Barry B. *Writing and the Origins of Greek Literature.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2002.

Price, James D. "Rosh: An Ancient Land Known to Ezekiel." *Grace Theological Journal* (1985): 67–89.

Pritchard, James B., ed. *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament.* 3rd ed. Princeton: Princeton Univ Press, 1969.

Pye, Michael. *Syncretism versus Synthesis.* British Association for the Study of Religions Occasional Papers 8. Cardiff: Open University, 1993.

Quirke, Stephen G. J. "Judgment of the Dead." Pages 173–177 in *The Ancient Gods Speak: A Guide to Egyptian Religion.* Edited by Donald B. Redford. Oxford: Oxford Univ Press, 2002.

Raabe, Paul R. *Obadiah: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* The Anchor Bible. New York: Doubleday, 1996.

Raditsa, Leo. "Iranians in Asia Minor." Pages 100–115 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Vol. 3 (1) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

Rae, Murray A. *History and Hermeneutics*. London: T & T Clark, 2005.

Ramat, Anna Giacalone, and Paolo Ramat. *The Indo-European Languages*. London: Routledge, 1998.

Ravid, Liora. "The Book of Jubilees and its Calendar—A Reexamination." *Dead Sea Discoveries* 10.3 (2003): 371–394.

Razmjou, Shahrokh. "The *Lan* Ceremony and Other Ritual Ceremonies in the Achaemenid Period: The Persepolis Fortification Tablets." *Iran* 42 (2004): 103–117.

———. "Project Report of the Persepolis Fortification Tablets." *Achemenet: Arta* 2.4 (2004): 1–12, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2004.2004–Razmjou.pdf.

Redditt, Paul L. "Recent Research on the Book of the Twelve as One Book." *Currents in Research: Biblical Studies* 9 (2001): 47–80.

Redford, Donald B. "The So-Called 'Codification' of Egyptian Law under Darius I." Pages 135–159 in *Persia and Torah*. Edited by James W. Watts. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2001.

Reed, Annette Yoshiko. "Heavenly Ascent, Angelic Descent, and the Transmission of Knowledge in 1 Enoch 6–16." Pages 47–66 in *Heavenly Realms and Earthly Realities in Late Antique Religions*. Edited by Ra'anan S. Boustan and Annette Yoshiko Reed. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004.

———. *Fallen Angels and the History of Judaism and Christianity: The Reception of Enochic Literature*. New York: Cambridge Univ Press, 2005.

Reeves, John C. *Jewish Lore in Manichaean Cosmology: Studies in the Book of Giants Tradition*. HUCM 14. Cincinnati: Hebrew Union College, 1992.

Reiche, Harald A. T. "Heraclides' Three Soul-Gates: Plato Revised." *Transactions of the American Philogical Association* 123 (1993): 161–180.

Rennie, Bryan, "Zoroastrianism: The Iranian Roots of Christianity?" Paper presented at North American Association for the Study of Religion, Washington, DC.

———. "Zoroastrian Bibliography." Unpublished Paper, 2006.

Roberts, J. J. M. "Myth versus History: Relaying the Comparative Foundations." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 38.1 (1976): 1–13.

Romm, James S. *The Edges of the Earth in Ancient Thought: Geography, Exploration, and Fiction*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton Univ Press, 1992.

Root, Margaret Cool. *The King and Kingship in Achaemenid Art: Essays on the Creation of an Iconography of Empire*. Acta Iranica 19. Leiden: Brill, 1979.

———. "From the Heart: Powerful Persianisms in the Art of the Western Empire." Pages 1–29 in *Achaemenid History VI*. Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991.

———. "Reading Persepolis in Greek : gifts of the Yauna." Pages 177–224 in *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire*. Edited by Christopher Tuplin. Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007.

Rose, Carol. *Giants, Monsters, and Dragons*. Santa Barbara, CA: ABC-CLIO, 2000.

Ross, Sir David. *Select Fragments*. The Works of Aristotle 12. Oxford: Clarendon, 1952.

Rowland, Christopher. *The Open Heaven: A Study of Apocalyptic in Judaism and Early Christianity*. London: SPCK, 1982.

———. "Apocalyptic Literature." Pages 170–189 in *It is Written: Scripture Citing Scripture. Essays in Honour of Barnabas Lindars.* Edited by D. A. Carson and H. G. M. Williamson. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1988.

Rowland, Christopher, and John Barton, eds. *Apocalyptic in History and Tradition.* JSPSS 43. London: Sheffield Academic Press, 2002.

Rowley, H. H. *Darius the Mede and the Four World Empires in the Book of Daniel.* Eugene, OR: Wipf & Stock, 2006. First Published 1935.

Rudolph, Kurt. "Zarathuštra—Priester und Prophet: Neue Aspekte der Zarathuštra- bzw. Gatha-Forschung." *Numen* 8.1 (1961): 81–116.

———. "Mitra, Mithra, Mithras." Orientalistische Literaturzeitung 74.4 (1979): 309–320.

Rufus, Quintus Cutius. *History of Alexander.* Trans. John C. Rolfe. *Quintus Curtius I, Books I–V.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946.

———. *History of Alexander. Quintus Curtius II, Books VI–X.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946.

Russell, D. S. *The Method and Message of Jewish Apocalyptic: 200 B.C.–A.D. 100.* London: SCM, 1964.

Russell, James R. "Burial III: In Zoroastrianism." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 561–563.

———. "Zoroastrian Elements in the Book of Esther." Pages 33–40 in *Irano-Judaica II.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1990.

———. "Review of *Persia and the Bible* by Edwin M. Yamauchi." *The Jewish Quarterly Review* 83.1/2 (1992): 256–261.

———. "God is Good: On Tobit and Iran." *Iran and the Caucasus* 5 (2001): 1–6.

———. "Zoroastrian Notes." *Iran and the Caucasus* 6.1/2 (2002): 1–10.

———. "Ezekiel and Iran." Pages 1–15 in *Irano-Judaica V.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003.

———. "Early Armenian Civilization." Pages 23–40 in *The Armenians: Past and Present in the Making of National Identity.* Edited by Edmund Herzig and Marina Kurkchiyan. Caucasus World: Peoples of the Caucasus. London: Routledge, 2005.

Sacchi, Paolo. *Jewish Apocalyptic and its History.* JSPSS 20. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1990.

Sachs, Eleanor B. "Further Notes on a Twelfth-Century Bishop's Mitre in the Metropolitan Museum." *Bulletin of Needle and Bobbin Club* 1/2 (1979): 45–66.

Sæbø, M. "יוֹם IV: Theological Usage." Pages 28–31 in *Theological Dictionary of the Old Testament.* Trans. David E. Green. Orig. Pub. 1980–1982. Edited by G. Johannes Bottereck and Helmer Ringgren. Vol. IV. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1990.

Salles, Jean-François. "Les Achéménides dans le Golfe Arabo-Persique." Pages 111–130 in *Centre and Periphery: Achaemenid History IV.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990.

Sancisi-Weerdenburg, Heleen. "The Death of Cyrus: Xenophon's Cyropaedia as a Source for Iranian History." Pages 459–472 in *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce.* Edited by H. W. Bailey, et al. Vol. 2. Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

———. "The Fifth Oriental Monarchy and Hellenocentrism." Pages 117–131 in *Achaemenid History II: The Greek Sources*. Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1987.

———. "Achaemenid History: From Hellenocentrism to Iranocentrism." Pages 253–259 in *Proceedings of the First European Conference of Iranian Studies (Turin, September 7–11, 1987)*. Edited by Gherardo Gnoli and Antonio Panaino. Vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies. Rome: Istituto Italiano Per il Medio ed Estremo Oriente, 1990.

———. "Nowruz in Persepolis." Pages 173–201 in *Achaemenid History VII: Through Travelers' Eyes*. Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Jan W. Drijvers. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991.

———. "Bāji." Pages 23–34 in *Studies in Persian History: Essays in Memory of David M. Lewis*. Edited by Maria Brosius and Amélie Kuhrt. Achaemenid History XI. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1998.

Sanders, E. P. "The Genre of Palestinian Jewish Apocalypses." Pages 447–459 in *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East*. Edited by David Hellholm. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1983.

Sanders, James A. "Hermeneutics in True and False Prophecy." Pages 21–41 in *Canon and Authority*. Edited by B.W. Coats and B.O. Long. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1977.

Sandmel, Samuel. "Parallelomania." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 81.1 (1962): 1–13.

Sandy, D. Brent. *Plowshares and Pruning Hooks*. Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity Press, 2002.

Sandy, D. Brent, and Daniel M. O'Hare. *Prophecy and Apocalyptic: an Anotated Bibliography*. Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 2007.

Sarshar, Houman, ed. *Esther's Children: a Portrait of Iranian Jews*. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 2002.

Schams, Christine. *Jewish Scribes in the Second-Temple Period*. JSOTSS 291. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

Schaper, Joachim. "The Death of the Prophet: The Transition from the Spoken to the Written Word of God in the Book of Ezekiel." Pages 63–79 in *Prophets, Prophecy, and Prophetic Texts in Second Temple Judaism*. Edited by Michael H. Floyd and Robert D. Haak. London: T & T Clark, 2006.

Scheftelowitz, I. "Die Mithra-Religion der Indoskythen und ihre Beziehung zum Saura- und Mithras-Kult." *Acta Orientalia* 11 (1933): 293–333.

Scheftelowitz, J. *Die altpersiche Religion und das Judentum: Unterschiede, Übereinstimmungen, und gegenseitige Beeinflussungen*. Giessen: Töpelmann, 1920.

Schiwek, Heinrich. "Der Persische Gulf als Schiffahrts- und Seehandelsroute in achämenidischer Zeit und in der Zeit Alexanders des Grossen." *Bonner Jahrbücher* 162 (1962): 4–97.

Schmidt, Erich F. *Persepolis I: Structures, Reliefs, Inscriptions*. Oriental Institute Publications 68. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1953.

———. *Persepolis II: Contents of the Treasury and Other Discoveries*. Oriental Institute Publications 69. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1957.

———. *Persepolis III: The Royal Tombs and Other Monuments*. Oriental Institute Publications 70. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1970.

Schmidt, Lawrence K. *Understanding Hermeneutics*. Stocksfield: Acumen, 2006.

Schmitt, Rüdiger. "Thronnamen bei den achaimeniden." *Beiträge zur Namenforschung* 12.4 (1977): 422–425.

———. "Die theophoren Eigennamen mit altiranische Miθra-." Pages 395–456 in *Étude Mithriaques*. Edited by Jacque Duchesne-Guillemin. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

———. "Artaxerxes, Ardašīr und Verwandte." *Incontri Linguistici* 5 (1979): 61–72.

———. "Artaxerxes." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): 654–655.

———. "Artaxerxes II." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): 656–658.

———. "Artaxerxes III." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.6 (1987): 658–659.

———. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great: Old Persian Text*. Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1991.

———. "Darius i. The Name." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 7 (1996): 40.

———. "Old Persian." Pages 76–100 in *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas*. Edited by Roger D. Woodard. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008.

Schniedewind, William M. *How the Bible Became a Book: the Textualization of Ancient Israel*. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2004.

Scholes, Robert, Robert Kellogg, and James Phelan. *The Nature of Narrative*. Revised and Expanded ed. New York: Oxford Univ. Press, 2006. First Published 1966.

Schultz, Richard L. *The Search for Quotation: Verbal Parallels in the Prophets*. JSOTSS 180. Sheffield: Scheffield Academic Press, 1999.

Schwartz, Martin. "The Old Eastern Iranian World View According to the Avesta." Pages 640–663 in *Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

———. "The Religion of Achaemenian Iran." Pages 664–697 in *Cambridge History of Iran*. Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. II: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

Scott, James M., ed. *Exile: Old Testament, Jewish, and Christian Conceptions*. Supp Journal for the Study of Judaism. Vol. 56. New York: Brill, 1997.

Scott, R. B. Y. *Proverbs, Ecclesiastes: Introduction, Translation, and Notes*. Anchor Bible 18. New York: Doubleday, 1965.

Scribner, Sylvia, and Michael Cole. *The Psychology of Literacy*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1981.

Seager, A. "The Synagogue at Sardis." Pages 178–184 in *Ancient Synagogues Revealed*. Edited by Lee I. Levine. Jerusalem: Israel Exploration Society, 1981.

Segal, Eliezer. "Justice, Mercy and a Bird's Nest." *Journal of Jewish Studies* 42.2 (1991): 176–195.

Segal, J. B. "Intercalation and the Hebrew Calendar." *Vetus Testamentum* 7.3 (1957): 250–307.

Sekunda, N. "Achaemenid Settlement in Caria, Lycia and Greater Phrygia." Pages 83–143 in *Achaemenid History VI*. Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Proceedings of the Groningen 1988 Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991.

Seneca. *Ad Lucilium Epistulae Morales*. Vol. I. Trans. Richard M. Gummere. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1961.

Setzer, Claudia. *Resurrection of the Body in Early Judaism and Early Christianity: Doctrine, Community, and Self-Definition.* Boston: Brill, 2004.

Shahbazi, A. Shapur. "The Irano-Lycian Monuments: The Principle Antiquities of Xanthos and its Region as Evidence for Iranian Aspects of Achaemenid Lycia." PhD Diss., London Univ, 1973.

———. "An Achaemenid Symbol I: A Farewell to Fravahr and Ahuramazda." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 7 (1974): 135–144.

———. "The Traditional Date of Zoroaster Explained." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 40.1 (1977): 25–35.

———. "An Achaemenid Symbol: II Farnah (God Given) Fortune Symbolised." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran* 13 (1980): 119–147.

———. "Darius' 'Haft Kišvar'." *Archäologische Mitteilungen aus Iran Supp 10* (1985): 239–246.

———. "Iranian notes 1–6." Pages 497–510 in *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce.* Edited by H. W. Bailey, et al. Vol. 2. Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

———. *Old Persian Inscriptions of the Persepolis Platform.* Portfolio I. Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicarum. London: Lund Humphries, 1985.

———. "Astōdān." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 2.8 (1987): 851–853.

———. "Haft Kešvar." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 11 (2003): 519–522.

———. "Hōšang." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 12 (2004): 491–492.

———. "Zāl." *Encyclopædia Iranica Online* (2004): np., http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

Shaked, Shaul. "Qumran and Iran: further considerations." *Israel Oriental Studies* 2 (1972): 433–446.

———. "Two Judaeo-Iranian Contributions." Pages 292–322 in *Irano-Judaica.* Edited by Shaul Shaked. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1982.

———. "The Myth of Zurvan: Cosmogony and Eschatology." Pages 219–236 in *Messiah and Christos: Studies in the Jewish Origins of Christianity.* Edited by Ithamar Gruenwald, Shaul Shaked and Gedaliahu G. Stroumsa. Texte und Studen zum antiken Judentum 32. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1992.

———. *Dualism in Transformation: Varieties of Religion in Sasanian Iran.* Jordan Lectures 1991. London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1994.

———. *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam.* Collected Studies. Aldershot: Variorium, 1995.

———. "Mihr the Judge." Pages 1–31 (Section IV) in *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam. Collected Studies.* Aldershot: Variorium, 1995. First Published 1980 in *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam 2.*

———. "The Notions *mēnog* and *gētīg* in the Pahlavi Texts and Their Relation to Eschatology." Pages 59–107 (Section II) in *From Zoroastrian Iran to Islam. Collected Studies.* Orig. Pub. *Acta Orientalia* 33 (1971). Edited. Aldershot: Variorium, 1995.

———. "Eschatology I: In Zoroastrianism and Zoroastrian Influence." *Encyclopædia Iranica* 8 (1998): 565–569.

———. "Iranian Influence on Judaism: first century B.C.E to second century C.E." Pages 308–325 in *The Cambridge History of Judaism.* Edited by W. D. Davies and L. Finkelstein. Vol. I: Introduction; The Persian Period. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2000.

———. "Between Iranian and Aramaic: Iranian Words Concerning Food in Jewish Babylonian Aramaic, with Some Notes on the Aramaic Hetereograms in Iranian." Pages 120–137 in *Irano-Judaica V*. Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003.

Shaked, Shaul, and Amnon Netzer, eds. *Irano-Judaica: Studies relating to Jewish contacts with Persian culture throughout the ages*. 3 vols. Jerusalem: Ben-Zvi Institute, 1982, 1990, 1994.

———, eds. *Irano-Judaica IV*. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999.

———, eds. *Irano-Judaica V*. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 2003.

Shellenberg, Angeline. "Development of the Divine Warrior Motif in Apocalyptic." MA Diss., Providence, RI: Providence College and Seminary, 1999.

Sicculus, Diodorus. *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily IV, Books IX–XII*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1946.

———. *Library of History*. Trans. Russel M. Geer. *Diodorus of Sicily IX*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1947.

———. *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily VI*. LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1954.

———. *Library of History*. Trans. C. H. Oldfather. *Diodorus of Sicily I*. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1989.

Silberman, Lou H., ed. *Orality, Aurality and Biblical Narrative: Semeia* 39 (1987).

Silverman, David P. "Divinity and Dieties in Ancient Egypt." Pages 7–87 in *Religion in Ancient Egypt: Gods, Myths, and Personal Practice*. Edited by Byron E. Shafer. London: Routledge, 1991.

Silverman, Jason M., ed. *A Land Like Your Own: Traditions of Israel and Their Reception*. Eugene, OR: Pickwick, 2010.

Simcox, Carroll E. "The Role of Cyrus in Deutero-Isaiah." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 57.2 (1937): 158–171.

Simons, Johannes. *The Geographical and Topographical Texts of the Old Testament*. Leiden: Brill, 1959.

Sims-Williams, N. "Baga II: in Old and Middle Iranian." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 404–405.

The Sīrōzahs, Yasts, and Nyāyis. Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta II*. The Sacred Books of the East 23. Ed. F. Max Müller. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1882 by Oxford Univ Press.

Skjærvø, Prods Oktor. "Aždahā I: in Old and Middle Iranian." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 191–199.

———. "Review: *Persia and the Bible* by Edwin M. Yamauchi." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 114.3 (1994): 499–504.

———. "The Avesta as Source for the Early History of the Iranians." Pages 155–176 in *The Indo-Aryans of Ancient South Asia*. Edited by G. Erdosy. Indian Philology and South Asian Studies 1. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1995.

———. "The State of Old Avestan Scholarship." Rev. of Les Textes vieil-avestiques. Vol. 2: Repertoires grammaticaux et lexique; Vol 3: Commentaire by Jean Kellens; Eric Pirart. *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 117.1 (1997): 103–114.

———. "Royalty in Early Iranian Literature." Pages 99–108 in *Proceedings of the Third European Conference of Iranian Studies, Cambridge, 11–15 September 1995*. Edited by Nicholas Sims-Williams. Vol. I: Old and Middle Iranian Studies. Beiträge zur Iranistik 17. Wiesbaden: Reichert, 1998.

———. "Avestan Quotations in Old Persian? Literary Sources of the Old Persian Inscriptions." Pages 1–64 in *Irano-Judaica IV*. Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1999.

———. "Ahura Mazdā and Ārmaiti, Heaven and Earth, in the Old Avesta." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 122.2 (2002): 399–410.

———. "The Antiquity of Old Avestan." *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 3 (2003–4): 15–41.

———. "The Achaemenids and the Avesta." Pages 52–84 in *Birth of the Persian Empire: the Idea of Iran I*. Edited by Vesta Sarkhosh Curtis and Sarah Stewart. London: I. B. Tauris, 2005.

———. "The Importance of Orality for the Study of Old Iranian Literature and Myth." *Nāme-ye Irān Bāstān* 5.1–2 (2005–2006): 9–31.

Smith, Catherine Delano. "Imago Mundi's Logo, the Babylonian Map of the World." *Imago Mundi* 48 (1996): 209–211.

Smith, Daniel L. *The Religion of the Landless*. Bloomington, IN: Meyer-Stone Books, 1989.

Smith, John M. P. "The Day of Yahweh." *American Journal of Theology* 5.3 (1901): 505–533.

Smith, Jonathan Z. "Native Cults in the Hellenistic Period." *History of Religions* 11.2 (1971): 236–249.

———. "Wisdom and Apocalyptic." Pages 131–156 in *Religious Syncretism in Antiquity*. Edited by Berger A. Pearson. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975. Reprinted as "Wisdom and Apocalyptic." Pages 67–87 in *Map is Not Territory*. Edited by Jonathan Z. Smith. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

———. "A Pearl of Great Price and a Cargo of Yams: a Study in Situational Incongruity." *History of Religions* 16.1 (1976): 1–19.

———. *Imagining Religion: From Babylon to Jonestown*. Chicago Studies in the History of Judaism. Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1982.

Smith, Morton. "II Isaiah and the Persians." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 83 (1963): 415–421.

———. *Palestinian Parties and Politics that Shaped the Old Testament*. 2nd ed. London: SCM, 1987.

———. "Bible II: Persian Elements in the Bible." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 200–203.

Smith-Christopher, Daniel L., "Can We Speak of the Socio-Psychology of Exile in the Bible?" Paper presented at annual meeting of the Society of Biblical Literature, Boston, 24 November 2008.

Sokoloff, Michael. *A Dictionary of Jewish Babylonian Aramaic of the Talmudic and Geonic Periods*. Dictionaries of Talmud, Midrash and Targum III. Ramat-Gan, Israel: Bar Ilan Univ Press, 2002.

Speiser, E. A. "The Rivers of Paradise." Pages 175–182 in *I Studied Inscriptions From Before the Flood*. Edited by Richard S. Hess and David T. Tsumura. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1994.

Spronk, Klaas. *Beatific Afterlife in Ancient Israel and in the Ancient Near East*. Alter Orient und Altes Testament 219. Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1986.

Stausberg, Michael. "Persepolis, Zoroastrianopolis, Metropolis: Städte und Tempel in der zoroastrischen Religionsgeschichte. Eine Skizze." Pages 45–66 in *La Cité de Dieu/Die Stadt Gottes. 3. Symposium Strasbourg, Tübingen, Uppsala 19.–23. September 1998 in Tübingen.* Edited by Martin Hengel, Siegfried Mittmann and Anna M. Schwemer. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2000.

Stave, E. *Über den Einfluss des Parsismus auf das Judentum.* Haarlem, 1989.

Steiner, Richard C. "The mbqr at Qumran, the episkopos in the Athenian Empire, and the Meaning of lbqr' in Ezra 7:14: On the Relation of Ezra's Mission to the Persian Legal Project." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 120.4 (2001): 623–646.

Stern, Ephraim. "Achaemenian Tombs from Shechem." *Levant* 12 (1980): 90–111.

———. *Material Culture of the Land of the Bible in the Persian Period 538–332 B.C.* Trans. Essa Cindorf. Warminster: Aris & Philips, 1982.

———. "New Evidence on the Administrative Division of Palestine in the Persian Period." Pages 221–226 in *Achaemenid History IV: Centre and Periphery.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1990.

———. "Between Persia and Greece: Trade, Administration and Warfare in the Persian and Hellenistic Periods." Pages 432–445 in *The Archaeology of Society in the Holy Land.* Edited by Thomas E. Levy. London: Leicester Univ Press, 1995.

Steve, M-J. "Sur l'île de Khârg dans le golfe Persique." *Dossiers d'Archéologie* 243 (1999): 74–80.

Stevens-Arroyo, Anthony M. "Syncretic Sociology: Towards a Cross-Disciplinary Study of Religion." *Sociology of Religion* 59.3 (1998): 217–236.

Steward, Julian H. "Levels of Sociocultural Integration: an Operational Concept." *Journal of Anthropological Research* 42.3 (1986): 337–353.

Stolper, Matthew W. "The Neo-Babylonian Text from the Persepolis Fortification." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 43.4 (1984): 299–310.

Stolper, Matthew W., and Jan Tavernier. "An Old Persian Administrative Tablet from the Persepolis Fortification." *Achemenet: Arta 5.1* (2007): 1–28; Online : http://www.achemenet.com/document/2007.2001–Stolper–Tavernier.pdf.

Stone, Michael E. "Lists of Revealed Things in the Apocalyptic Literature." Pages 414–452 in *Magnalia Dei, the Mighty Acts of God: Essays on the Bible and Archaeology in Memory of G. Ernest Wright.* Edited by Frank Moore Cross, Werner E. Lemke and Patrick D. Miller. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1976.

———. *Fourth Ezra: a Commentary.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1990.

———. "On Reading an Apocalypse." Pages 65–78 in *Mysteries and Revelations: Apocalyptic Studies since the Uppsala Colloquium.* Edited by John J. Collins and James H Charlesworth. JSPSS 9. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1991.

———. "A Reconsideration of Apocalyptic Visions." *Harvard Theological Review* 96.2 (2003): 167–180.

Stott, Katherine M. *Why Did They Write This Way? Reflections on References to Written Documents in the Hebrew Bible and Ancient Literature.* Library of Hebrew Bible 492. New York: T & T Clark, 2008.

Strabo. *Geography.* Trans. Horace Leonard Jones. *The Geography of Strabo V.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1928

———. *Geography.* Trans. Horace Leonard Jones. *The Geography of Strabo VI.* LCL ed. London: Heinemann, 1929

Strawn, Brent A. "'A World Under Control': Isaiah 60 and the Apadana Reliefs from Persepolis." Pages 85–116 in *Approaching Yehud: New Approaches to the Study of the Persian Period.* Edited by Jon L. Berquist. Semeia Studies 50. Leiden: Brill, 2007.

Ström, Åke V. "Indogermanisches in der Völuspá." *Numen* 14.3 (1967): 167–208.

Stronach, David. *Pasargadae: a Report on the Excavations.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1978.

———. "On the Evolution of the Early Iranian Fire Temple." Pages 605–627 in *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce.* Edited by H. W. Bailey, et al. Vol. 2. Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

———. "Tepe Nūsh-i Jān: the Median Settlement." Pages 832–836 in *Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ilya Gershevitch. Vol. 2: The Median and Achaemenian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1985.

———. "Čahārbāg." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 624–625.

———. "Anshan and Parsa: Early Achaemenid History, Art and Architecture on the Iranian Plateau." Pages 35–53 in *Mesopotamia and Iran in the Persian Period: Conquest and Imperialism 539–331 BC. Proceedings of a Seminar in memory of Vladimir G. Lukonin.* Edited by John E. Curtis. London: British Museum, 1997.

———. "Icons of Dominion: Review Scenes at Til Barip and Persepolis." *Iranica Antiqua* 37 (2002): 373–402.

Strouve, V. V. "Religion of the Achaemenides and Zoroastrianism." *Cahiers d'Historie Mondiale* 5 (1959–60): 529–545.

Stuckenbruck, Loren T. *The Book of Giants from Qumran.* TSAJ 63. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1997.

———. "The Origin of Evil in Jewish Apocalyptic Tradition: The Interpretation of Gen 6:1–4 in the Second and Third Centuries B.C.E." Pages 87–118 in *The Fall of the Angels.* Edited by Christoph Auffarth and Loren T. Stuckenbruck. Themes in Biblical Narrative 6. Leiden: Brill, 2004.

———. *1 Enoch 91–108.* Commentaries on Early Jewish Literature. Berlin: De Gruyter, 2007.

Sulimirski, T., and T. Taylor. "The Scythians." Pages 547–590 in *Cambridge Ancient History.* Edited by John Boardman, et al. Second ed. Vol. III.2 The Assyrian and Babylonian Empires and other States of the Near East, from the Eighth to the Sixth Centuries B.C. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1991.

Summers, Geoffrey D. "Archaeological Evidence for the Achaemenid Period in Eastern Turkey." *Anatolian Studies* 43 (1993): 85–108.

———. "The Median Empire Reconsidered: A View from Kerkenes Dağ." *Anatolian Studies* 50 (2000): 55–73.

———. "Aspects of Material Culture at the Iron Age Capital on the Kerkenes Dağ in Central Anatolia." *Ancient Near Eastern Studies* 43 (2006): 164–202.

Sumner, W. M. "Achaemenid Settlement in the Persepolis Plain." *American Journal of Archaeology* 90.1 (1986): 3–31.

Sundermann, Werner. "Bahman Yašt." *Encyclopædia Iranica* III (1989): 492–493.

Swadesh, Morris. "Diffusional Cumulation and Archaic Residue as Historical Explanations." *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology* 7.1 (1951): 1–21.

Swain, J. W. "The Theory of the Four Monarchies." *Classical Philology* 35.1 (1940): 1–21.

Swearingen, C. Jan. "Oral Hermeneutics during the Transition to Literacy: The Contemporary Debate." *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): 138–156.

Tadmor, Miryam. "Fragments from an Achaemenid Throne From Samaria." *Israel Exploration Journal* 24.1 (1974): 37–43.

Talmon, Shemaryahu. "The 'Comparative Method' in Biblical Interpretation: Principles and Problems." Pages 320–356 in *Congress Volume, Göttingen 1977*. Edited P. A. H. de Boer. Vetus Testamentum Supplement 29. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

Talmon, Yonina. "Millenarism." Pages 349–362 in *International Encyclopaedia of the Social Sciences*. Vol. 10. New York: Macmillan, 1968.

———. "Millenarian Movements." Pages 13–45 in *The Sociology of Religion*. Vol. V: Religious Movements. Edited by Malcolm Hamilton. London: Routledge, 2007. First Published in *Archives européenes de sociologie* (1966): pp. 159–200.

Tannen, Deborah. "The Commingling of Orality and Literacy in Giving a Paper at a Scholarly Conference." *American Speech* 63.1 (1988): 34–43.

Tanzer, Sarah J. "Response to George Nickelsburg, 'Wisdom and Apocalypticism in Early Judaism'." Pages 39–50 in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism*. Edited by Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills. Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005.

Taqizadeh, S. H. *Old Iranian Calendars*. Prize Publication Fund 16: Royal Asiatic Society, 1938.

———. "The Old Iranian Calendars Again." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 14.3 (1952): 603–611.

Taylor, Lily R. "The 'Proskynesis' and the Hellenistic Ruler Cult." *Journal of Hellenic Studies* 47.1 (1927): 53–62.

Teixidor, Javier. "Review of The Genesis Apocryphon of Qumran Cave I. A Commentary by Joseph A. Fitzmyer." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 87.4 (1967): 633–636.

Teske, Raymond H.C. Jr., and Bardin H. Nelson. "Acculturation and Assimilation: a Clarification." *American Ethnologist* 1.2 (1974): 351–367.

Thieme, Paul. "The 'Aryan' Gods of the Mitanni Treaties." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 80 (1960): 301–317.

———. "Mithra in the Avesta." Pages 501–511 in *Étude Mithriaques*. Edited by Jacques Duchesne-Guillemin. Leiden: Brill, 1978.

Thiselton, Anthony C. *New Horizons in Hermeneutics*. London: HarperCollins, 1992.

Thompson, Stith. *Motif-Index of Folk-Literature*. Rev. ed. 6 vols. Bloomington, IN: Indiana Univ Press, 1955–1958.

Thucydides. *History of the Peloponnesian War*. Trans. C. Forster Smith. *Thucydides I*. LCL ed. Cambridge: Harvard Univ Press, 1980.

Tierney, Kathleen J., and Joan Neff Gurney. "Relative Deprivation and Social Movements: a Critical Look at Twenty Years of Theory and Research." *Sociological Quarterly* 23.1 (1982): 33–47.

Tigchelaar, Eibert J. C. *The Prophets of Old and the Day of the End: Zechariah, the Book of Watchers, and Apocalyptic*. Leiden: Brill, 1996.

———. "Some Remarks on the Book of the Watchers, the Priests, Enoch and Genesis, and 4Q208." Pages 143–145 in *Henoch: The Origins of Enochic Judaism. Proceedings of the First*

Enoch Seminar, Univeristy of Michigan, Sesto Fiorentino, Italy, June 19–23, 2001. Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Torino: Silvio Zamorani, 2002.

Tigchelaar, E. J. C., and F. Garcia Martinez. "4QAstronomical Enoch^{a-b} ar." Pages 95–171 in *Qumran Cave 4: XXVI Cryptic Texts and Miscellanea Part I*. Edited by Emmanuel Tov. DJD XXXVI. Oxford: Clarendon, 2000.

Tiller, Patrick A. *A Commentary on the Animal Apocalypse of 1 Enoch*. Early Judaism and Its Literature 4. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1993.

———. "Review: *1 Enoch 1*." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 122.3 (2003): 574–577.

Tillich, Paul. *A History of Christian Thought*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1968.

Timus, Mihaela. "Stig Wikander: Les «Haskell Lectures» University of Chicago, 1967." *Archaeus* 8.1–4 (2004): 265–322.

Torrey, Charles C. "Armageddon." *Harvard Theological Review* 31.3 (1938): 237–248.

Toy, C. H. *The Book of the Prophet Ezekiel*. Sacred Books of the Old Testament 12. Leipzig: Hinrichs'sche, 1899.

Trebilco, Paul R. *Jewish Communities in Asia Minor*. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1991.

Tuell, Stephen Shawn. *The Law of the Temple in Ezekiel 40–48*. Harvard Semitic Monographs 49. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992.

Tuplin, Christopher. "The Administration of the Achaemenid Empire." Pages 109–158 in *Coinage and Administration in the Athenian and Persian Empires: the ninth Oxford Symposium on Coinage and Monetary History [held St. Hilda's College in April 1986]*. Edited by Ian Carradice. BAR International Series 343. Oxford: BAR, 1987.

———. "Persian Garrisons in Xenophon and Other Sources." Pages 67–70 in *Achaemenid History III: Method and Theory*. Edited by Amélie Kuhrt and Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1988.

———. *Achaemenid Studies*. Historia 99. Stuttgart: Franz Steiner, 1996.

———. "Darius' Accession in (the) Media." Pages 217–244 in *Writing and Ancient Near Eastern Society*. Edited by Piotr Bienkowski, Christopher Mee and Elizabeth Slater. London: T & T Clark, 2005.

———, ed. *Persian Responses: Political and Cultural Interaction with(in) the Achaemenid Empire*. Swansea: Classical Press of Wales, 2007.

Tyler, Stephen A. "On Being Out of Words." *Cultural Anthropology* 1.2 (1986): 131–137.

Uehlinger, C. "'Powerful Persianisms' in Glyptic Iconography of Persian Period Palestine." Pages 134–182 in *The Crisis of Israelite Religion*. Edited by Bob Becking and Marjo C. A. Korpel. Leiden: Brill, 1999.

Vahman, Fereydun. *'Arda Wiraz Nama': The Iranian 'Divina Commedia'*. Scandinavian Institute of Asian Studies London: Curzon, 1986.

Van der Merwe, Jeanne. "Investigating Apparent Commonalities Between the Apocalyptic Traditions from Iran and Second-Temple Judaism." M.A. Diss., University of Stellenbosch, 2008.

Van der Toorn, Karel. *Scribal Culture and the Making of the Hebrew Bible*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2007.

Vanderhooft, David. "Cyrus II, Liberator or Conqueror? Ancient Historiography concerning Cyrus in Babylon." Pages 351–372 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period*. Edited by Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006.

VanderKam, James C. "1 Enoch 77:3 and a Babylonian Map of the World." *Revue de Qumran* 11.2 (1983): 271–278.

———. *Enoch and the Growth of an Apocalyptic Tradition.* CBQ Monograph Series 16. Washington, DC: Catholic Biblical Association, 1984.

———. "Recent Studies in 'apocalyptic'." *Word and World: theology for Christian Ministry* 4 (1984): 70–77.

———. "Biblical Interpretation in *1 Enoch* and *Jubilees*." Pages 96–125 in *The Pseudepigrapha and Early Biblical Interpretation.* Edited by James H. Charlesworth and Craig A. Evans. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1993. Reprinted in Pages 276–304 in *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature.* Leiden: Brill, 2000.

———. *Calendars in the Dead Sea Scrolls: Measuring Time.* London: Routledge, 1998.

———. *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature.* Leiden: Brill, 2000.

———. "Putting them in their Place: Geography as an Evaluative Tool." Pages 476–499 in *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature.* Leiden: Brill, 2000.

———. "Some Major Issues in the Contemporary Study of 1 Enoch." Pages 354–365 in *From Revelation to Canon: Studies in the Hebrew Bible and Second Temple Literature.* Leiden: Brill, 2000.

———. "The Book of Parables within the Enoch Tradition." Pages 81–99 in *Enoch and the Messiah Son of Man: Revisiting the Book of Parables.* Edited by Gabriele Boccaccini. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 2007.

The Vendidad. Trans. James Darmesteter. *The Zend-Avesta I.* Sacred Books of the East 4. Ed. F. Max Müller. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1992. Previously Published 1985 by Clarendon.

Vidal, Senén. "Resurrection in the Israelite Tradition." Pages 47–55 in *The Resurrection of the Dead.* Edited by Andrés T. Queiruga, Luiz C. Susin and Jon Sobrino. Concilium 2006/5. London: SCM, 2006.

Virgil. *Eclogues.* Trans. H. Rushton Fairclough. Pages 23–96 in *Virgil I: Eclogues, Georgics, Aeneid I–VI.* Ed. G. P. Goold. LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 1999.

Vogelsang, W. J. *The Rise and Organization of the Achaemenid Empire: The Eastern Iranian Evidence.* Leiden: Brill, 1992.

Voigtlander, Elizabeth N. von. *The Bisitun Inscription of Darius the Great, Babylonian Version.* Corpus Inscriptionum Iranicum II.1. London: Lund Humphries, 1978.

Von Rad, Gerhard. "The Origin of the Concept of the Day of Yahweh." *Journal of Semitic Studies* 4.2 (1959): 97–108.

———. *Old Testament Theology.* Trans. D. M. G. Stalker. Study ed. 2 vols. London: SCM, 1975.

———. *Wisdom in Israel.* Trans. J.D. Martin. Study ed. London: SCM, 1975.

Vroom, Hendrik M. "Syncretism and Dialogue: a Philosophical Analysis." Pages 103–112 in *Syncretism in Religion: a Reader.* Edited by Anita M. Leopold and Jeppe S. Jensen. London: Equinox, 2004.

Wacholder, Ben Z. "Ezekiel and Ezekielianism as Progenitors of Essenianism." Pages 186–196 in *The Dead Sea Scrolls: Forty Years of Research.* Edited by Devorah Dimant and Uriel Rappaport. Leiden: Brill, 1992.

Wallace, Anthony F. C. "Revitalization Movements." *American Anthropologist New Series* 58.2 (1956): 264–281.

Wapnish, Paula, and Brian Hesse. "Pampered Pooches or Plain Pariahs? The Ashkelon Dog Burials." *Biblical Archaeologist* 56.2 (1993): 55–80.

Ward, William Hayes. "Notes on Oriental Antiquities IV: The Rising Sun on Babylonian Cylinders." *The American Journal of Archaeology and of the History of the Fine Arts* 3.1/2 (1887): 50–56.

———. "Notes on Oriental Antiquities IX: A Babylonian Cylindrical Basrelief from Urumia in Persia; X: Tiamat and Other Evil Spirits, as Figured on Oriental Seals." *The American Journal of Archaeology and of the History of the Fine Arts* 6.3 (1890): 286–298.

Warren, William F. "Babylonian and Pre-Babylonian Cosmology." *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 22 (1901): 138–144.

Wasson, R. Gordon. "The Soma of the Rig Veda: What was it?" *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 91.2 (1971): 169–187.

Waters, Matt. "Cyrus and the Achaemenids." *Iran* 42 (2004): 91–102.

Watkins, Calvert. *How to Kill a Dragon: Aspects of Indo-European Poetics.* New York: Oxford Univ Press, 1995.

Watson, Rebecca S. *Chaos Uncreated: A Reassessment of the Theme of 'Chaos' in the Hebrew Bible.* BZAW 341. Berlin: De Gruyter, 2005.

Watson, Wilfred G. E. *Classical Hebrew Poetry: A Guide to its Techniques.* JSOTSS 26. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1984.

Watts, James W., ed. *Persia and Torah: The Theory of Imperial Authorization of the Pentateuch.* Atlanta: SBL, 2001.

Watts, John D. W. *The Books of Joel, Obadiah, Jonah, Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah.* The Cambridge Bible Commentary. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1975.

Webb, Robert L. "'Apocalyptic': Observations on a Slippery Term." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 49.2 (1990): 115–126.

Weber, Max. *Ancient Judaism.* Trans. Hans H. Gerth and Don Martindale. New York: Free Press, 1967.

———. *The Sociology of Religion.* Trans. Ephraim Fischoff. Boston: Beacon Press, 1993.

Weiskopf, Michael. *The So-called "Great Satraps' Revolt", 366–360 B.C.: concerning local instability in the Achaemenid far west.* Historia 63. Stuttgart: Steiner, 1989.

———. "Cappadocia." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 780–786.

Weiss, Meir. "The Origin of the 'Day of the Lord'—Reconsidered." *Hebrew Union College Annual* 37 (1966): 29–60.

Welch, Kevin W. "An Interpersonal Influence Model of Traditional Religious Commitment." *Sociological Quarterly* 22.1 (1981): 81–92.

Wellhausen, Julius. *Grundrisse zum alten Testament.* Neudrucke und Berichte aus dem 20. Jahrhundert 27. Rudolf Smend, ed. München: Chr Kaiser Verlag, 1965.

Wernberg-Møller, P. "A Reconsideration of the Two Spirits in the Rule of the Community (IQSerek III,13–IV,26)." *Revue de Qumran* 3 (1961): 413–441.

West, M. L. *Early Greek Philosophy and the Orient.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1971.

———. *The East Face of Helicon: West Asiatic Elements in Greek Poetry and Myth.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1997.

Westenholz, Joan G., and Matthew W. Stolper. "A stone Jar with Inscriptions of Darius I in Four Languages." *Achemenet: Arta* 1.5 (2002): 1–13, http://www.achemenet.com/ressources/enligne/arta/pdf/2002.2005–loc.pdf.

"Why Wars Happen." *The Economist* 16 Dec 2008, http://www.economist.com/daily/chartgallery/displayStory.cfm?story_id=12758508&source=features_box4.

Whybray, R.N. *The Book of Proverbs.* Cambridge Bible Commentary. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1972.

———. *The Making of the Pentateuch: A Methodological Study.* JSOT Supp 53. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1987.

Widengren, Geo. "Stand und Aufgaben der iranischen Religionsgeschichte." *Numen* 1.1–2 (1954–55): 16–83.

———. "Stand und Aufgaben der iranischen Religionsgeschichte II: Geschichte der iranischen Religionen und ihre Nachwirkung." *Numen* 2.1–2 (1955): 47–134.

———. *Iranisch-semitische Kulturbegegnung in parthischer Zeit.* Arbeitsgemeinschaft für Forschung des Landes Nordrhein-Westfalen 70. Cologne: Westdeutscher Verlag, 1960.

———. "Iran and Israel in Parthian Times with Special Regard to the Ethiopic Book of Enoch." *Temenos* 2 (1966): 139–177.

———. "Leitende Ideen und Quellen des Iranischen Apokalyptic." Pages 77–162 in *Apocalypticism in the Mediterranean World and the Near East: Proceedings of the International Colloquium on Apocalypticism, Uppsala, August 12–17, 1979.* Edited by David Hellholm. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 1983.

Wiesehöfer, Josef. "The Medes and the Idea of the Succession of Empires in Antiquity." Pages 391–396 in *Continuity of Empire (?): Assyria, Media, Persia.* Edited by Giovanni B. Lanfranchi, Michael Roaf and Robert Rollinger. Padova: S.a.r.g.o.n. Editrice e Libreria, 2003.

Wikander, Stig. *Vayu: Texte und Untersuchungen zur Indo-Iranischen Religionsgeschichte.* Vol. I: Texte. Quastiones Indo-Iranicae 1. Uppsala: Lundequistska Bokhandeln, 1941.

Willey, Patricia Tull. *Remember the Former Things: The Recollection of Previous Texts in Isaiah 40–55.* Atlanta, GA: SBL, 1997.

Williams, A. V. "Zoroastrian and Judaic Purity Laws. Reflections on the Viability of a Sociological Interpretation." Pages 72–89 in *Irano-Judaica III.* Edited by Shaul Shaked and Amnon Netzer. Jerusalem: Ben Zvi Institute, 1994.

Williamson, H. G. M. *Studies in Persian Period History and Historiography.* Forshungen zum Alten Testament 38. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2004.

Wilson, Robert R. *Prophecy and Society in Ancient Israel.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1980.

Windischmann, Fr. *Zoroastrische Studien: Abhandlungen zur Mythologie und Sagengeschichte des Alten Iran.* Ed. Fr. Spiegel. Berlin: Dümmler's Verlagsbuchhandlung, 1863.

Winfuhr, Gerot L. "Haoma/Soma: the plant." Pages 699–726 in *Papers in Honour of Professor Mary Boyce.* Edited by H. W. Bailey, et al. Vol. 2. Acta Iranica 24–25/Hommages et Opera Minora X–XI. Leiden: Brill, 1985.

Winn Leith, Mary Joan. *Wadi Daliyeh I: The Wadi Daliyeh Seal Impressions.* Discoveries in the Judean Desert XXIV. Oxford: Clarendon, 1997.

Winston, David. "The Iranian Component in the Bible, Apocrypha, and Qumran: a Review of the Evidence." *History of Religions* 5 (1966): 183–216.

Wold, Benjamin G. *Women, Men, and Angels: the Qumran Wisdom Document Musar leMevin and its Allusions to Genesis Creation Traditions.* Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament. 2. Reihe, 201. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2005.

Wolff, F. *Avesta: Die heiligen Bücher der Parsen, Übersetz auf der Grundlage von Chr. Bartholomae's Altiranishem Wörterbuch.* Berlin: De Gruyter, 1960.

Wood, Irving P. "Borrowing between Religions." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 46.1/2 (1927): 98–105.

Woodard, Roger D., ed. *The Ancient Languages of Asia and the Americas.* Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 2008.

Woodbridge, Linda. "Add Context and Stir, or, the Sadness of Grendel: Thoughts on Early Modern Orality and Literacy." *Yearbook of English Studies* 25 (1995): 22–40.

Worsley, Peter. *The Trumpet Shall Sound: A Study of 'Cargo' Cults in Melanesia.* Second ed. London: Paladin, 1970. First Published 1957.

Wright, Archie T. *The Origin of Evil Spirits: The Reception of Gen 6.1–4 in Early Jewish Literature.* Wissenschaftliche Untersuchungen zum Neuen Testament 2. Reihe, 198. Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2005.

Wright, Benjamin G. III. "Putting the Puzzle Together: Some Suggestions concerning the Social Location of the Wisdom of Ben Sira." Pages 89–112 in *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism.* Edited by Benjamin G. Wright III and Lawrence M. Wills. Symposium. Atlanta: SBL, 2005.

Wright, Benjamin G., III, and Lawrence M. Wills, eds. *Conflicted Boundaries in Wisdom and Apocalypticism.* Symposium. Atlanta, GA: SBL, 2005.

Wright, John W. "Remapping Yehud: The Borders of Yehud and the Geneologies of Chronicles." Pages 67–90 in *Judah and the Judeans in the Persian Period.* Edited by Oded Lipschits and Manfred Oeming. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 2006.

Wuttman, Michael, Thierry Gonon, and Christophe Thiers. "The Qanats of 'Ayn-Manâwîr Kharga Oasis, Egypt." *Journal of Achaemenid Studies and Researches* 1 (2000): n.p., http://www.achemenet.com/pdf/jasr/jasr2000.1.pdf.

Xenophon. *Cyropaedia.* Trans. Walter Miller. *Cyropaedia, Books V–VIII.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2000.

———. *Cyropaedia.* Trans. Walter Miller. *Cyropaedia, Books I–IV.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2001.

———. *Anabasis.* Trans. Carleton L. Brownson and John Dillery. *Anabasis.* LCL ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ Press, 2006.

Yamamoto, Kumiko. *The Oral Background of Persian Epics: Storytelling and Poetry.* Brill Studies in Middle Eastern Literatures 26. Leiden: Brill, 2003.

Yamauchi, Edwin M. "The Scythians: Invading Hordes from the Russian Steppes." *Biblical Archaeologist* 46.2 (1983): 90–99.

———. *Persia and the Bible.* Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1996.

Yarbro Collins, Adela, ed. *Early Christian Apocalypticism: Genre and Social Setting. Semeia* 36 (1986).

———. "Introduction: Early Christian Apocalypticism." *Semeia* 36 (1986): 1–12.

———. *Cosmology and Eschatology in Jewish and Christian Apocalypticism.* SJSJ 50. Leiden: Brill, 1996.

Yarshater, Ehsan. "Were the Sasanians Heirs to the Achaemenids?" Pages 517–533 in *Atti Del Convegno internazionale sul tempa La Persia nel Medioevo.* Rome: Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1971.

———, ed. *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Volume 3: The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. 2 vols. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

———. "Iranian Common Beliefs and Worldview." Pages 343–358 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Vol. 3 (1) The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

———. "Iranian National History." Pages 359–480 in *The Cambridge History of Iran.* Volume 3 (1): The Seleucid, Parthian and Sasanian Periods. Edited by Ehsan Yarshater. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ Press, 1983.

———, ed. *Encyclopædia Iranica.* 14 vols (current). London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1985–. Also available http://www.iranica.com/newsite/.

———. "The Feared Child in Iranian Mythology." Pages 65–68 in *K. R. Cama Oriental Institute Internation Congress Proceedings (5–8 January 1989).* Bombay: K. R. Cama Oriental Insitute, 1991.

The Yasna, Visparad, Āfrīnagān, Gāhs, and Miscellaneous Fragments. Trans. Lawrence H. Mills. *The Zend-Avesta III.* Sacred Books of the East 31. Ed. F. Max Müller. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1988. First Published 1887 by Oxford Univ Press.

Yates, Frances A. *The Art of Memory.* Chicago: Univ of Chicago Press, 1966.

Younger, K. Lawson, Jr. "The Deportations of the Israelites." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 117.2 (1998): 201–227.

Zadok, Ran. "On Five Iranian Names in the Old Testament." *Vetus Testamentum* 26.2 (1976): 246–247.

———. "On the Connections between Iran and Babylonia in the Sixth Century B.C." *Iran* XIV (1976): 61–78.

———. "Iranians and Individuals Bearing Iranian Names in Achaemenid Babylonia." *Israel Oriental Studies* 7 (1977): 89–138.

———. *On West Semites in Babylonia During the Chaldean and Achaemenian Periods: An Onomastic Study (revised).* Jerusalem: H. J. & Z. Wanaarta, 1978.

———. *The Jews in Babylonia During the Chaldean and Achaemenian Periods.* Studies in the History of the Jewish People and the Land of Israel III. Haifa: Univ of Haifa, 1979.

———. "Die nichthebräischen Namen der Israeliten vor dem Hellenistischen Zeitalter." *Ugarit-Forschungen* 17 (1986): 387–398.

———. "The Ethno-Linguistic Character of Northwestern Iran and Kurdistan in the Neo-Assyrian Period." *Iran* 40 (2002): 89–151.

Zaehner, R. C. "Zurvanica I." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 9.2 (1938): 303–320.

———. "A Zervanite Apocalypse I." *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 10 (1940): 337–398.

———. "A Zervanite Apocalypse II." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 10.3 (1940): 606–631.

———. *Zurvan, a Zoroastrian Dilemma.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1955.

———. *The Teachings of the Magi: A Compendium of Zoroastrian Beliefs.* London, 1956.

———. *The Dawn and Twilight of Zoroastrianism.* History of Religion. London: Phoenix, 2003. First Published 1961.

Zahle, Jan. "Achaemenid Influences in Lycia (Coinage, Sculpture, Archetecture). Evidence for Poltical Changes during the 5th Cent. B.C." Pages 145–160 in *Achaemenid History VI: Asia Minor and Egypt.* Edited by Heleen Sancisi-Weerdenburg and Amélie Kuhrt. Proceedings of the Groningen 1988 Achaemenid History Workshop. Leiden: Nederlands Institute voor het Nabije Oosten, 1991.

Zand, Michael. "Bukhara VII: Bukharan Jews." *Encyclopædia Iranica* IV (1990): 530–545.

Zarcone, Thierry. "The Myth of the Mandrake, the 'Plant-Human'." *Diogenes* 52.3 (2005): 115–129.

Zimmerli, Walther. *Ezekiel 1: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Ezekiel, Chapters 1–24.* Trans. Ronald E. Clements. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1979.

———. *Ezekiel 2: A Commentary on the Book of the Prophet Ezekiel Chapters 25–48.* Trans. James D. Martin. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1983.

Zutterman, Christophe. "The Bow in the Ancient Near East: a Re-evaluation of Archery from the Late 2nd Millennium to the End of the Achaemenid Empire." *Iranica Antiqua* 38 (2003): 119–165.